Arifureta Chapter 150

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/151/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

This chapter was translated by Bakapervert. Elementalcobalt did the final edits.

For your convenience:

Orcus Great Labyrinth (The Abyss)–Oscar Orcus

Raisen Great Labyrinth (Great Canyon)–Miledi (alternate spelling: Miredi) Raisen

Guryuuen Great Labyrinth (Great Volcano)–Naizu Guuryuen

Merujiine Great Labyrinth (Undersea Ruins)–Meiru Merujiine

Baan Great Labyrinth (God Mountain)–Rausu Baan

Haltina Great Labyrinth (Sea of Trees)–Luluo Haltina

Shunee Great Labyrinth (Snowfield Ice Cave) – Shunee

Magic's Depth

The first-rate sensation he felt on his lips gradually led Hajime's consciousness to awaken.

"… What are you doing Yue?"

“… Nn? Wake up kiss.”

There was such a lovely way to wake up someone in this world. For a part of that riajuu. (TN: Riajuu, a person who is satisfied with his real life. Damn riajuu, just explode)

Hajime returned a light kiss at Yue who was lying down on top of him while kissing him, then he swept his gaze at the surroundings. What entered his sight was the familiar ice wall and a bed he was tucked in, and then several types of furniture.

It seemed that he was inside the mansion made from ice at the deepest part of the Ice and Snow Cavern. While pondering that, Hajime returned his gaze to Yue who was staring at him with moist eyes from a really close range.

“… So we were carried to a room somewhere because we passed out. Yue, what about the others?”

“… Nn, sorry. I woke up just now so I don’t know.”

Hajime thought that Yue had surely woke up first and grasped the situation before coming to wake him up, but his expectation was wrong. Hajime floated a troubled expression while once again asking Yue, who was still lying on top of him while making lovely gestures, her chin resting in her hands and her bare feet moving up and down in the air.

“… How long have you been awake?”

“Nn… about ten minutes ago?”

“Don’t tell me, since then you have been in this position all along?”

“… Nn. Because when my eyes opened Hajime was there.”

‘Because a mountain is there.’ While spouting out a line like a certain mountain climber somewhere, Yue pressed her lips *chuu* at Hajime.

Before Hajime had confirmed that at the edge of his field of vision there was another bed. He also had confirmed that its sheets were

disarrayed. In other words, after Yue woke up in the neighboring bed, rather than understanding the surrounding situation or trying to ask an explanation from the other members, she instead slipped into Hajime's bed. Regardless of his passed-out situation from an unexpected accident, she picked the choice of the lovely wakening up.

She was shaken so much in the last trial to the degree that Shia scolded her, after that she finally reunited with Hajime and spoke about her worry, and just when she was about to kiss him with overflowing emotion, it was blocked by the girl power cheat character… now the trial was over already, and her beloved person was sleeping beside her defenselessly… because of that, it seemed that she couldn't hold back.

Really, really, what a… lovely lover she was, Hajime's eyes turned into a wild beast. Yue smiled bewitchingly "Fufu- "to such a Hajime. Her tongue licking her lips very seductively.

"Yue. It seems that I need a little more time before I wake up."

"… Nn. Then, until you are awake… I'll do you."

<EN: Two pages of erotic intercourse redacted. Figured you guys wouldn't want to read that smut…translation continues at the end of that…>

Their lips piled up once more. Vivid sound colored with dampness resounded inside the room. At the same time, "Nna", a sweet gasping voice caught in the nose resounded.

Just as it seemed that the two might do it until they got naked, at that time, a sound of the door opening was suddenly…

"Nn? You two woke up… waittt, juust whaaat are you two doinggg-!"

<EN: Just kidding…>

The one who entered was Shia. Looking at Hajime and Yue who were entangled on top of the bed with their fiercely disarrayed clothes, her rabbit ears bristled *bosaa!*

“Shia? What’s the… Hajime-kun? Yue? Just what are you two doing I wonder? I wonder?”

“____”

Behind Shia, Kaori who peeked her head in materialized a hannya mask behind her. Shizuku covered her red face with both her hands. However, following a cliché, she didn’t forget to peek between her fingers’ gap. Since she became aware of her love to Hajime, she was also excessively conscious to that kind of act, but she couldn’t help but hold interest.

On the other hand, about Hajime and Yue who were interrupted before they went further, they directed their sight to those three while embracing each other. Then they immediately looked at each other, moved their gaze once more to the three, and said out words with splendid synchronization.

“Come back two hours later.” X2

In response, the reaction of Shia and others were naturally…

“Are you stupidddd——!!”

“It’s obviously not allowedddddd!!”

“…”

Angry roars reverberated in the ice mansion. Only one person was stealing glances at the exposed chest of Hajime with her face still red.

The bed was overturned with Hajime and Yue still on it and then they were dragged out, Shia and Kaori forcibly moved them to the living room at a corner of the mansion. It seemed that Shizuku was still unable to come out of her daze with her eyes still swimming around busily.

At the center, there was a table of ice that didn’t feel cold, its surroundings included a leather sofa. Ryuutaro and Suzu were already sitting on the sofa, their eyes were opened wide at Hajime and Yue who were dragged out by their scruff of their necks.

“Oi, oi, just what in the hell…”

“Aa, Suzu somehow understand what’s going on here.”

It seemed that Suzu could imagine what was going on. Her gaze was directed at the clothes of Hajime and Yue that were mostly still disarrayed. Chasing after Suzu’s gaze, it seemed that Ryuutaro also guessed the generality of the event. But right after that, something traversed the room with high speed, *zubishi!* and a loud sound was raised from Ryuutaro’s strongly flicked temple.

“Abeh!?”

Raising a strange scream, Ryuutaro rolled behind the sofa. He was pressing on his temple thinking “That’s unreasonable-!!” while writhing around.

“… Hmph. That’s the punishment for seeing Yue’s immodest figure.”

“… Nn, jealousy? Hajime, cute.”

Yes, what flicked Ryuutaro’s temple was Hajime’s bullet. A punishment for Ryuutaro who saw ‘Yue in disarrayed clothes’… Indeed, it was unreasonable.

“Geez-! Both of you, you are not reflecting! … Just how much do you think we are worrying hereee.”

Looking at such a Hajime and Yue who were acting carefree, Shia was trembling in rage. However, in the middle, she lost her momentum and sat down beside the two with teary eyes. Her appearance faithfully displayed just how much she was worried for the two who passed out for an unknown reason right after they cleared the great labyrinth.

“It’s just as Shia said. … We were really worried.”

“That’s right. We wanted you two to quickly show your energetic faces.”

It appeared that Kaori and Shizuku felt the same. Similar with Shia,

they were directing slightly wet eyes at Hajime and Yue.

Looking at those three as expected even the two couldn't help but feel guilt. The two looked at each other awkwardly and then lowered their heads at the same time.

"Aa, no, really that was my bad. When I woke up a super beautiful girl was kissing me so, my reasoning was blown away… yep, it's the fault of Yue being too cute."

"… Nn, sorry. I should notify you all immediately. … But when I noticed a defenseless Hajime beside me I couldn't hold back. It's the fault of Hajime being too cool."

They were… lowering their head? It felt somehow like that.

"… Both of you, are not reflecting, are you?"

"Haa, it's enough already. More than this is just going to make us tired mentally."

"After looking with awareness of my own feeling, various things are coming to me…"

Seeing Hajime and Yue apologized while naturally whispering love fondly at each other, Shia directed a glare at them and Kaori made a tired expression. Shizuku made an expression that was a loss of words from realizing once more how strong an existence Yue was.

But, at that time, the door of the room made an opening sound. The one who entered was Tio.

"Oo, master and also Yue art safe then. I'm glad, I'm glad. It's the best that what I was doing was just a wasted effort."

"Ah, Tio-san. I'm sorry, I forgot to tell you about this."

Shia's expression turned apologetic looking at Tio whose expression burst into a smile seeing Hajime and Yue's appearance.

Tio investigated the magic circle of the age of god magic and the mansion's library in the worst case that Hajime and Yue wouldn't

wake up to determine the cause of their fainting. Shia whose attention was completely taken by her happiness of Hajime and Yue waking up and then by her anger at the two who were flirting without considering other people's feeling had forgotten to contact Tio.

"It's fine, it's fine. In any case, right after master and Yue opened their eyes, they must be doing that kind of thing, weren't they?"

"You really get it…"

"Hmm. That's natural. If I am in Yue's position, I will do the same thing! And then, master who scorns my disarrayed appearance will do that kind of thing and this kind of thing… nh, nh, haa haa."

"And, just what happened to Hajime-kun and Yue?"

"Both of you raised a really pained voice and fainted, that was a really shocking matter."

Kaori and Shizuku beautifully ignored Tio who was beginning to pant with an expression of ecstasy from her imagination and asked Hajime and Yue.

Naturally, Hajime and Yue acted like Tio was not there, they sat on the sofa while showing their intention to explain. Shia and the others also sat on the sofa. The fallen Ryuutaro also sat back on the sofa while rubbing his red forehead. There was no place for Tio to sit. She was kneeling seiza on the floor.

"Now then, the reason why I and Yue fainted… that's right, to say it simply, our head or mind got overheated, something like that."

"Overheated, is it?"

Hajime's beginning explanation made Shia tilted her head.

"Yeah. At that time, the last age of god magic——'Metamorphosis Magic' was engraved in our brain, after that, I and Yue were forcefully made to understand something further. The burden of that was too big, and it made us unable to maintain our consciousness."

“Hmm… a burden so big that master and Yue couldn’t endure… was it about knowing the particulars regarding concept magic?”

“… Nn. As expected, Tio. Your comprehension is fast although you are a pervert. Although you are a pervert…”

It was said twice although it wasn’t important. Although she was a pervert but as always her guessing was outstanding. Tio had been thinking what was the difference between Hajime and Yue with the other members, and she noticed the point that it was only those two who had obtained all the age of god magic. She did that while sitting seiza on the floor and grinning from the numbness in her feet.

Luluo Haltina said that their hand would reach concept magic when they obtained all the age of god magic. And then among these members, it was only Hajime and Yue who had obtained all the age of god magic. Tio who fully remembered even that point conjectured that perhaps the burden of having the knowledge of magic that surpassed the age of god magic engraved in their mind was large.

She investigated inside the mansion thinking of the possibility outside of that for her peace of mind, she did that surely because even with her conjecture she couldn’t just stay still with the condition of the two like that. Her speech and conduct were disgusting, but it appeared that she was worrying from the bottom of her heart, similar to Shia and others.

And then, the guess of such a Tio was right on the mark. Hajime and Yue, after they obtained metamorphosis magic the same as the other, they had the knowledge regarding concept magic engraved further into their mind.

Knowing the reason why Hajime and Yue fainted, Shia and others nodded in understanding. For the time being, they leaked a sigh of relief after hearing that there was no after effect or anything to the two. Kaori pulled herself together and asked something she was the most concerned about.

“Concept magic… with that, we can go back home to Japan, right?

By any chance, you two can use it already now?”

“No, not yet. Just like Luluo said, just because you have the knowledge doesn’t mean you can use it. Besides, the knowledge we obtained is also not something like the concrete way of learning or the way to use it, if I have to say what is it then it’s something like hypothesis knowledge.”

“Hypothesis knowledge?”

Shizuku asked by repeating the words. This talk was about the possibility of them returning home. Beginning from Shizuku, even Ryuutaro, Suzu, and Kaori too made a serious expression.

“Yeah. For example, the metamorphosis magic that you guys too are able to obtain this time, how do you guys understand that magic?”

“Eh? Err, let’s see. From the knowledge engraved in our mind, it’s a magic that remakes a normal organism into a monster, isn’t it? Using the magic power of the caster and the magic power of the target organism, it forms magic stone inside the body, with that as the core it’s possible to remake the flesh of the body.”

“Yes. I understand it like that too. Also, it looks like we can interfere with the already existing magic stone of a monster and mix our magic power into it to strengthen them and also make them submit.”

Shizuku and Kaori’s understanding was matching in general.

If it was explained further, metamorphosis magic had enhancement levels. In the case of transforming the normal living thing into a monster, the target would lose most of their reason and thought, and they would move following just their instinct. It was said that wild monsters came from the normal living things. In a particular place and through months and years absorbing the magic element in the surrounding and also with various other factors to naturally produce a magic stone, and the first level of metamorphosis, using metamorphosis magic was exceedingly close to this wild monster.

This wild monster would recover their reason and thought if they were strengthened even more using metamorphosis magic, furthermore, with the magic power of the caster mixing into the magic stone as the cause, it would be like imprinting and the monster would submit to the caster as though toward their parent. It needed not to be said what would happen if from the beginning the magic stone was created only from the magic power of the caster.

With skill, it was possible to pile up the performing of the metamorphosis many times and create a powerful monster to that extent——or rather than saying creating it was possible to grow a strong monster. However, the flesh of the target would break down if the metamorphosis was carried out with immature skill so caution was necessary.

“In other words, this is a magic to create obedient monsters, huh. As expected. Thinking about the steps, that white dragon seems like it has been considerably strengthened, though…”

“Uun, Suzu has only seen it once so she cannot say it clearly but… if Orcus’s monsters are divided in level by each floor, that white dragon is about level three hundred Suzu thinks? Suzu guesses that it’s about three to four times stronger than the monster in the eightieth floor.”

“Ain’t that more of it? It was weakened, but the great barrier of the capital was broken by just one dragon, that one yeah? Even Nagumo, you evaded its breath. Ain’t it about level 400?”

The talk was a little derailed. But Ryuutaro’s guess wasn’t mistaken. The white dragon strengthened by that Freed, if the monster at the floor 80 of the outer layer labyrinth of Orcus was about level 80, then the strength of that white dragon was about five times of that if it was now, then it was about six, seven times stronger.

Hajime’s face frowned for a moment as though he was recalling an irritating guy, but he pulled himself together and returned the talk back to its track.

“Well, in general, you are not wrong. Metamorphosis magic is

certainly a magic that creates a monster to follow you. But, that's a little inaccurate. What is called metamorphosis magic, to define it more accurately… that's right, I guess it's a 'magic that interferes at organic material'?"

"Err…"

Shia's eyes were swimming in perplexity. Putting aside Kaori and others, for Shia, those were words she was unfamiliar with. It seemed that Tio was also in the same state. Noticing that, Hajime cleared his throat and corrected himself.

"Let's see… it's a little lacking in accuracy, but to say it in easier to understand manner, you can also think of it as magic that interferes at material that originated from living thing. In other words, if you feel like it, not just an animal but something like a plant, and also things that are made from that——for example food or paper, this magic can also interfere with that kind of thing. Of course, it can also interfere at the human. The magic stone is nothing more than a byproduct."

According to Hajime's further summary, metamorphosis magic wasn't 'magic that created magic stone and produced monster', magic stone was nothing more than energy body created as the result of interfering at the target using one's own magic power and metamorphosis magic, in reality, it was magic that directly operated at flesh or the likes. And so if one felt like it, it seemed that it was theoretically possible to cause metamorphosis without producing magic stones.

"… Nn, this is only a guess, but the 'dragification' of Tio and others of the dragon clan, if the origin is traced, I think it has the root from this magic."

"Hoho, so the metamorphosis magic is the origin of my race… hmm, I see."

Sending a glance at Tio who was thinking deeply, Hajime continued his explanation.

"The hypothesis knowledge I said before, that is, in other words,

that kind of thing. Age of god magic are magic that interferes at 'principle', but we didn't really understand the exact foundation of that power. With obtaining concept magic as the absolute prerequisite, it was necessary to completely understand all the age of god magic."

"… Nn. Besides, to understand this is too deep of an abyss, if someone is not in the level that can conquer all the trials, their body and heart won't be able to endure the burden and they will break."

That was the reason that in order to arrive at concept magic there was a need to earn all the age of god magic.

The current Hajime and Yue understood that even their understanding until now toward the age of god magic was still shallow.

For example, the creation magic that Hajime obtained the very first, and he used to keep his life until now. It wasn't 'magic to assign magic into mineral' if it was expressed more accurately then it was a 'magic that interferes at inorganic material', a magic that was the opposite of metamorphosis magic. And so theoretically this magic should be able to interfere with things like water or salt too, not just mineral.

Furthermore, gravity magic was something that should be expressed as 'magic that interfere with the energy of star', not only gravity, theoretically, it could also interfere with things like earth vein or terrestrial heat, bedrock or magma, it wasn't impossible to use this magic to purposefully generate earthquake or volcano eruption.

Space magic was a 'magic that interferes at boundary'. Elimination of race-creature gap, formulating new boundary to create spirit world, it could be thought that those kinds of things were also possible.

Regeneration magic was 'magic that interfere at time'. The use of regeneration magic was more of restoration rather than healing, it was just a portion of it. Originally it was possible to interfere with time itself using this magic, it could catch a glimpse of the past or

take a peek at several branches of the procession of time. Shia's characteristic magic of 'Future Viewing' was likely originated from this magic.

To define Soul magic the expression of 'magic that interfere with negative material possessed by living thing' showed its true nature the most. To say it specifically, this magic could also interfere with things like energy inside the body that was magic power, heat, electricity, then thought, consciousness, memory. Although this magic was designated as 'soul', what Yue and others could exercise with this magic was interference at thought body more accurately. And then if someone could handle this magic perfectly, the caster could personally create consciousness and the like, they could configure it too. To put another way, it was possible to create artificial intelligence using magic.

Expressing sublimation magic as 'magic that interfere with the information of existing thing' was more accurate definition. Its function that evolved an ability by a level was, for example, interfering a body information that said level 1 and raised it up to level 2. If the user reached the root, it was possible to browse and interfere with the information of all existing object.

The names of the age of god magic that Hajime and others recognized until now were only given by taking into consideration the interference that was possible to be done using the human body.

By the way, the 'compass of guidance' used soul magic to surmise what the user was wishing for, then using space magic it ignored the spatial gap and distance and searched the target, it seemed that the compass used sublimation magic to supplement the information of the target. All of those functions couldn't be accomplished using the age of magic as they did until now.

After Hajime explained about those things too, in addition, Shizuku's expression turned complicated.

"I see now. This is real, big, and yet these magics can interfere with fundamental matter. It seems that these surpassed the territory that humans can touch. … But, after hearing all those, I guess that you two still cannot create the concept magic for the sake of returning

home then? Based on what I heard, it feels like it has considerable difficulty…"

"Well, certainly it will be difficult. Luluo explained it lightly as the purpose of the utmost limits or something, but in reality, it's exactly as she said. We need to raise up our 'wish' using soul magic and sublimation magic until concept level, then we need to grant it magic power and forcefully materialize it… saying it simply it's like that, but normally it won't succeed even using sublimation magic."

On the contrary, in concept magic the user needed the purpose of that time as the base, so just because it succeeded to be used once didn't mean in the next times from then on it would be stable to use. Normally it became a magic that was just onetime use.

"… Nn. We have to use Hajime's creation magic to endow the concept magic to something like the compass."

"That's right. Yue's control ability for magic and my transmutation… we need to match our breath and create an artifact endowed with the concept to cross the worlds. But, we also need a concept for preventing summoning here again, like that… it will take some time for those."

"It's not impossible, right?"

"Isn't that obvious? I'll make it a success no matter what. I crawled until here for that sake. I can start right away for the returning home artifact, I'll work out the concept for defending against interference from those guys too without fail."

Hajime's eyes looked like it was blazing up fiercely. He had survived through a severe environment and continued to wish earnestly to return home. It was unforgivable to stumble in this kind of place, such fierce will was gleaming inside his eyes.

Kaori and others who saw that had their chest constricted by homesickness thinking "Aa, we really can go home", tears were gathering in their eyes.

Hajime and Yue looked at each other and nodded once, then they

suddenly stood up.

“We are going to try it right away?”

“Yeah. I managed to sort the knowledge while we are talking. It’s like I’m a horse that got a carrot dangled in front of my eyes. I’ve got to try it now.”

Hajime punched on his palm with a snap. Looking at such Hajime, Yue’s hand softly touched him to calm him down. The sensation of the small willowy hand immediately calmed down Hajime’s heart. It felt like a sweet space was going to form once more, so Suzu opened her mouth with somewhat flustered feeling.

“Err, Nagumo-kun. About the magic for going home to Japan, how much time it’s going to take you think? If possible, Suzu also wants to look when it’s completed but… if it’s going to take long, Suzu and others also have to make various preparations.”

“I, see. I don’t think it will take that long if it’s just the magic for going home. After all, no one can say that my desire for going home is not at the extreme. But, for the defense against magical interference from others…. honestly, I don’t know. I also feel like I can make it quickly but…”

“Is that so? Suzu got it. Then, Suzu and others will concentrate on resting until the magic for going home is finished. It doesn’t seem like there is another thing we need to do until we understand whether we can really go home… there is also the metamorphosis magic that we finally obtained, so the journey to the devil territory will be after that. Err, what are Shizushizu and others going to do?”

Suzu decided about her plan from now on and then checked at Shizuku and others. For Suzu, Shizuku had also finally noticed her feeling, she was thinking whether Shizuku would be wishing to be at Hajime’s side from here on or not. While she was at it, she was also confirming whether Ryuutaro was really intending to embark right in the middle of enemy territory together with her.

“Of course, I will go together with Suzu.”

“Me too.”

In respond, Shizuku and Ryuutaro answered instantly.

“Putting aside Ryuutaro-kun, is it fine for you Shizushizu? You finally…”

“What are you saying? This and that are different matters. I cannot just leave Suzu in the care of the two idiots. Besides, we won’t be staying there for long anyway, right? We are going to escape right away after accomplishing our objective and link up with Nagumo-kun. I won’t feel lonely. Besides, I too won’t be able to settle down without saying something to Eri.”

Toward Shizuku who shrugged indifferently, Suzu understood that it was Shizuku’s real feelings, Suzu hugged her while praising “As expected from a woman that makes other woman fall in love, that’s so manly!”, but Shizuku showed a vein on her forehead from getting told she was manly and grounded her fist on Suzu’s head, making her scream.

Suzu changed the topic with teary eyes.

“N, next about Kouki-kun…”

Those words made Hajime went “Hm?” and he tilted his head. And then his gaze swept through the room.

“Now that you mentioned it, where is that guy?”

“So, you only noticed just now that he is not here. … If it’s Kouki, then he is still sleeping in a different room. He has deep damage, so it seems it will still take a bit more until he wakes up.”

It seemed that until now Hajime forgot about Kouki’s existence, to such a person Shizuku explained while making an expression showing a loss for words.

Kouki’s wound should have been completely healed by Kaori, so the deep damage she meant must be the mental damage. It should be possible to heal that too using soul magic that manifests its essential power, but even for Kaori who had grasped on how to use Nointo’s

body, as expected it was next to impossible to exercise the deepest mysteries of an age of god magic. Combined with the factor that the more difficult it was to interfere, the deeper the mental damage was, it was appropriate for now to leave it to Kouki's natural healing.

"Well, it doesn't matter. After this, I and Yue will seclude ourselves inside the room where the magic circle of the age of god magic is located to create an artifact endowed with concept magic. In the worst case that Amanogawa wakes up during that time, don't let him be a hindrance."

"Hindrance you say… no way he gonna do that while you are making the tool for going home, right?"

Ryuutaro objected while making a bewildered expression.

"If that's the case then that's fine. But his mental burden was great, and I don't think it's going to happen but the possibility that he will get deranged when he wakes up is not zero. Well, this is just for in case. As expected, I don't think I'll have any leeway in the middle of working."

"Leave it to me Hajime-san. I cannot help out, but in exchange, I won't let anyone be a hindrance," Shia declared full of confidence with her chest puffed out brazenly.

"Yeah. I'm counting on you, Shia."

"… I'm relieved with Shia here."

That strong and reliable appearance and words caused Hajime and Yue to also smile at her with unparalleled trust.

Like that the two went to the room with the magic circle of the age of god magic once more, they vanished behind the thick door while Shia and others were seeing them off.

Arifureta Chapter 151

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/152/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Elementalcobalt translated this chapter. I used help from the Arifureta summaries, which included partial translations from myopius and borisdrakoni.

Hajime's Path

"Is it all okay?" In the living room of the ice home, Suzu muttered to herself with an anxious voice while sitting on the sofa.

Therefore, Kaori who also sat on the sofa asked gently. "Is what 'okay'?"

"Mmm? All of it? Did Nagumo not fall unconscious? Can we return to Japan, truly? Will Kouki be alright? This trip to the demon territory… this…"

After taking this period to rest, it leaves the body with nothing else to do but think about these various things.

Since Hajime had started to make the artifact using concept magic, they had shut themselves up in their room for the last two hours.

When you include the time that Hajime and Yue had fainted, where they had nothing to do, they had plenty of time to recover. This left them time to think about unnecessary things.

“Suzu-chan… we’re safe. Hajime will get past any difficulty. And with Yue by his side, the impossible only becomes possible.”

“Kaori…”

“In addition, it’s up to Kouki to do something about Kouki. Of course, I’ll help as far as I can. As with Eri, I think… yes, we need to charge forward. There is nothing more to it. Thinking too much will only make you tired.”

To the rough encouragement, Suzu responded instinctively with surprising courageousness. “Kaori… has become handsome. You’ve already have become completely influenced by Nagumo-kun.”

“It is different, Suzu. For a long time, Kaori charges when she can decide. Kaori’s decisions, 90% of the time, are to charge forward.”

“Suzu-chan, It is… Shizuku-chan… so cruel… I am not like Ryuutaro-kun…”

“Hey, Kaori… why is being the same as me considered cruel? Am I noticing casual abuse?” Ryuutaro spat out with a bitter expression which concerned nobody.

Though Kaori wore her lips in a bit of sulk, but she took to heart immediately and fixed her eyes on Suzu.

“Anyway, I don’t know how things will turn out with Eri, but I will follow you and help. We need to get out of there in the confusion if things go bad.”

Kaori smoothly declared something frightful, but it was another word that Suzu was caught on. Blinking in surprise, she responded timidly in confirmation.

“Oh, oh, then Kaori will come with me?”

“Of course, I can’t neglect Shizu and Suzu.”

“But, Hajime…”

“It’s the same as Shizu-chan, it’ll be a while before we have the

artifact that will allow us to return. We'll also need to meet up to Lemia and Myuu. I can't help with the artifact, so I think what I should do it protect Suzu then…"

"Ah… Kaori is… a good child, a really good child… and, thank you very much."

"Suzu-chan, what's with the Kansai accent?"

To Kaori's words, Suzu made a joke while whipping away a tear. She was too embarrassed to return her sentiment seriously.

"If Kaori comes, you should be fine. Hmmm… before this mistress goes to Goshujin-sama's world, I should return to my clan as well."

"That's right, Tio-san. You're a daughter of the clan. What's it like, I had forgotten about that."

"Well, I mean… I guess you'd like to meet the dragonkin?"

"Well, we have space transfer magic set up so we could go there immediately. It's definitely beyond the mountains in the north – across the continent on a solitary island."

Tio gave a puzzled look so Shia recalled from her memory. When they left this world, Tio thought that she might not have the time to visit her family.

"Well…well, that is certainly the case. If I could receive jealous love punishment from Goshujin-sama before departing, that will be… let's double the speed. Return home through the gate!"

"…If we return and her kin sees her ecstatic expression on her face… they will be shocked. It would be good if it doesn't become a panic."

While Tio imagined Hajime's love and floating a smirk, Shia, and the others had a sick feeling while imagining the unpleasantness of that reunion.

After returning and seeing Tio, who has changed into a deviant, what kind of reaction would the dragonkin have? As Shia imagined

it, Hajime would need to take responsibility. Shia let out a sigh as she imagined what should be done with Tio's family.

At that point, the door of the living room made a noise as it slowly opened.

"Did we stay here…"

"Oh, Kouki. You woke up, how do you feel?"

It was Kouki who had entered. It seems he had awoken to find the other members.

Although it was Shizuku's aim to look aloof, she had immediately hidden her vigilance in a smile while asking about his condition. Kouki smiled back, in the same way, However, it seemed that his expression was shadowed.

"I'm okay, I'm sorry I worried you."

"Even now, it's fine as long as you're safe."

"It seems that I have recovered."

"That's really good."

Shizuku rejoiced at Kouki's recovery. Kouki smiled once more and gazed around the room looking for someone. His expression stiffened as if he was getting nervous. Kaori who saw this answered with a bitter smile.

"If it is Hajime-kun, he's in another room now, so he isn't here."

Well…so…so I probably need to apologize for being a nuisance… in various ways, but…"

Apparently, it seemed like he was no longer rampaging against Hajime like he was during the trial. His mental condition seemed to be relatively calm. Rather, it may be more accurate to say he seemed depressed over calm.

"I don't think Hajime-kun minds, as long as you're not rampaging

anymore he wouldn't demand an apology."

"Shia-san… maybe so, after all…"

Kouki wore a sour look full of bitterness. Though Kouki's recklessness has been troublesome, Hajime did not worry especially because it wasn't that inconvenient. The way it was, it could be said to be like a child who had a temper tantrum and struck out.

Though it was certainly murderous intent he had faced, the behavior was stupid and Hajime gave priority to avoid hurting Kaori (and incidentally Shizuku). At least, he had not given a great deal of time and effort, his body and heart having become strong enough to shoulder that troublesome burden.

"Did the sleep snap you out of your delusions, or do you still think Nagumo-kun has brainwashed us?" Shizuku asked severely while narrowing her eyes.

Kouki being unhurt and Kouki being in control were different questions entirely. Hajime likely wouldn't permit him raging out of control a second time, and it needed to be understood that Hajime didn't kill him despite the killing intent because of them.

After receiving the still voice and glare from Shizuku, Kouki quickly turned his eyes. But Shizuku didn't permit such spoiled behavior.

"Kouki, don't look away."

"Well… ah… I do not think that anymore. At that time, it really seemed like…"

Kouki's face held a shadowed expression, but he answered firmly while looking up at Shizuku. For a while, Shizuku looked back at Kouki. Likely to try to understand his thoughts through his eyes. Shia acted similarly.

Eventually, although it was hard to say for certain, they were convinced and showed a tentative assent. Shizuku nodded.

"Well, if it is OK… Kouki. Is there anything you'd like to ask?"

Because the atmosphere was awkward, to change those drifting feelings, Shizuku turned to Kouki.

Were those feelings transmitted to Kouki? Kouki floated a small wry smile. He asked what happened after he had fainted.

And… all of the members except Kouki captured the labyrinth. Hajime and Yue looked into the abyss of concept magic. And at the present, they were shut off by themselves trying to create an artifact for their return.

Although Kouki's expression didn't particularly change as he remained silent and listened, it was obvious that he had wanted to overcome his native self. When he couldn't capture the last trial, it was easy to imagine his inner heart wouldn't be calm.

And has his childhood friend, Shizuku was hesitant on whether she should say was Kouki wanted to hear most. That is what caused Kouki to fall apart in the first place. Kouki made his own convenient interpretations in defiance of Shizuku's attempt to persuade him.

Shizuku waited for Kouki to ask, but decided that the likelihood that he wouldn't hear what she said was high given his situation.

"…Kouki, I came to like Nagumo-kun. I want him to see me as a woman."

"…"

To Shizuku's words, Kouki's expression distorted momentarily. The words were told to him by his childhood friend right at his side. However, the reality of it would take a long time for Kouki to recognize. Shizuku appearing on Hajime's shoulders with a sleeping face that seemed happy and relieved crossed his mind.

"With that, will you follow Nagumo in the future? Nagumo has a favorite, and there is Kaori, too? Shouldn't you reconsider… Shizuku? It's kind of a bad trap…"

While paying close attention as to not leak out black emotions that gushed from his heart, Shizuku shook her head to cover over

Kouki's words.

"Kouki, I'm not looking for your opinion. I am merely telling you. Because you are a childhood friend."

"…"

Kouki kept silent with a sour expression not knowing how to speak. Somehow, it was Ryuutaro and Suzu who covered for her with their own glances. In a look, Kaori provided meaning that they would not struggle for the same man as best friends. It was a quiet expression of affirmation from all three of them. Of course, it was Shizuku's words that were affirming how she felt.

Realizing there was no one to back him up, Kouki erased the expression on his face. It was impossible to dismiss the reality that was unfavorable to Kouki. All those feelings of irritation, frustration, envy, and hatred began to wander for a false point to cling to.

However, there was nothing to rampage with just feelings. This wasn't about Hajime as an object and above all else, it was made clear. The feelings that stagnated darkly didn't have any fangs to bite. This was a big opportunity…

Although Suzu empathized with the dark feelings that Kouki could separate himself from, but either way, he had to get over it himself, he needed to face the problems.

Even with such an attitude caught in the heart, Kouki emitted unwanted emotions and made a sarcastic comment.

"Haha, everyone is that guy's ally. It's a guy who easily kills people and easily abandons…"

"Kouki!"

Suzu spoke up unexpectedly. Shia and Tio wore narrowed eyes. Kaori's smile deteriorated a little.

But Kouki, whose mind was like a child couldn't stop the feelings that had no place to go. Thus, he said…

“If so, at that time, would I fall off a bridge, if it was okay?” (Tn: In other words… maybe I should just kill myself… I think)

To such insensitive and heartless words, Kaori stopped those words that hurt her heart. PASHIN! Kaori’s slap made a flashy noise and exploded on Kouki’s cheek.

Though her hand also throbbed, Kaori began to talk with an expression that looked regrettable to Kouki who had a hand on his cheek in dumb surprise.

“…Kouki. I think Kouki is an important childhood friend… so don’t make me dislike him.”

“…or maybe…”

Kouki was at a loss of words from the unexpected shock but still opened his mouth as if he had something to say.

Gou!

An impact resembling wind pressure ran through. Its identity were waves of enormous magical power. Although it should not be “shock transformation” or the like, an enormous amount of magical power spread through the wall of the mansion so that their bodies responded to it in shock.

“This is… Hajime-san! Yue!”

To this obviously abnormal situation, Shia flung herself out of the room at a dash. When Hajime makes an artifact, this kind of current is not usual.

The wave motion of magic continued to pulse intermittently. Magic in each of their bodies was severely stricken. However, Kaori who was startled back by Shia’s actions straightened herself and followed Shia immediately.

According to Shia, the wave motion of magical power seemed to be coming from Hajime and Yue. The waves of magical power seemed to increase in density the closer they approached the room the two people stayed in. It was as if a typhoon had hit them directly as

they arrived before the room.

The door was already opened as Shia verified that the two were safe. After going in, it seemed to be the case. While protecting her face from the bewitchment that raged on, Kaori made up her mind and stepped inside.

What spread out from there was a scene where the magical power of red and gold became a torrent of spirals. The scene blew off from the center with the Hajime and Yue on their knees facing each other and holding hands. Before the two of them, there was a crystal of a giant and some minerals that emitted a pale light.

“What’s happening, Shia… this…”

“I do not know, but they seem to have done something.”

As she had already assessed the scene, Kaori asked Shia who’s rabbit ears were dancing in the storm of magic. Shia protected her face with her arm and a lower posture but was able to confirm Hajime and Yue’s appearances. When she could see they were both safe, she gave out a breath of relief.

If you trace their glance, it seemed a certainty that neither Hajime nor Yue was at risk. However, both of them were concentrating extremely hard. Shia’s entering was not even noticed. A large amount of sweat flowed from them. At this moment, it was clear they were focusing on making the artifact with concept magic.

“…If it is safe, it seems better to leave…”

“Well, if I fail as a mistress, I should be punished.”

“…You should seem so happy about it, Tio…”

Shia retreated towards the door softly as to not disturb Hajime.

Meanwhile, only Kouki was staring at Hajime. You couldn’t see the color of emotion in those eyes, but they seemed to hold down passion and looked dangerous.

“Kouki,” Shizuku called out.

Kouki did not answer. Rather, he took a step forward straight ahead, just one step forward.

“Kouki!”

“Tsu…”

Shizuku immediately grabs Kouki’s arms. While her trademark ponytail flapped in the magical storm, she looked straight at Kouki with a serious look. In the gaze, as if frightened, revealed shaking. Kouki made a step backward. One step backward.

At that moment…

“What’s this?”

“An image?”

“A dark…cave?”

Suddenly, images began to appear before their eyes. Like a fog projecting a picture instead of a screen, magical light fragments became a medium. To this strange situation, Shia and the others forgot to even leave the room.

At that time, Suzu muttered to herself.

“Somehow, it looks like Orcus.”

“Certainly, speaking of a large cave illuminated by green light, it would be the Orcus Great Labyrinth.”

Tio affirmed Suzu’s guess. Speaking of a cave illuminated by faint green walls, it would be the Orcus Great Labyrinth that was created by digging into veins of Illumination Stone.

However, since the scenery was different from the structure of the upper labyrinth that Suzu knew, she could not say it for certain. This looked like a natural cave that had not been crafted by a human hand. The magnitude of the height and width of the cave was different from the labyrinth Suzu knew.

The sudden situation and mysterious images deepened their bewilderment, but before long the image projected from the angle of the shadow next to a rock at a large crossroads, showed white hair, long hind legs, and deep red lines crawling across its body like blood vessels, and the true colors of the image was realized as the feelings of having been caught by the demon of the rabbit type were transmitted to them.

“This is anxiety? There is also impatience.”

“I also feel fear. This image is a memory.”

“It is probably Goshujin-sama’s. The memory of the place of hell this one heard him speak about.”

Shia’s guess was correct.

Along with the image, feelings were transmitted from the magic that filled the room. Anxiety, impatience, and fear were overflowing due to the clearly abnormal monster he had never seen before. They couldn’t understand what had led such a situation to occur, but they at least understood that the images they saw and feelings they felt were Hajime’s.

Apart from the time after he had met Yue, Hajime did not speak much of the time in hell before that. It was already over, and Hajime did not have a hobby of boasting about his misfortune. It was simply troublesome to talk about it, too.

So, being given the chance where Shia and the others could learn from Hajime’s past that they don’t know about, after exchanging a glance with one another, they stared hard at the image as if to drill a hole in it without leaving the room. To learn the beginnings of the person they loved, it was impossible for them to leave the room. Similarly, Ryuutaro and Kouki began to concentrate on the image with interest too.

So, at that time, someone raised their voice with an “Ah.” In the image, the demon releasing an abnormal atmosphere suddenly charged at him with an amazing power.

“Hajime-san!”

“Hajime-kun!”

Instinctively, Shia and Kaori cried out a warning with a raised voice. Meanwhile, the image moves hectically while the feelings of fear and uneasiness transmitted by the bright red magic swelled up.

They ground their teeth seeing Hajime made sport of by the kick rabbit. And then, when Hajime’s left arm was finally smashed, the feelings of anguish transmitted to them caused Suzu to avert her gaze.

“Hajime-san was…such a one-sided…”

“This is the Nagumo-kun that we knew. His fighting strength was equivalent to having none at all…”

To Hajime being one-sidedly toyed with, Shia’s expression became teary eyed as she couldn’t believe it. Shizuku spills her words to such a Shia while biting her lip.

Before long the image becomes momentarily interrupted because Hajime had closed his eyes when feeling the impending death from the kick rabbit approaching. While Hajime’s feelings of terror are spread to them, the image appears again. This time the frightened kick rabbit’s image was seen.

The view of the image was changed tracing the kick rabbit’s line of sight, and there stood a huge white bear. A glance was all it took to understand the bear was not a normal demon. To prove that, the kick rabbit that toyed with Hajime in the image was easily cut in two and preyed on, while scattering blood around Hajime.

The glint in the claw bear’s eyes crosses over through the image to shoot through Shia and the rest. In the case of them today, the power of the claw bear’s gaze would be no big deal, however, because of the feeling it had in its eyes that it was looking only at food rather than an enemy and the fundamental fear that was driven into Hajime caused them to shake unconsciously.

What happened after that was too tragic for the girls who loved

Hajime.

Being cornered, the left arm was taken, and it was eaten in front of him. The eyes that see him as food and the arm that lost its shape while spewing blood, such a reality was unnecessarily given to him whether he wanted it or not.

The scream that could not be heard was transmitted to them by the magic. Eyes that a human should never show are shown, having part of the body scattered and eaten, breaking down from terror and agony. And without either shame or respectability, he crawled desperately to get even one millimeter further away from the incarnation of terror.

The reflected image is already dark. The transmitted feelings reached a saturation point or were already unable to be defined. Just…Hajime screams, however even that began to weaken as the light of life faded away.

"Haji…me-san…."

Shia is pouring out tears. Nearby, Kaori and Shizuku… Suzu covers her mouth with her hand. Tio's gaze is severe. Before their eyes the murderous intent to want to tear the claw bear limb from limb welled up.

While they watched, the blackout ended. Hajime, doubting his own survival, advanced to the interior of the wall and found a strange crystal that dripped water. The god crystal and holy water.

Hajime drunk that, holding his broken mind while he cowers in a dark cave. While asking for help…

There where the memory is vague the image became interrupted. However, to substitute for that, the feelings being transmitted increased in density.

Overwhelming loneliness is felt as no one responded no matter how much he asked for help. The darkness in which even his own existence seemed to be swallowed. Hunger to the degree where it seemed he'd go mad. Unending phantom limb pain.

Day after day he bore the torture-like pain. While lying down as if to die, eventually wishing that he could die, however, the taken holy water did not allow that, and so his feelings of hatred with nowhere left to go were directed at his classmates as he came to curse the unjustness of the world.

And yet, in addition to that, he gradually began to improve. Hajime's heart was dyed the blackest black. The longing to live, and, the murderous intent for existences that are a hindrance.

Hajime began to move. He started to collect holy water in a depression on the ground. He will begin with eating the wolf. His hunger and phantom pain have not changed, and only his energy had recovered, while his features reflected in the pool of water were already another person.

With the glitter of murderous intent shining in his eyes… Hajime slipped out of his cave. His only weapon that could not be called a weapon (transmutation) is freely used to hunt the demons.

"…This is that appearance…"

"I heard about it, but he's strong."

Eating the demon's flesh with his hands and clothes becoming bloodstained, the appearance of Hajime with his face made dirty with blood is exactly suitable for a monster.

And, a scream which isn't given a voice is transmitted again. The amount of his agony cannot be imagined. Beating his head on the ground many times, with Hajime's body writhing it is only possible to see the repeated breaking down and regenerating sometimes as it enters his field of vision.

Unable to bear watching the ghastly spectacle with the transmission from the hell of the storm of agony, Kouki and Ryuutaro both averted their gazes. Suzu, looked like she could vomit at any moment, desperately trying to endure it.

Before long the transformation ended. Looking at his appearance in the pool of holy water, the reflection shows the Hajime of today.

Still more than the Hajime of today, the deep tenacity and murderous intent overflowed from he who had gotten a strong body and a new power.

And, using the power of a transmutation that could not become a weapon because it is only a common job, he made full use of the raw materials and the other world's gunpowder to produce a weapon after much trial and error that he could use to challenge the claw bear and by crushing it prove his ability to fight.

At the end of a fierce battle where the claw bear is overcome and its flesh is eaten, Hajime becomes self-conscious. In the innermost depths of himself, his true longing has come out.

That is…

–I want to return.

Responding to the desire, the magic in the room pulsed. Before they were aware of it, Hajime's body was covered in the bright red magic power… With Hajime and Yue in the center, the magic power shot up.

However, it was not magic power indiscriminately scattered. It was focused so that it was inhaled in a spiral torrent with the two people at its center.

–I want to return.

Once more Hajime's pure, strong desire was transmitted through the magic power. Deeply touched by such a wish, Shia, and the others tightly clasped their hands at their chests.

The brilliantly shining crimson magic mixed with the golden magic. As the torrent of magic calmed down, glittering lights like the stars of the Milky Way galaxy began to spin around them.

–I want to return to my hometown.

It is quiet; however, everyone cannot help but shake understanding the strength of will being transmitted by that desire. It should exactly be called the will of the utmost limits.

Hajime in the image, after looking up at the sky once, he quietly closed his eyes. In himself, he must have been making certain of his resolution. And, when he suddenly opened his eyes he unhesitatingly faced the interior of the abyss while proceeding down the passage to the depth of the labyrinth.

The magic light the image was projected on was then absorbed by the whirlpool surrounding Hajime and Yue.

Shia's and the others' reaction was generally the same. They were dumbfounded by the extremely violent process Hajime went through to become the Hajime of today.

Shia, Kaori, Tio, and Shizuku shed tears from the emotions that even they did not understand how seriously far Hajime had gone, but at the same time also faintly floated smiles feeling proud that he could stand back up again after crawling up.

Suzu and Ryuutaro couldn't speak as if they were simply overwhelmed, with somehow assenting looks on their faces as they thought "I can't match this".

They thought they'd survived some truly rough battles, but they'd always had the support of Meld and the other experienced knights in the order, and above all, had been surrounded by comrades with cheat abilities. When they tried to imagine whether they could truly, all by themselves, get through all that hardship and crawl out of the abyss, they shook their heads. Even the scene they were seeing now was just the beginning. They didn't think that they would be able to handle it at all.

And Kouki… gazed into empty space vacantly, as if his power had left him. In his heart, it crossed his mind how he'd just said: "If I'd been the one to fall into the abyss…"

Up until now, Kouki had actually thought that Hajime's strength was unfair. Even though Shizuku had said Hajime must've had a horrible experience, the idea was completely abstract to him. Kouki had seriously thought that Hajime was a guy who did whatever he pleased and easily obtained power just by falling into the abyss.

But now that he'd ended up knowing Hajime's way of obtaining it, it was so incredible it blew away those thoughts.

('I want to return'… huh.)

He whispered it in his mind. A doubt welled up: do I actually desire to return home as much as him? At the same time, when he compared his thoughts when he'd declared that he would save this world as the hero everyone needs, with Hajime's pure and intense wish, he had a feeling it seemed very cheap.

(N-No… I'm not wrong. Nagumo's feelings… I understand them, but… But, even so… And, now, Shizuku's also… He's taken everything from me…)

He desperately shook off the self-criticizing emotions that floated through his mind.

As Kouki engaged in a mental dialogue with himself, a change occurred with Hajime and Yue. To be precise, with the crystal structure and mineral in between them.

It was wrapped in bright red magic. The shape gradually changed, or rather, it united as if to prove it was taking in magical power.

"Is that a key…?"

"Well, it looks like an antique key made out of crystal."

Shizuku added to Kaori's mutterings. It was shaped between Hajime and Yue, with a regular dodecahedral crystal body on the side of the hand. It was a key with a terribly sophisticated and complex magic line drawn in the planning part of the trip.

It was created with the fusion of the god crystal and other minerals, finishing as an antique key that captures the beautiful artworks that incorporated a lot of magical powers from Hajime and Yue, decorated in gold designs with a red crystal.

And just after the shape was perfectly formed, Hajime and Yue who did not make movements until now opened their eyes with their hands connected. It seemed that nothing was reflected in their thin

eyes, which seemed to be looking at something only visible to the two of them.

In a strange way, the atmosphere felt mysterious, there was a sound that someone swallowed with a gulp of saliva. The next moment, the two lips trembled in time. Then the words spun from a small opening mouth…

“Open the door to the place you wanted.”

A moment later, a torrent of dazzling light like a fixed star blew up around the two. The flow of the galaxy that once calmed down dyed the room into pure white light as if it had caused a supernova explosion, and painted everyone’s consciousness with white as well.

Arifureta Chapter 152

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/153/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Elementalcobalt did the final edits.

The Key That Opens the World Door

Along with Hajime and Yue's words which sounded like a prayer, light explosively painted over the room as well as their consciousness. It was mainly Hajime and Yue's strong wills supported in the alignment that were filled inside that light.

The large torrent of will made Shia and others unable to think of anything and they fell into unconsciousness, but that was only for a moment. Just before their limp bodies hit the floor, the pure white that overfilled their mind vanished like clearing mist.

Even while staggering for a bit, all present restored their postures and shook their heads. They then saw a beautiful radiance in their sight. Crimson and gold radiances that felt as if they were sucking up all the light covered every inch of the surface of that transparent key. It was a characteristic artifact that looked antique with its crystal form that had a complicated and delicate pattern and twelve exact sides—the 'Crystal Key'.

"Wait, Hajime-san! Yue-san! Are you two okay-!"

Shia returned to her senses with a 'hah' and rushed toward them in

a panic. Beside the Crystal Key, Hajime and Yue were lying down with their hands still holding each other while looking like they were passed out. Kaori and others were also rushing in a moment after Shia.

“Kaori-san, the two of them…”

“… Hm, they are fine. Looks like they just fainted. The cause is magic power exhaustion.”

After examining the two with a serious expression, Kaori answered with a smile towards the anxious Shia. The examination result made Tio and others breathe out in relief too.

Kaori extracted magic power from the magic crystal and gave it to both of them at the same time using the technique of magic power transfer. Then, as if to prove that her examination result was correct, Hajime and Yue leaked out groaning sounds while opening their eyes thinly.

“Aa? … What happened?”

“… Nnu. The artifact…”

Kaori explained the situation as Hajime and Yue rose up while shaking their heads, she also handed over the Crystal Key as she explained.

“Both of you passed out from magic power exhaustion. For the moment, I divided the magic power of one magic crystal equally between both fo you. As for the artifact, I don’t really understand it but…”

“I see. Thanks, Kaori. It has been a long time since I passed out from magic power exhaustion. I didn’t really know the right amount needed, so we did it at full strength at that moment but… the next time we will be able to regulate it I think.”

“… Nn. It’s fine. I grasped the trick somehow. Though the problem is whether we can manifest a will to the degree that can be sublimed into the concept.”

Yue answered Hajime's words while making a pondering look. Hajime examined the Crystal Key in his hand with his magic eye stone. The artifact contained the magic power that couldn't be compared with all the other artifacts he had created until now.

"… It's a satisfying result. I feel a large power in it. The sensation feels like the compass of guidance."

Hajime made a satisfied smile while designating a coordinate towards a certain spot using the 'Compass of Guidance' for a test. Then he poured magic power into the crystal key to activate it and thrust it out to the front. Even if 'Open the door to the desired place' was said, but if the distance of the destination and the image of the connected place couldn't be imagined to a certain degree, then the space wouldn't be connected.

The thrust-out crystal key was similar like the space transfer key-shaped artifact 'Gate Key', it plunged into space where there was nothing and ripples spread just like the creator Hajime imagined.

However, it carried a magic power that couldn't be compared with a 'Gate Key'. Furthermore, different from the 'Gate Key' that had the coordinates fixed beforehand, there was a need to fix the space coordinate with just this one crystal key, so it took a little more time. In addition, it was sucking his magic power steadily.

Hajime frowned at the magic power that was flowing out as though the plugging cork had come out, even so, he still twisted the crystal key next. And the result was the space in front of him shook, an ellipse hole began to open.

From the hole for some reason there was beating sounds *bishi-bashi-* and captivating sound "Aan!" of a woman that were audible.

Before long, inside the gate that had opened completely…

"This shameless female pigggg. I'll make you ascend to heaven!" (TN: The ascend to heaven should mean die/passing away in Japan, but the kanjis forming the word can also be read as rising to heaven)

“Aa! Kam-samaaa! As expected, from Shia’s honored fatherrr! Amaziiiiing!!”

The drooping figure of Arutena being lashed with an ecstatic expression on her face while the figure of Kam who was doing the lashing were displayed.

The suddenly manifested scene that looked extremely gruesome in a different meaning from the scene some time ago made Hajime and Yue’s jaws drop, as well as every other member other than Tio.

At the same time, perhaps sensing the presence of Hajime and others from across the gate, Kam was turning back with “Oh?” expression, he caught the appearances of Hajime and the others ahead of his gaze and his eyes opened wide with a snap.

“Bo, bossss!? Wh, why are boss’s gate, in this kind of place!”

“Eh? Wait, Shia! Also, Hajime-sama and group too!”

Toward the shocked Kam and Arutena, Hajime and Yue spoke with cool words.

“… Yoo. Looks like we are intruding in the middle of your fun.”

“… Nn. Who can imagine that you two are in that kind of relationship? Shia, live strong.”

“Fufu, oh my comrade, Arutena. It seems that thou found a good master.”

Ignoring Tio who was strangely joyful, Kam was “Thi, thi thi thi thi, this is misunderstanding desuu!”, he was desperately making excuses towards Hajime and Yue’s manner of speaking with a tone that was exactly like his daughter but…

There was a rabbit that returned to her senses while trembling all over. The violent emotion rising up from inside her body became undulating magic power that burst out. Shia who was standing up wordlessly took out Doryukken with a sway. And then with eyes that lost their light, she glared over at Kam and Arutena across the gate. *jakin!* Such sound was raised and the muzzle of the cannon

mode for Doryukken was aimed.

“Wa, wait, Shia! You are making a severe misunderstanding! Father is by no means-“

“Shia! Kam-dono is a magnificent person, isn’t he! As expected of Shia’s honored father! I who was only trying to look at Shia’s personal effect just for a little is treated this violently! Furthermore, his strength control is exquisite!”

Kam’s desperate justification was violently smashed by Arutena smilingly. “You bitchh, shut your mouth a bit!” Arutena’s body shuddered all over from the eye glint Kam directed at her. It appeared that it had been already too late for her.

And then it appeared that Arutena was being condemned for fishing through Shia’s left behind personal effects as she pleased. But even though there was such a circumstance which seemed plausible, Shia witnessed this abnormal scene where her flesh and blood father looked relatively high-spirited in swinging the whip against Arutena more or less? A girlfriend of the same age…

“Just die all of you-, these perverts-!”

The trigger was pulled with no questions asked. Burst slug bullets were fired. Hajime closed his eyes with a prayer so they could enter nirvana while closing the gate the moment the bullet passed. Just before the gate was completely closed, there was an explosion sound with audible “Gyaaaaa!” and “Aaaaaan!!” screams, yet there was nobody in this place who paid that attention.

“… Nn. Shia, be strong.”

“It’s fine Shia. That’s… right, that’s only a bit of momentary madness. Your father should have opened his eyes with the attack just now, surely.”

“… Hics, Yue-san, Kaori-san, thank you for your consideration desuu. But, my father surely won’t die with just that much, so before we depart to Hajime-san’s world I’ll stop his breathing first desuu … uu, I’ll make him into mince meat desuu.”

It appeared that in proportion to the amount of magic power the crystal key used it was possible to literally ‘open a door to the desired place’, the experimental use of the concept magic endowed artifact ‘Crystal Key’ which was done casually turned up a result that made a daughter resolve herself to kill her father.

“Aa, what to say, Shia? I’ll correct Kam’s fault, so anyway, stop crying.”

“Uu, Hajime-saan!”

Shia leaped into the chest of the wryly smiling Hajime.

At the side, “Nagumo-kun and Tio-san’s relationship is not that different, though…” those words that Suzu whispered were beautifully ignored.

After that, the members whose expressions were at a loss for words because the serious atmosphere was blown away pulled themselves together as they gathered in the living room once more.

“Now then, in the first testing, there are various bad performances that stood out but…”

Hajime confirmed that everyone had sat down and he lifted up the crystal key so that everyone could see it, and then with a wide grin, he resounded those words, the words of hope.

“The method to go home is in our hands.”

At that moment, it was Suzu who was the first jumping up and expressing her joy. Lured by that, Ryuutaro raised a happy roar while making a guts pose. Shizuku and Kaori hugged each other with a wide smile. Even Kouki whose expression had been dark all this time smiled faintly.

“Even though I say that, to make a concept that will obstruct future summoning, it will be a harder compared to making a concept for going home. Especially as an aspect of the will. It seems that trial and error are going to be necessary, so we still cannot go home for a while.”

“That cannot be helped. Even so just with hearing that we can go home… that’s real… amazing. Hics, Hajime-kun, thank you…”

Kaori was moved to tears while clutching Hajime’s hand from the side tightly.

That ‘thank you’ was filled with various meanings. It was surely also including her feeling after looking at those images. About how he had survived, about how he didn’t give up not any one thing, about how he rushed to her when she was in danger, about how he got angry several times for her because she was important to him, and then now, about how he obtained the method to go back home… various meanings were really filled with that thanks.

Hajime scratched at his cheek using his hand that wasn’t clutched while shrugging his shoulders helplessly, then he gently hugged Kaori back. For a moment, Kaori’s eyes opened wide with her shock plain to see, but she quickly became all smiles and embraced back *gyuuuut* tightly. She also nuzzled her face on Hajime’s chest.

Even Yue gave an expression as if to say “Well, I’ll forgive it this once”. She shrugged her shoulders and smiled to the fawning Kaori.

On the other hand, Shizuku was staring at Kaori with a little envy, but she instantly sent her gaze at Kouki and shook her head and her gaze became pleasant. If she had to speak her mind then she also wanted to be spoiled by Hajime, but thinking about the possibility of Kouki’s unstable mind, she restrained herself.

But, although she was reading the mood she also had resolved herself, to be honest just before this so she was scheming how to secretly get spoiled by Hajime later on. She didn’t understand whether she could overcome her shyness and properly asked to be spoiled but… at the very least she swore that she would hold his hand! She set that small objective.

Despite the fact she had already kissed his cheek, normally Shizuku was thoroughly innocent to the end.

Hajime somehow guessed Shizuku’s sentiment from her gaze where such cute ambition was residing, yet he looked the other way and

gently caressed Kaori's hair while talking about the matter from here on.

"Anyway, I'm thinking to go to meet Myuu and others while also striving to create the artifact for summoning obstruction. Opening a gate to their place is also fine but, the crystal key is something that uses magic power in proportion with the connecting of the space, so if we are going to open a gate until earth then magic power of three or four times my whole magic power is going to be necessary, that's why I don't want to use it as much as I can."

By the way, the twelve surfaces crystal attached at the handle side of the crystal key had the function to store the amount of magic power that could be used to open a gate to earth once. Perhaps it should be said that it was expected from a concept magic that fuel consumption would be extremely bad.

Even the gate he experimentally opened to the sea of trees just now used up a considerable amount of the magic power Kaori restored to him. If it was transportation inside the same world, using the 'Gate Key' was far more convenient although it was necessary to set 'Gate Hole' as the destination beforehand.

By the way, 'Gate Key' was something developed while they were staying in the capital, so there was none put in the above sea city of Myuu and her mother Lemia. To go meet them, they would use the airship 'Fernir'.

"Then, during that time when Suzu and others go to the territory of the devil. … since they got their hands on the age of god magic after much pain, it is possible if Suzu wants to go there she can be accompanied by a powerful monster but…"

Thanks to their well rest their magic power and vitality had almost recovered perfectly. If it was now, they could attempt to invoke age of god magic.

But, unfortunately, the inside of the ice and snow cavern only had frost type monsters. Putting aside they were inside the labyrinth where flame magic was hard to be used, it would be easy to have their weak point aimed at in the outside world. Also, their main

strong point, that their regeneration ability made use of the surrounding ice, also couldn't be expected. Saying it clearly, they were monsters that didn't suit to follow them to the outside world. The reason why there was no frost type among Freed's monster was also for this reason.

Hearing that, Hajime made a little thinking face and suddenly took out a 'Gate Key' that he threw at Suzu. In panic, Suzu's hands moved and somehow caught it before she tilted her head.

"I and Yue will rest a little more until our magic power recovers completely. That gate key is connected at the gate hole set in Fair Bergen, so how about you try making the monsters from the Sea of Tree follow you? There are a lot of monsters there skillful in manipulating their presence. If you make them submit and strengthen them, I think they are going to be fairly useful."

"I see… yes, Suzu will try it. Thank you, Nagumo-kun!"

Hajime waved his hand listlessly at Suzu who was smiling in delight.

As the result, Suzu and the others would go to the Sea of Trees to hunt for monster while Hajime and others were resting. Kouki went with Suzu's group under the pretext of helping but surely that was simply because he hated to be left behind with Hajime, such hypothesis didn't seem to be wrong looking from Kouki's awfully complicated expression.

Furthermore, Yue, Shia, and Tio were staying behind. They weren't going to embark to the devil territory, so it was unnecessary for them to expand their battle strength. Only Kaori who would go with Suzu's group because she was worried for Shizuku.

After that Hajime and his group for a while focused on recovering their magic power and replenishing magic power into the magic crystal while passing the time in relaxation. Even Hajime was somewhat drifting off the calm atmosphere that he had never shown until now. He even allowed the wanting Tio to an embrace and caress, looking at Hajime who was exposing a somewhat sweet atmosphere, it was Tio herself who was the most shocked.

The procurement of the method to go home surely had granted leeway at Hajime's heart. Tio who made a pass in the hope to get abused was unexpectedly embraced with gentle gaze and hand gesture, Tio was acting shy and fidgeting bashfully so much that it would make anyone watching want to tsukkomi "Just where has the usual pervert gone!?" while fawning at Hajime with her all.

"Muu, master is kind… I thought that being hurt was the best, but this is also not bad in its own way, or perhaps I should say that this is a frightfully happy feeling. Though it's also embarrassing to the same degree."

"Tio-san, if only normally you are also like this, you will be a charming female without any fault at all, yet despite so…"

"… Nn. As I thought, perhaps, Hajime should take responsibility."

Looking at Tio who was entrusting her body on Hajime's chest with melting expression while her face was bright red, Shia and Yue were smiling wryly while whispering. Yue's statement made Hajime couldn't help but smile bitterly.

"Well, after this far, if I hear Tio calling another man as master as it will really not be a good feeling in that case…"

"Ho, hou? Ma, master. Wha, what kind of meaning it has… by some possibility, similar like Shia, I too…"

"You know, like if a worthless mongrel that I've already got attached emotionally at suddenly wagged its tail at another guy as easily as flipping over the hand, it will feel irritating, right?"

"Nnn-, in a moment like this, to be treated like a dog… furthermore it had 'worthless' attached. Haa haa, to be spoiled and made to have an expectation before got abused, what an advanced technique. Haa, haa, nnaa, it's just unbearable!"

The worthless dragon that was in heat eternally pushed her face nuzzlingly on Hajime's chest while her lower body was rubbing close at his waist. However, looking objectively at Hajime who was continuously making such Tio delighted all the time, he was also

just like her. Yue and Shia's exasperated gazes stabbed on Hajime.

While doing such stupid thing, by the time the replenishment of magic power at all the magic crystals was over, a gate opened once more and Suzu and co went back. Behind the girls, large tiger, and wolf, and then snake and so on, monsters that were high ranked even inside the sea of trees were there. It appeared that they successfully managed to make those monsters submitted.

after that, Suzu and co increased the strength of the submitting monsters using reinforcement under the simple guidance of Yue and Tio. In addition to the help of Yue and Tio, the monsters that were considerably strengthened were attached to the collar made by Hajime. The collar had a gate hole inserted in it if Suzu and co used the gate key then they would be able to call the monsters anytime. In ordinary times, they could just leave the monsters to do as they pleased in the sea of trees or anywhere.

Like that the magic power of Hajime and Yue were also recovered, finally they were going leave the Ice and Snow Great Labyrinth. Hajime and his group would travel around all the places with people who wanted to go home together with them and the people they wanted to say goodbye to while endeavoring to create an artifact to hinder summoning. Suzu, Shizuku, Kaori, Ryuutaro, and Kouki, the five of them would head to the devil territory where Eri was located.

"Hajime-san, here."

When they exited the ice mansion, Shia handed over a pendant that was modeled after a dripping water drop. Inside the bluish transparent stone that was like ice, the crest of Vandur Shune was hollowed. It was the proof that they had conquered the Ice and Snow Great Labyrinth. After Hajime and Yue fainted, a part of the wall inside the room melted and this proof appeared to be collected.

Receiving that, Hajime walked above the magic circle drawn on the foothold right in front of the fountain. The moment Hajime's foot stepped into the magic circle…

biki biki-

Such a sound was audible and the fountain before their eyes began to freeze, it was gradually swelling up. Like that it became a huge egg-shaped ice mass that was almost ten meters, before long the expansion and freezing stopped, right after that, *barin!* such a sound was raised and the ice scattered apart.

What appeared from inside the broken remains was a dragon made from ice. A magnificent lustrous dragon that looked transparent as though it was created from crystal.

The ice dragon lowered its head directly below Hajime's feet where its long neck made a slope. It appeared riding this ice dragon was the shortcut for this great labyrinth.

"This is also a fantastical shortcut, huh."

"… Nn. A present?"

"This consideration is far removed from the repulsiveness of the trial's content, isn't it?"

Each of them let out their impression while nodding at each other, then they crossed the neck where the scales were like a bridge and rode on its back.

Immediately after, the ice dragon flapped its wings grandly and ascended in one go. The ice ceiling was approaching in the blink of an eye, but just before they crashed the ceiling melted and a hole opened, a cylinder pillar was created there.

The ice dragon didn't drop its speed at all and charged into that path.

The sound of cutting wind resounded in their ears and chilly wind caressed their skin, "The only dragon who master can ride is just me… does master want to change rides[even now?" while enjoying such nonsense from a certain someone, they soared inside the ice tunnel for ten-odd seconds. The ice dragon Hajime and the rest rode finally flew into the visible light of the surface.

They were thinking whether they would be let down on the ground right after that, but the ice dragon didn't show any sign of stopping

at all and continued to climb into sky. And then without stopping it charged into the cloudy sky of the Shunee Snowfield. *Boba!* With such sound, the dragon flew out and it began to elegantly soar above the cloud sea while being brilliantly illuminated by the sun.

“From the position of the sun we are heading to the northwest. … It seems that it is kindly sending us until the border of the snow field.”

“… Nn. Miledi and Meiru should follow this example.”

“I get the feeling that the female camp of the liberator is just unscrupulous.”

The west of the snowfield was the territory of the devil, at the north was Raisen’s Grand Canyon, at the east was Haltina’s Sea of Trees. Advancing at the northwest like this meant that they would be let down at a place where it would be easy to go to the devil territory or to the north continent. Furthermore, they didn’t really feel the cold air of the sky, so it seemed a simple barrier was spread from the intermediary of the ice dragon.

Indeed, they wanted to be spared from getting tossed out into the snowfield of extreme cold after conquering the great labyrinth, but after thinking about the deed of a part of the liberators, “Such consideration!” this made Hajime and others a bit emotionally moved like that.

And then Shia’s guess was surely not mistaken. A woman who was an expert in irritating people, a woman who tossed them into the sea while saying it was a shortcut, a woman who forcefully made people love cockroaches… surely the male liberators in the past was considerably made to go through hardships of this and that which were caused by those women without doubt.

While thinking of such a thing, the ice dragon was gradually beginning to lower its altitude. It appeared they had approached near the landing place. Perhaps the ice dragon couldn’t go out of the snowfield, it seemed that it wouldn’t go through the sky and brought them outside the boundary, it once more plunged into the cloudy sky.

And then it softly landed on a spot that was just a stone throw from the boundary. Hajime and others reflexively said a polite thanks to it. The ice dragon shook its tail as though to say not to mind it and once more it soared and vanished inside the snowfield.

Even while thinking gloomily about the snowfield that covered their sight, the boundary of the snowfield was just right there so Hajime and others moved with quick steps.

But, at that time, Hajime's senses and Shia's rabbit ears caught something. The eyes of the two narrowed dangerously.

"Everyone, be on guard. Various things are happening outside the boundary."

Hajime's caution made nervousness run through them. Everyone held their weapon in hand while coming out at the other side of the blizzard that blocked their sight.

Over there was…

"As expected you all are coming out from here. It's the same like my time… And, has every one of you conquered the labyrinth? Oh, white-haired young man."

"Fufu, Kouki-kun. Long time no see. Are you healthy?"

A white dragon that was two-sizes bigger and Freed that was riding above it, a lot of monsters that were mainly grey dragons, Eri who spread wings of gray magic power, and then, there must be a few hundred of them, many women with the same face growing silver wings 'the apostle of true god'—Nointo, they all were lying in wait.

Arifureta Chapter 153

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/154/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Elementalcobalt did the final edits.

Devil King's Invitation

Surely there were easily a few hundred bodies there. They covered the whole field of vision, a large number of monsters and Nointo. And then, Freed Bagua and Nakamura Eri seemed to be followed by the rest.

The two of them cracked jokes perhaps as an expression of their composure. After giving a backward glance at Kouki and the others, they were at a loss of words from the shock. Hajime narrowed his eyes dangerously. The string of his killing intent had been pulled until just before it snapped, what was left was only releasing the arrow of a sure kill.

Although Freed and his group should have been feeling the abnormal pressure of such a Hajime on their skin, even now, their composure didn't break. There was one reason. Because they were surrounded by 'the apostles of the true god' who had the exact same appearance as the current Kaori.

Inside his heart, 'As expected how unpleasant. What a bunch that are like cockroaches.' Hajime spat out that curse, but Kaori had the same appearance with the Nointo and twitched with a start,

perhaps from a woman's instinct. Hajime quietly averted his thinking to search for a way to annihilate the enemy.

Previously, a mortal combat unfolded when Hajime faced one Nointo, but in the present, the spec of his body and weapons were raised using sublimation magic, so if it was one on one he should be able to finish Nointo without even using 'Limit Break'. He didn't feel like he'd lose even if he had to take on a large number of them at the same time.

Hajime exchanged glances with Yue and the others at his side for an instant. Now, when they were just about to release their killing intent to follow the saying of 'victory goes to the one who makes the first move'. As though to beat them to the punch, Freed opened his mouth once more.

"Don't be so rash. Right now, I don't have the intention of indulging myself in killing each other with you. Though I greatly wished for you to grovel on the ground and beg for your life."

"Hee, then, what are you coming for? I thought that you fell to despair toward the incompetent god who can only throw a tantrum and decided on suicide, though?"

Hearing Hajime's ridiculing tone, Freed's eyebrows twitched in reaction.

What Hajime said as 'incompetent god' was, of course, referring to the god Ehito. With Nointo's presence here, Hajime's conjecture previously——that Ehito didn't differentiate the race, that he was the god of every race and how they all were his toy. And then, the god that the devil race worshiped was perhaps Ehito himself falsifying his name or possibly Ehito's underling——seemed to be spot on.

And for how much Freed understood about that truth…

"… I won't be provoked by that. This too is for the command my lord bestowed to me. I am merely executing that command."

"Is that so. And? Loyal dog Freed, what kind of present(command)

you got?”

“… My generous lord will shut his eyes even toward the shameless acts of all of you. He is inviting you to his castle. We are the greeting for that. This impossible fortune for you to be able to have an audience with that honored person. You can tremble on your legs with excitement.”

“Haa?”

Freed’s state showed quietness that they had never seen until now. It was unclear what he was thinking. While putting on a particularly expressionless face, Freed informed them of his words using a voice without intonation. Hearing Freed like that, Hajime unintentionally leaked out a taken aback voice. In various meanings, there was a lot of points that he could retort at. Even Yue and the others at his side sent Freed doubtful gazes.

“That Ehito guy or Aruv something is a god, right? Why is he in a castle, huh?”

Anyway, for the time being, Hajime asked about the most questionable thing. Toward that, Freed answered that question with a bland tone, however as though to show what an extremely great honor it was, he spread both his arms like an actor standing on the stage.

“Aruv-sama is certainly a god——he is the retainer of Ehito-sama… but at the same time, he is also the king of us the devil race——he is also the devil king. He manifested from the divine world into this dirty world, passing through a long time, he handed down guidance to us the devil race for the sake of a great objective.”

It appeared the true identity of the devil king was the god itself that was called as ‘Aruv-sama’. Also, the truth of how the devil king equals Aruv-sama seemed to be a hidden matter that was known only to an extremely limited number of people. Freed expressed joy that couldn’t be hidden because he was included in that really small number of people. From his way of speaking, it seemed he knew it only very recently, though…

“… Great objective, huh. Then, how much is the devil race is being made to dance, I wonder.”

“What are you saying?”

“No? I’m praising the devil king-sama here just how awesome he is yeah.” (TN: The way they call the devil king here is using maou. But sometimes Hajime is also called using that word maou, so I’m using devil king to call this king of the devil race while to refer Hajime I’ll use demon king.)

“…”

Freed who was sharp-eared noticed Hajime’s murmur, but he responded with a shrug and a frivolous reply. As expected, he got irritated and his temple twitched convulsively.

But, there with a tone even more frivolous than Hajime, Eri opened her mouth feeling that the situation was troublesome.

“Hey, Freed. Don’t just keep prattling on and on, finish it quickly. After all, I want to quickly pass sweet time with Kouki-kun seee.”

“… I know.”

It appeared that Freed did not think well of Eri. He clicked his tongue while fixing his collar as though to gather himself. And then just when he was about to say something, a desperate voice from Suzu raised to interrupt him.

“Eri-! Suzu is-… that-, with Eri-“

“Hm? Whaaat, Suzu? You are carefree like usual huh… no, you don’t seem to be like that, I guess? What? I wonder if you want to vent your pent-up feelings? Well, if you want to cry then you can just cry as you like, can’t you? For me, it doesn’t matter thoughhh”

“Yo, you are wrong-. Suzu is just, wanting to speak with Eri one more time!”

Eri looked down while chuckling at Suzu with her hand waving as though to drive away a dog, to that Suzu spoke desperately while

her words got choppy. However, her words couldn't be formed skillfully in this too sudden reunion with the one she wanted to reunite with.

To such a Suzu, as though to show that she didn't have interest, Eri averted her gaze. Seeing that, Kouki finally returned to his senses and asked about Eri's bizarre appearance with a hoarse voice.

"E, Eri… that appearance, what's with that?"

Eri who was talked to by Kouki showed a full smile that was different compared to when she talked with Suzu. Although it was a warped smile that made one felt faint coldness somewhere in it.

"Kouki-kun! How is it? It's lovely, right? You see, Maou-sama gives me a new power seeee. Because even though I just want to live sweetly with just Kouki-kun only the two of us, there are a lot of shitheads that become a hindrance even for just such a meager wish. It's fine! The trash that bothers Kouki-kun, allll of them will be cleaned up by me okayyy! We are going to live together just the two of us foorever and eeeeeeever, okayy."

"E, Eri…"

Eri cackled while rotating in circles in the air with a feverish tone and an expression plain to see. The gray wings growing on her back weren't even black or white. They gave off a dirty impression as they flapped together with Eri's motion, scattering gray feathers everywhere. The gray feathers dancing down in flutters fell on the ground, and then the touched spots instantly disintegrated.

Without any doubt that was the same disintegration ability as Nointo.

"Don't tell me, just like Kaori… no, that's Eri's body… you were given only the ability?"

Shizuku who was glaring silently at Eri frowned while considering the situation.

But, before she could obtain the answer, *gyaki!* an ominous sound resounded. It was the sound of Hajime's partner being readied that

everyone had heard so many times.

“Anyway, it’s okay to slaughter them, all right?”

“… Nn. There is no reason to accept the invitation.”

“Blow them away and finish this desuu!”

“… As expected, with this many people having the same face lined up, even though I understand they are not me, it’s still eerie.”

“But, their way of inviting art too poor. To be this manner less, they hath to be chastised just a bit.”

At the same time Yue, Shia, Kaori, and Tio, the four of them were also showing intent to attack. Yue and Tio raised their hand straight up, Shia shouldered her Doryukken, and Kaori spread her silver wings with a flap.

Hajime’s killing intent was naturally directed at Eri too. Her grating cackling voice in the ear and ugly warped expression were getting on his nerves. The wish of Suzu was in a corner of his head, so thinking that at the very least he was going to pulverize her four limbs, he aimed Donner’s muzzle. Schlag was aimed at Freed.

But, just before the triggers were pulled, something silver was generated in front of Eri and Freed like a shield. In front of the dubious Hajime and others, the silver thing had noise that ran through and warped like jelly for a moment before it projected the scenery of somewhere.

A space magic. ‘Hermit Mirror’ ——a magic to projects in space the scenery of the faraway place.

What was projected in the hermit mirror were several impressive pillars standing, red carpet spread on the floor in a large hall. From there the camera changed its viewpoint and the image moved.

What they could begin to see was a place like an altar with a throne put there. As expected the projected place was a castle ——furthermore it was likely the audience hall of the devil king castle. High ceiling, various beautiful designs, and furnishings that

were created in detail, all those projected the dignity of the devil king across the screen. The image further moved toward the side of the throne.

And then what began to appear was a large cage made from dark gray metal wrapped in shining reddish black magic power. Naturally, something was imprisoned inside it…

"… Fuck"

Dirty word reflexively flew out from Hajime's mouth. At the same time, Yue and others also made an expression that seemed like they were chewing a hundred bitter bugs. The people who were especially greatly shaken were as expected Kouki and others in the group summoned from an alternate world.

"Everyone… sensei-!"

"Even Lily-"

Kaori and Shizuku yelled with tone colored by uneasiness.

Correct, just as the two said, the cage inside the image was imprisoning their classmates, Aiko, and then princess Liliana who were supposed to be in the Hairihi kingdom.

Aiko and Liliana were among the students where most of them were hugging their knees with uneasy expressions. They were desperately nursing several students who were powerlessly lying down. Looking carefully, those collapsed students seemed to be the party member of Nagayama. Other than them, even a member of Ai-chan guard party Tamai Atsushi was also crouching with an expression distorted in pain, although she was not as bad as Nagayama's party.

Hajime immediately took out the 'Compass of Guidance' and searched for Aiko's whereabouts.

"Chih, they are the real thing…"

"Hou, you have a really interesting item huh, young man. For a probing artifact, I'm feeling a really strong power from it. Can you ascertain the whereabouts of your important comrades with that?"

The compass was pointing at a point to the south continent. It showed that Aiko was undoubtedly at the devil king castle of the devil race. Hajime who was convinced that it wasn't a faked image clicked his tongue. Freed who was showing interest at the compass was for the first time since they arrived here was obviously displaying his emotions. In his words, there was a lot of sense of superiority put there.

From Hajime's attitude, Kaori and others also guessed that the image on the screen was the real thing and their expression turned bitter. And then in this kind of time, the first one to howl was Kouki. Kouki raised his voice in rage.

"You coward-! What invitation with you taking our comrades hostage-! Return everyone right now-!"

"Ahahah, as expected from Kouki-kun! You are straightforwardly kind, aren't youuu. You are so serious even for those trashes, I'm falling in love with you all over againnn."

"Eri, don't screw around. There is nothing for you by doing this kind of thing! Return back everyone, you too also come back to us!"

"Aaahn, you said come back to meee. Are you planning to kill me in agony?"

"Eri-"

"Kufufu, wait a bit –kayy. Sooon, I will make Kouki-kun into only my Kouki-kun, okayyy."

Kouki's yell didn't reach Eri at all. In a glance, it looked like a conversation but it wasn't one at all. For Eri 'the Kouki inside Eri' was something fixed. Only Kouki who was convenient for herself was her Kouki. That distortedness seemed to have become even worse even compared to the betrayal of that day.

Kouki who understood that his words didn't reach gritted his teeth while his gaze returned at Freed. And then the moment when he was about to argue further…

DOPAN! DOPAN!

“-!?”

A familiar gunshot interrupted him. Two streaks of crimson flashes soared straight at Freed and Eri. The flashes were going to instantly blast a part of Eri’s body and Freed’s skull, however, two Nointo cut in with afterimage left behind them and blocked the bullets with their large swords.

Different from before, a large crack entered the large sword with one attack. If there was one more shot the sword would break, but it didn’t change the fact that the attack was stopped. Hajime who irritatedly scowled was going to pull the triggers further.

“Do.. don’t! Wait! Please, wait, Nagumo-kun…“

The one who hindered that was Suzu. Her small body reached straight at Hajime’s arm in a tackle. Hajime didn’t even twitch with something like Suzu’s weight, but looking at her dangling on his arm with a desperate expression and voice averted Hajime’s attention for a moment.

In that opening, even while trickling with cold sweat, Freed barely kept his expression unchanged with an opened mouth.

“… This madman. Are you not valuing the lives of your comrades?”

“Hah, you forgot already how I blew away your prided comrades before this in the same situation? Obediently following you will only get us all killed anyway. After all, your self-proclaimed god seems to desire to see my painful death, isn’t it?”

“You are saying, that in that case, you will survive just by yourself even by abandoning your comrades?”

“Don’t make me say this repeatedly. Those guys aren’t my comrades or anything. Besides…”

Fearless smile and beastly glaring eyes were directed at Freed. Toward Freed who instinctively took a step back on the back of the white dragon Uranos, Hajime declared as though to say that his words were exactly the common sense of this world…

“Even if I accepted the invitation after slaughtering you all, there won’t be any problem, right?”

Incidentally, if it was an invitation to the devil king castle then they would need one or two presents. Hajime laughed while making a gesture of slitting his neck. Everyone understood that he was saying he was going to bring the heads of Freed and others as the present. Kouki and others made shuddering expression thinking that the way of thinking of this guy was exactly that of a devil king.

Hearing that really arrogant way of talking, also feeling rage toward himself for stepping back even slightly toward such a Hajime, Freed’s expression distorted for an instant although he immediately smoothed over his face and lifted the corner of his lips with a scoff.

“How high-spirited. In front of this many apostle-sama I cannot think of you as sane but… on this occasion, how about I put out one more card.”

“Aa?”

Giving a glance at the doubtful Hajime, Freed changed the viewpoint of the screen that projected Aiko and others. It seemed that besides the cage imprisoning Aiko and others, there was one more cage. It had the same build, but that cage was quite small-sized was something to imprison one or two people.

And then, the moment the people imprisoned inside there was projected,

———

Sound vanished from the world.

An abnormal killing intent to the degree that made everyone hallucinated like that was covering the whole area in the surrounding.

Those who could recognize that sound vanished were those in the classification as a strong person. After all the killing intent——or possibly it should be called as demonic intent already, against the torrent of that terrifying presence, in order for their instinct as a

living thing to preserve their mind, the monsters that were Freed's subordinates immediately had their consciousness shutdown and fainted.

Even Suzu who was clinging to Hajime's arm felt that her consciousness was going far away while flopping down on the ground. She bit hard on her lips and somehow maintained her consciousness with that pain.

"-————yo, you bastard, don't you care, about what's going to happen to those fish imitations-"

Freed was putting his awareness at his breathing that felt like it would stop anytime while giving off warnings with a warped expression. He already didn't have any leisure to dress up any calmness.

'Fish imitation'——the two silhouettes that Freed called like that as well as the reason that drastically changed Hajime's presence were… Myuu and Remia.

At the center of the cage, the two were tightly hugging each other to confirm each other's existence. They couldn't hide their uneasy expressions, but even so, they stout-heartedly observed their surroundings without showing a tear.

Hajime had made preparation before they left Erisen so that not even the smallest chance could hurt Myuu and Remia. Artifact to isolate and hide the presences of the two and a detection artifact to warn Hajime in the case the enemy appeared were left there. Barrier artifacts to buy time were also set at the city of Erisen and Myuu's house. Hajime didn't spend six days there just for show.

But, none of those was effective and Myuu and Remia were kidnapped. The preposterous strength of Hajime's artifacts and his bond with Myuu, without knowing those two things this was something impossible to happen. It was also something that no one would even think to carry out, to begin with.

In other words, there was only one person who could arrive at such idea and kidnapped the two with the perfect setup.

Hajime's gaze slowly flowed at Eri piercingly.

"____-"

A presence that penetratingly invaded until the depth of the mind was crawling all over Eri's skin. Eri's body was shuddering with chills, her body temperature that was rapidly lowering naturally made her breathing disordered.

Afer Hajime pierced such Eri with his gaze for a few moments, his gaze moved quietly as though she was just a stone at the roadside. Immediately, Eri staggered in the air as though she was just released from a binding.

Regardless of being the source of the inhuman demonic intent, as though it was just a lie, Hajime's eyes turned calm and even looked sleepy, that mismatched strange gaze moved at Freed once more. And then, his mouth opened with a calm voice as expected.

"… I'll accept the invitation."

"Wha, what?"

With the demonic intent still gushing out without change, the words that were let out from Hajime's mouth made Freed's expression turn bewildered.

"… I said that I'm accepting the invitation. Lead us on quickly."

"-… Hmph, you should have said that right from the beginning."

At the same time with the repeated words, the demonic intent was gradually settling down. Even while breathing in disarray, Freed made a sneer with an expression that recovered his calmness. Like that he jolted awake the fainted swarm of gray dragons with metamorphosis magic while beginning to chant the spell to open the gate toward the devil king castle.

While giving a glance at Eri besides Freed who was similarly drenched with a large amount of sweat while breathing roughly and Kouki and the others who were released from their stiffened body, Yue tilted her head while looking up at Hajime.

“… Is it fine?”

“… Yeah. If we know the place then we can use crystal keys to connect the space, but the time lag is too long. Besides, the other side should know too that we are in possession of space transfer power.”

“Perhaps, they have to make a countermeasure, won’t they?”

“It’s troubling that there is a worst case. Unlike sensei-dono and the others, Myuu and Remia art not able to buy the time to compensate for that time lag with their own strength after all.”

Just as Tio said, if they felt like it, they could use a crystal key and the compass and teleport accurately to the devil king castle where Aiko and others were captured.

But, because it was a concept magic there would be a time lag created no matter what until the magic was invoked, for the enemy side who knew that Hajime and compnay possessed space magic, it was unthinkable that they would miss that opening time lag.

Even so, if it was just Aiko and others, they were a cheat group so perhaps they would be able to endure and pull through that time lag using their specs. For that reason, Hajime chose an annihilation battle tactic before, but Myuu and Remia whose fighting strength was nonexistence… in addition, they were courteously entered into another cage, then the story was different.

Thinking about the worst case, Hajime wanted to refrain from the forceful method.

“… Now, I’ll guide you to the location of our lord. Don’t worry, if you don’t make any mistake then surely you will be able to touch those half-assed living things once more. Although it’s hard to understand just what is good for those filthy living things.”

Freed completed the gate and at the other side of the connected space, there were a large terrace and townscape below visible. It appeared that they didn’t teleport directly at the audience hall where Aiko and others were at, the gate was opened at the outside

of the upper level of the castle.

Most likely the inside of the castle had a barrier spread to forbid intrusion. Even if it was an ally there was no doubt that they would be unable to directly teleport in. Thinking about the defense of the devil king castle was only a natural measure.

Freed's expression became disappointed looking at Hajime who proceeded to the gate while ignoring all of Freed's mocking words, then he seemed to notice something and opened his mouth.

"That's right. Young man, before moving on let's have you take off your weapons."

"…"

Toward Hajime who was merely returning a silent gaze, Freed finally couldn't hide his joy from standing in a superior position and repeated his words with sneer mixed in them.

"Are you listening? I told you to quickly take off your weapons. Aa, also, let's have you wear this shackle to seal your magic power."

The shackle that looked like handcuff was taken out with clinking sound, it greatly resembled the one that was once put on Aiko and Kouki and others. Even though Freed dressed up this as an invitation, yet the treatment was completely like a prisoner.

Perhaps because there was the threat of hostage, Freed sneered understanding that. He had the air like a religious fanatic since before this, but until now he didn't seem like someone with a petty personality. Perhaps the repeated defeat had distorted his personality. Possibly there was something after the invasion of the royal capital that deepened the degree of his fanaticism and he lost all restraint…

In any case, Hajime's reply was decided.

"I refuse."

"… What did you say?"

“Don’t make me say it the second time. I said I refuse.”

Those words of Hajime without any enthusiasm made Freed’s expression turn taken aback for a moment, but in the next moment, he directed a gaze as though he was looking at something that was hard to understand.

“… Are you unable to understand your position? You all have no right to refuse. If you don’t stay quiet and follow what you are told, that ugly mother and daughter——” “Don’t get carried away.” “-… What did you say?”

The clichéd speech that was threatening to harm Myuu and Remia if Hajime didn’t obey was interrupted in the middle and Freed raised his eyes, a calm voice then reached him.

“Do you think if you take Myuu and Remia hostage, then everything of me is sealed? Understand this. The card you used, is a double-edged sword.”

“Double-edged sword… you say”

From Hajime, there wasn’t any demonic intent or even killing intent like before. Far from that, he didn’t even let out a speck of magic power, naturally, he also wasn’t using ‘Coercion’.

Nevertheless, when they noticed the white dragon Uranos had slightly backed away, even Freed himself who was riding on its back noticed how his hand was trembling in small shivers. Just what in the world… without even any time to question that, Hajime’s words were spoken.

As always, it was a calm voice without a drop of anger or hate that could be felt from it, it was like the robotic voice of Nointo, but without regarding ally or enemy the voice was accompanied with reverberation that caused gooseflesh to form on his back.

“The reason that all of you are still alive is also thanks to Myuu and Remia. … Just try putting even a single wound towards the two of them. … Children, woman, old men, noble or the poor, there won’t be any distinction, the race called the devil… I’ll make them

extinct.”

“_____“

Freed gulped. Surrounded by hundreds of ‘the apostles of true god’ at the surrounding, and his lord was a living god, he should have rejected Hajime’s words as impossible and merely a nonsense that would bring no problem at all. But, he felt a strange power that was hard to comprehend in that toneless voice and even for just a moment the thinking of ‘he might be able to do it’ flashed in his mind.

“I don’t know what is your objective that you do something like inviting us, but I have no intention to ride into enemy’s main base bare handed. After all, like that perhaps everything will be over without us unable to do anything. Rather than falling into a situation like that, rampaging around in sink or swim is still better.”

“… You are saying you are abandoning that mother and daughter?”

“I’m not abandoning them. However, I’m only thinking that losing my weapons here will be related to abandoning them.”

A scene that often appeared in the story was one where the main characters had hostages taken and they threw away their weapon just like they were told, but Hajime didn’t choose that. He thought that it was out of the question for the helping side to be made powerless for the sake of temporary safety. Like that would only cause everyone to be done in at the end.

Therefore, in that kind of time, Hajime would choose to annihilate the opponent even if the hostage wouldn’t come out of it with all their limbs intact. As long as the hostage alive then they could be healed. Then the way to kill the opponent with certainty was rational. The intense preparedness that wouldn’t submit to irrationality inside Hajime made him like that.

Of course, that was something awfully misaligned from common sense, in some way that choice could also be called as wrongdoing. After all, the maximum consideration and carefulness were demanded in the liberation of a hostage. Normally, it was

unreasonable to think that it would be okay as long as the hostage didn't die.

Not to mention, if it was about someone that was an extremely important existence for themselves, it was normal for someone to hesitate and throw away their logic and belief.

"… As expected, you are mad."

Therefore, the feeling that Freed harbored was such a thing. Just when he took the initiative as the attacker and stood in the superior position, the opponent would abandon their base and came attacking instead. Furthermore, the basis of that action was which one would be able to annihilate their opponent first. It was a chicken race like that. Indeed, it couldn't be helped that Freed doubted Hajime's sanity.

Although in this case, there was a lot of bluffing factor included inside Hajime's words. For Hajime, he didn't think for even a little bit of wishing Myuu to be wounded. If possible, he wanted to take her back unharmed. For that reason, as much as possible he wouldn't tolerate being separated from his weapons.

Therefore, he caused the opponent to have the impression of 'I don't know what he will do if he is poorly cornered too much' and tried to forcefully keep his card. Hajime had already shown a portion of that impression in front of Freed, so Hajime thought that the possibility he could have his way was high. But for argument's sake, he was also thinking about what to do in the case that this was no good.

"Then, while that madman is still not lining up a lump of woman and children meat of your fellow race in front of you, quickly take us in front of Myuu's location."

"…"

Freed couldn't answer. He understood that Hajime wouldn't yield, but to take an enemy in front of his lord while they were still armed was something hard to be pardoned as a pious servant.

Speaking the truth, the devil king Aruv told him to use the hostage to bring them to him, but he didn't give any instruction to Freed regarding the details like weapons or binding. Aruv wouldn't mind it even if Hajime was armed.

In other words, the demand for disarmament was Freed's own decision using his common sense, but as expected, honestly nodding at Hajime's demand was a cause for hesitation.

There a Nointo, the 'apostle of the true god' who didn't say a word until now cut in.

"… Freed. Stop this unproductive matter. That person won't mind this kind of triviality. Rather he will even think that this will be good entertainment. Also, as long as we are standing by, there is not even the slightest chance he can do anything. The binding for the irregular is enough with the very existences of us."

"Kuh, however…"

Giving a glance at Freed who was still balking, Nointo faced Hajime with exactly the same voice and expression like when she faced him before.

"My name is called 'Ahat'. Irregular, the analysis of the data of your battle with Nointo is already finished. Don't think that you can win the battle with us for the second time."

'Therefore, if you want to bring a weapon then just bring it', it seemed that she was implicitly telling him that. Looking carefully, the 'apostle of the true god' with the same appearance like Nointo introducing herself as Ahat, her eyes looked slightly shaken. Perhaps it was just his feeling, but to Hajime, it was something that looked like hostility or perhaps hatred.

'Don't think that you can win the battle with us for the second time'——those words weren't something from a simple doll, perhaps it was filled with more intense emotion.

But such thing didn't matter for Hajime. And so, he quietly turned his gaze away and headed toward the gate with cold eyes. It was

clear that he was telling them to hurry and guide him.

Freed scowled at that arrogant attitude, but with the addition of the pressing from Ahat, he shook his head in annoyance and slipped through the gate.

Hajime and others followed from behind.

At that time, the only one who noticed Hajime's hand shining for an instance was only Yue who was beside him.

The large terrace that the gate was connected to had the space almost as big as a school rooftop, even with all of them stepping into there was still some space left. Nevertheless, that was also only after the gray dragons and the majority of the apostles flew to the sky.

The gray dragons flew up right after they came out, the apostles also went away somewhere leaving behind only ten of them. The ones remaining surrounded Hajime and others alertly.

At the same time with the gate behind them closing, Freed silently pointed his chin to urge them to follow him. Hajime also followed him silently.

"Kouki-kun, that monster was terrifying you knowww, console meee."

"E, Eri-, you…"

Right after they began to walk, Eri took Kouki's arm and she hugged him while beginning to prattle about such jests. Even though she had betrayed them and now she was taking their classmates hostage again, she didn't look apologetic at all and grinned widely while pressing her body close to Kouki.

She didn't even give attention to Shizuku and the others around her. She also completely ignored Suzu who called her. Shizuku and Ryuutaro were directing gazes overflowing with wariness, but they didn't try to stop her. They judged that right now it was better to not quarrel imprudently.

Eri was glued to Kouki, her mouth approached his ear, her breath was blowing into his ear and she whispered something with a face that looked in heat. Looking at her like that was unbearable but even Kouki was distracted thinking about his classmates and didn't forcibly shake her off.

Like that, they walked through the long corridor made from stone crossing several corners, and then at the place they reached there was a large door filled to the brim with the dignity that was worthy of an entrance that was connected to the audience room of the devil king castle. Perhaps to show the authority, there was a globe that appeared to be symbolizing the sun. A design that depicted several pillars of light pouring down from that sun was engraved there.

Freed sent a sign to the devil race standing in front of the door with his gaze. Thereupon that devil race quietly held his hand to a part of the door. Right after that, a heavy sound reverberated and the door opened to the left and right.

Behind the door, the scenery that Freed displayed using 'Hermit Mirror' spread out, ahead of the red carpet they could see a spot that looked like an altar and an extravagant throne. Just like the image, at the side of the throne, there should be cages set behind the large pillar.

Repressing their hot-blooded hearts, they approached toward the empty throne. And scenery exactly like the image they had seen was there.

It appeared that the figures of Hajime and others were also visible from the other side. The classmates opened their eyes wide, Aiko and Liliana who also noticed the door open gulped loudly in surprise.

Their expression were slightly clouded seeing how Hajime and others were surrounded by apostles, but looking at Hajime, who had a corner of his mouth lift in a smile for the first time since coming here, the two began to get teary eyes from deep emotions. And then, when they were just about to call Hajime's name with a maidenly expression that was obviously filled with special feeling…

“Papaa——!!”

“Dear!!”

The mother and daughter Myuu and Remia preceded them. And then, putting aside Myuu’s ‘papa’, just what was with Remia’s ‘dear’? Such dangerous gazes from the two which contained that question went back and forth from Remia and Hajime.

Ignoring the two who were unable to know about time and place? Hajime’s eyes gently slackened.

“Myuu, Remia. Sorry, you two got dragged into this. Wait there. I’ll get you two out immediately.”

“Papa… Myuu is fine. I waited believing in papa. That’s why, don’t lose to the bad people!”

“My my, Myuu… Hajime-san. We are fine so please be careful.”

Even though she was unable to hide her unease, the moment Hajime appeared, Myuu made a full smile and felt relief from the bottom of her heart. Looking at such a Myuu, Remia who was also concerned made an 180 to Hajime’s calm atmosphere.

Freed was about to open his mouth to warn so they didn’t make a racket as they pleased, but just before he could do that a voice resounded from behind the throne.

“No matter what age, it still looks beautiful, the bond between parent and child. I understand because I also have experienced it. Although in my case, it was a relation between a niece and uncle you see.”

The wall behind the throne slid open. From there who came out was a golden haired and crimson eyed good looking man. His age was past middle-aged. He was wearing jet black clothes and mantle with good quality and golden embroidery worked on the sleeves, and his hairstyle was all combed back. Several strands of his blonde hair were dangling forward and the slightly opened shirt on his chest drafting off a strange sex appeal.

Although what he drafted off wasn't only sex appeal. He also gave off the presence of youthful strength and the weight of a veteran. There was constant charisma in him that attracted those watching him. In all probability, this must be the devil king. And then, this was the guy introducing himself as the god 'Aruv-sama'.

Hajime wordlessly narrowed his eyes at the devil king that appeared while smiling gently. And then he was about to open his mouth but similar like Freed someone beat him to the punch. However, that wasn't by the devil king ahead of his gaze, but it was by the shell-shocked voice at his side.

"… Li, es… how can…"

"Yue?"

Yes, not even noticing at Hajime's call, she was leaking out a hoarse voice as though seeing something impossible with a greatly shaken state, it was Yue. Her eyes were opened wide, piercing straight at the devil king.

Hajime was about to call once more at Yue whose state was obviously abnormal, but then he was attacked by a strange déjà vu. Yue's golden hair and crimson eyes. Those were…

"Yaa, Aleytia (□□□). It has been a long time, hasn't it? As always, you are so small and cute."

The words said to Yue by the devil king that interrupted Hajime's thought, those were filled with an affection that was really unthinkable for a first meeting. There, Hajime also noticed. The appearance of the devil king, compared to her beloved lover had a similarity somewhere.

Hajime murmured 'Don't tell me' inside his heart. That conjecture which he couldn't put into words was proved as correct by a word of Yue.

"… Oji-sama…" (TN: Oji = uncle)

Arifureta Chapter 154

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/155/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Surprised by this release. Bakapervert wanted to see the rest of this series finish, especially as we approach the finale, so he's helping with editing. We will probably be releasing twice a week until the main story is finished.

P.S. Sorry about last Sunday's release. I finished the editting now.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. He also did the edits.

Is it Lie, or Truth (Beginning)

"…Oji, sama…"

Yue's hoarse voice resounded. Her eyes were opened unusually wide, her small and slender hands were shaking in small trembles as though expressing the agitation inside her heart.

Normally it was an impossible situation for her to not notice Hajime's call to her, it showed just how deeply she was agitated.

Giving a glance at Hajime and the others who were evidently shocked looking at Yue's condition, the golden-haired red eyed devil king smiled really gently while once more addressing Yue with the unfamiliar name.

"That's right. It's me. Aleytia. Looks like you are surprised. …That's

understandable. But, that look of yours is nostalgically lovely. You haven't changed at all since three hundred years ago."

A smiling devil king. Yue took a step back, perhaps finally perceiving that the person there was her uncle. And then, just when she was about to say something with her trembling lips, the apostle Acht opened her mouth as though to beat her to the punch.

"Aruv-sama?"

Acht called at the devil king with an expression that was like a mask, however, her intonation was clearly questioning. From that indication, it was as though the devil king's attitude toward Yue was an unexpected situation for her. And it wasn't just the apostles, even Freed was similarly making a slightly questioning look.

Hearing that call, the devil king faintly smiled and suddenly he lifted his hand. …Toward Acht and others, the apostles of god.

The next moment, light of magic power that resembled Yue's exploded like a flashbang grenade, instantly everything was drowned in light. That light then was absorbed back into Denreed's hand as though in a playback, after that the figures of the apostles crumbling down like a machine that had its electricity cut off became visible.

Furthermore, as though it was an afterthought, Freed and Eri also fell down. Kouki who was beside Eri was dumbfounded by the sudden situation, he was only staring at Eri fixedly without even a twitch.

In front of Yue and others who were dumbfounded by the sudden event, the devil king released a sigh 'fuu' as though he had just gone through a really nerve wrecking situation, next he lifted his thrust out hand over his head and snapped his tongue, invoking some kind of technique.

What was reflected in Hajime's magic eye stone was a golden barrier spreading in a dome shape. However, its purpose seemed as though it had a slightly different effect compared to the normal barrier.

“This is a barrier for deceiving interception and surveillance. It’s something to show different voice and scene that I prepared. With this, the apostles outside this place won’t notice what is happening here.”

“…What are you planning?”

Hajime silently narrowed his eyes at this speech and conduct done by a person who seemed to be hostile toward the apostles while asking back.

“Nagumo Hajime-kun, isn’t it? Your vigilance is reasonable. That’s why let me say this frankly without beating around the bush. I am the current devil king of the devil kingdom Garland, and the prime minister of the former vampire kingdom Avatar——Denreed Gardia Wesperitirio Avatar…a person who rebels against god.”

The words that were said with the majesty as the devil king reverberated inside the wide audience hall dignifiedly. Those words carried the power that made the people in this place hearing them think that they were said seriously.

All the members other than Hajime gulped at the shocking truth. Who would ever think that the king of the devil race that opposed the human race was a rebel against god, such thing was unthinkable even in their dream. Their reaction was only natural.

Among them, Suzu who just managed to return to her senses yelled “Eri-” while trying to dash at her, but she was stopped by Kouki’s hand. His hand touched the nape of the neck of the fainting Eri and he felt her pulse, then he nodded while smiling that there was nothing to worry about. It appeared that Eri only lost her consciousness. Looking at Suzu patting her chest in a relieved sigh, Denreed spoke an apology “Sorry to make you uneasy.”

Incidentally, regarding the apostles, they had their function suspended. Freed and others had their body function suspended——to put it another way, they were in a temporary death state.

In addition, with the ‘devil king’s apology’, among everyone who

was lost for words from the sequence of events, Hajime's gaze was sweeping at his surroundings while he was about to press the question at Denreed about his true intentions. But, at that time a yelling voice suddenly resounded. It was a voice that sounded like it was desperately trying to deny something.

"Lies…there is no way that's true-. Den-ojisama was a normal vampire! Indeed, he was exceptionally strong, but he wasn't a true ancestor like me! There is no way that Oji-sama, that Denreed is still alive."

"Aleytia…. You are shaken, aren't you? Even so…that's only natural. Although it was something necessary, I had done something horrible to you. If such a person suddenly appeared in front of your eyes, it would be stranger if you weren't shaken."

"Don't call me Aleytia-! Don't pretend that you are Oji-sama-!"

Denreed smiled sadly toward Yue who was in an agitated state that even Hajime had never seen. Perhaps getting rubbed the wrong way even by such an attitude, Yue pushed her hand out with seething killing intent. Tremendous magic power was bursting out from her body.

Although she had accepted the possibility of the difference in her memory inside the Ice and Snow Cavern, even so, the man in front of her eyes was the one who had locked her in the depth of darkness for a long three hundred years. It was the person who had betrayed her who had given him immense trust. There was no way she could be so easily convinced.

To say nothing of how that person who should have died to suddenly appear in front of her eyes, talking intimately, affectionately at her with the look that didn't change at all from three hundred years ago. Her heart was churning like a sea that was hit directly by a typhoon.

Following an impulse that she didn't even understand herself, Yue launched a lightning dragon. Nervousness ran through the other members at the current situation that was moving suddenly.

However, Denreed only kept smiling. With an attitude that could even be said as composed, once more, he snapped his fingers. At that instant, along the edge of the altar where the throne was located, a wall of light rose up. The lightning dragon that was howling thunderously while approaching Denreed crashed onto that barrier, yet it was unable to destroy the very strong barrier.

Inside the surging lightning, Denreed talked with a gentle voice from the other side of the barrier.

“Aleytia Gardea Wesperiterio Avatar. The most beautiful and wise queen in history, my beloved niece. I am certainly your uncle. I wonder if you remember. That I was a powerful monster user.”

“What are-”

“If it’s the current you then you should understand. Just why the I at that time was that powerful of a monster user.”

“…-, an age of god magic…metamorphosis magic.”

Denreed smiled saying “Good answer”, just like in the past when he watched over Yue’s study. Attacked by déjà vu, Yue’s expression distorted.

“Exactly. To say further, I also obtained regeneration magic. Though unfortunately, my talent in that area is poor, it’s like throwing a pearl before swine. In exchange, I can boast that I am very much talented in metamorphosis magic. I also worked really hard on it. As the result, not only creating monsters, I also became able to perform strengthening on my own body. That’s how I extended my life until now.”

Actually, Hajime had drawn out his railgun and nonchalantly fired under the cover of the lightning dragon, but understanding that the barrier couldn’t be broken through easily, he put his hand on Yue’s shoulder. With that lightning dragon that had bad efficiency and convergence rate incomparable from usual due to her disordered mind, it was only a pointless waste of magic power.

Yue suddenly returned to her senses from the warmth on her

shoulder, she glared once at Denreed with dangerous eyes then dispersed the lightning dragon. She then recovered her calmness in a few minutes before making her question, even so, she didn't hide how her tone became rougher.

"…That day the devil that uses the white dragon, he said that you are a god with the name Aruv. He said that you had led the devil race for a few hundred years until now!"

At the very least Denreed had worked as the prime minister of the vampire kingdom Avatar for more than twenty odd years until Yue was imprisoned, Yue slapped the contradiction with Freed's statement at Denreed.

Even so, Denreed's composure didn't crumble. As though to say that what Yue pointed out was only natural, he calmly answered.

"What Freed said is not mistaken. I am certainly Aruv, at the same time it can also be said that Aruv is not me."

Yue's gaze became severe hearing Denreed answering with something that sounded like Zen philosophy. Denreed smiled wryly at that while continuing his words.

"The existence called Aruv was the retainer god of god Ehito during the age of god. He is someone like a subordinate. At first, Aruv swore loyalty toward god Ehito and became his hands and feet, yet one day, he held a doubt. Is it fine to keep overlooking the inhuman act of god Ehito like this, he thought. A few hundred years, a few thousand years passed while he was holding that doubt which grew largr and before long he grew to hold the intention of rebellion."

Denreed walked around the throne with steady sounds of footsteps. That calm tone for some reason resounded really well despite its volume that wasn't loud at all, even so it didn't make anyone feel discomfort at all.

"But, there is no way he can match god Ehito who is the chief god. Therefore, Aruv formed a plan. That plan is, he would descend to the surface as Ehito's pawn and intensified the war of the people, and as the situation fell into chaos, he would shoulder the role of

devil king——under such pretense, he would then search in the surface for any method and battle strength that could oppose Ehito."

Denreed stopped talking for a moment and opened and closed his hand repeatedly. He was doing that gesture as though to ascertain the sensation while continuing.

"But, a god that doesn't have flesh body, needs a flesh body as a vessel so they can act fully on the surface. Aruv also searched for a person who could become his vessel to reside his soul into that body. Originally, making one's soul reside inside another person's body isn't something easy even for god if the rejection of the body's owner is strong but…if they displayed their existence as god then there won't be anyone rejecting them. After all, it's not like the person's self will disappear, rather it even feels like an honor, right?"

"…Like that, Denreed was also chosen by Aruv?"

"Aruv was mad with joy, you know? If I was merely someone with aptitude, then he would only tell me that he was a retainer god of Ehito, but I knew the truth. I could possibly become a true fellow rebel. Aruv told me his will from inside my body while outside I was under the observation of the apostles. Even now Aruv is inside me, giving me help in various matters. Two souls in one body. That is the meaning of my words that I am Aruv and also not Aruv."

Denreed paused to ascertain whether comprehension had reached Yue and the others while putting his hand on the throne. Seeing that, Yue made a complicated face while asking.

"…Since when?"

"It happened just a little bit before you succeeded the throne. At the same time, even I who was unable to do anything even knowing the truth understood that there was something that I could do. I thought that as my mission."

"…Mission."

“Yes, the mission to overthrow god. Though it was really hard making it so that god Ehito and his apostles wouldn’t catch my true intentions, you see. Thanks to that, I was made to do many things that were not my true intention countless times.”

Denreed smiled asking if there was anything else she wanted to ask, seeing that smile it woke up the memory of the time when he was in the role as her instructor, shaking Yue’s heart. The way he talked and his atmosphere felt like the uncle inside her memory. She began to think that by any chance he might really be alive just like he said.

And then, if that was really the case, there was something that Yue wanted to ask, no, something that Yue had to hear at all cost.

“…Why did you betray our country? Why, I was impri…”

“I’m sorry.”

“-…I don’t want to hear your apology-! The reason-”

Yue yelled at Denreed who was saying words of apology with a mournful expression. Hajime at her side put strength into the hand he put on her shoulder to calm her down. The other members were also directing serious expressions at Denreed without butting into this matter that was related with Yue’s past.

“Aleytia. You were a prodigy, to the degree that no other could possibly catch up to you in the field of magic. Even I who was a user of an age of god magic wasn’t a match against you. This strength was too conspicuous. That was why eyes were attracted to you. Just like Nagumo Hajime who is at your side.”

“…Irregular.”

“That’s right. Aleytia, I wonder if you remember? At that time, the upper echelon of Avatar was already in the process of being dyed by the influence of god Ehito’s faith. That included both your parents too. You should have felt a glimpse of that.”

“…I remember. Oji-sama and Chichi-ue quarreled often regarding my education. …Oji-sama was assigned as my instructor. That was

why I was raised without really getting concerned by the faith." (TN: Chichi-ue is father.)

Denreed nodded back toward the nodding Yue.

"That was because I knew the truth. I didn't have any method to ascertain whether the liberators' words were truth or not, but I thought that it was dangerous for you who was still young to put your faith unconditionally. I wanted to protect you. But, my effort to distance you from the faith became in vain."

"…A pawn that didn't move as wished for was a hindrance?"

"Something like that. The plan to assassinate you became fully all-out. Your immortality isn't absolute. Especially if the enemy is a god then that's even truer…even after I obtained the age of god magic, I didn't have the confidence to protect you from god's intention. Besides, I who had Aruv residing inside my body and awoke to my mission didn't want to lose you who are a trump card. That was why, before the assassination was carried out, I arranged your death and hid you. Until the time when the beacon of the rebellion can be raised."

"…"

Her uncle didn't betray her. Rather he was trying to protect her. Even if he had a feeling that considered her as battle strength, his words contained the feeling that he didn't want to let her die, which matched with a portion of Yue's memory.

Right now, Yue's expression looked anxious as though her unmanageable emotion that was too much for her had lost its place to go, as though she was a lost child.

Her powerless trembling voice that displayed her unstable feelings threw the last question.

"…The hostage? If you are really Denreed-ojisama then…if you say that you didn't betray me, then why?"

Toward those words mixed with criticism inside from Yue who was casting her eyes downward, Denreed smiled wryly while

murmuring “About that”. And then he snapped his fingers once more. Instantly the radiance covering the cages silently dimmed and vanished, the lock of the cages also clicked open.

The captured classmates, Myuu, and Remia stared at the unlocked door with bewilderment.

“I thought that if I didn’t do this then I wouldn’t even be able to meet you. Besides, I also had the objective of guarding them for the sake of when the times come. I want you to forgive me about their wounds. The one who went to pick them up were the apostles. I couldn’t treat their wounds in front of them. Just in case I commanded them to not kill anyone. After all, perhaps they might become allies from here on together with Aleytia.”

“…Com, rade?”

It seemed that according to Denreed it was that kind of reason. Perhaps she had used up everything that she could use to argue, that Yue only repeated Denreed’s words with doubt. Her voice already had no heat in it, furthermore her raging heart became even stormier. Because she was given a large amount of information all at once, and how all that information was something important and impossible to ignore for her, she was unable to sort her feelings.

Even Shia and others who were watching over Yue couldn’t hide their bewilderment of what to do. The people imprisoned inside the cages were unable to move feeling the atmosphere of the place.

Inside such an atmosphere, Denreed watched fondly as though he had seen through Yue’s heart, he descended from the altar while making a smile. The destination where he was walking calmly was Yue’s location.

“Aleytia. I want you to believe me somehow. I love you, whether right now or in the past. Just how impatiently I have been waiting for this day when I can see you again. During these three hundred years, there wasn’t a day that I had forgotten you.”

“…Oji, sama…”

“That’s right. I am your Den-ojisama. My cute Aleytia. The time has come. Please, lend me your strength, in order to finish everything.”

“…Lend, my strength?”

“Let’s defeat the god together. Just like when we fought the country’s external enemy together back to back. God Ehito is already going to end this era. Actually I planned to hide you until the time when we really have to fight but…this is a windfall. You have become far stronger compared to the past, and then there are even this many users of age of god magic gathered here. Surely we can even reach god Ehito.”

“…I, I am…”

Denreed’s words shook Yue. Denreed was spreading open his arms, as though he was going to embrace Yue who was like that.

That posture resurrected a memory of her childhood at the back of her mind once more. When the young Yue achieved some kind of result in magic training or class, ‘Den-ojisama’ would smile looking even happier than Yue who made the accomplishment while he would surely spread open his arms to welcome her. And then, he would praise Yue who jumped at him saying “You worked really hard” while stroking her head.

The hug of her important relative who was alive, and who didn’t betray her. She loved him dearly like a father, even more than her real father. Yue’s eyes wavered.

Denreed’s smile was increasingly deepening, he was about to say some words in order to embrace Yue.

“Now, let’s go together. Aleyti——”

Instantly,

DOPAN-!

Such familiar dry sound reverberated. At the same time, Denreed’s body snapped back facing up, and then he collapsed behind just like that.

No one was able to grasp what just happened, they were staring at the collapsed Denreed with their pupils turning into dot. His body didn't even twitch. The vast audience hall was filled with silence.

Inside such an atmosphere, a 'click' sound that was like a cocked firing hammer, no, it was exactly the sound of firing hammer being cocked broke the silence. The people in that place twitched with trembling body and sent their gaze at the sound's source all at once.

There a scene that they half-expected unfolded.

Namely…

"Move out of the way. I'll make that guy into mincemeat."

Holding Donner that had white smoke rising up from it, while spouting abusive line like a hoodlum, the figure of Hajime who had vein pulsing on his forehead was there.

Arifureta Chapter 155

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/156/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Elementalcobalt did the edits.

Is it Lie, or Truth (End)

“Move out of the way. I’ll make that guy into mincemeat.”

From Hajime’s voice anyone could understand that he was extremely displeased. But, at the same time, the gun trigger was pulled again, and a bursting roar echoed. Four streaks of crimson flash took flight, shooting through the four limbs of the collapsed Denreed. Denreed’s body twitched a few times.

Hajime took out a Bola from the ‘Treasure Warehouse’ and threw it at Denreed while at the same time he took out Orkan and pulled the trigger toward the collapsed apostles.

pshu pshu pshu, consecutive shooting sounds reverberated and several streaks of something left fire trail through the air.

After a beat, grand explosions and shockwaves were created. The swarm of missiles that displayed such tremendous might blew away the apostles. Here and there the apostles burst open like broken dolls. Hajime stored Orkan inside the ‘Treasure Warehouse’ and further aimed the muzzles of Donner and Schlag at Freed and Eri who collapsed in a false death.

There, the surrounding finally returned to their senses.

The first one who raised a strange voice that resembled a scream was Suzu. “UWAaAAH!!” While raising such a desperate or panicked scream, she leapt at Hajime’s arm and dangled there. If she didn’t do that, she thought that Eri would be turned into small pieces. Her teary eyes that were looking up at Hajime were desperately pleading “Remember your promiseee～!!”

Next, Shia yelled “Stop desuuuu!” while leaping at the opposite arm that Suzu held.

“Ha ha ha ha ha ha, Hajime-san!? What are you doing-! That’s Yue-san’s uncle you know!?”

“Tha, that’s right! The logic is just too nonexistent here! Aa, his head was completely shottt. Qu, quickly use regeneration magic…”

“Ka, Kaoriii, hurryyy! Super hurryyyy! No matter how I see it this is at instant death level but, if it’s you then perhaps he can make it somehow!”

“Na, Nagumo. I already thought since a while ago that someday you are really gonna commit a crime like this…”

Starting from Shia, Kaori and Shizuku also started making an uproar, Ryuutaro was getting cold sweats while saying something rude. Tio at first was making a dumbfounded expression before she put her hand on her chin looking as though she was pondering something. Usually, at this kind of time, it would be Kouki who butt in at the very front, but that Kouki was standing in front of Eri. It seemed that he cut in there the moment Hajime aimed his gun.

And then, Yue whose uncle was shot to death by her lover right in front of her eyes,

“… Haji, me?”

Her eyes opened wide while she looked up at Hajime beside her in a daze.

Hajime glanced at such a Yue and then he separated Shia and Suzu

who were clinging on his arms, he then stopped Kaori who was about to rush at Denreed's position to revive and heal him.

And then with really frightful naturalness, to the degree that there was no time for anyone to stop him, quickly, without even looking he shot Freed using Donner and threw a bola at Eri. Looking at Freed whose head had a hole put on it and Eri whose body was wrapped all over, Suzu raised "hih" a short shriek and Ryuutaro leaked out "Uwaa" in a cramped voice.

As expected, without even giving a glance at those two, the expression of Hajime's eyes warped with an irritated look. Even so, without any carelessness he kept the aim of his guns at Denreed and the apostles who were still collapsed as he opened his mouth.

"I thought that I would keep quiet until Yue put an end to it by herself, but no matter what Yue is just too shaken and it looked like she was going to accept that bullshit. So, I forcefully ended it myself."

"… Bullshit? What do you mean?"

Yue's eyes were wandering in perplexity by the shocking fact that her important relative might be shot to death by her beloved lover. Looking at such a Yue, Hajime was slightly regretting that he wasted no time to kill the guy, since in the end she got this shaken and he had to explain.

"No, no matter how you look at it, wasn't it just an explanation that is full of holes. Even Yue, if you are just slightly calmer then surely you will notice, but… well, someone with the same appearance with your relative suddenly made an entrance so perhaps it couldn't be helped, huh."

Saying that, what Hajime pointed out was that even though there was a necessity to hide Yue's existence, if Denreed was alive all this time then he should have been able to come to meet Yue. If she was his beloved niece, then there was no way he would abandonden Yue alone for three hundred years in the darkness.

Also, the sealing method performed on Yue, no matter how one

thought about it, it was obviously done by taking into consideration the aftermath of the caster's death. So, that even if the caster wasn't there anymore, Yue's presence wouldn't be detected by any means. Also with the caster's death, the secret would never be revealed. Such intention was transparently obvious in the method of Yue's imprisonment. If it was actually a method taken by a person who was still alive, at the very least there was no affection at all that could be felt from that.

Also, if Denreed made an excuse that he was gathering battle strength, then it was unnatural that the story of the liberators was not out in the open. Even if Aruv himself didn't know, at the very least Denreed should have a very thorough knowledge about the Ice and Snow Cavern and the Orkus Great Labyrinth. If the story of the liberators was actually known then it was unnatural that there was no other user of age of god magic other than Freed.

In other words, no matter how they looked at it, there was really no sign of Denreed gathering battle strength for when the time came.

There were parts from the fragments of Yue's memory and Denreed's old story that were consistent with each other so in a glance, indeed, it looked like this person was Denreed himself. However, Hajime and company had thoroughly confronted existences that looked like them possessing their memory before coming here, therefore just having the memory wasn't a proof that he was the real person.

However, even though this devil king wasn't Denreed himself, it appeared that he had already inherited his memory/ Yet for these three hundred years, he didn't come to the abyss to apprehend Yue who was an existence with a strength that attracted the notice of god, that was something questionable.

Because of that, Hajime didn't make any intrusion waiting until Yue came to the understanding herself. Instead, he considered other objectives like whether the words of the devil king was the truth, or whether this person was really Denreed that was Yue's uncle. He was focusing all his attentions to search for definitive proof.

The way Hajime looked for proof was to use his magic eye stone to

confirm whether Denreed's soul really resided inside that flesh. Using sublimation magic he was able to infuse even more ability into the eye, and making use of the soul magic Hajime inserted into the magic stone eye the addition of an ability that could look at the opponent's soul.

The result, Hajime's magic eye could see nothing except one dirty soul. It was like the soul was a spider that had laid out its web-invading through the flesh. Normally a soul should be in a harmonious state as though it was blending in, shining brilliantly at the center of the body.

For that reason, Hajime was convinced that putting aside the body, there was no way the inside was Denreed himself. Aiming for the moment when the impostor got out of the range of the powerful barrier artifact in the altar, he commenced a preemptive strike at the unknown who had pretended to be Yue's important uncle.

Also, more than that, this person's inside was fake, the impostor's story about sealing the apostles lacked credibility, so he also prepared a preemptive attack at the apostles.

Of course, this was a story where god was involved, so the chance that Denreed's soul was sealed somewhere wasn't zero. But, even in that case, Hajime could just search the memory of this person who assumed the name of Denreed and ascertain the existence of that possibility. Even flesh damage could be easily dealt with using regeneration magic. In other words, he could just further search for the truth from what this person said after beating him up.

Hearing Hajime explaining the above matters in a shortened summary made all the members there flabbergasted. Their head didn't work that far from the development that was like a raging wave, but now that Hajime said all that, contradictions and unnatural points other than what Hajime pointed came out in droves.

It was as though, by bulldozing through using facts that were too powerful in impact like the matter about Yue's relative, devil king, the rebel against god, this person only focused on temporarily winning over Yue and nothing else mattered…

Hajime was talking about his conclusion to all the members who were beginning to make comprehending faces while watching the surrounding alertly.

“And so, there is no reason to believe this bastard’s words, not even a speck of it. And most of all…”

And then, Hajime cut off his words for a moment before he continued with words (real intention) that had unsettled irritation oozing out.

“What the hell with that ‘My cute Aleytia’ huuh, asshole! This girl is ‘my cute Yue’! Besides, Aleytia, Aleytia, how dare you keep calling her like that, you fuckers. Saying ‘let’s go together’ trying to hug her in the confusion, just who give you that permission? Haaa? You think I’m gonna let you take her as you pleased. I’m gonna tear off all your limbs and sink you in a cesspool, shitheadd!!”

“So it’s merely jealousy huh (desu-)!” X3

In short, that was how it was. Ninety percent of this was jealousy. While flashing his gun with vein pulsing on his forehead, Hajime’s speech and attitude that glared while spouting abuse at the body was perfectly a hoodlum.

If this was a meeting with Yue’s true uncle, even Hajime would surely straighten up his clothes and posture before seriously greeting with “Nice to meet you, I am his lover Hajime. I come today to receive your daughter. Any objection won’t be recognized.” (TN: Hajime even use polite language here using desu or masu.)

But even though he was obviously an impostor, he thoroughly shook up Yue. Furthermore, he called her with an old name while acting so familiarly, and in the end, he tried to embrace her. For Yue to be embraced by another man, putting aside that the inside was a stranger (probably), right in front of his eyes… that was something that was worth a ten thousand death, in Hajime’s mind.

Looking at such a Hajime who was drafting off that much dangerous love in a certain meaning, Yue’s heart that kept getting

shaken since they entered the audience hall settled with a snap. As though to show that her wandering eyes also snapped in place, she was staring wholeheartedly as though she could see nothing except Hajime right now. Her cheeks were gradually colored with a dreamy rose color, her eyes that were dry like the desert began to moisten damply.

"… Hajime is jealous. Jealous for me… nn. I'm happy."

Inside her woman heart, Yue was flattered by Hajime's condition who was fully exposing his jealousy. Even so, she was also scolding herself.

Although there were so many shocking things happening, she still had exposed such unsightliness. To say nothing of how she was accepting someone while unclear whether it was really her uncle or not. She believed the unnatural story she was told without a doubt. Not only that, she was also going to accept the invitation to fight a god, even though that was a preposterous decision that forgot her promise with Hajime.

Indeed, her memory of Denreed was hard to forget, that memory of betrayal was traumatic for her. But right now, there were a lot of happy memories filling her chest that far surpassed all of those memories. It was only a short period of a few months, but the density of those memories easily exceeded the months and years she spent in her motherland. It was to the degree that even if this person was really her uncle, it was impossible for her to take his hand.

While she was talking with this imposter who wears the skin of Denreed, the warmth of Hajime's hand that was put on her shoulder to support her, she should have been more aware of that.

Yue silently rubbed her forehead on Hajime's arm while talking with a sweetly damp voice.

"… Hajime, I showed you my ugly side. I'm sorry. I'm fine already now."

"There is no need to apologize. After all, I know really well just

how deep what happened before Yue was imprisoned in the abyss took root inside you."

"… Hajime. I love you. I love you so much."

Just like their promise to protect each other, at this time where the greatest demon for Yue was standing in her way, Hajime supported her like a large tree. Toward such a Hajime, Yue spilled her feeling along with a sigh of feverish breath.

But, at that timing, *clap clap* applause sounds resounded.

"Oh man, really, I thought that even if there is some unnaturalness, but if it's someone with the same appearance as the father of the lover you are doting on, you are going to falter a little. Who would ever think you were going to attack suddenly because of that kind of reason… It seems I misread how diminutive a human is."

Different from just now not only there was no warmth that could be felt at all, rather contempt and scorn filled the voice that was saying such things. While saying that, Denreed, despite the fact his head and four limbs were drilled by bullets and wrapped in bola that bound him in many layers, was standing up.

The clothes of the devil king wrapping that body had no disarray to them, to the degree that it made anyone doubtful whether he really was shot. If there was no wreckage of the bola under his feet, then everyone would doubt that they were daydreaming.

"Even though I almost managed to cause her mind to lean on this side after much work. Now we have to move on to the plan B… like this I cannot save my face toward that honored person."

"… You are not Oji-sama."

"Hmph, I really am that Oji-sama of yours. However, perhaps I should say that it is this flesh that is your uncle."

"… Are you saying that you usurped that body?"

Yue floated an azure flame on her right hand while questioning the imposter. With that figure, Denreed's mouth split open widely in a

grin.

“You really have bad hearing. I want you to call it an effective recycling. This retainer god of Ehito-sama, Aruv, used this body even after the owner’s death. This person has chosen you to know? Just how honored and deeply moved this body is, don’t you think? Good grief, even this man too, before he died he erased the memory of when he hid you and also the memory of the age of god magic so that I can only use his flesh, what a useless man. If I knew that you were still alive, then I would have dragged it out of this man, by all means necessary.”

“… You killed Oji-sama?”

“Fufu, I wonder about that?”

“… Answer.”

Killing intent surged out from Yue. Her crimson eyes shined fierily, the azure flame on her hand increased in radiance. That blue flame was the ‘Flame of Divine Punishment’. It was something brutal that could even burn to nothing only the selected soul. That threat should be noticed by the very soul of the target itself.

But, the opponent Denreed——no, the evil god wearing his skin, he was only showing an arrogant smile as though he wasn’t feeling threatened at all.

“Hou, is that really fine? Perhaps my words just now lay, and actually, Denreed is still alive you know? What if he is hidden at the deepest bottom of this body?”

“-…”

Yue’s breath unintentionally hitched. Surely even while glaring she was about to launch the flame questioning whether she was just being deceived. But, the next words stopped her hand completely.

“Kukuh, you are making a nice face. In deference to that funny expression, let me teach you one thing. … It’s the words of Denreed just before he died. His last words that were addressed to you.”

“… Uncle’s…”

Hajime aimed his gun muzzle at Aruv as a threat so that he wouldn’t get carried away saying words to torment Yue continuously, but just like how Yue stopped her hand, Hajime’s movement also completely stopped.

However, later on, Hajime regretted this choice. He was only thinking about Yue that his reaction toward the enemy dulled. Even if it didn’t match Yue’s wish, he should have decided that there was no need to hear whatever the enemy was saying.

Aruv showed a disgusting smile while putting on airs grandeously, then he opened his mouth.

“You see, Denreed whispered your name while saying this.”

——It’s better if you die painfully.

“…”

The arrow of words pierced Yue’s chest. Even without any magic or anything that disordered the mind, she couldn’t help but feel a sharp pain.

At that moment, everything happened at the same time.

“UoOOOOOOH!!”

——Behind Hajime and others who confronted Aruv, Kouki who was beside Eri roared while slashing at Hajime(□□□).

“-“

——Silver light poured down from above. The Beautiful square light that penetrated the ceiling fell straight toward Yue(□□) from overhead.

“——’Degenerate Consciousnessss’”

—— From the other direction of the body of the collapsed Eri, Eri’s(□□) dark magic was fired toward Yue who was attacked by

that light. Looking at that direction, from a space where there was nothing, an unharmed Eri that looked completely the same like the collapsed Eri came out as though oozing from the air. And then, a flickering darkness ball appeared advancing right before Yue's eyes.

"——'Quake Sky'!"

——Similar to Eri, Freed appeared as expected from a ripped space that was in a different spot from his pulverized body, he had already finished his chanting and fired space blasting magic toward Myuu and Remia.

"This is payback. Irregular."

——At the same time with Aruv's finger snap, a gigantic magic bullet flew at Hajime.

"Exterminate."

——An empty air where there was nothing undulated, and several dozen apostles seeped out from there, they went to attack Hajime and others all at once.

It was a perfect simultaneous surprise attack where they all must have been waiting for this timing. The remain of Freed that had its head drilled and Eri whose body was bound crumbled with rustling sound into atoms as though to say that their role was over.

It appeared that at that instant when their field of vision was blinded by the light, both Eri and Freed were replaced with some kind of artifact. It was something abnormal to be able to deceive even Hajime's magic eye.

Even though Hajime made a bitter expression from getting done in like this, he immediately activated 'Light Speed' and stretched an instant into several dozen seconds. Inside the gray world where the flow of time slowed, the great number of attacks slowly approached.

He could hear the roaring holy sword behind him. Light pillar was falling from above Yue and in front of her flickering black sphere was coming with eerie pulsing. From the front gray magic bullets

were approaching while tracing a spiral. Invisible shockwave was running toward Myuu and Remia, and the apostles were assaulting Aiko and others with their large sword raised.

If he left them alone, the only future waiting was the word tragedy.

However, with Hajime alone, there wasn't enough hands. Hajime reflexively gritted his teeth, but suddenly a gaze stabbed him from the side… when he looked by moving only his eyes, the figure of Yue staring at him strongly was there. Just from that, Hajime realized Yue's thought. Namely, the will that told him 'protect Myuu and Remia'.

That pillar of light, the most abnormal phenomenon in this current situation was aiming at Yue, on top of that even that acting of Aruv, and just as he said, even this simultaneous surprise attacks that he said as the plan B made Hajime sensed that all of these were some kind of plan toward Yue, causing him to feel a slight mental resistance toward leaving Yue's side.

But, even so, the gaze she directed at him was the proof of her trust to her beloved lover. Then, there was no way he could betray that. Therefore, he decided.

In this moment, less than a second.

GOGAN-!! Terrific shockwave sound resounded while Hajime fired a shotgun from the elbow of his artificial arm. Kouki who approached from behind was counterattacked by countless pebbles and shockwave and his breath got blown away.

Without stopping, Hajime used the momentum from the shot recoil and pulverized the ground with his step, his figure blurred. He rushed with speed that didn't even leave afterimage while avoiding the approaching magic bullet, his figure then appeared in front of Myuu and Remia. Perhaps from Myuu and Remia's point of view, Hajime looked like he had teleported instantly.

The shockwave of the space blasting that had approached until less than a meter was blocked by the large shield that Hajime took out while he was moving. The improved large shield reacted at the

shockwave by releasing its own shockwave like an explosive reactive armor. With that, although cracks entered the surface of the shield, it managed to perfectly defended against the shockwave of the ‘Quake Sky’.

As the compensation of Hajime prioritizing Myuu and Remia, the magic bullet Aruv fired attacked Shia and the others who were at Hajime’s surrounding. Furthermore, just before the bullet hit, as though it was avoiding Yue, the bullet ruptured and scattered to the surrounding to make everyone lose all places to escape.

“-‘Drawn Sky’!”

The reaction speed of the speed fighter Shizuku forcefully changed the target of the magic bullet to herself just before it could hit all her other comrades. As the result, Shizuku’s body that received the whole magic bullet of the devil king, although it wasn’t a direct attack because she drew the bullet using her black katana, but she received an outrageous impact and got blown far away.

“I won’t let you!”

Ignoring all of those, Shia used bombing mode Doryukken to aim between the apostles and Aiko and the others, she pulled the trigger instantly. The fired bursting slug pierced the ground in front of Aiko and others, scattering shockwave along with the light blue ripple.

“KyAAAAAH”

“UWAAAAA”

Shia’s aim was to buy time. She didn’t think that she could stop several apostles at the same time, so she blew away Aiko’s group and the apostles to try to put distance between both sides for the time being. Her intention succeeded, Aiko and others were barely able to escape the large swords of the apostles even while they were shaken by the impact.

Shia and Kaori who had come back to their senses were about to head toward the apostles who gathered themselves. At the same time, Tio pushed out both her hands as though to say that she

wouldn't let them do as they pleased more than this. She was about to release her breath attack. Her target was the devil king and the totally unharmed Freed who appeared from the distorted space just like the apostles.

But, the only one who actually managed to act was Shia.

"HAAAAAAH!"

"Ko, Kouki-kun!?"

Kouki who was supposedly blown away by Hajime had come back unnoticed and slashed at Kaori.

"——'Degenerate Consciousness'"

"-, a?"

And Tio was dazed for a slight moment at the same time with Eri's chanting.

Toward Tio who exposed a glaring opening even for just a few moments, a flying kick that was unthinkable from Eri's amateur burst caused Tio to be blown far away like Shizuku. As for Kaori, she blocked the holy sword's attack with her large sword while locking sword with an unbelieving expression.

All of this happening until now happened within only a moment.

Like that, Hajime aimed the muzzles of Donner & Schlag at Aruv and Freed and he was about to pull the triggers. Shia confronted the apostles with her back covering Aiko and the others. Tio and Shizuku were standing up while enduring the pain. Kaori was opening her mouth to look for explanation from Kouki. Ryuutaro and Suzu finally returned to their senses, and at that time…

"Uh, a?"

A small whisper echoed, Yue's figure was swallowed by the pillar of light.

———————————————

Okay… this was a cool scene, but I'm going to have to put out some fanboy rage here. You're saying all these characters did all this stuff in the intervening second… okay… but what about Yue? Yue is hardly a slouch. You're telling me that everyone else reacted in a mere micro-second, but one of the most capable people on the team just stood there and took it without moving, teleporting, or erecting a barrier? If she was injured or protecting someone, sure… but this is just lazy writing for plot convenience. I'll look forward to swallowing my words next chapter when the author better provides a reasonable explanation.

Arifureta Chapter 156

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/157/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. He also did the edits.

***PS… to those of you who felt like commenting spoilers. I delete them when I see them, but you still did spoil the story for me, so seriously, %^%$ you. That is all.

What Was Lost

“Yue-!”

“Yue-san!”

Hajime and Shia reflexively yelled with voices driven by unease. The unknown light pillar that was obviously aiming at Yue swallowed her, giving them nothing but a bad premonition. There was no way they wouldn’t become uneasy.

Yue whose body was stiffened finally moved as though she was released from a binding inside the half-transparent pillar shining brilliantly.

As a matter of fact, Yue had received a binding for an instant. The cause was the darkly flickering sphere fired by Eri——the Degenerate Consciousness. It was a magic of dark element, it would blow away the target’s consciousness just for a few moments, it also had the other use to obstruct commands dispatched from the brain,

even though it worked only for the moment it would take to blink.

This time it was used in that second way. In addition, the nature of Eri's vocation as Necromancer came from the dark element, and with her strengthened body, her specs were explosively raised. Due to all those, this magic was strengthened to incomparable power compared to before.

Because of this, Yue's body was momentarily restricted because her body's nerve transmission was blocked, she was late in taking evasive action and also prevented from using magic.

Yue's hand touched the boundary of the light pillar in order to escape. But what came back was a hard sensation. From what she felt, it didn't seem like it would simply harm her. Yue who comprehended that she was captured invoked space magic and attempted to split the light pillar altogether with the space.

"-"

However, surprisingly the space splitting that she certainly had invoked exerted its effect everywhere but the boundary of the light pillar. It was unable to even scratch the pillar. Far from scratching, the pouring down light increased in radiance glaringly, causing its gravity and eeriness to grow.

Yue gave up breaking the light pillar and tried opening a gate. But it seemed the light pillar didn't allow even that. Ahead of Yue's slightly impatient gaze was a distorted space that immediately returned back to before as though nothing had happened.

"Chih. Myuu, Remia, don't move from here."

"Yes, nano!" (TN: Myuu got something like a catchphrase that made her sound cuter.)

"Dear…"

Hajime who sensed Yue's distress laid out a barrier around Myuu and Remia using his crossbits and then rushed to break the light pillar.

“Fufu, you think I’ll let you?”

Aruv saw Hajime’s grave expression and his expression distorted in joy while his finger snapped. At that moment, a great number of monsters and apostles, as well as those from the devil race and human race appeared inside the audience hall. The same as how the apostles appeared just now, they oozed out from distorted space.

The people from the human race all had blank eyes without exception, but the pressure released from their bodies wasn’t inferior to that of a monster. Most likely they were Eri’s puppet soldier——furthermore they had been strengthened considerably.

The apostles flew all at once toward Hajime who was heading towards Yue’s distress.

“You all are in the way, you puppets-!”

With an angry roar, crimson magic power surged out from Hajime. It was his ‘Limit Break’. Furthermore, his fighting style had been polished to a level incomparable from before when he fought Neunte, and his railguns that had their spec rapidly increased using sublimation magic accurately drilled through the apostles. (TN: The use of the name Nointo before this is mistaken, it should be Neunte which mean nine in German)

The one who analyzed their opponent wasn’t just the apostles. Hajime also had never slackened in his diligent study even for one day. He had done image training anti-apostle battles many times and increased his ability to this day.

Even so, his opponent were apostles. Possessing deviating spec, they were genuinely the soldier of god. They wouldn’t get broken through that easily. Also, by using the advantage of number, they didn’t let Hajime approach Yue.

The other members were also in the same situation.

Shia had her hand full from protecting Aiko and the others. Tio, Shizuku, Ryuutaro, and Suzu were also surrounded by apostles, monsters, and puppet soldiers and it was everything they could do

just to protect themselves.

“-, Kouki-kun, return to your senses! ‘Omni Sky’!”

And then even Kaori who was attacked by Kouki was handling the attacking apostles at the same time while attempting abnormal status recovery magic after judging that Kouki was under the effect of some kind of magic, but…

GIIIIN!!

What she got was an attack from his holy sword. The two of them entered a sword locking contest once more. Kaori raised an agitated voice.

“Why-!”

“The one who needs to return to their senses is you, Kaori. How long are you going to continue something like this?”

“What are you saying-“

“You listened to Denreed-san’s story right? Even though he is trying to save this world, but Nagumo, against such a splendid person he…it’s unforgivable.”

Kaori made a bewildered expression hearing Kouki who was prattling on incomprehensibly. And then her eyes suddenly met the eyes of Eri who currently was in the middle, repugnantly but accurately interfering with Shizuku and her group’s consciousness using dark element magic to disrupt them with their battle. Instantly, Eri grinned with an evil smirk.

“-, Eri, you-“

“Kufufu, that’s not it, you knowww, I was only guiding Kouki-kun’s consciousness for juu-st a little. I was just planting a convenient story inside Kouki-kun, you knoow? The rest is just Kouki-kun believing it by himself, seee”

It seemed that Kouki was brainwashed to believe only the bullshit first part of Denreed’s story. His originally strong prejudice and bad

habit of convenient interpretation, and then all the burdens that repeatedly weighed his mind until now allowed Eri to easily brainwash him.

“You are saying you didn’t make him into a ‘puppet’-“

Kaori was harboring doubt seeing Kouki who appeared to not listen at all to the conversation between her and Eri, and also at how he was only targeting her. She then threw her question at Eri of why she didn’t she kill Kouki at this chance and use her ‘Bind Soul’ on him, which was her earnest desire.

Toward that Eri’s reply was…

“I’m doing it, you knoow?”

“Eh?”

Kaori leaked out a befuddled voice from lack of understanding what Eri meant. She then received a fierce attack from the apostles that aimed at the opening she unconsciously created. Although Kaori somehow evaded and parried and avoided a lethal wound, several scratches were left on her body. She instantly healed those while directing a questioning look at Eri.

Eri cackled while answering, looking like she was enjoying that state of Kaori from the bottom of her heart.

“Even I wasn’t just playing around, you knoow? I didn’t shirk working hard in order to obtain an even better Kouki-kun and become a ‘fine woman’ seeee”

“That-, what do you-“

“You see, I had improved ‘Bind Soul’ so that it not only manipulated residual thoughts of the dead, now it can even directly affect the thought of the living person you knoow! So to speak, it’s something like making a living spirit into your underling. While the person is still living, he will become my subordinate without feeling anything is out of placee! I guide Kouki-kun’s consciousnesss, plant what is righteousness mean for Kouki-kunn, and then inside his mind I become a pure heroine that will give him supportt!”

Hearing Eri's talk, a shudder ran through Kaori's expression. Since they arrived at the devil king castle, Eri was excessively clinging at Kouki closely, most likely that was for the sake of putting on this evolved 'Bind Soul' in him. What should be feared from this was the chanting of this spell using methods that didn't sound like a chanting. Words that were easy to understand for the target became a chanting that bound the will just like that.

Furthermore, after the guiding was finished, even when the magic wasn't used anymore the effect didn't cut off. After all, the person himself was under the impression that he thought and decided by himself. And the more time passed, it would become a truth for that person. It was a technique with extraordinary effect for a human like Kouki.

The reality was, the current Kouki was seeing Eri and Denreed's group as exactly the people who were running about in order to save the world like an ally of justice. Hajime who hindered that was the bad one, and the people who followed such a Hajime were all brainwashed victims.

He was aiming at only Kaori surely because Eri was telling him to do that. Eri who would hate it if Kaori rampaged with the strength of the apostles guessed that if it was Kaori then she wouldn't immediately kill Kouki with no questions asked. She then instructed Kouki to cooperate with the apostles to check Kaori in place. Kouki decided in his subconscious that it was the 'right' decision. No matter what kind of logic was attached to it.

In other words, Kouki was completely turned into Eri's puppet soldier even while he was still alive. The thinking that a person wouldn't fall into Eri's technique as long as they weren't killed was a naïve one. It seemed that Kouki had already fallen into Eri's hand.

From here on, no matter what kind of truth and words anyone lined up, Kouki would surely be easily manipulated just by a single devilish sweet word of Eri. Furthermore, Kouki believed that as 'something right' that he decided by himself, so there was no decrease in his fighting ability. Ironically, the weak point of Kouki that Hajime pointed out——his hesitation that would appear at the last moment due to his weak will was now completely gone.

While Kaori was racking her brain facing such a Kouki and the apostles, the other members were also falling into a considerable predicament.

Inside such a situation, the one who by his lonesome was blowing away several dozen apostles leaving them without all their limbs intact, scattering the entrails of the monsters, and turned the puppet soldiers into smithereens while steadily advancing forward was Hajime.

Right now even in this moment he was in the process of predicting the coordination of the apostles, analyzing the weak point of the new type monsters, and comprehending the movement pattern of the puppet soldiers.

"-, stop right there-. Irregular!"

One apostle crossed her twin large swords while rapidly approaching with multiple afterimages created behind her. Even though Hajime and the apostle were previously equal, now he was being engaged by multiple apostles at the same time, yet they were the side that got blown away one-sidedly. Although only a few apostles ceased to function completely from that, most got away with only injury. Coupled with how his advance was unstoppable, those facts made the apostle's voice grow rough unconsciously.

And then an apostle circled to Hajime's side to tyrannically strike the large sword. Still, with her voice sounding rough…

"Out of my way-"

Hajime's artificial arm reached as though he had already understood from the beginning that she would materialize here, catching her face in an eagle grip. The apostle reflexively gulped. With an angry voice along with 'Strong Arm', Hajime threw her to the front.

While he was at it, the moment his hand released her, he didn't forget to fire a bullet from his palm and pulverized her head. The beautifully arranged face was half blown away and the apostle glided on the air like a cannonball, hitting the avalanche of

approaching apostles and monsters.

A momentary path was created forcefully, which Hajime broke through while leaving behind an afterimage.

“-aAAAAAAAAAAH!!”

The roaring Hajime was growing up in battle strength by each second, by each move, and by each difficulty. Seeing that caused Aruv and Freed’s composed attitude to crumble as their look turned bitter. They were showing an intention to attack Hajime. Naturally the apostles also matched that intention and commenced their assault.

{I won’t let thou-}

Right after that, a shadow covered the audience hall. That was the large body of Tio who turned into a dragon. Perhaps she used metamorphosis magic, her size was now larger by a level compared to usual. Her coloring also felt like it became blacker.

No matter how spacious the audience hall was, turning into a dragon inside limited space like this would only make her into a nice target. Tio herself should have also understood that, nevertheless. she still turned into a dragon, It was for the sake of becoming Hajime’s shield using her body.

She took a position between Hajime and Aruv’s group and turned into a castle wall using her dragon scales.

“Impertinent.”

“Hmph, I’ll take payback for before.”

Aruv and Freed mercilessly launched attack magic. The apostles at the surrounding were also attempting to kill Tio using their disintegration ability without a drop of mercy.

By invoking sublimation magic, metamorphosis magic, and ‘Pain Conversion’ to the greatest effect, she heightened her ability of dragon scale reinforcement to the extreme, and for the last, she deployed many layers of wind barrier in an attempt to disperse the

enemy's force but…her opponents were just too dangerous. Tio's beautiful black scales were shaved away in the blink of eye.

{Guu, uUUU…}

"Tio-. Don't be reckless!"

Tio's prided dragon scales became fragments and scattered everywhere along with a shockwave sound, looking at her state where her body was even possibly gouged out, Hajime couldn't endure and yelled.

While counterattacking using her breath attack, tail, and countless wind blades launched at the surrounding, Tio turned her long neck, her golden eyes that were split vertically carried blazing resolve in them, with that she faced Hajime.

{If not now, then when will it be the time to get reckless! Quickly go-}

"Tio…"

{That light is not normal! Quickly save Yue-. …Rest assured. Until Goshujin-sama embraces me, I absolutely won't die!}

"…Geez, thanks okay. I'm counting on you."

{Yes. Count on me-}

Hajime didn't turn back anymore and focused his mind on slaughtering the enemies standing in his way between him and Yue. He ignored the attack from behind by Aruv and Freed. He had said that he would leave it to the woman that he counted on. There was not the slightest bit of cause to pay it any more attention.

Like that, Hajime who pulverized several apostles finally arrived at the pillar of light.

"Yue-!!"

"——!!"

Looking at Hajime who leaped out from the crowd, the imprisoned Yue opened her mouth but her voice didn't reach. From how Yue was breathing heavily, it was obvious that she had been testing every kind of magic. Even so, the unbreakable pillar of light was abnormal just like Tio said.

Yue inside the light was clutching her chest tightly with her hand while unease and pain showed on her expression, it seemed that she was receiving some kind of effect due to the torrent of light that was pouring down like heavy rain. Her figure that shook her head sometimes as though to shake away something was also making Hajime feel uneasy.

"I'll smash it away-"

Hajime took out a pile bunker from his 'Treasure Warehouse' and aimed it at the pillar of light. He was releasing strafing fire at the apostles attacking him from behind using crossbits to buy time.

While feeling impatient hearing the charging sound peculiar for the pile bunker, he also had an expectation at the maximum strength attack from the weapon's spec that had risen using sublimation magic, Hajime pulled the trigger at the same time with the completion of the charge.

GOGAAAAAAAAAAAAN!!!

Tremendous impact sound resounded, the jet black giant stake pierced the pillar of light.

The pillar of light that was unharmed even against Yue's magic, but now just why it was so easily pierced like this…without even any time to ask that doubt, cracks ran noisily with that pierced area as the center, Hajime activated the pulverizing vibration of his artificial hand while launching a punch of all his might along with a loud yell of fighting spirit.

"RAAH!!"

Combined with 'Strong Arm' and 'Impact Conversion', the fist that had immense power residing in it straightly pierced through the

pillar of light, the pillar was smashed into small pieces with a bursting destructive sound. The light pouring down to the ground raged like a flood, scattering particles of light while hiding the figures of Hajime and Yue from view temporarily.

“-, Yue!”

Sweeping away the eerie light particles coiled around them. Hajime went toward the spot where Yue was and reached his hand. Even now when the pillar of light was destroyed, Hajime was still calling at Yue impatiently because when their eyes met just before the pillar of light was destroyed, Yue’s expression was distorted in pain. A bad premonition was surging through his whole body.

“Yue-“

“…I’m here.”

Yue finally responded after he called at her for a few times. Soft sensation was transmitted at the tip of his reached hand. It was Yue’s hand. Right after that, Yue showed her figure from the interval of the light particles. She leapt into Hajime’s chest.

“I’m glad. Yue, are you unharmed?”

“…Fufu, I’m all right. Rather, I actually feel refreshed.”

“Ah? Yue? You——”

With her face still pressed on his chest, Yue answered with a voice that sounded cheerful somewhere in it. Hajime narrowed his eyes to that. And then, the moment his unending bad promotion that still rang alarm bell inside himself even with this reunion changed into a chill and repugnance, Hajime tried to take distance right away.

But, it seemed that it was slightly too late.

“Gahah…you bastardd…”

“Fufufufu, this is really a good feeling, Irregular. Just how long it had been since I last materialized in this world…”

Hajime was unable to take distance. It was Yue's voice, Yue's figure, be that as it may, Hajime was convinced that it wasn't Yue, due to this 'someone' clad in an atmosphere that gave off a feeling of dread somehow. He couldn't take distance because this someone——stabbed his stomach.

The weapon was Yue's slender arm. That hand which formed a chopping shape stabbed straight, piercing through completely until his back. The small hand of Yue that was normally willowy was now colored with ghastly red and dripping wet.

Right after that, the wildly scattering particles of light whirled toward above and vanished. Unnoticed the apostles stopped moving, Shia and others sent them doubtful but vigilant gaze, but they immediately returned to their senses and sent their gaze at the direction of Hajime and Yue. And then, their mouth fell wide open looking at the hard to understand scene in bewilderment.

Hajime immediately emitted magic power and tried to blow away Yue using 'Impact Conversion'. The current Yue was obviously not in a normal state, based on her willingness to attack him, Hajime decided that for the time being he should take distance.

However, that was also beyond his power.

"I command in the name of Ehito——'Don't move'"

"-!?"

Hajime opened his eyes in shock. The reasons were two. The 'name' that came out from Yue's mouth, and his body that helplessly obeyed that command. It was as though all the nerves inside his body were blocked and then stiffened as though he was a preserved specimen.

The one with the figure of Yue, who if what she said was true then this was 'the creator god Ehito', smiled sweetly at such Hajime. That smile made Hajime feel déjà vu. It wasn't Yue's smile, it was something he saw even farther in the past…yes, it was when they were summoned to this world at the holy church headquarters God Mountain, the portrait of Ehito that he saw inside that cathedral, it

was the smile that was painted there.

Ehito pulled out the arm from the stomach of Hajime who was drenched in sweat while unable to move. Immediately, blood spurted out grandly from Hajime's stomach. While bathing in that spray, Ehito that was colored with gruesome red crawled his tongue leisurely at the blood dripping his hand.

"Hou, is this the sweetness that a vampire feel. Not bad. I thought that I will kill you at the end of your despair but…if you like, how about I keep you alive as livestock? Hm?"

"Fuu, fuu, –AAAAAAAAH!!"

In front of Ehito who was spouting out words full of malice while smiling friendlily, Hajime who was restrained by an unknown technique screamed. A Large amount of blood spurted out from his stomach that had a hole opened there, but he put his strength without even paying attention to that. The radiance of his 'Limit Break' also increased further.

And then there was a sound *bakin* that sounded like something broke, at the same time Hajime recovered the freedom of his body and leaped backward at one go. At the same time, Donner was aimed at Ehito and it roared.

There would be no problem against physical damage with Yue's regeneration power. Anyway, right now it was necessary to suppress the enemy.

But, that bullet was…

"kh"

It stopped still in front of the hand of Ehito who was standing calmly, it didn't even manage to touch him.

"Oh hoh, to unbind my 'Divine Statement' by your own power. Perhaps I should say, as expected from an irregular. ——'Heaven Miracle'."

Right after that, twenty lightning sphere floated at Hajime's

surrounding and walls made from thunder were formed. And then, within an instant, a pillar of an extremely gruesome lightning attack ran through Hajime.

That was the highest grade of lightning element magic that once granted bitter damage toward the hydra of the last trial at the bottom of the abyss. But, the might of this magic was in a different league compared to that time. The number of the created lightning sphere, the speed of deployment, and then also the lightning strike itself, from how Hajime in 'Light Speed' state was unable to escape from the barrier of lightning spheres, anyone could tell about the bizarreness of the magic.

Gruesome lightning thundered inside the audience hall, the field of vision of the people there was dyed pure white, their eardrums were buried under thunderous roar.

"Hajime-san"

"Hajime-kun!"

"Goshujin-sama-"

The scream of Shia, Kaori, and Tio who had released her dragonification echoed among the thunderous roar.

Without even any composure to question why for some reason the apostles didn't hinder them rushing at Hajime, they lifted their arms to cover their face from the shockwave of the fiercely sparking lightning while stepping forward.

Before long the lightning strike of tremendous might settled and what appeared from the center where white smoke was rising, was Hajime who had white smoke similarly rising from his whole body. It seemed that the lightning broke through the defense of 'Vajra' and he received direct attack,

Looking carefully, the crossbits that were supposedly deploying at Hajime's surrounding were all lying on the ground. Surely Hajime was trying to lay out a barrier using crossbits, but before the crossbits could do that they were struck down first. Looking from

their state, they were likely being put under gravity magic.

However, Hajime had activated ‘Limit Break’. Even while injured with burn on his whole body his consciousness wasn’t blown away, he gritted his teeth while glaring at Ehito who was possessing Yue.

“So you endured that, Irregular. But, having been showered by that much electricity you probably cannot avoid becoming dulled. ——’Four Directions Quake Sky’——’Spiraling Calamity Sky’.”

Hajime’s instinct raised an alarm bell in full blare. He reflexively leaped away, but seeing the scenery where the whole surrounding distorted like jelly, he realized that there was already no place to escape. He cursed inside his heart while once more deploying ‘Vajra’ fully and took out a large shield at the same time.

Right after that, shockwaves that burst the space attacked Hajime from four directions, at the same time gravity bombing that was whirling like a hurricane crashed from overhead.

“-a, aAAAAAAAAA-“

His large shield was pulverized like a joke, ‘Vajra’ that he deployed was easily pierced., it was an outrageous storm of age of god magic that brought immense impact. It was obviously a use of power that easily surpassed the current Yue.

“Stop it!”

“Get away from Hajime-kun and Yue-“

“To hit Goshujin-sama using Yue’s body…that’s worthy of ten thousand death!”

Shia and others who guessed the outline of the situation from Yue’s action and the relation between Aruv and Denreed rushed all at once to hold down Ehito.

However, against those three, what Ehito released was only one word.

“I command in the name of Ehito——’prostrate’.”

”Auh”

“Kyaah”

“Nuo!?”

Just from that Shia, Kaori, and Tio were struck to the ground as though an immense power was crushing them from above and they became unable to move. That was a fatal opening.

“——’Devouring Strange Beast’.”

Along with those words, the floor around the three bulged up and in an instant turned into wolves made from stone. And then, those sharp claws pierced on the back of the three while pressing down. The three raised pained voice, but the stone large wolves opened their jaws in annoyance and put their sharp fangs on their neck as though ordering the three to shut up.

Kaori tried to blow away everything using disintegration ability. However, even faster than she could invoke it…

“I command in the name of Ehito——’suspend your function’.”

“a——”

Due to Ehito’s command, light vanished from Kaori’s eyes. It was as though she had turned into a mere doll. Judging from Ehito’s words, he made Kaori’s body of apostle to change into suspended state. Perhaps it was something like the special right of the creator.

At the same time when Shia, Kaori, and Tio were completely suppressed, the storm of magic attacking Hajime finally petered out. Hajime stood still for a short while, but he immediately vomited blood from his mouth like a waterfall and fell on his knee like a marionette that had its string cut.

Looking at the state of Hajime, Shia, and co, Shizuku and others yelled their names while also rushing at them.

But, as expected, before they could do that,

“——’Stigmata of Twisted World’.”

Although he was on his knee, Hajime showed his will to not put both his hands on the ground. The space distorted and took a shape of a cross above such Hajime. That phenomenon which was created from the distortion of space itself was like a glasswork with extremely high transparency. The cross was guided only by Ehito’s gaze and fell on Hajime’s back.

“Gahah”

The severe pressure made Hajime further vomited blood, just like that he was helplessly crushed down. The cross made from distorted space stood up like a grave marker on Haijme’s back. That cross was fixed at the space like that, sewing Hajime on the ground.

Ehito didn’t stop and with a flowing motion he pointed his finger at Shizuku, Ryutaro, and Suzu and formed words.

“——’Manifestation of Arresting Nightmare’.”

“-, a”

“Hih”

“U, a”

Just with that Shizuku and others turned pale while tumbling down. And then they caressed their neck as though to ascertain that their head was still really connected, they looked down to see whether their legs were still there and began to confirm the texture with trembling hand. But, it seemed they couldn’t feel anything and so their pale face didn’t recover their color back. They didn’t even look like they could stand up.

These members could even take on the apostles, monsters, and the puppet soldiers, but now they were easily annihilated just by Ehito who had possessed Yue. This result caused Shia and others who were crawling on the ground to be shocked while gritting their teeth at the same time.

“Hmm. Well, this is how it is I guess. In this world of mine,

everything is the same like trash. Although, perhaps without this excellent body then I might not be able to use my strength as it is. Are you listening, irregular?"

"Guh…"

Ehito walked around with steady steps while talking calmly at Hajime who was crucified on the ground. Hajime tried to operate his crossbits but it seemed enormous gravity was put on them and they didn't even twitch while sinking on the ground.

He somehow twisted his neck and turned his gaze to take a look, there without him noticing the crossbits protecting Myuu and Remia were also in the same condition. Myuu whispered "Papa" while staring at Hajime with an expression that almost burst crying.

Aiko's group looked like they wanted to step forward to try to help Hajime and others, but they were stopped by the apostles and they were helpless to do anything.

Hajime was going to take out explosive items from the 'Treasure Warehouse' and blown away Ehito altogether with himself. Perhaps he would be saved if he protected only his vital spots with the 'Concentrated Reinforcement' of 'Vajra', and then he could recover as long as he could drink god water.

But, as though that intention of his was read ahead, right at the moment when Hajime was about to activate 'Treasure Warehouse', Ehito snapped his fingers with a gesture that gave off elegance.

As the result, the ring of 'Treasure Warehouse' worn on Hajime's finger suddenly vanished, the next moment the ring transferred on Ehito's palm. Not only Hajime's 'Treasure Warehouse'. On Ehito's palm, there were also several other rings there. Those were the 'Treasure Warehouse' Hajime created for Shia and others. It seemed that without even making a gate, Ehito teleported multiple objects at the same time with pinpoint precision.

Not just that, right after that at Ehito's Surrounding, Donner, Schlag, and Doryuken, black katana and so on, many artifacts that Hajime created were teleported and now ended up floating in the

air while rotating.

“These are good artifacts. Several of the artifacts among these are also quite interesting. It seems that the world of irregular is a pleasant world in its own way. Fufu, even I have grown tired of amusing myself with this world. It’s difficult for an existence of only soul to transfer to another world but…now I have obtained my own vessel, how about I try playing in another world this time then.”

Ehito who played with the ‘Treasure Warehouse’ while chuckling with an evil smile that Yue would absolutely never make suddenly clutched his palm tightly. And then, a light leaked out slightly from inside the fist and when the hand was opened what appeared was the scattered remain of the ‘Treasure Warehouse’ that looked like dust. The hand then tilted with a relaxed motion and the dust wreckage clad in dregs of light spilled down smoothly.

The fragments of ‘Treasure Warehouse’ were scattered right before Hajime’s eyes as though to show him despair. And then as though being swallowed by coiling light, the remains finally vanished without leaving behind even a single dust.

The items stored inside the destroyed ring didn’t come out. Surely all the items were collected with some kind of method and annihilated. Furthermore in front of the widely opened eyes of Hajime, beginning from Donner – Schlag, other weapons were also turned into dust before getting engulfed into light and vanished.

“Oops, I forgot something.”

While making a smile that was obviously showing how he absolutely didn’t forget anything, Ehito’s gaze turned at Hajime’s artificial arm. And then, just like what was done to all the other artifacts, magic power was released while Ehito’s fingers snapped.

Just from that, Hajime’s artificial arm crumbled with a loud sound. Hajime’s artificial arm had pseudo nerves from magic power going through it so that he was able to sense touch and also temperature. Naturally, that included pain. Although he could adjust it, the sudden pulverization of the left arm tormented Hajime with intense pain and he raised a howl mixed with fury.

“FUCKING BASTAAAAAAARD!!”

“You really flounder on the ground well. Even though your inside has been messed up. Perhaps making you into my vessel would also be good. Though my heart had been completely diverted to you by the survival of my vessel who was supposedly lost three hundred years ago…no, your magic talent is really no comparison I guess.”

Hajime was in the middle of raising his crimson magic power, it undulated and made the binding of space magic to creak loudly, however Ehito wasn’t even particularly bothered by it and was only thoroughly observing Yue’s(his own) body while making a pondering face. It appeared that he was thinking that something like Hajime’s struggle was of no importance.

Hajime saw that…immediately after he pulsed his crimson magic power. The magic waved with pounding pulse *dokun dokun* like a heartbeat, the magic power of ‘Limit Break’ was further increasing without limit. Right after that, the crimson magic power burst like an eruption. The torrent of crimson magic power traced a spiral that pierced the ceiling——the last derivation of ’Limit Break’, ‘Supreme Break’.

Until now there was no enemy too strong that Hajime couldn’t defeat using ‘Limit Break’ and so he hadn’t awakened this derivation, but in front of the overwhelming strength of the creator god, this skill finally bloomed. The act of Ehito who was using Yue’s body looking as if he was the owner of that body, perhaps it didn’t even need to be said that it became the fire that lit the fuse of Hajime’s rage that had been pooling inside so much.

At a slightly distanced spot, Aruv who was shedding tears while sporting a look of ecstasy from the descent of Ehito returned to his senses suddenly and his expression flipped over into a shudder. That was because the torrent of magic power Hajime emitted rivaled the divinity that he possessed after manifesting in this world by possessing the excellent man called Denreed. Although his strength was so far separated from Ehito, he couldn’t help but be shocked.

“My lord!”

“It’s fine, Aruvheit. This is just the struggle of a bug after all. I command in the name of Ehitorujue(□□□□) ——’quiet down’.”

The name was different with the name from before. No, the name was further appended. As the result, it affected Hajime with immense power. It was truly far more effective than the command of ‘Don’t move’ before this.

The radiance of the roaring light of magic power was gradually settling down. It was as though Hajime himself was obeying Ehito’s command, he was currently canceling ‘Supreme Break’ with his own will.

“aAAAAAAH!!”

Hajime raised a scream once more. Crimson magic power flickered repeatedly as though to display the conflict inside its owner. Looking at that, Ehito warped Yue’s face evilly. From the depth of his heart, he was feeling that it was interesting like watching a sideshow. Possibly, it was to laugh at the desperate struggle.

“Hou, it’s unexpected that you will resist even the ‘Divine Statement’ using my true name. …You give me quiet some entertainment. Your comrades defeated, your beloved stolen, the artifacts you relied on were also crushed. Even so you still don’t have enough of my despair.”

“…Ob, viously. I will…kill you-. Take back…Yue-. …This will end with that-“

“Ku-ku-ku-. I see I see. Then, I think it’s about time to finish this. I too am very much happy that I am able to reveal the reason why your resolve is not yet exterminated.”

Ehito made a full smile toward Hajime who was overflowing with killing intent while vomiting blood. And then, he daringly invoked an original magic created by Yue.

“——’Five Heavenly Dragons’…it’s quite an elegant magic. I’m pleased with it.”

With Yue as the center, five magic dragons manifested. But their

might was far surpassing when it was used by Yue. The density of the dragons was at a different league. If it was the current Five Heavenly Dragons, surely it was possible to annihilate even that large Abusodo just with one of the dragons in one attack.

The five elements magic dragons raised their long neck and the glint of their eyes fixed at their respective targets. Myuu and Remia, Aiko and Liliana's group, Shizuku and Ryutaro and Suzu, Shia and Kaori and Tio, and then Hajime.

It was clear what they were planning to do. In front of Hajime's eyes, Shia and others were going to be eaten by the magic dragons. Everything that Hajime had, would be stolen in front of his eyes by the magic of his beloved, Ehito would enjoy to his heart's content the figure of Hajime that was tormented by incomparable despair before dealing the finishing blow.

"Yue-! Open your eyes!"

"Fufu, in the end you are going to rely on your lover? That's pointless. This is already mine. Or else is this buying time? After all even during this time, the commandment on you is loosening. Good grief, you are quite something. …But, in the end you are just a tiny human."

"Yue-! You should be able to hear my voice-. Yue-!"

Hajime's killing intent was able to make many monsters near him lose consciousness when they were hit by it, but Ehito only narrowed his eyes as though he was hit by a pleasant breeze, along with joy, he bared the fang of magic that was personally polished by Yue herself at the people who couldn't move.

His slender finger was lifted up as though to make a show, he was going to swing the finger down as though to sever their thread of life——at that time,

"-!? What…my magic power…the body…don't tell me-, impossible-"

Suddenly Ehito opened his eyes wide, his body was trembling. His

body staggered as though his body was not working freely, the control of his magic power also didn't go as he wished and the Five Heavenly Dragons flickered. Aruv and Freed were agitated. Shia and others were also gazing at wonderment when at this absolutely desperate predicament Ehito showed pain.

There, a voice resounded.

——I won't let you

That voice which resounded in the audience hall like a telepathic communication had the same voice tone like Ehito who was spouting curse in irritation. Be that as it may, in the ears of Hajime and others, it was a charming voice that was far lovelier.

"Yue-!"

"Yue-san!"

The voices of Hajime and Shia yelled with the color of happiness filling them. Kaori and the others also yelled Yue's name from their mouths.

Regardless of the nearly lethal amount of blood that Hajime had already vomited, his body and magic power howled as though he had recovered his vitality. The cross on his back creaked and cracks began to appear on it. Shia and the others also raised a yell of fighting spirit trying to stand up.

However…

"Kuh, don't get carried away, you lowly mortals. I command in the name of Ehitorujue! ——'Suffer'!"

Even while sweating coldly, Ehito released a powerful 'Divine Statement' using his true name. Due to that, terrific agony ran through their whole bodies, Shia and the others displayed a look full of agony. They writhed while screaming loudly.

There was only one person, Hajime who was strong against pain endured without raising even a pip even while his expression distorted. Even so, he was really not in a condition that could break

the binding right away.

“…Aruvheit. I will return to the Holy Precincts for the moment. I planned to use the opening of this vessel’s shaken mind created by your deception but… as expected compared with this state of open heart, it seems that this possession is not going flawlessly. It’s unbelievable, but this vessel is resisting even with me as the opponent. Adjustments are necessary.”

“My, my lord. My deepest apology…”

Aruv’s original talk before this was for the sake of making the Ehito’s possession certain. The relation between body and mind was something extremely connected. Even for a god, it was hard for a perfect hijacking of the body. That was due to the limitation that gods couldn’t exert their power fully if they weren’t in their Holy Precincts…in any case, they made use of Denreed’s memory in order to open Yue’s heart even for a moment.

But, their scheme was obstructed by Hajime. Aruvheit attempted to at the very least shake up Yue’s mind to make it easier to possess her when he spoke the last words of Denreed, but…with Yue who had already rallied her mind as the opponent, as expected a perfect possession was just out of reach.

Ehito lightly waved his hand at Aruvheit who was shrinking in fear and replied.

“It’s fine. If I have three, four days I’ll be able to seize this body. I’ll leave this place to you. Freed, Eri, you can come together with me. Your wishes, I’ll grant them to you.”

“Yes, everything is according to the lord’s will.”

“Okay oookay. You will give me a world where I can be together with just Kouki-kun right? Then, I’ll do whatever it takes you knooow”

Glancing at Hajime and the others who were writhing in agony, Ehito somehow suppressed the consciousness of Yue and then lifted his hand above his head after giving instructions yo Aruv and the

others.

Thereupon, this time light particles that resembled the light pouring down before this flew high from that hand, a part of the ceiling of the audience hall was erased in a circle shape, without stopping it continued blowing through until it made a hole to the outside.

The light particles ascended to the sky as it was, it created ripples in the sky above the devil king castle while producing a large round gate. It was a powerful gate made from light particles that connected the heaven and earth——truly a spectacle that came out right from myth. Most likely it was the gate for going to the place that Ehito called the Holy Precincts.

When Ehito lowered his lifted-up hand he then floated lightly, he lorded over Hajime and the others from the nearby ceiling.

“Irregular gentlemen and ladies. I’ll take my leave here. The soul that is making a cute resistance has to be taught its place without fail. And then, I’m thinking to make this world lively with blooming flowers in three more days. I will fill the world with crimson flowers made from people. That will be the last game. After that, I’m thinking that I am going to try playing in another world. Although, this is something unrelated with all of you who are going to die in this place, isn’t it?”

It appeared Ehito was seriously planning to end this world, and then he was going to choose earth as his new sphere of activity. And then, the time limit of that was three days. It was the needed time for him to seize Yue’s body.

“Wa, it-, return back, Yue…”

Hajime reached his hand towards Yue with a voice that sounded like it reverberated from the bottom of the earth. Before anyone realized the cross had been destroyed and he stood up by driving off the influence of the ‘Divine Statement’. Under his feet there was literally a sea of blood created there, it was as though all the blood inside his body had completely flowed out.

Hajime was clad in crimson magic power while he leapt. But he was

assaulted by the apostles from behind and got held down. Furthermore, Aruv used some kind of technique and stiffened Hajime's body. The apostles wrestling him used their disintegration ability and dispersed the magic power covering his body and all the magic circles of transmutation built into his clothes.

Even so, Hajime held on to his consciousness that was hazy from excessive bleeding with killing intent and hatred, he was still struggling, reaching his hand toward Yue.

Despite his state that was already completely held down and his wounded body, it wouldn't be strange if he dropped dead anytime. The eyes of the apostles wavered as though they were holding fear somewhere inside from looking at Hajime who was advancing forward little by little.

Ehito who gave a glance at that snorted with a distorted mouth. And then, without stopping he ascended toward the shining gate in the sky.

Freed, Eri, and then Kouki too followed after him. Eri was clinging to Kouki once more while whispering in his ear, Kouki then nodded with a comprehending face. Surely, she was planting 'rightness' that was convenient for Kouki again. In front of Ehito who was supposed to be the enemy, Kouki didn't even make any fuss. Far from that, he instead directed a determined gaze at Shizuku and the others. That was quite a proof of his state.

Suzu tried to say something and her mouth opened, but pain hindered her and no voice came out. Eri too was already not seeing any one of them anymore.

Continuing after Freed, Eri, and Kouki, the apostles, monsters, and puppet soldiers were also floating up. Around half of them were raising to the sky. Outside of the devil king castle too, a great number of apostles and monsters, and then the devil race people were heading toward the shining gate in the sky.

Ehito who was visible from the hole at the ceiling stopped in front of the gate and then spread his arms as though to welcome all those people to come in. It was just like the portrait that they once saw at

the cathedral. It was as though Ehito was saying that everything belonged to him.

The devil race people raised excited shouts. Surely they had been notified about this time from quite some time ago. This was the supreme moment for them when they were welcomed by god to enter heaven.

Ehito smiled sweetly at those people and then he went into the light and melted into it.

“YUEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEE-!!!”

Hajime’s scream echoed meaninglessly.

His reaching out hand, didn’t grasp anything.

In that hand, the lovely sensation that had always warmed it was….

Not there anymore.

Arifureta Chapter 157

Since other websites have been taking my joke chapter and claiming it's the real one, I didn't want you guys to leave unhappy, so here is the REAL chapter. It's probably better. Consider this my weekend release early.

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/158/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Elementalcobalt did the edits.

Signal of Counterattack

In the devil king castle, the audience hall, a scream echoed.

A voice calling out the name of their beloved lover sounded too sorrowful, it was like a wailing.

Hajime who was the one who raised that scream was being held down by several apostles. Right now, he was in a posture where his forehead was rubbing on the floor. His one arm that reached out looking for Yue who had left after being turned into the vessel of the creator god Ehito, was forced to his back to the limit of its joint by an apostle.

Shia and the others were pushed down on the floor by claws pushing on their back by large wolves made from the stone floor, they were crucified on the floor while blood gushed out from their bodies. Shizuku and her group were also unable to move due to the illusion shown to them by Ehito's magic and the influence of 'Divine

Statement'.

Aiko and the rest were also being observed by the apostles and monsters. Combined with their wounds from before, they weren't in the condition to move.

And then, the artifacts that Hajime relied on were already gone.

If an example was made using chess terminology, this situation was exactly what one would call 'checkmate'. For that reason, even Ehito prioritized to resolve the problem of Yue's resistance rather than dealing the final blow to Hajime and the others.

The distorted smile Ehito directed at Hajime who screamed for Yue was a satisfied smile that was colored by joy and pleasure from 'looking to his heart content at Hajime's suffering figure'. That too was the reason for him leaving the aftermath at his retainer Aruvheit.

With ten apostles and thirty monsters remaining behind, the audience hall now felt somewhat deserted. There, a steady footstep resounded.

"Kuku-. How unsightly, irregular. There was a slight problem at the end, but Ehito-sama seemed greatly pleased by that vessel. All of this is thanks to you who discovered 'that' and brought it here while granting it strength. I'm thanking you here, you know?"

With a voice that was overflowing with joy and scorn, Aruvheit spouted out muddy black words of malice.

In contrast, far from objecting, Hajime was only hanging his head down and his body didn't even twitch. The killing intent and hatred that made even the apostles shudder before this, and then the unstoppable torrent of strength, all of that couldn't even be felt even a bit from Hajime's body. From his wounded state and the amount of his bleeding, in a glance it even looked like he had already stopped breathing.

Aruvheit also thought that. He tilted his head before directing his gaze at one of the apostles holding down Hajime. The apostle

quietly shook her head and directed a dangerous gaze at the back of Hajime's head. It seemed that Hajime was still properly alive.

"Hmm, just where has your might that you showed at the beginning gone? Well, I want to say that, but even you have a limit, huh. Although, there is a hole opened in your stomach, you got hit by that much magic of my lord, further you forced your body to use strength that surpassed the limit several times. I guess it's astonishing for you to even still breath. Or else, was it your beloved lover who got stolen that became the finishing blow? Hm?"

"… Just stop screwing around desu-, this third rate villainn! If you haven't played enough yet then I'll take you on-"

Aruvheit said out tormenting words, however Hajime didn't respond, as though to represent him an angry yell rose from different place. It was Shia.

By yelling, the claw pushing on Shia's back dug in even deeper and blood flowed out more, but without even paying attention to such a thing Shia clawed on the floor while trying to advance.

Looking at such a Shia, the large wolf's eyes that were made of stone shrewdly narrowed, and then as though saying to shut up, its jaw sunk into Shia's shoulder. A raw sound was audible once more and blood spurted out. The spraying blood dirtied Shia's neck and the side of her face, her figure looked ghastly.

"-!?——ngigi-gii, you think I'll losee! I'll send you flying, all of you together-. Just come at me desuu!"

Even so Shia didn't even scream in pain, she yelled in anger while strengthening her struggle. The frustration of being unable to do anything, that she could only see Hajime get hurt and Yue taken away, combined with the strength that she continued to knead even now, strength was explosively heightening inside Shia.

And then, finally *bakin* a sound like something getting broken resounded, Shia's arm that could only move meagerly leaped up.

BAMM!

Such a thunderous sound was raised from the head of the large wolf biting at her shoulder being blown away. From that, the wound of her shoulder was gouged and blood spurted out even more, but as expected, Shia didn't pay it any attention. She stepped on the ground so hard that the floor split and she rapidly approached Aruvheit.

"URYAAAAAAAAA-!"

Her rabbit ears flapped, along with eyes that were tinged with clear killing intent to first slaughter the strongest enemy, Shia's fist struck Aruvheit.

DONGON Fierce shockwaves reverberated. Shia's fist drew a splendid trajectory and pierced Aruvheit's face… or that was how it looked like.

However…

"Hou, after irregular you too also got free from Ehito-sama's 'Divine Statement'… Good grief, so an insolent fellow is being served by insolent woman. How wretched."

"Kuh, just a barrier like this-!"

A barrier was deployed just from Aruvheit lifting his hand slightly, stopping Shia's fist that was like a cannon dead in its track.

With a calm expression without a drop of anything like unease, Aruvheit concluded Shia as insolent. Ignoring that, Shia swung her fist once more.

Aruvheit's expression turned annoyed feeling that it would just end up the same no matter how many times Shia punched, but Shia's second attack raised a groan even louder, and then a crack entered the barrier of Aruvheit.

"What the?"

"Fly away desuu!"

Perhaps Aruvheit had never imagined in even his wildest dream

that other than Hajime who was named as irregular, there would be someone else who could make his barrier cracked, furthermore it was by bare hand. Aruvheit looked on slightly in wonderment.

Not missing that opening, Shia made use of the recoil of her second punch and rotated on the spot, she put a lot of the centrifugal force and released a spinning kick at the place where a crack was created. Her firm long leg was reinforced to the limit, and the kick was unleashed with a incomparably beautiful form.

While her rabbit ears was flowing lithely, *pyaaan* a bursting sound resounded, Shia's spinning kick pierced the barrier. And then without stopping, her kick assaulted Aruvheit who was inside.

Aruvheit immediately crossed his arms and blocked Shia's kick, but he was unable to brace himself against the weight that surpassed his imagination, just as Shia said, he was grandly blown away.

Shia's kicking leg didn't stop and it was lifted until reaching the zenith, then her leg was brought down to the ground following the tenet of an axe kick. And then she spun like a pinwheel with high speed, with her legs she flicked off the many floor fragments that floated in the air from the broken floor.

The pebbles that were flicked away resembled bullets and cut through the air with high speed, becoming a pursuit attack at Aruvheit.

The pebbles assaulted like a sweep of gatling guns toward Aruvheit who crashed through a stone pillar in the audience hall, dust clouds rose due to the broken stone pillar.

"Not yet de——!?"

"Fall down."

When Shia was about to attack further, the moment when Shia entered a crouching posture, apostles rapidly approached Shia from left and right with afterimages following behind them. In their hands were large swords clad in silver light of disintegration being swung.

Shia had been quite vigilant against the apostles and monsters, but she couldn't deny that blood had rushed to her head. Shia who got carried away and leaped forward too far now got aimed at the moment she stepped in, in her expression cornered emotion of "Damn it" showed through.

If only she had her Doryukken, she would be able to forcefully swipe them away, yet the nonexistence of the reliable sensation that she usually felt in her hand made her grit her teeth.

Like that, Shia resolved herself to receive damage to cut her way through, it was at that time,

"That is my line!"

Two streaks of black flash blown away the two apostles who pincer attacked Shia.

"Tio-san"

"Guh, divine statement was it? … Truly, it was troublesome. Shia, I take off my hat to thy guts."

When Shia immediately turned back, the figure of Tio in partial dragonification with her tail constricting the large wolf while making a pained expression was there. It appeared that unlike Shia, Tio wasn't completely escaping the influence of 'Divine Statement'.

Tio wasn't able to understand the magic until its principle, but even so she understood that it was a magic with terrifying effect. Therefore Tio couldn't help but giving words of praise at Shia who on top of completely removing the curse by her will alone, she was even able to give payback to Aruvheit.

Tio used the rampaging large wolf she constricted with her tail to strike at the large wolf holding down Kaori, while doing that she fired breath attack at an apostle brandishing a large sword from above to check the enemy in place. Her body was already enveloped in transparent black magic power, it showed that she was using sublimation magic.

Even so, an attack without gathering strength beforehand couldn't

stop an apostle's charge, therefore the best Tio could do was making the apostle react immediately to take evasive action.

But, at that time, one more voice resounded.

"Tio-san, please wake up Kaori somehow! I'll cover for you! Shia, hold back the devil king-"

At the same time with the voice, a black shadow slipped past Tio's side. That was Shizuku who was clad in dark blue magic power and her ponytail that was her trademark.

Like that Shizuku used a unique way of walking to slip smoothly into the bosom of another apostle approaching Tio from behind, she took the wrist of the slightly surprised apostle and rolled the apostle's body to float in the air. And then the apostle went into a losing posture *due to her own rush of momentum*. Shizuku grasped the stomach of the apostle and with her other arm she struck an elbow blow there. It was so to speak an aikido technique, one of Yeagashi-style taijutsu 'Kyourai'. (TN: Taijutsu = bare handed martial art. Kyourai = Mirror Thunder.)

The elbow blow that carried power which was impossible if it was only Shizuku's strength, coupled with the deftness of that technique succeeded in temporarily blowing away the apostle.

Shizuku was also barely driving off the curse of 'Divine Statement'. The magic power enveloping herself came from sublimation magic. She made her body performance to evolve a level higher. As the result it was a pseudo 'Limit Break'.

She didn't use it until just now because of the intense pain of the illusion as well as the wavering of her mind. Actually she didn't shake off the effect of the illusion completely, so her expression distorted from enduring intense pain and cold sweats trickled from her body.

"Thou art speaking recklessly-"

"Ro, roger desu-!"

Tio threw the stone wolf constricted in her tail as improvised

hammer at the apostle that she was made to take evasive action just now with her breath attack, then she rushed at Kaori's location. At the same time, Shia also slipped through the apostles and monsters coming to attack while dashing at where Aruvheit was.

Shizuku saw that there was further three more apostles who headed at her from all the apostles who acted after seeing the situation, she rushed to intercept them while in the way she picked a floor fragment and sent it flying with her reinforced body. It was one of Yaegashi-style throwing art 'Senreki'. The target was the eyeball of the apostles. (TN: Senreki = Piercing Pebble)

Although her body was reinforced using sublimation magic, the accuracy of the throwing itself was depending on the skill of the user. Something like aiming accurately at really small target that was the moving opponent's eyeball while dashing was an absurdly expert skill.

But, naturally the apostles easily lifted their sword and repelled the attack.

"Pointless."

One of the approaching apostles directed inhuman gaze at Shizuku from the shadow of her large sword. And then she unfolded her silver wings and flapped it noisily once. Just with that countless silver feathers flew out from the wings like buckshot, they advanced to annihilate Shizuku.

Shizuku used 'No Beat' that realized radical motion which made it looked like the body was ignoring inertia and 'Piled Ground shrinker' which made it possible to consecutively executed 'Ground shrinker' and barely succeeded in evading the attack. While enduring the fear from her clothes, hair tip, and then her skin which got shallowly disintegrated by the grazing silver feathers, Shizuku rapidly approached with a low posture as though she was hugging the ground.

"I won't know until I try!"

While yelling defiantly, Shizuku finally slipped through the barrage

of silver feathers and she slid like a baseball player toward the apostles, she then thrust her hand below with a force that could split the floor, and then using the recoil she launched a scooping up kick.

One of Yaegashi-style taijutsu ‘Saka Shushou’. (TN: Reverse Eagle Claw) It was a kicking technique to lift up the opponent from really low posture. SO that the practitioner could still fight even after losing their sword, Yeagashi-style included sheath technique, taijutsu, and throwing skill in it.

Large eagle aimed at their prey and stretched their sharp claw from the sky——that kick drew a splendid trajectory like a reverse reproduction of that scene. Combined with the rushing momentum of ‘Ground Shrinker’ too, it contained quiet a destructive power. At the very least with the current Shizuku who was in the state of pseudo limit break using sublimation magic, if she was able to land a counter, then even an apostle could be blown away with her strength.

But, as expected, that plan was still naïve,

“No, it’s pointless.”

“____”

The kick was easily blocked by silver wing. Furthermore the part of her kicking leg’s boot that touched the wing was already disintegrating. It was disintegration ability.

Shizuku took a short breath, at the same time she rotated on the spot like pinwheel using her kicking leg as the axis. Her posture changed as though she was sleeping horizontally in the air, from there she aimed at the apostle’s face with her other leg. One of Yaegashi-style taijutsu ‘Jushusou’. (TN: Piled Eagle Claw)

However, even that was also blocked by the other wing of the apostle. And then, the apostle flapped her wings to drive off Shizuku and blew her away.

“Guh”

Shizuku struck the ground hard and she reflexively groaned. There, silver feathers poured down like heavy rain. Shizuku immediately evaded by leaping while she was on all fours like a beast. And then Shizuku was rolling unsightly and barely evaded the silver feathers that brutally dispersed the ground one after another like intense rain.

At the same time, she picked up a fragment of broken floor again and threw it at the apostle which passed her that was going to head towards Tio who was treating Kaori.

The apostle didn't even look and repelled the pebble with her wing.

(I cannot even hold them back!? Even though I have to attract their attention until Kaori open her eyes and heal Nagumo-kun-)

Shizuku evaded the barrage of death with deathly desperate expression while yelling in her heart.

Shizuku's aim was for Tio to use soul magic or regeneration magic and revived Kaori whose consciousness was forcefully closed. If only Kaori could move again, she could heal Hajime with her excellent healing magic. If only Hajime could move, it should be possible to break the deadlock of the current situation, Shizuku thought like that. The faith that Shizuku held toward Hajime didn't change at all even now after he was defeated by Ehito.

Shizuku glanced with her gaze directed at Hajime who was being held down by two apostles still collapsing on his own sea of blood.

(The person that I fell in love seriously for the first time… the one that saved me many times… my heart, my life too… I can do anything if it is for that person's sake. Just because the opponent is apostle, just because there is no weapon, those are no reason to give up! This time, I'll be the one that save you!)

In contrast with the overwhelming heat boiling up in her heart, Shizuku began to chant with small whispering voice. Most of the artifacts were stolen, but fortunately she still possessed some things other than a weapon that might have been overlooked because it was trifling.

Those were the boots enchanted with ‘Air Force’, the hair ornament presented from Hajime for the first time that had regeneration ability attached, and then her clothes sewed with the magic circle of sublimation magic.

From the body of Shizuku who was continuously evading the fury of silver wings, abnormal dark blue magic power overflowed even more.

It was overlapping of sublimation magic. Something like a pseudo ‘Supreme Break’. Naturally it was an exercise of strength that surpassed the limit even in the best of times. It was an act that piled up unreasonableness on top of unreasonableness, it was impossible that there was no burden at all doing that.

Shizuku’s expression distorted in pain, she bit her lips hard to endure the undulation of the large power. In exchange of such pain, for a temporary time, surely it was only for a slight time, the magic power that reinforced Shizuku shined brilliantly while enveloping her body.

The apostle that passed through Shizuku heading toward Tio who was concentrating at healing Kaori, whose wicked hand even now was reaching at them. She twitched in reaction and looked back at Shizuku. However, perhaps deciding that it was nothing she needed to be concerned about the apostle turned back at Tio and brandished her sword.

Toward such apostle, Shizuku roared with rage.

“-, don’t look down on human-!”

The speed of Shizuku that amply displayed her specialty as a speed fighter, in addition with the sublimed acceleration that surpassed the limit, as expected it was at the level that even an apostle couldn’t stay indifferent at. The apostle raining down heavy rain of silver feathers at Shizuku opened her eyes wide in shock when she was passed through instantly from the side by Shizuku who dashed without any preliminary motion and everchanging step.

And then the apostle who was in the verge of swinging down her

large sword also reflexively looked back at the presence that suddenly approached.

But, there was no way Shizuku would even give her the time to look back completely, without stopping she unleashed a severe spinning kick. Her aim was the back of the apostle's head. The apostle who was going to turn her head had the direction of her head forcefully returned back by an impact, she was blown away above Tio's head in a pitch forward.

Toward Shizuku who was hovering in the air from the recoil, one more apostle swept her large sword.

Shizuku lightly leaped using 'Air Force' and evaded that slash, then her body twisted in the air while when she crossed above the apostle, both her legs sandwiched the apostle's head. And then, from there her body twisted even further and rotated with backward bending, crashing the apostle into the ground from the head.

Yeagashi-style taijutsu 'Kaigetsu'. (TN: Circle Moon) A technique that executed a throw from twisting the body while both legs were holding the opponent's head.

The human technique that was mysteriously polished made the apostle unable to react immediately, dangerously raw sound could be heard from the apostle's neck when the head crashed to the floor. A small crater was created while the head was buried in an impossible angle.

In that timing, the apostle that was scattering silver feathers at Shizuku just now launched a bombing.

Shizuku naturally tried to dodge but…

"dam-!?"

She was unable to do that.

The reason was because behind her was Tio and Kaori. Before she realized, Shizuku was lined up at a firing line where she couldn't escape.

If only she had her black katana, she could sever the space itself and she would be able to cut even the silver flash. But, the current Shizuku was barehanded. There was no way to stop the flash which carried the brutal ability of disintegration, to evade it meant to leave her comrades to death.

That hesitation was fatal. In front of the silver light of death, inside Shizuku's head became pure white.

At that moment…

"'Sky Severance'!"

"'Holy Severance'!"

Two voices resounded. At the same time, in front of Shizuku's eyes shining bright barriers were deployed.

One was a multiple layers barrier that had several barriers piled up——the caster was Liliana who drew a magic circle with her own blood and stretched her hand desperately to Shizuku.

The other one was a brilliantly shining powerful barrier——the caster was Suzu who even while drenched with cold sweat and her expression distorted in pain while still collapsed on the floor, she similarly drew a magic circle using blood and barely reached her hand.

The silver flash that brought about ruin was blocked by the barriers deployed by the desperate two and the speed of the advance was slightly slackened.

However, what was fired was a flash that disintegrated everything no matter if it was magic or material. Naturally the barriers of the two also held out less than a few seconds before they got dispersed.

Although that few seconds had the meaning of the time that could be bought. And then, that few seconds changed the fate of Shizuku who was exposed to that flash of death.

"Shizuku-chan-, get down!"

“-!”

Shizuku didn’t even looked back or asked back at that familiar voice and reflexively obeyed.

Immediately after, above the head of Shizuku who pressed herself on the floor a similar silver flash rushed forward. That flash which clashed at the silver flash of the apostle right from the front was unmistakably the attack launched by Shizuku’s best friend. Even though there was terrifying powers clashing above her head, the cheeks of Shizuku were naturally brimming with smile.

“Don’t think that I am the same with all of you!”

Kaori’s powerful words echoed at the space that was surging with silver light. At the same time, the magic power from Kaori burst out. It was the prove of reinforcement using sublimation magic. Just as she proclaimed, the silver flash Kaori launched went *dokun-!* in pulsation and simultaneously increased in momentum all at once.

And then, it swallowed the flash of the apostle.

“Overcoming us, with our body…”

At the same time when that whisper leaked out, the apostle that showed an indescribable expression was dispersed into pieces even smaller than dust and vanished.

“Somehow we made it.”

“Thank you Tio. I’ll heal everyone right awa-“

Tio revived Kaori using soul magic and regeneration magic together, but she now was in a state that couldn’t hide her exhaustion. She murmured while wiping her sweaty forehead.

Kaori spoke her gratitude while starting to use recovery magic. Not only Hajime, she was planning to heal everyone wounded all at once.

But that was obstructed by the silver large sword that jumped up right from the side. Aiming at Kaori who finished launching her

attack, the two apostles that were hit by Shizuku's technique just now moved out.

With twin large swords Kaori blocked the slash from the two apostles. The two apostles who tried to slash with two large sword style, one had her arm entwined by Tio's dragon tail, the other one was prevented by Shizuku who averted the trajectory using Aikido to the ground. Kaori, Tio, and Shizuku, the three and the two apostles glared at each other in a deadlock.

There…

"Kyaa!"

"Aguu!"

Screams reverberated. When the gazes of the three reflexively turned there, Liliana and Suzu were currently held down there. Similar like with Shia and others before this, on their back they had sharp claws digging there.

In an effort to help them, Ryuutaro tried to move toward Suzu with a desperate look, Aiko and Nagayama and group squirmed toward Liliana. But, they too were constricted by snake type monsters or tied with the string of spider type monsters, in the end they were injected with some kind of liquid that made them convulse. They couldn't do anything.

Furthermore…

"Good grief, bothering my hand like this. Although I don't even reach below Ehito-sama's feet, there is no way you will be a match with a god like me, don't you think?"

Shizuku and the others were taken aback by that voice. They were desperate with their own battle that they didn't pay attention there, but now they turned their gaze wondering what happened with Shia who went to hold back Aruvheit.

And then, what was there was, the figure of Shia who powerlessly dangled in the air with her neck in Aruvheit's clutch. Furthermore, blood was flowing from her whole body as though several thousand

blades had carved there, it seemed that she didn't lose consciousness, but even her groaning voice sounded weak.

"Shia-" X3

Kair and others opened their eyes wide and yelled.

In that instant, the attention of Kaori and others were definitely split. That opening wasn't missed by the apostles. With their twin swords they blown away Kaori and others into one place, then the apostles instantly created magic circle using their silver feathers where grand lightning attack was generated from there.

"-a!!"

"Guuu!"

"____!"

The three raised their respective scream while convulsing. Even so, only Kaori somehow lessened the damage using magic power of disintegration, then she immediately tried to chant recovery magic.

But…

"Didn't you listen? I said that I am also a god. I command with the name of Aruvheit——'Don't do anything'."

"____"

Yes, the reason Shia lost was also due to the same 'Divine Statement' that was done to Kaori right now, it was because her movement was restricted. Although just as the person said himself, it seemed that the restraining power was quite inferior compared to Ehito."

In reality, Kaori and others struggled to immediately break the restraints using reinforcement of sublimation magic. Different from when Ehito was the one using the ability, their arm immediately began to move.

However, it didn't change that they were showing fatal opening, as

long as there were the apostles and monsters here then even a temporary restrain was more than enough.

Facing Kaori and others who collapsed on the ground, a lightning attack surged once more. This time following the command of 'don't do anything', Kaori also couldn't disintegrate the attack and thus got hit fully. Kaori, Tio, and Shizuku screamed soundlessly then white smoke drifted up from them.

Although the momentary signal of counterattack raised the result of one apostle defeated, they were completely suppressed easily in the end.

Aruvheit lifted his hand and threw away Shia like trash, then he stepped on the back of the collapsed Shia while lording over the surrounding.

"Hmm, how is it? Have I managed to give you fools other than the irregular a little taste of despair?"

It appeared that Shia and the others were instantly killed in order to break their hearts.

Aruvheit shouldered the role to open the heart of Yue who would become Ehito's vessel so that Ehito could easily steal her body or carry the plan B that was to shake Yue's heart. Because he didn't perform his role perfectly, Ehito was forced to take his time readjusting. Because of that, not only he was unable to accomplish the command bestowed from the lord that he respected, he even made his lord to be troubled, that caused his mind to become stormy.

In other words, he permitted Shia and others to oppose him, then he suppressed and struck despair into them so he could soak in joy from that, everything came from his wish to vent his anger.

In order to drop the insolent bunches who opposed him into despair and end them while they were in the depth of hopelessness, Aruvheit opened his mouth with an expression that was filled plenty with scorn.

“But, for a punishment to those who perpetrated insolence toward god, this is a bit too light I guess. Therefore, how about I teach all of you something really lovely.”

Trampling on Shia’s back underfoot, Aruvheit made her raised pained voice while looking at Liliana’s direction.

“Just as Ehito-sama spoken, this world will end before long. Armies of apostles will be summoned from the Holy Precincts to slaughter all living things in this world. The first target will be Hairihi Kingdom. Because it’s easy to create a Divine Gate that connected to Holy Precincts in God Mountain, you see. Do you understand, princess Liliana. Your motherland will be dyed red by fresh blood of all your people in these few days, you know.”

“-, what terrifying thing are you-“

“Is it terrifying? Rather it’s an honor, right? Those people can receive the end brought about by the angels dispatched by the god they believed in without a doubt. Shouldn’t they present their head in line instead? Ku-ku-ku-“

“You are mad! All of you, you gods are insane!”

Even while being pressed down by a monster, Liliana cursed at Aruvheit with voice blurred by pain and rage. Aruvheit that received that curse with pleasant feelings then turned his gaze to the visitors from another world.

“Your birthplace will become the new playground for Ehito-sama. You can feel honored. You are able to be summoned as Ehito-sama’s pawn, and then even your birthplace will be offered to him. Even if you all are ended in this place, you can depart along with glory.”

“Don’t screw around-!”

It seemed that what Ehito said that he would march to earth was true. Although there was no magic at earth, but if Ehito maneuvered secretly there where there was a lot of country, religion, population, and also type of weapons that were far more dangerous than magic, just how much sacrifice there would be…

This world, despite its long history its population was falling far short from earth, thinking of how the reason for that was because of how Ehito was playing this world, they didn't even want to imagine what kind of tragic future was awaiting when Ehito reached earth.

To say nothing of the family or friend, their important people that they left behind by coming here. Shizuku and Ryutaro and others glared at Aruvheit with demonic look.

But, those piercing glares that wanted very much to kill him were only fanning up Aruvheit's sense of superiority instead. The proof of that was how his expression was increasingly turning in pleasant ecstasy.

"Now then, looks like the reception of the devil race will be over soon. I want to taste this defiant hearts and despairing gazes for a while but… I too can only play just this much."

Aruvheit looked up at the holed ceiling. Ahead of his gaze was the scene of the devil race people being sucked with enraptured expression into the whirling golden [Divine Gate].

As a matter of fact, even while Shia and others were fighting hard, the devil race all over the city were floating toward the [Divine Gate], the majority were already collected into the Holy Precincts. It appeared the one that would be exterminated in this world was all the living things other than the devil race——that means all the human race and the demihuman race. It was unknown just what in the world their reason to invite only the devil race into the Holy Precincts, but what was certain was only that the reason must be nothing good.

Aruvheit kicked Shia flying and then he exchanged a glance with an apostle. The apostle nodded and then she went straight toward Myuu and Remia. And then, ignoring how Remia was hugging Myuu close to her chest, the apostle forcefully took Myuu from her which caused Remia's expression to stiffen.

"Stop-! Please return back Myu——agu!?"

"Mamaa!"

The apostle's fist hit hard at Remia who was resisting desperately. Remia was blown away until the wall that she leaked out a small groan. Different from Shia and others, her body was only that of a civilian. Her internal organ was injured by the impact that the apostle released that she vomited out blood, she kept crouching and became unable to move.

A scream of a little child resounded, however, even so there was not even one person who could move.

Myuu who was taken by the apostle was crucified on the air by Aruvheit using some kind of magic, then he walked toward the position of Hajime who was still collapsed on the floor without even a twitch or a pip.

"Irregular. How long are you going to be like that? Not only you are a nuisance at various thing in Ehito-sama's game, you even put shame on me, are you thinking those sins can be redeemed with that degree of despair? There is no way that's true don't you think? Now, lift your face. And then, burn the scene of the head of the girl who idolized you as father got blown away into your eyes. Bath in her scattered brain and blood, cry and yell! Now!"

"Papaa! Don't die! Wake uup!"

The loudly laughing Aruvheit moved Myuu in front of Hajime. And then his hand propped the back of that small head. That was just like the scythe of the god of death. If, that hand was swung, without even the slightest resistance Myuu's future would surely sink into gruesome red, ejected into the depth of darkness.

But, even now when such death was shoved at her, Myuu didn't even be concerned about herself, she yelled in worry at the papa that she loved.

From afar Shia and others' desperate voice reached them. The voices that called Hajime, the voices that was worried for Myuu, the voices that asked Aruvheit to stop, the voices that proclaimed their self-sacrifice which said if he would do that then do it to them instead——everyone was desperately struggling in order to avoid the tragedy.

——It was a bizarre spectacle.

Hajime who in this kind of time should have his eyes glaring like a beast, his canine exposed as though he was going to tear the throat of the enemy with his killing intent overflowing, regardless of Myuu who he doted on was now going to get slaughtered… he was silent.

The apostles holding Hajime down didn't show any sign of releasing their hands at all, so it was certain that Hajime was conscious. Yet despite so, he was terribly, to terrifying level, silent.

Was Yue getting stolen that shocking for him, was his heart broken from that…

Shia and others who knew of Hajime's deep love toward Yue at first thought so looking at the unmoving Hajime, that was why they fought hard thinking that exactly because of that they had to do something somehow, but now that it had come to this point they finally felt something out of place.

And, they noticed. How unnoticed their skin felt gooseflesh rising. It was varnished by the pain running all over their body and the absolutely desperate situation, but the target of alarm bell their instinct raised was actually not at the enemy, the alarm was directed at something more different.

"Papa?"

Perhaps Myuu was also felt something the same like that, she called at Hajime somewhat timidly.

Looking at Hajime who didn't even lift his face with Myuu who only had worth to be used as hostage in front of him, Aruvheit got tired of waiting and he exchange glance with an apostle.

The apostle, for some reason she glanced at the back of Hajime's head with dangerous gaze that had never changed since she restrained Hajime. And then, surprisingly, after showing a gesture that looked like slight hesitance, she carefully grasped Hajime's hair with resolved air… and lifted his face forcefully.

"____"

At that instant, without even being able to realize it himself, Aruvheit stepped back.

It didn't stop there, he even did an elementary mistake that he had already never done for several thousand years——he showed an unsightly disarray of magic control. As the result, Myuu who was crucified in the air fell in front of Hajime.

Aruvheit who moved his arm in panic to fix the magic back at Myuu became wide eyed at an incomprehensible scene. For some reason, his hand that he held out was trembling in shivers.

The monsters standing by behind Aruvheit were also hanging their head down while shrinking back slowly. If anyone was watching, they would surely notice how the eyes of the monsters that originally emitted brutal reddish black gleam were now wavering like ripples.

——Fright.

For a monster, further for a monster of fiendish class that had received the strengthening by age of god magic, that emotion really didn't suit them at all. The wave running in their eyes was obviously was exactly that. Aruvheit's trembling was also the same.

The cause was one.

Abyss.

The abyss spreading in front of their eyes, was awakening their primitive instinctual fear.

Darker than darkness, deeper than even hell. Even while being a god, he would still get swallowed and vanish to became 'nothingness', he was made to feel such an illusion by that overwhelming nihility filling to the brim of that——eye.

Hajime's one eye.

"——Ki, kil——"

Aruvheit was driven by an impulse that even himself was hard to

comprehend, he was trying to hand down the command to the apostles to kill Hajime right now. That person should be at the death's door, without even any weapons, and his heart snapped into pieces, even while thinking that, he couldn't help but give that command.

Something like used Myuu for revenge or being an obstruction at his work to open Yue's heart, or, if he was going to kill him then it would be by his own hand, or, denying how he stepped back due to his dignity as god, those kind of things only flashed for an instant at the back of his mind before they got thrown away far beyond his mind.

Anyway, the *monster* in front of his eyes had to be made to stop breathing, right at this instant!

Only that thinking repeated inside Aruvheit's chaotic head, it kept reiterating along with the piercing alarm bell.

That command was quickly obeyed by the apostles holding Hajime down.

Not even a drop of magic power, far from that not even killing intent or hatred or anything could be felt from Hajime, despite so it seemed that a bad premonition had been bothering them all along.

They wanted to get rid of him even a second faster, they wanted to erase him even an instant faster.

Even though they shouldn't have anything like emotion, the figure of the women who was going to carry out the incomplete command of the inarticulate Aruvheit like a faithful dog that snapped at the food which they had been forbidden to eat previously, was like the expression of that kind of emotion.

The blade hand of the apostles was tinged with silver light. Using the disintegration ability, they would completely erased the gruesomely wounded man before their eyes!

But, it seemed that action was a little, no, it was fatally late.

Aruvheit and others gave Hajime too much time.

As though the silence until now was a lie, demonic intent that shook everyone's dread overflowed. *Red* magic power that looked like blood spread stickily as though it would swallow everything. It looked just like the lid of hell's kettle was opened.

Like that, Hajime's voice that was finally let out was also something that made anyone hallucinate as though it came resounding from the bottom of hell. The meaning of his words too, it was dark and heavy as though it was merely trying to boil the listener earnestly… if it had to be said, it was a 'curse'.

"——Anything and everything, disappear(Deny All Existences)"

At that moment, a concept that denied the world was released.

Welp, Hajime dun there went full abyss. How are them god boys gonna get out of this one? Tune in next week for the Dukes of Tortus…

Arifureta Chapter 158

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/159/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Bakapervert did the final edits. He did them all this time, I usually do a one over but I forgot to do it tonight, so this is all Baka.

Young Hero

"——Anything and everything, disappear(Deny All Existences)"

At that instant, sound of *boba-* could be heard from the three apostles holding down Hajime and they were bisected into two, upper part and bottom part. And then, right after that they were further torn to pieces left and right, top and bottom, left and right, in less than a few seconds they had turned into smithereens.

There was no blade, but even if there was one, the impossible phenomenon shouldn't be called bisection but should be called as dispersion in linear shape instead. Everybody was speechless, all of them only opened their eyes wide without moving. It was at that time magic power burst out thunderously.

A torrent whirled with Hajime at the center, however it was far different compared to his usual vivid crimson, it was a darkish red color of blood that looked poisonous. And this abnormal state of his was also conveyed to all the people in the audience hall whether they wanted it or not.

Hajime was slowly standing up in the middle of such situation. With a face that was pale like a ghost from losing blood, he exposed an expression even more inhuman than the apostles, *plop, plop* blood was dripping down…

Myuu who was right beside Hajime was covering her face with her hands to protect her face from the dark red magic power flow that was like a local storm while raising a small scream “kyaah”. It looked like she would be blown away backward soon, but right after that, the floor under her feet crumbled as though it was dispersed where Myuu then fell there.

“H, hmph, pointless effort. I command under the name of Aruvheit, knee——, ah, igi, aaAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!”

Aruvheit somehow pulled himself back together and tried to stop Hajime using ‘Divine Statement’. But, before he could finish his command, without any previous sign whatsoever Aruvheit’s both hands were severed neatly from his shoulders.

Even when Aruvheit’s forehead was shot before this he was still keeping his calm somehow, even when his four limbs were shot through he didn’t scream at all, far from that he even recovered instantly, yet now his expression distorted in intense pain while shrieking.

In his eyes, there was not only agony but also strong bewilderment dwelling there. He was completely unable to understand the reason of how he was getting a damage that made him felt intense pain.

The two hands of Aruvheit that was cut away were rotating in the air from the recoil when they were cut. And then, at the next moment those arms raised *boba-* sound just like the apostles before and turned into small pieces, and then the pieces vanished just like that without leaving even dust behind.

“Wha, what is-. What is happening!? This is, just what in the world-“

“Aruvheit-sama. Please stand back. A really fine string….no, something like a chain is dancing in the air. It will cut anything it

touched ignoring any defense and erased them."

"Wha, what did you say-"

If Hajime had that kind of stupidly powerful artifact like that then there was no way Ehito would overlook it, also, if Hajime had that, then it should be better if he used it when fighting Ehito…if that was the case, then why was that kind of thing only came out now that the situation had turned like this.

Aruvheit's confusion was deeper than anything he had ever felt, his deadlocked mind caused his body to stiffen. He couldn't find any answer, there was no way he could give any instruction, even reacting might be something out of his capability right now, he was merely opening his eyes wide, his mouth closed and opened wordlessly, for a god he looked really unsightly.

One of the apostles opened her mouth to further urge Aruvheit to step back toward the safe area.

"We, the apostles will face the irregular. Before more wound than this is inflicted on your honored person——"

"Hiih"

But, before the apostle could finish talking she was cut into centimeter sizes in front of Aruvheit and vanished too quickly. The abnormal scene of the prided 'apostle of god' created in Holy Precincts to get instantly killed like that made a pathetic scream to rise from Aruvheit unintentionally.

Even while that was happening, the apostles moved altogether and rushed at Hajime, they slipped through the red blood tornado and got cut by the superfine red chain running in the air, or they got entangled by the chain and like that they were annihilated as though they got disintegrated.

The chain with a diameter of one millimeter clad in blood red magic power——this was something Hajime transmuted into minuscule links from the stone floor (the stone floor used especially sturdy mineral as architecture material), he then covered the chain

with magic power and then controlled it using ‘Remote Operation’.

At this time, perhaps from overwhelming hatred, rage, and possibly a sense of emptiness, Hajime was awakened to two derivative skill of transmutation. One of the skill, ‘Imagination Composition’ made Hajime able to use transmutation without needing a magic circle. That was also the reason of how regardless of the constant vigilance of the apostles holding down Hajime they were still taken by surprise.

But, if this was just merely a chain, then it shouldn’t be unable to do things like granting anguish at Aruvheit or surpassing the disintegration ability of the apostles and annihilated them.

The cause that brought about such cheat was…as clear as day.

Concept magic——’Deny All Existences’.

In this world where Yue was gone, he wouldn’t recognize the worth of the existence of every single thing. He wouldn’t tolerate anything for daring to exist. Anything and everything, all without exception…

——Disappear

Hajime who had Yue stolen from him felt bottomless fury and hatred, and then saturated with those emotions he reached an overwhelming sense of emptiness. This emptiness was the exact opposite of the will of the utmost limit that was born from his longing to his birthplace when they created the crystal key. Be that as it may, this emptiness was without doubt a culmination of an emotion.

The result was literally was an ability of ‘erasing the existence of what is touched by the chain’ which even calling it atrocious was still too lukewarm to do it justice. With the power of ‘interference at the target’s information’ of sublimation magic as the base, this ability overwrote the information of the target that said ‘exist’ into ‘doesn’t exist’.

Riding the torrent of the magic power of ‘Supreme Break’, the chain

circled at Hajime's surrounding, it was just like an incarnation of 'curse' toward all living things.

The apostles and monsters even raised their war-cry as though to drive off the fear, horror, and despair, but even their strong spirit came to nothing, without any exception their existences were easily erased. The spectacle of those apostles helplessly vanishing like mist looked just like a joke.

The time it took until the apostles remaining in the audience hall were annihilated didn't really take that long.

Also, the surviving several monsters ignored the order given to them by an age of god magic, they obeyed their instinct and tried to run away but…

Chain wrapped in red light meandered like a snake while flying, in an instant the chain was closing in and in an instant the monsters' body was repeatedly cut to pieces before vanishing completely.

All those was done by just one person.

The face of Aruvheit who was left alone was twitching greatly while he was slowly drawing back.

(No way-. That power is dangerous! I have to tell this to my lord no matter how-)

Aruvheit endured the pain on his shoulders while attempting to escape from the hole in the ceiling. On the way, his gaze and magic power moved at Shia who was staring at Hajime with dumbfounded expression while she was still lying on the floor. It was for the sake of making her as a shield in a preparation of the worst case. Just like what he did to Myuu, he planned to crucify Shia in the air and carried her.

However,

"…Where are you planning to go?"

"-…"

That scheme was crushed by the sound of cutting wind and a voice that sounded like it was creeping from the earth. When Aruvheit strained his eyes, he could see that between he and Shia there was the superfine chain tearing the air like a wind blade going back and forth.

Aruvheit didn't answer, he gave up picking Shia as a shield, then he fired flame sphere at Hajime as a smoke screen while leaping away.

But that too,

"You bastard-!"

At the ceiling hole, the chain had already been laid out in a grid shape, making an escape as something difficult. Aruvheit cursed out as though to distract himself from the unease that suddenly heightened inside him.

And then, this time he turned his gaze at the direction of Aiko and others. As expected he was surely thinking that hostage was necessary.

However, at the next moment chain stretched lightly to that direction too. Aruvheit unintentionally moved his gaze at Hajime, there, there was no trace of the flame sphere he fired or anything, Hajime who was standing still like a ghost at the center of the red tornado was fixing eyes of the abyss at him.

He shuddered, something crawled Aruvheit's spine.

"Do, don't screw with me-. You fools who opposed god! Something like the lives of you lowlifes is equal to trash——"

Perhaps to varnish his terror, Aruvheit suddenly yelled angrily and undulated the space. Most likely he was trying to release shockwave by directly affecting the space. Although he was below Ehito, as the retainer of god, doing something like handling age of god magic was easy.

But, it seemed that his chaotic head was unable to make a calm judgment.

Rather than raising his fervor like this, Aruvheit should escape from this place even if he had to blast the floor. Or perhaps he should resolve himself to receive damage to himself and fired annihilation class magic at all direction and used teleport in that opening, he also could summon the monsters that were still outside the devil king castle to buy time.

This dignity of a half-baked god had completely closed his one in a million chance path of survival.

The result.

“A? ——!!?”

He lost his four limbs.

This time it was both his legs that were erased. Aruvheit became a tumbling doll and fell down with a soundless shriek. With his body annihilated halfway like this, it seemed that he couldn’t cut off his sense of pain using something like regeneration magic, and so he was driven mad by the ‘pain’ that he had already forgotten completely in these few thousand of years.

Even so, even when he was rotten to the core, he was still a god. He floated his body using magic and he attempted to escape with deathly desperation.

However, at this late there was no way Hajime would allow such thing, when Aruvheit noticed he was already locked inside a cage of chain that was wrapped with red light. There was already no place to escape anywhere…

The spherical cage was gradually tightening close. It was as though he was going to be annihilated bit by bit, and that instigated out his terror. Aruvheit was half panicked, he let out a cramped smile that sounded like a chicken.

“A, ah, wa, wait-. Wait a second! Sa, say what you want-. I’ll grant whatever your wish is! If you like I’ll even bring you to where Ehito-sama is! If I persuade Ehito-sama, surely even Ehito-sama will not refuse it out of hand-. The world-. The world you know! I will

share the right to do whatever you please to the world to you too! That's why-!"

All the people in the audience hall were staring dumbfounded at Hajime who was walking forward in swaying motion with nihilistic expression while clad in a red tornado, and Aruvheit who was desperately begging for his life under the guise of negotiation.

During that time, the spherical cage suddenly began to rotate. The countless chains that stretched vertically moved horizontally and began to turn like a ball that was twirled on someone's finger. Thinking about the ability that rejected and annihilated the existence of what it touched, what was happening could even be said as a special excavator.

Because Aruvheit was a god, the sensation of physical pain was something that he had already forgotten completely since a long time ago. Therefore, what he felt from having all his four limbs cut off was a despairing agony to the degree that it was praiseworthy he hadn't gone mad.

For that reason, the situation where an excavator made from annihilation chain gradually approaching him caused a tremendous terror that made him wanted to raise a meaningless shriek and an impulse to tear off his hair if he still had his hand. There shouldn't be anything that can threaten himself in this world-. Yes, even if he screamed that in his heart, but the 'presence of death' at the other side of his forgotten memory was steadily and certainly creeping closer. The mind of Aruvheit was already on the verge of breaking down.

"Stop-, I told you to stop already! This is the command of god you know! Listen to what I'm saying-. No, wait, I got it! Then, I'll become your, I'll become your eminence's servant! That's why-. I'll help with the recovery of that vampire's body so-. Stop-. Just stoppp!"

Amidst the reverberating scream of terror and despair, the rotation of the cage of chain that was almost touching Aruvheit's body suddenly weakened and it stopped growing smaller. Aruvheit who was in a state where the word unsightly perfectly suited him,

timidly opened his closed eyes.

“You want to live?”

“eh, ah?”

“I’m asking whether you want to live.”

Aruvheit was dumbfounded at Hajime’s question, but then he comprehended the meaning of those words and a slight hope emerged in his eyes.

“Ye, yeah, I want to live-. I beg you! I’ll do anything-“

“I see…”

Hajime nodded briskly. Joyful look floated on Aruvheit’s face where he was thinking “I survived!”, but then Hajime sent him a gaze that was the same like before and opened his mouth.

“Then, die.”

“Eh? Hih, stop-, giiiiiii,
aAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!!”

The cage of chain that was purposefully shrinking slowly was shaving off Aruvheit’s body starting from the edge. At the same time, the shriek of death agony which was unbearable to be listened to was reverberating in the audience hall.

…A few seconds later, at the end of despair and agony, a god vanished from this world.

After Hajime saw off the fate of Aruvheit, his gaze moved at the sky that was visible from the hole in the ceiling. And then, his eyes quietly narrowed and he stepped so powerfully that the floor under his feet warped, then he flew out along with a surge of magic power that raised explosive sound.

“Haji, me-san!”

“Hajime-kun-“

Shia's pained voice and Kaori's fretful voice resounded.

Hajime had wound all over his body. Even though it was done by Yue's slender arm but there was a hole opened in his stomach, on top of that he received magic that were in age of god class several times with his body. Not just his external wound, even with his internal organs there were only a few places where they were unharmed. If he didn't receive treatment even for a second faster it would affect his life.

But Hajime ignored everything, with his gaze still filled with a sense of emptiness he aimed at the whirl of gold floating in the sky and leaped straight there.

The golden gate——the [Divine Gate] passed through by the devil race only had around a hundred-odd people who were still remaining behind. It seemed that the civilians also really went to the [Holy Precincts], so most of the people remaining were those who appeared to be the soldiers of devil race that served as the rear guard, but looking carefully there were also women and children, old men, people who seemed to be civilian mixing there.

"Wha, what-"

"That's…"

They made a taken aback expression looking at the red tornado that suddenly flew out from the devil king castle. The rear guards devil race immediately launched magic. Flame bullets, wind blades, and ice spears of elementary level magic with nearly no chanting.

But there was no way such thing would work against the current Hajime, just by swinging the chain all the attacks were easily annihilated.

"Yo, you, stop-"

Several devils came to the front standing in his way. Hajime didn't stop and advanced without even paying attention at the devils, as the result, in an instant several dozen devils on his route became small pieces without even being able to dodge and got dispersed to

four directions.

While the other devils were in the middle of being dumbfounded witnessing the bizarre phenomenon of their compatriots getting annihilated, Hajime left them behind and charged toward the [Divine Gate].

However,

“-, aAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!”

The [Divine Gate] only pulsed as though it rejected Hajime and didn’t open the path to the [Holy Precincts]. No matter how much he roared, how much he blew out magic power, no matter how many times he swung his fist and chain, Hajime couldn’t pass.

Hajime converged the chain of existence denial and decisively hurled himself like a lance thrust, even so, it was the [Divine Gate] itself that was dispersed instead.

Most likely it was adjusted so that only limited category of people who could pass through.

“Idiot-! Other than us the chosen people of devil race, there is no way other will be welcomed into the [Holy Precincts]!”

“Accept the divine punishment obediently, you heretic-!”

The devil races rushed at Hajime and launched magic with high power and sufficient chanting.

However, Hajime didn’t even pay such things any attention and repeated his suicide attack. He didn’t even defend satisfactorily so his back was hurt in the blink of an eye.

“OPEN THE WAAAAAYYYYY-!!!”

Hajime continued to ram his body like mad while roaring in earnest, causing the devils to make a somewhat overpowered expression. But, that too was changed into a rage by the happening right after that.

Because the [Divine Gate] was beginning to shrink.

“You bastard, because of you the gate is-“

“Hu, hurry-. Fly in before it got closed!”

The devils rushed into the [Divine Gate] in fluster. At the same time, they launched magic to remove Hajime who was a hindrance with an expression that was filled with rage.

The gigantic flame burned Hajime’s back. Even so, Hajime didn’t even notice and repeated his desperate charge to smash the [Divine Gate].

But, in the end his effort didn’t bear any fruit, in front of Hajime’s eyes the golden whirl was getting smaller, and before long it vanished with a poof.

“…”

The wordless and expressionless Hajime lowered his arms powerlessly with his head hanging down. In his eyes was nothingness as expected.

There the devils made an expression of despair and fury and assaulted Hajime. Along with curses, they attacked Hajime with countless high-class magic, but Hajime didn’t react at all. Naturally, Hajime who received direct hit of magic was blown far away.

Hajime fell down with white smoke rising. From him, there wasn’t even any sign of him trying to take landing stance.

“Hajime-kun-!”

There Kaori with her silver wings flapping was calling Hajime’s name while flying near. And then she caught Hajime in the air and then descended down toward the audience hall with teary eyes.

The devils that pursued Hajime driven by their rage saw Kaori’s appearance, right away their expression turned as though they had found hope and they descended toward the audience hall after her.

“Hajime-kun, get a hold of yourself. Restrain your magic power quickly-“

“…”

Even when Kaori’s voice that was blurred with uneasiness was resounding, Hajime didn’t cancel his ‘Supreme Break’. Even in normal time, concept magic that was invoked would consume a vast amount of magic power. And if on top of that someone also continued to use strength that was beyond their limit…it was a self-evident truth that the body would gradually break down because of the drying up magic power.

Looking at Hajime who only kept looking down, Kaori guessed that her words didn’t reach and she gritted her teeth.

And, suddenly voices addressed at such Kaori.

“Apostle-sama! Aa, thank god. I thought just what is going to happen for a moment there.”

“What? There are humans and demi-human? …Well, fine. Now, apostle-sama, let’s slaughter this bunches and quickly head toward our god.”

While Hajime was launching a suicide attack at the [Divine Gate], Shia and others were treated with healing magic by Kaori to some extent just in case. Now Shia and others were rushing toward Hajime, but hearing the dangerous statements of the devils they quickly put up their guard.

But, they didn’t actually need to do that.

At the next instant, the devils who opened their mouth were divided into four and vanished just like that. Furthermore, there were twelve devils with outfit that looked like soldier descending on the audience hall, but due to the superfine chain they were annihilated without even any time to raise scream of death agony as though they had never existed since the very beginning.

Hajime who kept looking down was slowly raising his face. His gaze was directed at the devils who went stiff from the tragedy that

happened right after they descended on the audience hall.

And then, the devils who were exposed to Hajime's empty gaze unconsciously raised short scream while trying to get back but——as expected, without any question, as though like a joke, they were cut into small pieces and vanished.

Hajime's blood colored magic power and chain imprisoned the remaining devils which were about seventy people including women, children, and old men into a cage that resembled an iron maiden.

And then,

——Die

That word was something small like a whisper. But, the devils could hear that voice, that curse, with certainty.

"A, apostle-sama! Please save us-"

An old devil wearing clothes of fine quality who appeared to be of quite high status implored so, that devil was covering an old woman with refined dress behind him, she was most likely his wife, while doing so he was looking for help at Kaori with a desperate voice.

Kaori sent her gaze at Hajime in bewilderment, and right after that,

"NOOOOOOOOO-!!"

A woman's scream resounded. Taken aback, Kaori and others sent their gaze at the voice's direction, there the old devil who asked for Kaori's help had his neck cleanly removed. The thing that was rotating in the air should rather be left unsaid. And then it was slashed into pieces and vanished just before touching the ground.

"Ha, Hajime-kun!?"

Kaori called at Hajime with a voice that had shock and agitation mixed in it, but during that time the scream of the old woman disappeared. Along with her existence.

Further, a young woman at the side, a young man with scared expression, a youth who tried to counter attack, as though to make an example one of them, then one more of them was slashed into pieces and vanished. The devils' agonizing cries reverberated in the room.

Everyone in that place stiffened and opened their eyes wide to look at Hajime who intended to slaughter even the devils who were obviously non-combatant.

"We, we surrender! That's why, stop it already-. At least just the children-"

A man who seemed to be a father covered a child behind his back while making a surrender proclamation.

There were only about thirty devils remaining in the audience hall already. All of them followed the man's proclamation and fell on both their knees with both their hands crossed behind their head.

All the remaining people didn't look like a soldier. Including the children they were all civilians. Even if they were fanatics, but when it involved the life of children even they wouldn't be able to pointlessly make suicidal resistance. Or possibly they were merely scared of Hajime's nihilism that their fanaticism was blown away.

Like that, right after all the devils kneeled, the middle-aged man near the man who just proclaimed to surrender was severed vertically and dispersed like a display.

"!? Wh, why…"

Questioning voice of someone rose. Further, a woman at the side——someone who seemed to be the wife who was staring in a daze at the spot where the bisected man was standing, she was split vertically.

Something like surrender proclamation wouldn't stop Hajime.

It was natural. The culmination of emotion that Hajime was currently manifesting——that was 'Deny All Existences'.

For the current Hajime, at the very least at his own mind, everything in this world was equally worthless. Much less their worth as prisoner, even their very existence itself didn't have any worth, rather, just by existing they were an eyesore.

The figure of Hajime who was too merciless yet looked completely emotionless, that appearance made the devils trembled, they could only sink down on the floor with a despairing look.

Hajime's gaze, was directed at the side of the man who proclaimed surrender just now, at the trembling child there. Noticing that the man immediately covered the child inside his arms.

Shia, Kaori, Shizuku, Tio, Aiko, Liliana, immediately tried to stop Hajime.

But, there was someone who moved faster than all of them.

"Papa-, don't nano! Come back to the usual papa!"

It was Myuu.

Unnoticed by anyone, she barged in between Hajime and the hugging father and child. And then, she stood on the way with both her hands spread wide, tear was gathering at the corner of her eye, even so she was staring at Hajime with a straight gaze.

"…Move."

A voice without any emotion hit Myuu. Myuu twitched and her body trembled. Hajime's cold voice had never been directed at her even once until now. And then, his expression. The shock almost made her fell down just like that.

But, that was no good. As the daughter of her beloved papa, she couldn't lose her nerve here. To do something like leaving this kind of sad papa alone, was something she absolutely couldn't do!

Therefore, Myuu lifted her eyes decisively, and she made a smile on her lips. The person herself intended to mimic the fiercely glaring eyes and a fearless smile that Hajime showed in front of a powerful enemy, but her teary eyes and her warped lips that were just raised

halfway only looked clumsy.

Even so, Shia and others who were beaten to the punch by Myuu's action understood really well, just who in the world she copied that expression from. That expression showed indomitability and persistence even in front of a desperate situation. There was not even one person who laughed at Myuu's expression right now. Rather, they swallowed their breath at that spirit.

"Myuu won't move nano! M, Myuu absolutely won't lose if it's against the current papa nano! Because, because"

"…"

Myuu desperately formed her words. Even the devils she protected gulped their saliva looking at the small girl challenging the terrible monster, just like a hero that came out in a tale.

"Myuu's papa, is not uncool like this nano! He is far, far cooler nano! He won't make eyes like that nano! His eyes look stronger nano!"

Myuu was scared. She was not scared at Hajime. At this rate, if Hajime kept rampaging with that kind of empty eye, she had the feeling that Hajime would go to a far away place that he wouldn't be able to come back from. She had the feeling that the papa that she loved, wouldn't return back for the second time.

Of course, there was also how it was difficult to endure the spectacle of the unresisting devils got killed. But, as expected it was only secondary compared to that.

Myuu glared back at Hajime's empty eyes that even Aruvheit avoided seeing straight from the front. Hajime's expression that didn't even twitch until now frowned a little.

"…I won't say for the third time. Mo——"

Even so, the emotion of the utmost limit that wished to erase everything let out cold words at Myuu.

However, this time Hajime was unable to say until finish.

“Hajime-kun. Just a bit, grit your teeth okay.”

“____”

Bam! That was because Hajime’s face was punched along with such sound of impact. His body floated in the air from the terrific force, and then he crashed on the floor.

The one who let out the punch at such Hajime was Kaori who was at the side. It was a straight punch with all the strength possessed by an apostle’s physical strength. If it wasn’t Hajime than the punch would blow away the head.

The impact that splendidly caught the jaw, combined with the accumulated damage, the limit that had been passed over since a long time ago, and then the weakening that was happening even now, caused even Hajime to be unable to stand up anytime soon.

To such Hajime, Kaori opened her mouth with an expression that was holding back anger.

“Cut it out and open your eyes already, Hajime-kun. Just how long you are planning to show that unsightly look?”

“-…”

“Venting your anger at Myuu-chan——at your own daughter, that’s just the worst. If Yue see Hajime-kun right now, what is she going to say I wonder? Aah, but, I guess that’s unrelated with Hajime-kun who has given up Yue.”

Kaori’s stabbing words opened wide the eyes of Hajime which were filled to the brim with emptiness. In those eyes, an obscure light of defiance toward the words of abandoning Yue was residing.

Kaori who accurately read the heart of such Hajime further formed her words.

“’Anything and everything disappear’ was it? I heard it you know. Are you thinking that something like a world without Yue doesn’t have any worth whatsoever? Doesn’t the premise of that, is that you cannot meet Yue again isn’t it? You have given up taking back Yue

aren't you?"

"…"

The rampaging red tornado at Hajime's surrounding was decreasing in strength little by little. Light began to return into the eyes as though his sanity was recovering, at the same time the blood colored magic power was also gradually recovering its vividness.

"I'm going to save Yue you know. I'll absolutely take her back, without fail. …Hajime-kun, what are you going to do? Doing something like executing people that cannot fight one by one, is it fine to pointlessly passing the time like that? You really have given up? Can you give up?"

"…There is no way that's true."

The piercing words Kaori released certainly pierced through Hajime's cloudy mind, spreading purifying ripple inside. The words saturated his mind, his rampaging emotion was recovering its reasoning.

Then, Shia approached him at that timing. She stood at Hajime's side wordlessly, and then suddenly her fist dropped. *Gon!* Painful sounding sound resounded and Hajime's head shook.

"If it is to us, then it's fine even if Hajime-san showed something like your uncool side no matter how much…but only in front of Myuu-chan, Hajime-san has to be a cool papa and nothing else. To say nothing of how you make her that sad. A punishment is needed desu!"

"…Shia."

"Good grief, Hajime-san's love at Yue-san is too heavy. To cause a panic just from getting her stolen for a bit, your devotion is lacking!"

"…"

Fuhn-! Shia expressed her indignation with rough breathing. She too was also in a really dissatisfied state from the content of the

concept that Hajime manifested. It was as though he was saying that if Yue was not there then even Shia and others were worthless.

Of course, currently Shia and others were unharmed like this was showing what was truly inside Hajime above all else. So even though she felt dissatisfied but she wasn't feeling shocked.

"For the time being, this art a punishment from me too."

"And this is from me."

"-…Tio, Yaegashi."

Further impacts landed on Hajime's head. Those were a tail attack from Tio and Shizuku's fist. Tio and Shizuku directed a wry smile at Hajime whose hand was pressing on his head.

"Nonetheless, even Goshujin-sama hath the time when thou lose thyself. It appeared thy sanity hath returned, it is fine with this much isn't it. It's unknown whether it was unconsciously or consciously, but even while being captive of an emotion so violent to the degree that it hath created a concept, in the end, from the beginning we, and also Myuu who was at the closest position art not harmed even by a single hair from Goshujin-sama."

"The result is only the enemies are defeated, and we are all saved."

Correct, although Hajime's reasoning was blown away from hatred and anger, and from the sense of emptiness by Yue's disappearance, the first thing he did was evacuating Myuu so that Myuu wouldn't be dragged into the attack that erased existence.

Even after that, he was wielding the chain freely in the battle against the apostles and demon beasts while his allies weren't hit at all, even when Aruvheit was trying to take Shia and others as hostage Hajime was preventing that with certainty.

Now Hajime's magic power had already returned to its usual vivid crimson, a light of reasoning was shining in his eyes. And then, regarding his rampage, Hajime's expression turned really awkward.

Kaori sat down in front of such Hajime. And then, she put Hajime's

cheeks between both her hands and made him face her, in a complete change from before she talked to her with extremely gentle expression.

“Nothing has ended yet. Isn’t that right?”

“…Yeah. Exactly.”

“Hajime-kun, is not alone. We are here, above all even Yue is still here. Even if her body is separated from us, her heart is close right with us. Surely, even now she is fighting. In order to return to where Hajime-kun is. Because, it’s Yue we are talking about. She won’t lose to that kind of guy.”

“…Yeah. It’s just as you say. Sorry, everyone.”

The atmosphere of Kaori who was gently embracing him made Hajime relaxed all at once and strength left his body. The magic power dispersed, the chain that had the concept magic filled in it became unable to endure the burden because its material was merely stone of building construction and it crumbled into pieces.

The dust of the Existence Denial chain dispersed, and then while focusing so that Kaori and others wouldn’t be hurt by it, Hajime also apologized for running out of control with a bitter expression. Toward such Hajime, Kaori, Shia, Tio, and Shizuku, also Aiko and others too who were watching the sequence of events from a slight distance, they were convinced that Hajime had returned to how he usually was and their faces loosened with relieve and happiness.

There, a small silhouette was *sutetetete—* running closer. And then, without stopping the silhouette dove at Hajime’s chest.

“Papaa———!!”

“Myu——gefuh!?”

It was rocket dive of happiness toward the papa who had returned to his senses. It splendidly hit Hajime’s stomach. Yes, right at the stomach where a wind hole was opened, at the mouth of a wound that was barely tightened close by the stomach muscle. And then, although the person was small, but the running body tackle of

fifteen-kilogram mass presented a finishing blow at the worn-out internal organs.

“a, no good…”

The body that was already at its limit forcefully shutdown the consciousness as though it was protesting “Just cut it out!”. Due to the effect of canceling the ‘Supreme Break’, even more backlash attacked the weakening body, a severe sense of fatigue and agony tormented Hajime.

It appeared, the greatest punishment of this day came from Myuu. Her proclamation of ‘absolutely won’t lose if it’s against the current papa!’ seemed to be the truth.

“Nyuu? Papa? Papaaa——!! Open your eyes nano! You will die if you sleep nano!”

Straddling on top of Hajime whose eyes were turning round and round and fainted down, Myuu landed a double slap *pechin-pechin* unaware of the consequent damage she added. Hajime’s life point was already at minus.

“Wait, this is not the time to watch here! I forgot that Hajime-kun is heavily wounded!”

“Hiiiiii! Hajime-san is not breathing! His pulse is also losing…a, it stopped?”

“Kaorii! Hurryyy! Super hurryyyy! Quickly regeneration magic!”

“Thi, this is bad. Goshujin-sama’s life art like a candle lit in front of wind! It cannot be helped. Here I will ensure Goshujin-sama’s breathing with this so called mouth to mouth…” (TN: Here Tio said mouth to mouth with broken English)

“No, if it’s that I’ll do it. I have the experience of that being done to me.”

“Wait a second. Shia, Tio. So, something like that is better done b, by, by me who had learned first aid formally isn’t it?”

“Everyone you are noisy! I cannot concentrate here! If you all want to kiss then just attack him when he is sleeping after healing!”

“ “ “Yes…” “ “

In the audience hall, an atmosphere that was quite unclear whether it was an emergency or not was flowing.

“In the end, what should we do…”

Amidst such happening, the surviving devils’ perplexed voice was reverberating in vain.

Arifureta Chapter 159

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/160/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Elementalcobalt did the edits.

An Agitator That is Even Nastier Than God

The sensation that felt like drifting at the bottom of dark water was gradually brightening. Faint light began to turn visible from behind closed eyelids, the ears that were soaked in silence began to catch noises.

“——Pa——don’t di——pa”

“Haji——”

“Open you——, Hajime——”

Multiple voices that seemed to feel desperate naturally shook Hajime’s consciousness. An awful sense of weariness made Hajime want to give an exaggerated cliché speech like “Five more years”, but he somehow swallowed back that impulse and awoke.

At the same time, the warmth enveloping his body was permeating gently to his core, it was sweeping away his weariness while producing vitality like a fuel poured into an engine.

Due to that, while feeling his consciousness rapidly surfacing, Hajime quietly opened his eyes.

Right away in his sight, there were several faces reflected in a circle like a roulette board. If a man of the world went through the same experience, he surely couldn't help but to whisper "Aa, I'm dead. This place is heaven…" because of the beautiful women, beautiful girl, and beautiful little girl that lined up there.

"Papa!"

"Hajime-san!"

'Hajime-kun!"

"Goshujin-sama!"

"Nagumo-kun!"

Myuu, Shia, Kaori, Tio, Shizuku, each of them called Hajime's name with their respective way of calling along with a sigh of relieve. Without exception, at the corner of the girls' eyes, something shining gathered. Surely, they were greatly worried.

"… aa. I made you all worry. My damage… Kaori huh. Thank you."

"It's fine. Something like that doesn't matter. I'm really glad. Your heart even stopped for a moment there……hics, really, I'm really glad…"

"S, so my heart stopped. … That makes me, even more grateful."

"Good grief desu. If it wasn't Kaori-san, just what would happen there… really, Hajime-san was too reckless desu"

From the words of Kaori who was overcome with emotion and began to cry, Hajime guessed that he was quite in a pickle just now, with cramped cheeks he expressed his gratitude. To such a Hajime, Shia tightly hugged his one remaining arm while huffing in anger.

"… Really my bad. I'm not going to run wild anymore."

"Papa, you are fine already?"

"Yeah. … Myuu too, I'm sorry. I showed you something uncool.

Also, thanks. For stopping papa. Myuu, you are already far stronger than papa, huh."

"Ehehe. Myuu is papa's daughter nano~. That's why that's only obvious nano"

Myuu showed a really wide smile while pressing her face at Hajime's chest and nuzzling there. It seemed that other than feeling proud, she was also feeling embarrassed from getting praised. Hajime used his right hand that was liberated by Shia and gently caressed Myuu's head.

"Well, at any rate. The most important thing is that Goshujin-sama is safe. It's vexing that I couldn't do the 'mouth to mouth' though…"

"You, just what were you trying to do while I was wandering between the border of life and death…"

"…"

"Oi, Yaegashi. Why are you looking away with an awkward face?"

"No, nothing, it's not like I wanted to kiss or a, ny, nything you know?"

Shizuku looked plenty agitated. Around the time when she spoke about kissing, it made it impossible already to even try to use artificial respiration as an excuse, but it seemed the person herself didn't notice. Hajime spontaneously wanted to insert a tsukkomi there, "Where has the Yamato Nadeshiko gone?" like that.

Looking carefully, Shia and Kaori were also turning their gaze beyond, their worried faces just now had gone somewhere else.

It appeared that it ended only with an attempt, but it seemed that everyone had the feeling of wanting to attack Hajime in his sleep. Considering how Hajime awoke right after the healing, and the devils were still kneeling with perplexed expressions, it, fortunately, seemed like not much time had passed since Hajime lost consciousness.

Although, all in all, Hajime noticed how this joking atmosphere was purposefully created. By all rights, there should be one more person here, an important companion who usually emitted a sense of presence that no one could ignore should be here.

She wasn't here——the one who was hurt by that fact wasn't just Hajime. Even so, Shia and the others acted in their own capacity to be considerate to Hajime, so that his heart wouldn't be lonely and break, they supported him with a clowning antic atmosphere like this.

(Really, this is just pathetic for me. This 'me' that was so hung up on Yue that I got supported by these girls, to give up everything by myself…)

Not just Hajime, even Yue, before at the Ice and Snow Cavern she was beaten into shape by Shia. Surely not just Shia, even Kaori, and others also supported and saved them.

This journey began only with the two of them at the bottom of the abyss with the resolve to turn the world into an enemy. But before they realized it, those that would try to protect monstrous people like them had gathered so many.

Coming here, Hajime strongly felt this obvious thing once again. The memory of bitter defeat was repainted by the smile of his reliable comrades. He quietly made a vow. He looked up to the sky and thought of his beloved who was waiting for him there.

Looking at such a Hajime who was making a hard to describe expression where pain and resolve were tangled with each other, Shia and the others immediately opened their mouths to call him…

However, as expected, the little girl with remarkable growth easily beat the lined up female camp to the punch.

"Papa, it's fine nano."

"Hm? Myuu?"

The sudden words made Hajime tilt his head, in contrast, Myuu showed a smile that looked a little bit like an 'Onee-san'. That smile

somehow made him feel déjà vu, yes…

(By any chance, is she, mimicking Yue?)

Before this, when she stepped forward into a dangerous ground in order to stop Hajime, Myuu mimicked Hajime and wrung out her courage. Inside the short but dense time that they spent together, Myuu obtained one kind of strength. But the thing that Myuu obtained wasn't only from Hajime.

While the people themselves weren't aware, it seemed that Myuu was absorbing various things from Yue who was always snuggling by Hajime's side with her heart connected to him. It appeared that Myuu thought if it was for encouraging Hajime, then she just needed to be like 'Yue-oneechan'!

Really, toward that encouragement from his gallant daughter, Hajime's expression also slackened slowly.

But, Hajime was still underestimating Myuu. Myuu's lexicon who had come this far looking at Hajime and the others didn't seem to have the word of compromise or halfway. If you do something, do it thoroughly! As though to say that, Myuu sent a straightforward gaze and with that hand that was small like a maple leaf she propped up Hajime's cheek.

And then…

"In place of Yue-oneechan, Myuu will make papa energetic nano!"

"No, Myuu, what are yoooou!?"

Hajime was still lying down so he couldn't draw back, his hand was propped on Myuu's back so he also couldn't pin her down, Hajime who couldn't stop her had his lips——corner (he barely averted his face) came into contact *muchuuu!* with Myuu's lips. It was a childish kiss with her lips pointed like an octopus, but a kiss was a kiss.

" " "Aa～～～!!" " "

"Hmm, far from just us, to even take Goshujin-sama by surprise…

Myuu, what a terrifying child!”

The shriek of Shia, Kaori, and Shizuku and Tio’s off-point admiration resounded. Hajime didn’t see because he was closely surrounded by Shia and others, but Aiko and others seemed to be also right behind Shia and company making a crowd, as their screams were also raised. It went without saying just who was it that was screaming.

Due to the immediate evasion that he somehow performed, Hajime at least avoided the abnormal situation of becoming the partner of a young girl. Furthermore, it was his daughter’s first kiss, although for the people around it seemed that it didn’t really matter.

If looked from the side, it was a scene of Hajime getting pushed down by a little girl and then kissed with her all. It was understandable. What was fearsome was the reproduction ratio of Myuu’s imitation of Yue. Or else was it the eroticism of the vampire princess that often pushed down Hajime that Myuu could copy it…

But, at that time, in the hall that was displaying the hellish situation, a nonchalant voice resounded as though it didn’t read the situation or place.

“My my, well well. Even for my daughter, that is really bold. But you see, Myuu. Myuu is the daughter, that’s why you must not aim at the lips. Husband’s lips belong to mama, you know?”

“Just who is the ‘husband’ and what’s with that ‘belong to mama’ desu-! Please don’t slip into the confusing and act like a married couple!”

Unnoticed Remia had twisted in her body beside Shia and prattled such thing. Shia vigorously put her tsukkomi there.

Myuu who was wrenched away by a panicked Kaori pouted her lips in dissatisfaction. “No～! Myuu is doing chuu with papa nano! It’s at the mouth nano!” She threw a tantrum on top of Hajime.

From the classmates who gathered at slightly distanced spot something like “His poisonous fang even went to that kind of small

child… Sex maniac demon king” or “… Lolicon” or “That kind of thing, with father and daughter… that’s too abnormal-“ or “Nagumo-san, that’s seriously screwed up –su” were audible, but Hajime didn’t hear anything at all, truly. He was making an expression that made even the devils shudder, but he said that he wasn’t bothered and so he wasn’t bothered.

Hajime pulled himself together and made a serious expression while raising his upper body. And then with his gaze, he somehow mentally conveyed about taking care of Myuu to Remia.

Eventually, Myuu would surely need some education. At this rate, she would grow into a high spec girl in various meanings imitating all of them, smiling fearlessly while picking a fight (TN: Shia, I think), normally acting innocent (TN: Shizuku), not forgetting to be gentle and considerate to others (TN: Kaori), but scattering charm everywhere on a whim (TN: Yue). Hajime wanted so that Myuu absolutely wouldn’t learn from the remaining person who was a matchless pervert.

Hajime shook his head as though to sweep away an unpleasant imagination, and then he suddenly performed transmutation and created a sword that looked like a katana from the stone floor.

It was slender and made from stone, but using compression transmutation it had high density and super heavyweight. Also, wind claw was enchanted on it so the surrounding of the blade looked to be faintly swaying, as a stone katana that was made improvised it possessed an abnormal intimidating air.

The eyes of Shia and the others turned around from Hajime’s sudden act, and then Hajime’s gaze turned to the devils which made them stiffen slightly in nervousness.

“Ha, Hajime-kun…”

Toward Kaori who called to him with a worried voice, Hajime stood up while sending her a glance. After that, he turned his gaze at Myuu who was staring fixedly at him from inside Remia’s arms. Hajime shrugged his shoulders while lightly chuckling, implicitly conveying “It’s fine”.

There was no emptiness in Hajime's eyes, recognizing that he was drifting off his usual air of aloofness, Kaori and others sighed in relieve. Myuu also smiled widely.

Hajime confirmed that and turned on his heel, while everyone was watching him attentively, he stood up imposingly in front of the devils.

"Now then, I don't really have any expectation, but there is something that I must ask you guys. If you don't know then I don't mind, but I won't tolerate any falsehood or silence. Of course, it's your personal freedom to be stubborn… know that the compensation will be expensive. If the person beside you is important then be honest."

Hajime tapped the stone katana on his shoulder while threatening naturally. Behind him, he could hear someone among the classmates whispered "It's just like a thug…" but he ignored it.

"I, if we answer, will you let us live?"

"Aa? You think you are in a position where you can negotiate? Something like that is obviously depending on my mood. You better endeavor your best to rub your hands together with a smile while talking. We here got thoroughly aimed with killing intent by the devil race with that Freed at the top of the list. Right now, you should be bawling in tears and be grateful instead, just by me letting you all live like this."

From behind a whisper of "This is not really different from before, is it?" could be heard but Hajime ignored it.

Hajime opened his mouth while glaring at the surviving devils who went quiet.

"Spit out what you know regarding the Holy Precincts. Also, I remember you guys saying something like wanting Kaori… the apostle to open the Divine Gate, but can an apostle open the Divine Gate alone?"

That question was answered with hesitation by a devil who seemed

to be the father who covered his child before this.

“Regarding the Holy Precincts, we only heard that it was a paradise for us, the devil race. If we can be welcomed there, we heard that we can become an even more excellent race. There is also something like prospering even more in the new land… I don’t understand much about the Divine Gate. It’s just, we only thought that perhaps if it’s the apostle-sama, then she could do something somehow…”

“Aa? That’s all you got? You aren’t trying to trick me here, are you? Your faith and your child, what you can protect is just one between the two just so you know, eh.”

Hajime lightly slapped the stone katana on the cheek of the man. The young boy hugged by the man shrieked “hii” while sending Hajime a gaze of terror.

From behind a whisper of “No matter how you see it, that’s a yakuza…” was audible but Hajime beautifully ignored it. Further the whisper of “Papa, that’s so cool!” from Myuu and a shocked voice of “Eh!? It’s fine like that!?” were raised, but those too were masterfully ignored.

“It, it’s true! I, it’s not like that question tests my faith or anything so I don’t lie in this! Even more, this concerns my child’s life here! Really, other than this, I don’t know anything!”

“Chih, useless. What about the other?”

“N, no, anything, more than that is…”

“Me, me too…”

“Ple, please, at least only my child’s life-“

Hajime once more tapped his stone katana on his shoulder *tap tap* while his eyes narrowed in displeasure, it made the devils tremble with fear and beg for their lives. From behind a whisper of “No matter how you look, the villain is Nagumo…” was audible but it was godly ignored.

“Haa, can’t be helped huh. It’s different matter if it’s Freed’s aide or perhaps a soldier, but civilian is just that, yeah.”

Even while sighing deeply, Hajime didn’t look that discouraged. He then shook his head once and quietly narrowed his eyes. “No way, are we going to be cut down just like this!?” The devils thought that and their bodies twitched in shivers.

Red sparks ran around them. But, right after they imagined the worst, the stone floor around them transformed and became a cage in a few seconds.

“For the time being stay quiet there. If you think of something no good and get troublesome… you got it right?”

“Ye, yeah…”

Space magic was enchanted on the cage, fixing it in the space itself, it was impossible to escape from there with average strength. Making that cage to imprison the devils in other words also meant that they wouldn’t have even their lives taken. Understanding that, the devils sighed in relief, although their nervousness was still there.

The classmates too, although it was the devil race, they were glad that this ended without them needing to see the scene of scared children getting slaughtered before their eyes.

As for Hajime, although he had recovered his sanity, he had the thought to just cut down these devils who tried to kill Hajime and the others so they could go to Holy Precincts, but…

As expected, although eighty percent of it was that Hajime returned to his sanity, Myuu had also put her body at risk to protect them. Just simply killing them felt wrong. To say nothing of how in the middle of the drifting atmosphere of “There shouldn’t be any slaughtering of unresisting people anymore… there won’t be any right?”, if he said something like “Eh? I’m going to normally massacre them but, is there any problem?” and carried it out… undoubtedly the atmosphere would die. Surely it would become an incomparably unbearable atmosphere there.

And so, with the intention of quickly lopping off their necks if they made any stupid movements, for the time being, Hajime put the matter regarding the treatment to the devils on hold.

Hajime turned his back to the imprisoned devils and returned to Shia and the others. And then, he performed a transmutation that was the most conspicuous from everything until now and in the blink of an eye, he created a table and chairs according to the number of people.

“For the time being, all of you sit down. Let’s talk about the matter from here on.”

Shia and the others nodded powerfully at those words while the classmates were taking their breaths with bewilderment.

By the way, there were two table sets. The side where Hajime, Shia, Kaori, Tio, Shizuku, Suzu, Ryutaro, then Aiko, Liliana, Remia, and Myuu gathered. The classmates other than those people were at the other. Although Myuu was throwing a tantrum that it was better to be on Hajime’s lap, Remia who read the atmosphere held Myuu in her arms.

Putting aside the displeased Myuu, Hajime looked over all present with a serious gaze and opened his mouth.

“First, sorting the information. The god that introduced himself as Ehito took over Yue’s body, but, if Ehito’s words are true then to completely grasp that body at the very least will take three days.”

Once Hajime cut off his words, everyone made a pained expression. Everyone understood well just how much Hajime treasured Yue coupled with his rampage just now, so they couldn’t help but sympathize with him.

Although, Shia and Kaori, Tio, and then Shizuku were returning strong gazes that didn’t shake for even a bit.

Inside the girls’ minds, the recovery of Yue was already determined fact. They believed that they would take her back without fail. That was why there was no reason to be gloomy or behave seriously. The

joking conversation and frivolous talk from before this were also mostly displaying that attitude.

Shia continued after Hajime's words.

"To take back Yue-san, we have to go to this Holy precinct they mentioned, is it? But, that golden gate didn't let Hajime-san pass. If the people who can pass through are limited by Ehito, then a different plan is necessary desu."

"You're right. … We needed either obtaining a different method to go to the Holy Precincts, or possibly a method that can break through the Divine Gate that is expected to manifest at the large invasion three days later."

"Hmm, as for the method to go directly… Goshujin-sama. As expected, the crystal key…"

Tio asked Hajime. To that, Hajime sighed deeply while shaking his head.

"No good. It was together in the treasure warehouse. Indeed, if we have that it will be surely possible to directly ride into the Holy Precincts but… without Yue, at best, perhaps I can make a degraded version of it."

Aiko and the others who didn't know about crystal key tilted their head, so Shizuku who was at Aiko's side explained with a pained look. Actually, Hajime had already obtained the method to return to earth. Aiko and the classmates who were told that quieted down, a moment later the audience hall was filled with shocked voices.

"You guys are noisy. Either way, it was destroyed so there is no meaning. Don't make a fuss."

"But, but, even though perhaps we can finally go home…"

"That's right! Can't you make it one more time somehow!?"

"I beg you, Nagumo! Show us your guts!"

Sonobe, Imura, and Tamai sent Hajime pleading words. The other

classmates also made a loud ruckus while sending Hajime imploring gazes.

The gaze of Hajime who scowled in irritation went toward the table of the classmates in strain. Aiko who got a really bad premonition let out a scolding in panic.

“Everyone, be quiet! Please don’t make a fuss! Calm down!”

“Bu, but Aiko-chan-sensei…”

Toward Aiko who was hopping up and down while remonstrating them, the students quieted down for the moment. Even so, the students who were in the mental state like a horse that had a carrot dangled in front of their eyes were mumbling their mouth wanting to say something.

Aiko talked toward them who were like that in a very kind and detailed way.

“Listen well, everyone. Sensei really understand how you all are feeling, but please listen to Nagumo-kun’s words calmly. The artifact for going home was already lost, to make that one more time, Yue-san’s power is necessary. Even if all of you make a fuss here, that truth won’t change.”

“However, the possibility that Nagumo is lying because he prioritizes taking back the girl is…”

“Nagumo-kun won’t lie like that! … He won’t. … He won’t, you know? … He will… … not won’t you?”

For some reason, after Aiko strongly objected, she was gradually losing momentum and directed a troubled gaze at Hajime. As might be expected from someone who had been made to experience various things using the name of the ‘Goddess of Harvest’, Aiko noticed that she couldn’t declare that Hajime wouldn’t lie in the middle and her confidence was gone.

Hajime in his heart gripped ‘Keep pushing through right there!’ to Aiko, but it was also him reaping what he sowed, so Hajime stopped with only making a scowl. Hajime let out merciless words

at the classmates who were not in a calm state from the sudden good news and the disappointment that followed right after.

“I’m not lying, I guess. Either way, I don’t have any intention to waste my time just so you guys can go home. After this, I will focus all my strength in taking back Yue after all. Going home is secondary.”

‘No way-!’ The classmates began to clamor once more, but Hajime’s ‘Coercion’ that he released forcefully shut them up while he spoke out the words that made them reconfirm the current situation.

“Besides, you lot, if you can go home right away then what are you going to do afterward, huh? If the shitty god isn’t murdered, his next target is earth, you know? That’s just meaningless.”

“Uu, now that you say that…”

“Certainly, he said something like that…”

“Damn it all… just leave us alone already.”

Hajime’s words made the classmates covered their face, falling prostrated on the table, or grieving. Giving a glance at them who were like that, Hajime brought the talk back on track.

“And so. Returning to the talk, if it is with a degraded version of the crystal key perhaps it’s possible to break through that Divine Gate. It’s vexing but… there is nothing to do but wait until the large invasion three days from now when the apostles reappear.”

“it will be easier if Ehito is worried when Aruvheit doesn’t come back and he come out himself from the other side, though…”

Kaori murmured that, but the possibility seemed low. Ehito most likely wouldn’t come out until he became able to completely control the body, and the time that he was able to do that would be the time of the large invasion. In that case, it didn’t change that it would be the other side who came and this side who had to go to them.

“… Before talking about that, can we win, I wonder?”

The one who murmured that was Suzu. She was looking down and a thick shadow covered her face. Surely, she was remembering when they were unable to do any single thing when facing Ehito.

Everyone made a complicated expression. In the middle of that, it was Hajime who easily answered.

“We’ll win.”

Suzu objected at that light tone with a slightly sullen expression.

“… even though you couldn’t do anything towards him?”

“Yeah. Even so, I’ll win the next time.”

“How, can you say that-! He can do anything to us just with a word, his magic is powerful without compare. To make matters worse, the apostles, Freed, monsters… and Eri… even Kouki-kun are on the other side… that guy is genuinely a monster, you know?”

It appeared Suzu’s heart was almost breaking a little bit. Eri who she wished to be reunited with didn’t listen to her at all. Far from that, she was thrown into confusion easily and unable to do anything. Actually, the monsters that she summoned using the simple gate in the middle of battle were also instantly killed by the apostles.

Although it couldn’t be denied that she was still not used to metamorphosis magic, even the age of god magic that she finally obtained with great pain ended up as nothing. Suzu was gritting her teeth from her powerlessness.

And then above all, the illusion that Ehito put her into——at that time, Suzu and the others tasted the sensation of being torn into pieces within an instant that felt so real they mistook it for reality. Their hands and legs severed with blood spraying everywhere, and while they tumbled down and fell down, their upper body and lower body separated, their shoulders fell, and last their neck went flying.

The sensation of an invisible sword caressing from outside to inside, even now Suzu could remember it. She remembered it clearly.

Ryuutaro and Shizuku were also the same. They patted their necks and limbs with expressions of discomfort. They also didn't have any sensation in their own limbs for a while. Amidst such a situation, the mental strength of Shizuku who went as far as undoing her binding curse and recovered her movement to fight was worthy of praise.

But, for Suzu, remembering the fear she felt of being dead while alive was something that was hard to endure. Just from thinking that she might be made to feel that one more time made her body naturally wither.

Hajime said without even any care to such a Suzu.

"So what?"

"Eh?"

Suzu reflexively looked up. Hajime continued.

"The opponent is a monster? We are outnumbered? Will something like that become any kind of obstacle?"

"Yo, you ask if it will become an obstacle… of course it…"

"Do you forget? When I was called incompetent by you guys, I fell into the abyss and crawled up until here, you know?"

"Aa…"

Suzu was spontaneously befuddled. The classmates who looked down with an expression of despair thinking there was no way they could win against god also raised their faces.

"There was nobody helping, there was also no food. The surrounding was teeming with monsters. What's more, I also got no talent with magic, even my left hand was gone… But, I survived."

The audience hall became as still as death. Everyone was naturally listening closely to Hajime's words.

"This is the same thing. Whether the opponent is a god or his army,

doesn't matter… Right now, I'm alive. That guy missed his chance to kill me. In addition, he also gave us the information himself."

Hajime's eyes were shining fiercely, blazing with killing intent. The corner of his mouth was lifted up, his canine was bared as though he was going to bite his enemy to death. That savage appearance that made anyone hallucinate a wild wolf aiming for its prey. A sound of someone gulping their saliva resounded.

"I'll steal Yue back, and kill that guy. It's time to change the attacker and defensive sides. I am the hunter, that guy is the prey. I'll chase him until the end of the world and make him raise a scream of death and agony. I'll teach that self-proclaimed god who believed without a doubt that he was special, just who is the monster here."

Hajime sent his gaze that was still fiercely glaring at Suzu. Then, Hajime asked Suzu who for some reason blushing even while trembling.

"Taniguchi. If you said that it's impossible already for you then close your eyes and plug your ears. I'll make all these ends, everything."

Those words weren't Hajime's consideration for Suzu. It was the reverse. Those words were testing Suzu. Those words asked her whether it was fine if it ended like this. Where she still couldn't say what she wanted to say satisfactorily. Where the other party still didn't even look at her. If Suzu said that she was fine with that, then while she was closing her eyes and plugging her ears, everything——including dealing with Eri, would be finished by Hajime.

Saying it in reverse, as long as Suzu was still standing up then Hajime would let her do as she pleased about the matter of Eri.

Hajime's gaze was also further directed at Ryuutaro and Shizuku.

Both of them noticed the implicit words filled in that gaze. Namely, whether they would leave the matter of Kouki to Hajime, or would they do something themselves. Those choices were entrusted to

them. Naturally, in case they left it to Hajime, there was only the one choice of obliteration. That too was also clearly conveyed to the two.

There was silence for a while. Hajime's severe words and atmosphere made the classmates lose their words. If there were people who shrunk back in fear from that, then there were also people who directed sparkling bright gazes or people who stared with blushing cheeks, or people whose expression turned into a face that concealed some kind of determination.

Among them, the first one who opened her mouth was Suzu. With a gloomy and weak atmosphere until just now blown away, she stared back straight at Hajime with a determined look.

"That's unnecessary you know, Nagumo-kun. Leave the matter of Eri and also Kouki to Suzu. Because I'll walk to where they are whether it's the Holy Precincts or where ever!"

While emitting the air of the usual mood she made, Suzu grinned fearlessly.

As though getting triggered by such girl, the quiet Ryuutaro raised a roar.

"DAAAAAAAAA-! Yosh-, I have enough acting wishy-washy like this! I ain't gonna let only Nagumo and Suzu be the one that keeps acting cool! I'm gonna beat up that stupid idiot Kouki and make him return to his senses, yeah!"

Ryuutaro punched his fist in his other hand's palm in front of his chest and made a similar fearless smile. It seemed that this muscle brain was actually also plainly feeling down. His best friend was turned to the enemy side, and when even Suzu showed a slight resistance, he himself was unable to resist the binding curse and the illusion. He lost his confidence feeling that he was worthless, but now it seemed he was already fine.

Looking at that, Shizuku "Fufufu" chuckled.

"I guess. That idiot Kouki needs to be punished hard, not just hard

but really haa~rd, also my feeling won't be cleared without knocking down that irritating grin on Eri… Be, besides, if it's the place where Nagumo-kun is going, I intend to follow no matter where it is… not just now, but from here on too, okay…"

Looking at Shizuku who was saying that kind of thing while stealing glances at Hajime with blushing cheeks, the classmates sent her a suspecting glance. They didn't know about Shizuku's feeling, so they never even in their wildest imagination thought that even Shizuku who was one of the two great beauties of their class would be felled.

No, it seemed that with Nagayama's party and Sonobe's group of Ai-chan protection squad as first in the list, several students——especially the girl students had sensitively guessed it. And then, after they alternately stared at Shizuku and Hajime with a little surprise, they then nodded as though in comprehension of something.

A part of the girls went "It's Don Juan. He is the Don Juan of the modern times. … Nagumo-kun is just too dreadfulll" with blushing cheeks while sending glancing looks at Hajime, but right now was a serious time so Hajime ignored it. (EN: Hajime's ignore has become the 8th God's Age Magic)

"I see. Then the one that will enter into the Holy Precincts will be us and Taniguchi, then Sakagami… well. It's just the usual members recent, I guess. If Amanogawa comes out at the other side then you guys do as you like. However… I'm not going to allow any halfhearted effort."

"Yep, thank you Nagumo-kun."

"Thanks, Nagumo."

Suzu and Ryuutaro said their thanks cheerfully. Hajime waved his hand lazily to tell them to not mind it while moving on to the next talk. But, there Liliana called for a halt.

"Sa, say~, Nagumo-san, can I speak for a bit?"

“Hm? What is it, princess.”

“You see. At the time of the great invasion, Hajime-san, and the others, the strongest battle force will ride into the Holy Precincts, while all of you are there, what should the capital who receives the attack… if Ehito-sama’s words are correct then they will come from the God Mountain as the origin, right? Thinking about the strength of the apostle, it’s unthinkable that even the great barrier will be able to hold out for long… is there something, a way to temporarily seal the Divine Gate?”

It was a natural worry for a princess of Hairihi Kingdom. If the apostle’s disintegration ability was used in full, even the great barrier wouldn’t hold out for long. To say nothing of fighting the apostle honestly from the front, the only one who could do that was someone like Hajime. It was unknown how long it would take until Hajime and others could beat Ehito, but during that time it was clear as day that at the very least a great number of people would be slaughtered.

Hajime who was looked at with pleading gaze nodded once.

“I was thinking to talk about that now.”

“And what do you have to say?”

“I cannot stomach that Ehito. That’s why, from here on, I’m not going to let anything, not a single thing, go according to that guy’s plan. I don’t care what will happen to the people of this world but… nevertheless, it’s extremely unpleasant if I let that guy laugh loudly in his dying moments thinking of all the people he slaughtered. That’s why, whether it is his apostles or underlings, Freed or all those monsters, wholesale slaughter is on the menu for all of them. Everything that guy has, even his expectation that he has, I’ll wreck them all thoroughly to the root and branch.”

‘Ku-ku-ku’ Looking at Hajime who was actually chuckling with a crooked face made the classmates draw back. Even Liliana who asked him was making a cramped face. Although, as expected, there were some of the girls who were staring at Hajime with red cheeks and heated expressions.

“E, err, in other words, are you saying that you will be able to do something about the invading large army of apostles?”

“Let’s see. Putting aside the detail of the concrete method for later. For now, what I’m thinking is to freely share my artifacts. I’ll super strengthen the common soldiers, adventurers, and the mercenaries. I’ll equip everyone with a weapon, I also planned to implement anti-aircraft weapons. We only have three days so it will be severe, but about that, you guys will also cooperate, right?”

When Hajime looked around, powerful nods were returned conveying that naturally, they would cooperate. Unexpectedly, even several of the students whose hearts had broken and withdrew from battle also sent him powerful gazes. Perhaps they were provoked by Hajime’s strong fighting spirit.

Liliana closed her eyes while pondering. After a beat, she opened her mouth.

“I think there will be pandemonium from the apostle’s attack, but fortunately, when we were kidnapped they were only focusing on that so there should not be that much damage to the soldiers and knights. However, even so, I think there is a limit of the battle strength that we can mobilize within three days. Whether they will be enough against the mighty apostle as the opponent or not is… in addition, even for argument’s sake we can gather the number, can Nagumo-san prepare powerful artifacts that can even oppose the apostle in that many numbers?”

“Yeah, I can. About the number of people, we will use the gate and gather them from various places. For that sake, while I’m preparing the artifacts, you guys have to fly around the world to all the places.”

“Gate, is it? Goshujin-sama. Weren’t all the artifacts hath been destroyed already?”

Tio tilted her head while asking. Certainly, the key hole type artifact ‘Gate Hole’ was installed all over the world so they were safe, but the essential key type artifact ‘Gate Key’ to open the gate was stored inside the ‘Treasure Warehouse’, so it was supposed to

be destroyed together.

Indeed, if they could use a gate then it would be easy to gather battle forces from all over the world within three days, but…

“Actually, things like items that cannot be replaced or several important things, before we passed through the gate at the border of Shunee snow field, I transferred them behind, inside the ground.”

“What! Then, the gate key too?”

“Yeah. In case something happened, so that Myuu and others can escape I brought the crystal key that can be used effectively here but that backfired, but… items like the compass, the proof of dungeon conquer, and the remaining god water… of course, the gate key too should be buried there. Ah, also, Kaori’s former body too. It’s underground so it must be relatively cold, I think it will be okay but… if we don’t dig it out quickly the ice will melt and it will turn into a grave.”

“Re, retrieve it-! If we don’t hurry to retrieve it-! My body will…”

When Hajime talked about Kaori’s former body, everyone’s expression turned into realization. If Hajime didn’t prepare for the unexpected situation, right about now Kaori’s body would be dust. It was a fine play from Hajime.

Although, Kaori couldn’t help but become fretful when the grave was mentioned. Hajime stroked the flustered Kaori to calm her down.

“I see, I understand well. … However, there is one more problem. As expected, if we speak that the world might end three days later, just how many people will believe that and gather… to say nothing of how what we will fight the apostles. In the worst case, there is the possibility that we will be the bad guys…”

Liliana was making a complicated expression while pointing out even more issues. But, it seemed that in regard to those too, Hajime happened to have the answer in hand.

“Regarding that, I think we can manage somehow. We will have

Kaori or Tio to use regeneration magic.”

“Regeneration… magic?”

Liliana tilted her head. In contrast, Kaori guessed what Hajime wanted to say and clapped her hand.

“You mean ‘regenerating’ the scene of the past isn’t it? Just like what we experienced at the great labyrinth of Merujiine.”

“That’s right. Regenerate of what happened here and preserve it in an artifact for image recording. Then show it to the upper brass of every place. The guys that we had met and talked with until now… Catherine of Brook, Iruwa of Fuhren, Roa of Holuad, Ranzi of Ankaji, Alfrerick of Fea Belgen, Gahard of the empire, if it’s those guys then they won’t doubt us. It will be easy to gather the battle force.”

Naturally, princess Liliana of the kingdom and the guild master of the adventurer guild were also included. Even in this world, they were all key people with power.

Despite saying that he had no interest in the people of this world, he had an extravagant line-up of connections. While feeling dizzy at the mentioned names who she knew were quite the big shots, Liliana thought that indeed if it was those members, then they would surely treat this seriously.

“Next is… that’s right. It’s better if we also use sensei to give incitement.”

“Ee!? M, me!? No, wait, incitement!?”

Aiko who suddenly had the talk turned to her trembled. Toward such an Aiko, Hajime raised his voice loudly.

“Now, stand up everybody! We will smash the ambition of the evil fake Ehito who dared to falsify himself as the virtuous Ehito-sama and manipulate fake apostles, who right now is about to trample this world! Fight together with this messenger of god, the ‘Goddess of Harvest’! Something like that. Do your best.”

“Do your best, that’s not it! Just what is with that speech! How can you say those kinds of words so smoothly… it’s Nagumo-kun who is the great agitator here.”

“Don’t mind the little thing here sensei. The seed we sprinkled is almost blooming. Then isn’t it fine if we water and grow it up, and then harvest all the yummy crops? As might be expected from a farmer.”

“Just who was the one who did all that…”

Aiko stared fixedly at Hajime with an exasperated face. It was also like this in the town of Ur, Aiko was convinced that Hajime absolutely possessed the talent of an agitator.

It seemed that the classmates were also of the same opinion. They somehow got the vision of Hajime in front of stars dangling manipulating string down while chuckling with a cool pose, “Eh? Isn’t this the same like Ehito?” they were tilting their heads pondering. Though several of the girls were whispering “Nagumo… no, Hajime-sama…” with red cheeks, but here they must return to their sanity immediately.

Hajime smiled wryly at Aiko who although she realized that the method was effective and understood that this had to be done, but for some reason, she wasn’t fully accepting it.

“This is a battle that will become an all out war of humanity. Even if the battle force is gathered but a mere disorderly crowd will be meaningless. A powerful leader is necessary. And someone like a king of a country will be insufficient for that. The only one who can do this is just Aiko-sensei. Really please.”

“…”

Hajime’s words made Aiko twitched for a moment. Since a while ago she kept trembling. It was as though she was a small animal. And then such an Aiko who was like a small animal, for some reason she began to send glancing looks at Hajime while fidgeting. And then, she timidly asked the doubtful Hajime.

“Na, Nagumo-kun. Just now, at the end there, what did you say?”

“Hm? Really please…”

“N, no, not that…..about me, you called me, A, Aiko-sensei weren’t you?”

“… Is there, any problem?”

“N, no. Nagumo-kun, usually you only call me ‘sensei’ so…”

“Is that so?”

Hajime tilted his head. Aiko was fidgety, or rather she was being bashful while she opened her mouth with looking up eyes.

“You did. … That… can you, say that just now, one more time?”

“… Just now, about the last bit?”

“Yes. However, this time, say it without ‘sensei’…”

Hajime’s cheeks were cramping. At the same time, the small animal who kept glancing at him with an upward glance while blushing at the opposite seat made him wanted to put a tsukkomi whether she understood her own standpoint and the surrounding situation.

Aiko’s ‘coaxing’ made the classmates to make a fuss. “Eh, what is this?” or “What, this atmosphere…” or “I, it’s a lie right…” or “Hajime-sama… as expected” Murmurs like those could be heard. Incidentally, the sound of grinding teeth was resounding from the lot of Ai-chan protection squad.

Perhaps because of nervousness, but the voice of the surrounding didn’t reach Aiko. If she was speaking like this understanding everything… then how terrifying that was. That was because Ai-chan had thrown to the winds various things to charge until this far. Doing something like abandoning her teacher self had the risk of collapsing her identity. Hajime could only pray that she wasn’t acting like this while knowing that it should not be.

However it was also a problem for her to lose strength just before

the final battle, having said that, it didn't seem like any deception would work on the current Aiko who was running wild. Even when he sent his gaze at Shia, Kaori, and Shizuku, everyone was only smiling wryly and didn't send him any lifeboat. He wished that they wouldn't sympathize with the complicated heart of a maiden at this kind of time.

Hajime was sighing deeply, in the middle of the gathering piercing attention, he resolved himself and opened his mouth.

"… Aiko, please."

"-!! Yes! Leave it to me! I'm going to incite them like mad! This is the time for a teacher of social study to show her real ability!"

Was incitement the real ability of a social study teacher… he wanted her to apologize to all the social study teachers in the country. Hajime once again sighed while taking off his gaze from Aiko who was absurdly in high spirit.

Toward his ears, "Te, teacher and student… is this ero game-" or 'A, Aiko-chan got the poisonous fang of the demon king…" or "Casanova… the guy there is a Casanova! You mustn't meet his eyes! You will get pregnant!" those murmurs could be heard. The twitching of Hajime's cheeks couldn't be stopped.

"Co, cough-! Na, Nagumo-san… I, I will work hard too!"

For some reason, Liliana raised her voice. Her cheeks were dyed bright red, her almond shaped eyes were shining in sparkles with some kind of expectation.

"… Yeah, do your best, princess."

"… I will work hard!"

"Yeah."

"I will work hard!"

"…"

“I will work hard!”

“…”

“I, I will work, hard, hics-“

“… … … … … …Please, Liliana.”

“… Lily.”

“Guu… please, Lily.”

“Yes! You can rely on me! Please look at the influence and popularity of a princess! The likes of the masses will be beaten hand down!”

He got the feeling that something a princess absolutely must not say had been said somehow, but surely it was just his imagination. The princess-sama who was always loved by the masses should not be thinking of something like ‘it’s so easy to manipulate the mass huh’.

The clamor of the classmates knew no end. The eyes looking at Hajime were already becoming gaze filled with awe or gaze containing strange heat. Perhaps it could be said that these gazes were even more emotional than the one directed at Ehito or Aruvheit.

“… Haa. Let’s conclude this.”

Hajime let out a sigh and then he looked around at everyone, changing the atmosphere stiffly in one breath. Hajime went on with Aiko and Liliana’s words and tolerated the mood of his classmates, were also with the intention of softening the atmosphere somewhat.

With the danger to the world approaching, to say nothing of the danger that was threatening even their birthplace, Earth too, there was nobody here that wasn’t feeling the mental burden. So that none of the classmates would run wild from pessimism, Hajime regulated the atmosphere so that it wouldn’t be too tense.

Hajime’s serious expression changed the soft atmosphere into one with nervousness in one go. Aiko and Liliana were also properly

changing their atmospheres to the degree that made anybody wonder just where the embarrassing or sweet air they had been exposing until now had gone to. This attitude in this aspect was truly as expected from a teacher and a princess.

Surely their ‘coaxing’ was something from their heart, but if the atmosphere was tensed like this from the start then they undoubtedly wouldn’t say such things. Looked like they were reading the mood sensitively. Although it was unknown whether they were doing it intentionally or unintentionally.

The classmates were also lured by that, even while their bodies were quite relaxed, they also seemed able to feel the tension.

Hajime confirmed that and opened his mouth.

“The objective that I prioritize most is taking back Yue. In order to do that at the great invasion three days from now, I will go through the Divine Gate that we think will be open at that time and enter the Holy Precincts. Regarding Nakamura and Amanogawa, I leave them to Taniguchi and others. What’s left is the interception of the invading apostles.”

Hajime stopped talking for once and confirmed whether they understood. Everyone strongly nodded, so judging that, there was no problem, Hajime continued his words.

“I’m telling you the plans from now until three days later. First, I plan to head to the deepest part of Orcus. To mass produce artifacts, the environment of Orcus is the most optimum, after all. For this, I want Kaori, Myuu, and Remia to come along as helpers.”

“Yes, got it Hajime-kun.”

“Yes, nano! Myuu will help nano!”

“Please say anything about what I can do.”

Kaori, Myuu, and Remia gave back a pleasant reply. Hajime put Myuu and Lemia at his side was in preparation in the unlikely event so that they wouldn’t be taken hostage again, but he also had the intention to make them take care of his needs (EN: Giggity) while

he was concentrating in mining and transmuting, so his reason also wasn't just something on the surface.

Hajime nodded back at Kaori and the rest, then this time he moved his gaze to Shia.

"Shia, you go to Raisen great labyrinth."

"… I see. I will ask for Miledy's cooperation, am I?"

"Correct. If she has the information about Ehito or the Holy Precincts even just for a little, then that's a good deal already. That time we were forcefully ejected so it's unknown whether there is a shortcut or not. At least we got the proof of conquering, but if it doesn't react at the spring at Brook's outskirts, then you have to go through inside the labyrinth again."

"I think that perhaps, she will let me pass but… even if it's no good, this time I swear I'll clear the labyrinth in half a day. If it's the current me, that great labyrinth is no different than a playground."

"I also think so. I'll leave it to you."

"Yes desu!"

Hajime smiled at Shia who nodded energetically. Next, Hajime called to Tio.

"Tio."

"Yes. I understand. Goshujin-sama is asking me to return home, correct?"

"As expected. If there is a danger to the world, then the law of dragon race also doesn't matter. Even if they aren't as strong as Tio, if the strength of the dragon race is added with my artifacts, they should be able to fight even the apostles."

"I think so. As expected, there is no choice for the dragon race to not move in this situation. Let me guarantee their strength too. However, the hidden village is… quite far. Truly accomplishing it within three days is not possible…"

“About that, let’s manage it somehow using the artifact.”

Hajime was rearranging the order of priority in his head while moving his gaze further.

“Yaegashi, you go to the empire. The same like the Hairihi Kingdom, it’s possible to go there using the gate, I’ll duplicate the gate key to go to the kingdom before you depart after persuading Gahard to send the battle force to the kingdom.”

“That’s… fine but, why am I the one going?”

“That’s because Yaegashi is Gahard’s favorite. Just to be sure, I’m taking into account so that the talk will be smooth. After all, there must be some people there that hold a grudge from the case with the restriction choker. Thinking about the negotiating ability and battle strength, there is no one else I can leave this to.”

“Mu. I understand that, more or less, but… you know my feeling, yet you send me at the place of a man wooing me, that’s a little shocking. Well, I understand that this is not the time to say that kind of thing so it’s fine but…”

“… My bad. If Gahard screws around then just give my name. Say that if he tried wooing Yaegashi Shizuku, then Nagumo Hajime won’t stay quiet.”

“-… Su, a surprise attack is cowardly.”

Shizuku slightly blushed while conveying her consent.

“The students and Liliana will go to the capital. Gather the battle force and raise their moral with their speech. Incite them skillfully so that they can fight mercilessly even against apostles. And then, the battlefield will be the plain in front of the capital. There is no way we are going to fight inside the capital even after knowing that they will attack from the God Mountain at the back of the capital, after all.”

“In that case, we need to evacuate the people out of the capital then. Although the gate can be used, evacuating all the people in three days is… looks like we need to hurry.”

“It’s fine if we send the civilians to the empire capital in place of their battle force that we will pull on our side. right?”

“But, Nagumo-kun. To fight the apostles who can fly at the sky on a plain is disadvantageous…”

“I plan to take a measure of an anti-aircraft weapons and heavy weapons, and so on. Also, Nomura-!”

Nomura Kentarou of Nagayama party whose name was suddenly called went “oO!?” with a strange voice. Not even in his wildest dream, he imagined that his name would be called in this timing.

“You are an earth elementalist, right?”

“Eh? A, yeah. That’s right but…”

“Then, collect the workers in the capital and the guys with an aptitude for earth element magic, it’s fine even if it’s simple but create a fortress on the plain.”

“For, a fortress?”

“It’s better to have shelter right? Ask about the detail to the specialist in the capital. Later I’ll send you an artifact exclusively for you, so create a place that is easy to fight on the plain.”

“Go, got it. I’ll try.”

Further after Nomura, Hajime also gave instructions at other classmates too here and there. They nodded from being swallowed by the momentum. Hajime gave them some kind of concrete roles with the intention that they could finish this without them getting crushed by the tension that was heightening moment by moment.

Also, as soon as the production of the heavy weapons were finished, Hajime planned to send them to the capital in order, but for the lecture on how to use the weapon, it was more effective to have the classmates to do it. Even if they didn’t know the detail of the mechanism, but they should be able to handle the weapon compared to the resident of this world who in the first place didn’t know the concept of heavy firearms.

“Taniguchi, Sakagami, you two go to the forest of trees. Talk to the lot of Haulia and Fair Bergen and send the bunches that can fight to the capital. If you finished with that, contact me. I’ll receive you in Orcus. Until the time limit, you two will focus on subjugating the monsters of the abyss and strengthening them. After all, you two finally manage to get metamorphosis magic.”

“Roger!”

“Ou!”

After that, they talked a little bit more about the details, and then while floating a fearless smile before the three days that surely would be the densest time of their life, Hajime once more ran his gaze to everyone.

And then, a beat later, his mouth slowly opened.

“The enemy introduced himself as a god. In addition, he boasted mightiness that corresponds to it. Every single member of his army consist of a one man army. There are even monsters outside of common sense and strengthened puppet soldiers that don’t fear death.”

Calm voice. Yet, it resounded extremely clearly.

“But, that’s all. Those guys are not invincible or anything. Just like what I did, the god and his apostle can be killed. Humans can bring down the paranormal existence.”

The figure of the talking Hajime was one armed and one eyed with white hair that looked as though his life was sucked out from him. Those things showed the path this man who was called incompetent had walked until this point. Those were the proof of how he butchered a great number of monsters, turned them into his nourishment and crawled up here. And then, he actually showed the proof in front of everyone in this place. That human could win even against god.

That was why they naturally could understand. Even if he had lost once, even after his important person had been stolen, he would

make even those situations into his nourishment. The bloodied and wounded young man in front of their eyes, turned any kind of impossible into possible.

The words that shook the heart whether one wanted it to or not continued.

“There is no need to think that this fight is for the sake of someone whose face you don’t know, much less the world. There is no need to shoulder that kind of thing. Like how I am fighting for the sake of taking back my beloved, it’s fine for everyone here to fight each for your own reason. There is nothing large or small about those reasons. There is no weight or anything. Because you want to go home. Because you want to meet your family, for the sake of your friend, for your lover, merely just for surviving, merely because you cannot stomach this… whatever is fine.”

For a beat, Hajime’s words cut off. But, everyone in this place became self-aware of their own wishes. Impulses welled up inside their chests.

As though waiting for that, Hajime unleashed his words. Blazing like flame, yet permeating like water, powerful like earth, yet enveloping like wind, it was such words…

“If there is a time where you must muster your all for once in your life, then now is exactly that time-. Right now, in this time, burn your soul! Take the step for the sake of your wish! And then, all of you survive! If you manage to do that, then I’ll present you the reward of the ticket for going home!”

The sound of gulping reverberated. A throbbing sound like alarm bell could be heard. The clenched fists, the firmly stepping feet, the gritting teeth groaned creakingly. It was as though their will naturally rose up like a roar.

Among the people who were delirious with fever, Hajime enchanted them with gleam and fangs like a wild wolf.

And then a word.

“Win.”

What came back was naturally countless roars.

Arifureta Chapter 160

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/161/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. He also did the edits.

At Nostalgic Orcus (Beginning)

Inside the darkness, there was a silhouette standing quietly.

The place was a large space made from stone that felt smooth like marble with several thick pillars inside. It had a solemn atmosphere like a shrine somewhere. For a light source, there was only the faint glimmer from the green light stone that shone through the door of the room before this place.

That light cut through the dark and stretched into the room like a single path, illuminating the back of the standing silhouette.

Suddenly, a new shadow piled up on that back. The slender silhouette came from a female, a voice that was clear and beautiful even while it sounded hesitant it called to the back.

“…Hajime-kun.”

The standing silhouette——Hajime turned around just a little toward that voice which called his name.

“Kaori. The harvesting is over already?”

“Yes. It’s quick thanks to the compass, see. The monsters too…as

expected, it's cheating with the spec of the apostle, isn't it?"

Kaori showed a wry smile, perhaps from recalling the time of hardship when she was exploring the surface level of the Orcus Great Labyrinth with her classmates. And then, in consideration so that she wouldn't break the atmosphere, she entered into the hall quietly.

"…This place is, where you met with Yue, isn't it?"

Kaori whispered that while standing beside Hajime. The place Hajime's gaze was fixed at was——a half melted broken lump of mineral.

Hajime quietly nodded. His eyes were clear like a spring deep inside a forest filled to the brim with tranquility. It was the exact opposite of the empty eyes saturated with negative emotions of fury and hatred before. His gaze now was saturated with affection and pain.

"When I saw her for the first time, I thought it was a horror scene. Inside pitch black darkness, crimson eyes were peeking out from behind a weeping willow made of gold threads…something like that. Even when Yue called with a voice asking for help, I tried to close the door, you know? This fellow is absolutely a no-good person. That was what I thought."

"Fufu. Certainly, it's unthinkable that in the depth of the abyss like this place there would be something like a normal girl."

"Right? Especially at that time. My mental state held no interest for anything other than survival. Now, when I recall that time, I'm thinking, really, why did I help her, huh?"

Kaori let out a chuckle at the way Hajime talked. Hajime too squinted nostalgically while making a fond smile.

"And now that girl is someone special that can make me go mad. Really, this thoroughly teaches me that we won't know how life will it turned out in the future."

"No truer words than that."

Their words cut off, both of them closed their eyes for a bit. Hajime thought about his beloved lover. Kaori thought about her love rival (close friend). And then, almost at the same time, their eyes opened quietly. A flame of resolve was dwelling there.

“We will surely take her back, won’t we?”

“Yeah. We will take her back for sure.”

Hajime and Kaori looked at each other’s face and both of them made fearless smiles.

But right after that, as though there was something he forgot to say, Hajime’s face went ‘hah’ and he opened his mouth.

“Ah, but Kaori, you will remain behind with the surface group at the fight, okay?”

“Eh? Why…aa, by any chance, is it about this body stopped functioning?”

“Yeah. For the time being, I prepared an artifact for countermeasure, but as expected in front of Ehito, I don’t know how much effect it will have. After all, originally that body is that guy’s creation.”

Kaori’s expression turned bitter.

Indeed, the apostle body was something created by Ehito’s side. At the devil king castle, Ehito stopped Kaori’s body from functioning. It was doubtful whether they could completely defend against that. On the other hand, if Kaori returned to her original body, it would be a great decrease in her battle strength.

And so, the role of dealing with the apostles that would come invading the surface was best for Kaori.

However, even Kaori wanted to go to save Yue. Even though she understood that logically she should stay behind, emotionally she was unable to really accept it. “Muu” Kaori pouted her lips, to that Hajime shrugged while giving her words to persuade her.

“Don’t make that face. Even if we take back Yue, if the others ended up dead, putting me aside, it will be hard to endure for Kaori and others, right? Also about Myuu and Remia, the plan is for them to remain here in the surface hiding at the deepest part of Orcus. It had been proved once that they are effective as a hostage, so it is necessary for someone to protect them here just in case.”

“…Haa, it can’t be helped, isn’t it? It’s vexing, but I don’t want to become a burden. Besides, there are also a lot of people I don’t want to die so…yep, I understand. I will protect the place where Hajime-kun and the others will go home too. I also won’t let anyone lay their hand on Myuu-chan and Remia-san. Also, Ai-chan-sensei and Lily too, right!? Right-!?”

“Why are you emphasizing those two…”

Hajime smiled wryly at Kaori who was staring fixedly with puffed up cheeks. To such a Hajime, Kaori turned her face aside with a huff and let out a sulking voice.

“’Aiko, Lily, please’ Even though you said something like that. Hajime-kun is a womanizer.”

“No, that’s because I read the mood…”

“The other classmates too, several of them were sending you feverish gazes, you know? Saying something like Don Juan or Casanova, I think that even if Hajime-kun is called that, you really cannot deny it, I’ll tattle at Yue when she returns. Even though, I too am still stopping at an ‘important’ stage, but other girls one after another…uu, Yue whose position is immovable is enviable.”

“…”

Kaori was acting with timidity that seemed forced. Hajime scratched his cheek seeing that. That wasn’t because he was exasperated with Kaori’s attitude, it was because a feeling that denied a part of her words was naturally welling up in him.

Hajime crouched down in front of the mineral that sealed Yue before, the mineral which had the property where it was difficult

for magic power to flow in it. He lifted his hand while addressing Kaori.

“The punch at that time. That was quite effective you know. That attack really opened my eyes.”

“He? …Ah, that’s, err, it hurt, wasn’t it? I did that quite with my full power…”

Kaori’s eyes turned round for a moment from the sudden change of topic, but when she noticed that Hajime was talking about her punch when he was running wild in the audience hall, her expression turned awkward and she averted her gaze.

Hajime used his refined magic power which shined vividly incomparable with the time when he undid the seal of Yue with difficulty. This time the sealing stone was permeated by his magic power unexpectedly easily.

This mineral left behind in this place was because of its abnormally bad rate of magic power permeation. On top of that, it even repelled back magic power. It caused him to be uneasy whether it could be put inside the ‘Treasure Warehouse’. At that time, the treasure warehouse was a super important item without replacement and he didn’t know the way to manufacture it, so Hajime had apprehension that the ‘Treasure Warehouse’ might break because it used magic power when taking in and out items. That was why Hajime wanted to avoid actually storing this mineral into the treasure warehouse. There was also how Yue seemed to detest this mineral stone even though she didn’t say it out loud.

While transforming that sealing stone into blocks, Hajime continued his words towards Kaori who kept sending him glances.

“Yeah, that punch, it literally reverberated until my core. Even what you said that I’m the worst and uncool, those words stabbed deeply.”

“Aa, uuu. E, err…that…”

Kaori raised a strange moan and looked all shook up.

“If it was another person doing that, then it wouldn’t affect me like that at all though.”

“Eh?”

“Those who can do the same thing like Kaori and make it reverberate until deep inside me, well, I guess there are only Shia and Tio left.”

“You mean…”

“…Perhaps I cannot say anymore that you are just ‘merely important’ for me I guess.”

“…Hajime-kun.”

The sealing stone that was carved apart into blocks was stored into the new ‘Treasure Warehouse’ that Hajime recreated after coming to Orcus. While doing that, Hajime was murmuring as though talking to himself, causing Kaori’s eyes to open wide.

Hajime suddenly stood up and his gaze met with Kaori. Those eyes lacked sharpness, instead they were clad in a gentle atmosphere. Kaori’s heart leaped from looking at herself who was reflected there.

“Thank you, Kaori. For continuing to think about me. …I wanted to say just that before killing that guy.”

“…Stop it. Something like that, it sounded like last will for some reason, that’s ominous.”

“Haha, I guess. My bad, that’s not like me.”

Kaori shook her head left and right toward Hajime who was smiling wryly.

“No, me too, thank you. I’m happy. …Fufu, I have to say this to Yue when she comes back. Hajime-kun is going dere. Anyway, I finally got Shia’s position, I’ll say that to her.”

“Kuku, if you do that you will get bullied again, you know? After

all, for some reason Yue likes to be playful with Kaori."

"Uu, that's, she absolutely enjoyed my reaction to that, didn't she? It feels irritating when I remember it. While Hajime-kun and the others ride into the other side, I must think of a payback present."

"Now I can imagine the outcome where you get paid back twice for that."

"Geez-, Hajime-kun is also enjoying it!"

Hajime chuckled while shrugging at Kaori who bared her teeth in irritation. And then, both of them closed their mouths at the same time. They sympathized with each other over their feelings that wanted to meet Yue very much.

Hajime once again smiled with Kaori and lifted his hand at the last sealing stone. And then, he turned the stone into block shape one after another stored them inside the 'Treasure Warehouse'.

And at that time, they noticed that on the floor where the sealing stone was left there was some kind of pattern carved there.

"…This is."

"What's the matter Hajime-kun? …Pattern? Isn't this Vandour Shune's crest…"

Kaori peeked from behind Hajime who was crouching and traced the pattern carved on the floor below the sealing stone with his finger, she then tilted her head at the familiar pattern and murmured.

Hajime nodded wordlessly and then took out from the 'Treasure Warehouse' the tear shaped pendant that was the proof of having conquered the Ice and Snow Cavern.

Right after that

kiiiiiiiii

Such shrill voice sounded out, in resonance the pendant and the

pattern on the floor shook.

The pendant that was put on Hajime's palm moved bit by bit as though it was dragged toward the pattern on the floor. It was hard to see because it was dark, but looking carefully at the center of the pattern on the floor, there was a small hole open where it seemed the pendant could be fit there.

Hajime and Kaori looked at each other and nodded at the same time. Hajime inserted the pendant into that cavity.

Immediately after, light ran through the pattern on the floor, then a sound of metals scraping against each other rose and the surrounding pattern rose up. It was a round stone pillar with a diameter around thirty centimeters. When the pillar rose until the height about Hajime's eye, it stopped still. And then, before Hajime's eyes, its side opened up.

"…So there is this kind of mechanism. A mechanism that can be opened only by someone who has conquered Ice and Snow Cavern huh."

"That, what is it? It was under the block that sealed Yue, I have the feeling that it's related to Yue somehow but…"

At the center of the stone pillar there was a mineral stone as big as a pinball with high transparency, in a glance it looked like a diamond. Hajime put it on his palm and stared it fixedly, from his side Kaori murmured her conjecture.

And then, it was soon proved that her conjecture was correct.

"…Looks like this is the same type of image recording artifact that was used by Oscar and others."

"That's…someone who left behind that kind of thing in this kind of place, I can only think of one person."

"Anyway, let's try activating it."

Hajime poured magic power into the white crystal.

Right after that, the dark sealing room was filled with golden light mixed with white. And then, in front of Hajime and Kaori who narrowed their eyes, the talk of the person who left behind the image recording began.

That talk, was filled with very deep love and affection, and then also tremendous resolve and repentance. And then, in it was an earnest wish, so warm and gentle that it would shake the soul of the person hearing it no matter what.

The white golden light settled, the recording of about ten minutes vanished with a whiff, then a lingering emotion that was hard to express, yet by no mean it was something unpleasant, filled Hajime and Kaori. Kaori was shedding beautiful tears that trickled smoothly which she forgot to even wipe.

"…We have to show it to Yue."

"Yeah. This is something that Yue has to see no matter what… Kaori, I'll entrust this to you. We don't know what's going to happen on the other side, after all."

"…Yes. I got it."

The mineral with the radiance of a diamond that Hajime's hand handed over was accepted by Kaori as though she was handling a treasure.

"Nevertheless, it's lucky that I understood the detail regarding the special trait of the sealing stone. Indeed, with just 'Mineral Appraisal' there is no way I will be able to grasp its true character. Well, though if I was told that I should notice it while facing that scorpion imitation, that much is…"

"In a sense, it's cyborg? Something like that, isn't it?"

"Yeah. Thanks to that, an urge to create various things is welling up in me. Myuu and Remia are also waiting right now. Let's quickly return and mass produces the artifacts."

"Mass producing artifact…what amazing words."

Shrugging at Kaori whose face was somewhat convulsing, Hajime once more ran his gaze through the place that was his beginning with Yue. And then, after closing his eyes for a beat, he turned on his heel with resolve on his back once more.

After that, Kaori quietly followed after him.

Without looking back, the two of them exited the room, then the sealing room was shut in darkness. However, inside there wasn't just cold darkness that swallowed everything, it felt like there was kindness drifting there too.

"Ah, papa! Kaori-oneechan. Welcome back nano!"

"We are home, Myuu."

"Myuu-chan, we are home."

Hajime and Kaori who returned to Oscar's residence were welcomed by Myuu's energetic voice and fully bloomed smile. The entrance of the lime colored building made from digging into the rock wall was crossed through by the beloved daughter with rapid footsteps *sutetetete—* to which Hajime lightly embraced her with his artificial arm that he created in an emergency.

Myuu instantly circled her hands on Hajime's neck happily and hugged tightly.

There, from the dining room a clapping sound of footwear approached, and then wearing a pure white and frilly apron with the frills fluttering and ladle on hand, the perfectly equipped Remia appeared to welcome them.

"Dear, Kaori-san, welcome home. Will you have dinner? Or will you take a bath? Or else…will you have mother and daughter?"

"Wai-, Remia-san! That kind of cliché is unnecessary-! Or rather, just now didn't you say mother and daughter!? Just what are you planning to make your daughter do-!"

"My my, sheesh Kaori-san, what about doing a happy family get together? That's what I meant you know? Ufufu, I wonder what are

you imagining?”

“-!? Re, Remia-san!”

“Dear, or else will you have Kaori-san?”

“Fue!? M, me? Wait that’s not it! Please don’t make fun of me!”

Kaori went ‘mukii!’ with her hair standing on end like a cat while Remia was only watching her with a gaze as though she was looking at something cute while going “My my, ufufu”. Before it was Yue, now it was Remia. It appeared that Kaori had the quality where she would be teased by older females.

Hajime patted Kaori’s shoulder to soothe her while directing his gaze at Remia.

“Stop it with that much. Watching it is fun, but right now there is not really much time. I’ll enter the workshop soon. My bad but I’ll take my meal over there.”

“Understood. Then I’ll bring it over there. Ah, also, there were contacts from her highness and Shizuku-san. It seems they will be able to manage it somehow. The speech of Aiko-san…the ‘Goddess of Harvest’ was quite effective. The number of people are increasing rapidly, so they said that they want the artifact’s production to hurry.”

“I see. Roger. Sorry to make you do something you are not used to.”

“Such a thing…if I can be useful for you even just for a bit, then there is nothing happier for me. Whether it’s for returning your kindness, and also as a wife supporting her husband…”

“No, you aren’t a wife, okay?”

“My my.”

“No, don’t go ‘my my’ here.”

“Ufufu.”

“No, hm, well, doesn’t matter.”

Hajime folded against Remia who enveloped everything with a matchless warm smile. Hajime caressed the head of Myuu who was reluctant to part while entrusting her to Remia, then he walked out toward the workshop.

Currently, the place where Hajime and others were at——the depth of the Orcus Great Labyrinth, in the hideout of Oscar Orcus, there were only Hajime and Kaori, and then Myuu and Remia there.

After the conversation at the audience hall in the devil king castle, first of all Hajime and others went to retrieve the valuables that Hajime transferred underground before they went to the devil king castle, then they used the gate key that they safely retrieved and everyone scattered to all over the world.

Of course, they had to directly go toward the place that didn’t have a gate hole installed, so transportation artifacts would be needed. Even Tio, if she was going to the village of dragon race, when it was time to come back from there she could just use a gate, but just going there would certainly take a few days so there was a necessity for an artifact that could fly at high speed.

And so, using the proof of conquest, Hajime entered Oscar’s hideout from the shortcut in Raisen Grand Canyon, and with the material left in the workshop he prioritized creating mini version flight artifact ‘Mic Fernir’.

In a manner of speaking this artifact was a skyboard. With a shape like a surfing board, it reduced things like air resistance with space magic and flew in the sky using gravity magic. The control was of course using sympathy stone. With the air resistance equal to nothing, the burden to the user’s body was extremely small, so it could easily give out a speed of five hundred kilometers per hour.

It was an improvised item so there was a flaw that the magic power consumption was large but, even leaving out Tio, all the classmates possessed magic power amount in the level that largely deviated from the standard so if it was just for the departing trip then they would be able to manage it somehow.

With that, the classmates whose soul was lit in fire by Hajime's incitement scattered all over the world, and then through the gate hole, the world was rapidly beginning to be connected.

At the outskirt of the kingdom capital, quite a battle force had already begun to gather, with Nomura Kentarou in the lead, the people and workers with earth element aptitude were rapidly constructing simple defensive encampment. Hajime prioritized to create artifact for this aspect too that raised up their strength several times over, super optimizing their work.

It took about one day until that point. Two days remaining until the end of the world began.

Hajime who finished producing the prioritized artifacts then created an emergency artificial arm and treasure warehouse, and also simple weapons, accompanied by Kaori he then stepped his foot once more into the nostalgic abyss to gather material.

There was also the event where the moment they got out of the hideout's door, a hydra manifested in reaction to Kaori, but the two who were there was a tag of a grown monster and god apostle, so they had quite a leeway.

After that, Hajime got Kaori to carry the 'Compass of Guidance' because she didn't know anything about the abyss and had her help him in the gathering of necessary material, he too also went to the place for material that he remembered and ran around while trampling the monsters as though stepping over ants.

And then, Hajime who had gathered enough material somehow carried his feet toward the place where Yue was once sealed. His feeling that wanted to meet Yue naturally directed his feet there even while understanding that there was no time.

Kaori who similarly finished gathering material ascertained Hajime's whereabouts using the compass, and then there they reached that recording artifact and the feeling that was put into it.

By the way, Hajime also asked Kaori to search for 'God Crystal' using the compass but…unfortunately, she was unable to discover

one that had been compressed through many years and months until it could trickle ‘God Water’. It was a substance that was left only in legend, so it really couldn’t be helped. Perhaps just by being able to discover several small crystals should be thought as fortunate.

“Now then, well Kaori, I’ll rely on your cooperation.”

“Yep, leave it to me.”

Hajime who arrived in the workshop transmuted a round crystal pillar in the center of the room while calling Kaori. What they would perform from here was a method to resolve to a certain degree of their problem with the lack of time even if they couldn’t fully resolve it.

It was for this that Hajime chose Kaori as a helper because she was the one most skilled with regeneration magic.

“Here I go! ——’Temple Rend’.”

Together with a voice of fighting spirit, Kaori’s whitely violet magic power surged. In addition, Hajime roared his crimson magic power while enchanting the technique that Kaori used into the crystal pillar using creation magic.

Regeneration magic ‘Temple Rend’——it was a magic to stretch the time. The essence of regeneration magic was in the point that it was a magic that could interfere with time. However, from the viewpoint of the throughput and magic power amount, the extent human could handle this magic was only ‘regeneration’——to return the state of the target into the healthy state where they didn’t bore any wound, because such way of using it essentially only stopped at an act of projecting a moment of the past, it was named as ‘regeneration’ magic.

Saying it in reverse, if someone could surpass the limit of human, furthermore if they increased their proficiency in this magic and approached that essence, it would be theoretically possibly to not be limited with ‘regeneration’ and became able to interfere with time.

And then, if it was the current Kaori who had aptitude with regeneration magic, who had continuously used this magic all this time and became skilled, and in possession of a body that surpassed human body, it was possible for her to lay her hand on that area.

Kaori's magic power began to interfere with the time of the surrounding, her long silver hair that was dancing gently was gradually changing into gentle motion. Somehow, it looked like the whole workshop was growing dull in color.

"——Ha, Hajime-kun."

"It's all ok Kaori. You did well."

Immediately the whitish violet magic power filling the room dispersed as though melting into the air. Kaori put her hands on her knees while breathing hard. It appeared that she consumed quite a lot of magic power in just a short time.

"Haa, haa, ho, how is it?"

"…As expected. It's about ten times increment. With this, I'll have some leeway."

"Haaaa. I'm glaad"

Hajime who was staring with a serious gaze at the crystal pillar which was emitting faint light loosened up his face and gave Kaori words mixed with praise. Kaori too also showed a smile while caressing her chest in relieve.

"It's quite hard making this so how about naming it…as expected the name should be the 'hyperbolic xxxx chamber' I guess?" (TN: Hajime is making a reference to the hyperbolic time chamber in Dragon Ball here.)

"…I have the feeling that it's better to stop that. Isn't it fine to simply name it 'Hour Crystal'?"

"…You have no romance."

"Geez-, something like that doesn't matter. Now, quickly go to

work, work! We will take care of the chores so work hard!”

“…I got it okay.”

Hajime activated the hour crystal (temp) with a dissatisfied expression.

Immediately, the same like before inside the workshop grew slightly dull in color. With this, the time was stretched ten times longer though it was limited inside the workshop. An hour inside the workshop was just six minutes outside.

During that time, matters like contacting Liliana and others who were working on the surface ground and the sending of the artifacts were done by Remia (similar like with Hauria, Hajime had installed a gate with magic power storage that Remia could operate), while Kaori was carrying out the collection of material that ran out.

Hajime left all the chores to them and he just needed to continue to spit out the created artifacts from the workshop to outside. Hajime who was preparing weapons in the unit of tens of thousands really could be said as a human armory.

Hajime took out a large amount of material from the ‘Treasure Warehouse II’. Every kind of mineral, monster fang, claw, bone, etc. was instantly filling to the brim inside the spacious workshop.

“Now then, let’s do this.”

Hajime lifted his hand at the same time with that murmur. Right after that, inside the workshop was dyed with crimson. It was as though the vivid crimson color that permeated everywhere was changing the workshop itself into a gem that was like a red spinel. In a sense, the scenery pressured on the heart miraculously as though they were being lost inside a gem.

As the proof of that, Kaori, Myuu, and Remia who were inside the workshop were staring at the light that was emitted with Hajime in the center with an expression as though their heart was stolen.

Even while Kaori and others were in a daze, Hajime’s ‘Mineral Separation’ sifted through only the needed material and created

pure ore, then ‘Creation Magic’ enchanted the ore with necessary magic, ‘Precise Transmutation’ realized elaborate transformation that would make any craftsman go blue in face. Moreover, ‘High-Speed Transmutation’ did mass production that produced flawless and complete components regardless of how complicated it was.

And then those components were personally assembled by Hajime and a completed product was finished in just a few seconds which then was put on the floor.

Next Hajime held his hand over that completed product, no, more accurately he held his hand over the floor where the completed product was put, with that he engraved a detailed magic circle on the floor with the completed product on the center.

As the result, the materials scattered on the surrounding automatically moved and mass produced things that were exactly the same with the completed product. Not just that, the components themselves were mass produced with the mountain of material automatically extracting themselves and repeated the fusion.

Hajime confirmed the process and then he entered the creation of the next artifacts. He was already ignoring the magic circle that continued to emit crimson light and the mountain of Gatling gun that was completed automatically and moved to produce the bullets.

Those bullets too, Hajime personally created the first one and then he put it on the magic circle he engraved on the floor and the bullet was automatically mass produced, and then Hajime entered the creation of the next artifact again. His gaze was already not looking at the Gatling gun and bullet anymore.

Derivative skill of transmutation——as long as the material was available then it was possible to create exactly the same thing without the magic circle or image supplementation, this was the ‘Duplication Transmutation’, and then the ‘Automatic Transmutation’, until the magic power filled into the engraved magic circle ran out, even when the caster went away it would automatically continue to create.

The stream of crimson magic power filling the room and the crimson radiance of the magic circle deployed at Hajime's surrounding…while being surrounded by those, Hajime narrowed his eyes as though he was meditating and waved his hands like a conductor, his figure that created powerful artifacts easily like a joke was exactly like the magician inside a fairy tale. If it had to be said in a realistic way then it could be said that it was a solitary production factory.

While Kaori and others were in a daze, artifacts began to overflow from the engraved magic circle. Remia's cheeks were cramped from being convinced that she would be slower in carrying out the artifacts than the speed of the production like this. The amount was obviously something that couldn't be handled with just Myuu and Remia.

Although such thing was already known from the beginning.

Therefore, Hajime entered the transmutation of the transport method. He projected the image he drew inside his head into the empty air before his eyes, and then he further hardened the image while his hand crawled there. The result, a humanoid figure appeared pushing through the mountain of material with crimson jewel buried on its chest.

Its lower body was multi-legged like a spider, the upper body had six arms attached like an Ashura statue. Further, the lower body that was connected to the spider legs were box shaped, at a glance it could be understood that it was a transport golem.

And then after creating one more of the golem, Hajime opened his mouth.

"Remia, Myuu. I'll ask you to control this golem and transport the artifacts. Send it from the gate to the kingdom."

Saying that, Hajime handed the two of them two rings. The rings had sympathy stone attached to control the golem. So that even the two who didn't have magic power can use it, Hajime put a function to store magic power and also an ability for the golem to further evolve.

“These two golems are created from the fusion of magic stone that I refined and monster material, they are a half monster. That’s why, it’s possible to force them to move with that sympathy stone, but it can also move by receiving a vocal order. I made them so they will listen to the command of the person holding that ring.”

Yes, so to speak these golems were something like a living weapon that was the fusion of machine and living thing, the ring was something to control them and also to show the authority to command. Having said that, they didn’t have a clear ego of self so as long as there was no clear order, they wouldn’t make their own judgment and moved by themselves. Perhaps it would be easier to imagine if it was said that they were like monster Living Knight or Living Sword that often appeared in RPG.

It was a combination skill of creation magic and metamorphosis magic. As always, Hajime didn’t have that high of an aptitude in metamorphosis magic, but by using a method where he used the creation magic as the main and enchanted metamorphosis magic using his skill, then he could use it well enough. Or rather, even living thing had metal element inside their body, so if metamorphosis magic was used with creation magic as fusion magic, then the transmutation technique could advance drastically using the side effect of the metamorphosis magic. Using this Hajime hit upon an idea of a trump card.

The sealing stone that sealed Yue and the scorpion imitation were basically also created by the same technique. Although because of the aptitude of the caster, the component of metamorphosis magic had greater weight in those two. The sealing stone was also created from special ore that deflected magic, but the reason it was hard for Hajime’s transmutation to affect it was because the majority of the stone was living thing.

Myuu was tilting her head “Nnyu?” at Hajime’s difficult explanation, so Remia explained, “Papa is giving a present of pet to Myuu.” Although that explanation was a little bit problematic.

Anyway, Myuu who comprehended everything that was said to mean that she was presented with a pet, embraced Hajime in great joy, and then “Myuu will help papa nano!” Myuu manipulated the

living golem ‘Bel-chan’ in high spirit.

It seemed the formal name was ‘Belfegor’ which was shortened as ‘Bel-chan’. The one naming it was Myuu. It was a naming sense that was unthinkable coming from a four-year-old. Hajime wanted to think that it was a coincidence that the name was similar to the name of a famous devil of the seven deadly sins. (TN: The name should be Belphegor, but here the name is turned cuter somewhat.)

By the way, Remia also asked Myuu for the naming of her golem, and then with a smiling face that was too lovely Myuu named it “Asmodeusu!” It was an immediate reply without any pondering whatsoever. Hajime could only pray that the golem wasn’t being possessed by something strange.

After that, Hajime mass produced every kind of weapon, Remia and Myuu transported those and sent them through the gate to Liliana and others in the kingdom, if the material became insufficient Kaori would dive into the labyrinth and gathered it up with her cheat ability and the compass…such process was continuing for a while.

A lot of outrageous artifacts that were sent to them one after another caused the people at the kingdom capital who didn’t know about the hour crystal to have a cramped face. Hajime and others enjoyed a happy family get together (meal) for a short time with the ‘Automatic Transmutation’ buzzing on the side with Kaori getting teary eyed from Remia’s teasing, although various things happened but in general the production progressed favorably.

Hajime himself also created new artifacts, he further strengthened his weapons even more than before, completing his equipment with certainty. And then, the trump card against Ehito too…

While those were happening, finally contacts from Shia and others who scattered to many places were also coming. It appeared they too were advancing the matters favorably. With artifacts that he would send to Shia and others in hand, Hajime prepared to welcome them in the hideout of Oscar.

Omake

In the luxurious bathroom where he was once forcefully made to climb the stair of adulthood by Yue, there was the figure of Hajime between the steams.

Even while relaxing his body properly in the pleasant bathtub, it was impossible for him to relax like before. That was because of his effort to recover the magic power that he consumed and also the preparation for the decisive battle, and most of all, it was because his dear lover wasn't there.

His gaze that was looking at far away pierced the abyss, passed even the sky, and stared at Yue who he shouldn't be able to see.

Those eyes, when they were narrowed painfully, suddenly, a young voice resounded in the bathroom.

"Papaaa——!"

Looking at Myuu who energetically rushed at him stark naked with her usual cute footsteps, Hajime floated a small smile.

And then, *pyon* he safely caught Myuu's body that leaped at him.

"Oy. That's dangerous Myuu."

"Ehehee, sorry papa."

Although he lightly scolded her for the moment, Myuu was busily hugging Hajime and no sign of repentance could really be seen from her. Hajime looked fondly at her thinking 'what a hopeless girl' while slowly submerging her into the bathtub so that Myuu wouldn't feel too hot.

Myuu leaked out "funyuu" voice while her eyes drooped pleasantly. That excessively cute figure stimulated Hajime's fatherhood strongly. He slowly combed Myuu's beautiful emerald green hair. Myuu melted even further. Now she was a droopy Myuu.

That figure of Myuu made Hajime felt healed a bit from the loneliness that he felt just now. Even so his gaze naturally looked up to the sky

“…She is fine nano.”

“Hm?”

Suddenly, Myuu said out calm yet powerfully certain words. To Hajime who tilted his head and returned his gaze to her, Myuu with a conviction that was the same like the time at the devil king castle formed her words with a voice filled with strength.

“…Yue-oneechan is fine nano.”

“Myuu…”

“Because, papa will go to meet her. It’s the same like what happened with Myuu before nano. That’s why, Yue-oneechan will be able to come back too nano.”

“…”

Those words, rather than conviction Myuu talked like it was something decided already. For a little girl, if the big sister that she idolized was gone then usually she would be a bit more down but… it seemed Myuu overlapped what happened right now with the time when she was kidnapped and through that obtained an even stronger conviction. Namely, that Hajime would surely take back Yue.

At the same time, Myuu also obtained the conviction that Yue was absolutely fine which surely came from her enormous faith to Yue. That, Yue-oneechan will surely come home.

That was why, in this kind of time she couldn’t feel down or anything. For Myuu who had watched Hajime and others until now, she had the awareness that she was a powerless existence that couldn’t do anything. But, on the other hand, she also had cultivated a spirit twice of that awareness that could let her say ‘so what’ and blew it away. Therefore, she carried out ‘thing that her current self could do’.

If she was unable to do anything, then at the very least she had to be able to cheer up the people who could do it, so first she herself would spread out liveliness. Her conviction and faith, she brought it

to those people with all she had.

Looking at such Myuu, who was smiling wide in front of his eyes conveying to him “It’s fine!”, Hajime loosened up his face.

At the devil king castle, Hajime claimed that Myuu who was standing in the way of the rampaging him was “Stronger than himself”, but now once again he thought that those words were actually correct. More than himself, she was believing in Yue’s strength, and in the future that she wished for.

“…You’re right. I’ll bring her back soon. After that, next time, let’s enter the bath together with Yue, the three of us.”

“…Nn-“

Myuu let out her playfulness and imitated Yue’s reply. That was cute and lovely, making Hajime caressed Myuu’s head even more.

Like that, the painful thing in his chest from thinking of Yue who was not here melted out into the bathtub together with his sigh, now his body really relaxed in the true meaning.

But, there Hajime suddenly noticed.

Wasn’t Myuu planned to enter with Remia and Kaori?

For that Myuu to be here, in other words…

“My my, dear, you are really sweet to Myuu, aren’t you? Ufufu.”

“Ha, Hajime-kun. E, excuse me for disturbing.”

“As expected, so it turns out like this…”

Remia and Kaori who only hid their body with small towels apologetically revealed themselves from the other side of the steam. Remia was acting brazenly while Kaori was blushing in shame.

Remia’s body that looked voluminous somehow despite its slenderness was clad in indescribable sex appeal, perhaps because she was a widow. While Kaori’s body that was like white porcelain

and had the beauty of a work of art which was molded in the golden ratio. Both of them were giving off tremendous charm.

Remia was at the right, and Kaori was at the left, each of them glued their body to him while soaking in the bathtub.

“You guys…”

‘What are you two doing while Yue is not here’, as expected Hajime was going to complain like that, but Remia returned an affectionate gaze at him before he could say it.

“I was thinking that if you calmed down by yourself, won’t you recall the pain instead…if we are a nuisance, then we will get out immediately.”

“Pain you say…”

“The pain of the heart has no relation with the strength of body or will after all. ‘She is not here right now’, doesn’t it feel painful just from that?”

“…Remia.”

It seemed he was seen through that he would feel pain from thinking of Yue. Hajime reflexively blinked, and then Kaori talked to him from the opposite side with a gentle tone.

“In this kind of time, someone should be there with you. When it was me who felt like that, there was Shizuku-chan who stayed with me…I won’t be able to become Yue’s replacement but, I want to become your support even for just a little. If I cannot do that, then when Yue comes back she will make fun of me.”

Kaori merely conveyed that she was at his side while chuckling. The words that came from her personal experience were heavy. During the days when Hajime was gone, Kaori didn’t break even then was because her best friend nestled close at her side through all that time for her. That was why, the feeling of ‘I too know what you feel’ was naturally conveyed to Hajime from her.

Hajime sensed that he was given consideration by the two, no, by

the three including Myuu too, he leaked out a small smile.

“…Thanks. If I don’t get myself in shape, then it will be me who will get made fun by her, huh.”

“I don’t think that will happen when it’s Yue though.”

“Ufufu. Yue-san is really engrossed with Hajime-san, isn’t she.”

The three remembered Yue who clung closely at Hajime and chuckled at each other.

Hajime dropped his gaze at Myuu on his chest who began to go “munya munya”. It seemed she felt too pleasant and became sleepy. Before she fell asleep, she should wash her body first.

Remia and Kaori accurately guessed that thinking of Hajime. Beating Kaori to the punch whose mouth was opening, Remia told Hajime with a smile.

“Then, Hajime-san. I’ll wash your front now.”

“No, I don’t need my back wa-…right now, you didn’t just say the front, right?”

Hajime asked while his cheeks were cramping from noticing the words that were bizarrely different from the standard, and as expected there, Remia was answering with a smile.

“Yes, I thought that surely Kaori-san will wish to wash your back, so I wonder if I can wash your front instead.”

“Wai-, Remia-san!? What are you saying!? The, the front is… that’s…no, no good!”

“My my, then, Kaori-san will be the one to wash the front?”

“M, me!? I, Hajime-kun’s front, the front…”

Kaori’s gaze was absorbed onto Hajime’s crotch that was not visible below Myuu’s shadow. And then, her face blushed crimson explosively.

“Are you two idiots. There is no way I’ll let you two do that.”

“My, if the two of us are no good then…..so, Myuu will be the one…”

“Hajime-kun!? That’s no good, something like that! What are you planning to make Myuu-chan do!”

“However, that place is delicate…I will need to be at her side here to give her a lecture. Mother and daughter will work hard to give service here.”

“I won’t let that happen! I won’t let that happen no matter what! Remia-san! I won’t let Hajime-kun progress through that kind of abnormal path!”

“My. Then, who will be the one to wash Hajime-san’s front?”

“Tha, that’s…”

“Kaori-san, then let’s do it like this. The three of us together.”

“Hah, that way is…wait, that’s wrong!”

Hajime thought. ‘Kaori…how pitiful’, like that. And then, whether it was Yue or Remia, Kaori who was played by older female as long as there was a chance caused Hajime to make a really complicated face from the gap of Kaori of now and of before when they were still on earth.

At the same time…

“When Yue comes back…Kaori’s hardship will be doubled, huh.”

“Nmyu?”

Leaving aside the two, Hajime rose from the bathtub and he whispered while washing Myuu’s hair. When they took back Yue, he would be a little gentler to Kaori. Hajime sent glances at Kaori who was still being teased by Remia with a gaze filled with such pity.

Looking at such a Hajime, Myuu tilted her head in puzzlement.

Arifureta Chapter 161

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/162/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Elementalcobalt did the edits.

At Nostalgic Orcus (End)

“Hajime-san! I’m home desuu!”

The gate that connected the space to the hideout of Oscar Orcus opened, from there Shia jumped in *pyon* like a rabbit.

She went to meet with the master of Raisen Great Labyrinth that they had once conquered, Miledi Raisen, as the messenger of Hajime, but now she had accomplished her mission safely and came back.

Shia saw the artificial arm that had been properly returned to the left sleeve of Hajime who welcomed her, her expression then became even happier.

“Welcome back, Shia. I got your report. Looks like you were able to meet with Miledi again smoothly, huh?”

“Yes desu. Unfortunately, it seems that Miledi-san cannot easily leave that territory. She will be saving strength until the day of the decisive battle and I couldn’t directly bring her back but… in exchange I received several things that seemed useful from her.”

“I see. You did well. Thanks for your hard work. So, you could enter using the proof of conquer?”

Toward Shia who was clapping on the luggage bag that she was carrying on her back with a smile that seemed to say “I have good things here!”, Hajime returned a smile while asking.

Once they received treatment like filth that was ejected by toilet, Hajime recalled the time when they were made to take the shortcut to outside the labyrinth. He tilted his head in contemplation thinking ‘don’t tell me she is going through that water channel in reverse?’. If Shia actually did that, then it was like she was going out from the inside of a toilet while saying “Good afternoon!”. So thinking about her maiden heart, he would have to reward her with his all.

It seemed that Shia too guessed what Hajime was imagining from his question. She smiled wryly while shaking her head saying that she was fine.

“The spring at the outskirts of Brook didn’t react just as half-expected. And so, I attempted to breakthrough from the regular entrance, but at that time the proof of conquer reacted… the usual transfer method at the first room sent me to the deepest room. It did it politely, while roughly rotating the room. Well, it didn’t affect the current me, so there was no problem but… as always she was an irritating person. Yes, truly.”

“I, I see… no, really thanks for your hard work. Anyway, get inside. Inside, the time is also stretched out so I’ll listen to the detail in the workshop.”

“Ah, yes desu.”

Shia recollected with her gaze turning into the direction of the beyond while a somewhat black thing covered her, to that Hajime somehow could imagine what kind of exchange she had with Miledi, Hajime whose wry smile deepened invited Shia into the workshop.

At that time, the moment Shia entered the building from outside

where the gate was installed into the building, *gashon! gashon!* mechanical footsteps were resounding nearby. At the same time, a happy voice of a child reverberated.

“Ah, Shia-oneechan! Welcome home nano!”

“Myuu-chan! I’m home… desu?”

While Shia’s cheeks were loosening from Myuu’s welcoming words, she also tilted her head wondering “What’s this voice I wonder?” and her face peeked out from behind Hajime. And then, the figure of Myuu being surrounded by golems in the shapes that she had never seen and Myuu herself sitting on one of the golems shoulder entered her eye so that Shia’s words reflexively halted.

The number of golems were six. Their figures had multiple legs and multiple arms holding countless armaments with metallic shine from their bodies, every one of the golem had grim intensity. If for example, Shia encountered them inside labyrinth or somewhere else, then she would surely say things like “Enemy discovered certain death attack desuu!” or “Victory goes to the one who makes the first moves desuu!” and attacked them.

Actually, until Shia came back several days had passed inside the workshop, during that time Hajime saw various points where he could improve ‘Belfegor’ and ‘Asmodeusu’ that he presented to Remia and Myuu, so Hajime applied sequential improvement on them. As a result, he accomplished the conclusion where in the end the golems could even endure combat, so Hajime undertook the production of the living golem itself in order to invest them into the battle force as weapons.

About that time he was also producing the large size weapons so they were becoming short of hands with just ‘Belfegor’ and ‘Asmodeusu’, and so while producing the combat golems Hajime also increased the number of Myuu’s pets while he was at it.

But, it wasn’t like there wasn’t any problem at all…

“Err, Myuu-chan, those things that look like golem are…”

“Myuu got them from papa nano! This child is ‘Bel-chan’, this one is ‘Sa-chan’. After that there are ‘Lu-chan’ and ‘Ma-chan’ and ‘Levi-chan’ and ‘Bal-chan’ nano!”

“Ha, haa, is that so. Uh huh, anyway, they are Hajime-san’s work so it’s ok desu. Isn’t it great, Myuu-chan.”

“Yes nano!”

By the way, the golems’ formal names in order were ‘Satan’, ‘Lusifer’, ‘Mamon’, ‘Leviatan’, and ‘Baalsebuf’ it seemed. All of those names were given by Myuu promptly without any pondering. It went without saying how Hajime’s cheeks were cramping from that. Later there would be a need to seriously investigate whether Myuu had attracted the eyes of strange things.

At the same time with Myuu’s introduction of their names, the living golems each took cool poses. Hajime didn’t give them that function, also Myuu didn’t seem to give them the instruction but… just why in the world they took that pose…

Their figures felt just like they were saying “Deadly☆Sins☆Battle☆Squad☆Demon Rangeeeer!!!” The red ranger was surely the ‘Satan’ of fury as expected.

Anyway, there was no malfunction that came out, and they were also really obedient toward Myuu that made anyone watching imagine the golems waving their dog tail left and right happily so Hajime chose to ignore it. Without stopping any longer, he led Shia into the workshop.

Entering the workshop, the hour crystal was activated and the flow of time there was a tenth of normal. Looking at the slightly dull colored space and weapons that were automatically produced due to the ‘Automatic Transmutation’, Shia leaked out a voice of admiration.

Hajime made such a Shia sit on the chair at the corner of the room and listened to her report. Shia fixed her sitting posture and took out several things that seemed to be artifacts from her luggage bag.

“Hajime-san, these are things that Miledi-san handed to me.”

“… From what I see they look like artifacts.”

“Yes. It seems that they aren’t perfect, but they are countermeasures against Divine Statement. If Hajime-san revise it, perhaps it can also be completed.”

“Hee… this thing is appreciated.”

Hajime took the gray ball with the size around a marble and stared at it.

According to his magic eye stone and mineral appraisal, it seemed that the ball was filled with soul magic. Inside the ball it seemed it was enchanted with a magic of ‘heart guidance’ that possessed the effect to convey one’s will directly to the state of the soul, or possibly to the soul itself.

“I had a prediction on the trick of Divine Statement, and it seemed I was right on the spot.”

“And, that means?”

“That magic is a magic that is connected with soul magic. It reverberates the words directly in your soul and binds your consciousness at a subconscious level. It’s something like an absurdly powerful suggestion, I guess. The magic needs the caster to murmur their name because of the common sense that a command needs a person to hand it down.”

“I see. After all, there is no person that will obey a command with an unknown creator, is there? The statement becomes even more powerful when they say their complete nam. Also, because the listener’s recognition of the speaker become even stronger, is it something like that?”

“You think so too, right? This marble ball… does it have a name?”

“Aa, no, I didn’t ask. Isn’t it fine to name it whatever?”

“Is that so. Then, I’ll name it temporarily as ‘Soul Wall’, this thing

seems to have the power to block the Divine Statement from reaching the soul. It applies 'heart guidance' to disturb the conveyed will and turn the statement into just noise. It isn't perfect. I guess because Ehito's Divine Statement is so powerful that it cannot be turned into noise."

Shia nodded "I see" toward Hajime's explanation.

"Then… if it's Hajime-san then you will be able to improve it so it can block perfectly?"

"Let's see… I think it's possible if I combine my magic power with sublimation magic. Though in the end, if it gets stolen like before and crushed then that's game over."

"Aa, now that you mentioned it… then, what to do? At this rate, it won't be usable except for a surprise attack, will it…"

"No, actually right now I have a bit of an idea. I don't have the attitude so there is hardship, but it looks like with a little bit more it will take shape. If I applied that then this won't get stolen. Moreover, I can surely create a 'Soul Wall' with high effect. In any case, it's a big help that I don't need to think about the countermeasure for Divine Statement from zero. This is your achievement, Shia."

Hajime joyful smile made Shia also flap her rabbit ears happily. The achievement actually belonged to Miledi who handed over the 'Soul Wall', but it was somewhat annoying to feel grateful to that person so Hajime praised Shia instead. Shia also had the same feeling somewhat so she honestly felt happy to be useful.

"Also, this too desu."

"Short sword huh? … Even so I feel very much power from it. Just what in the world… hee"

What was taken out from the luggage next was a short sword wrapped in cloth with its blade length reaching about twenty centimeter. It was a simple two bladed sword without a handle guard, it resembled the type of short sword that was called a dirk.

Hajime who received it took off the cloth, that moment he gazed in wonderment at the power that he felt, next he investigated it the same like with the ‘Soul Wall’. His voice unintentionally leaked out at the ability that was enchanted in the sword. Looking at that state of Hajime, Shia also nodded in sympathy.

“According to Miledi-san, it’s called ‘Short Sword of Divine Crossing’. The concept filled into it is——’God killing’, it seems.”

“So, this is one of the three concept magic that Haltina said the liberators created, huh. So that Miledi had this. Chih, she should have given this thing right away.”

“… When I said that, ‘Didn’t you say that killing god or anything is troublesome, ehhh? There is no way I can give this to that kind of person, right? Is your head okay? Heey? Is your head okay? Heey heey’ she said that to me…”

“I see…”

“Yes. But it’s fine desu. Because in retaliation, I smashed the place where Hajime-san’s explosive destroyed that she grumbled saying it was hard work repairing it. I blew it into pieces. She was half-crying while saying sorry to me you know, ku-ku-ku”

“I, I see…”

Shia was black. It was the descent of black Shia. When Hajime was plainly sweating coldly, Shia stopped making crooked face and smiled widely while continuing her story. It was a splendid change.

“By the way, it seemed that there was also an artifact named ‘World Crossing Arrow’ to open the path to the Holy Precincts, but it was completely lost at the previous lost battle of the liberators. Besides, they were cornered by the masses before confronting Ehito, so it’s unclear how much effect the ‘god killing’ will have. It’s just, that short sword won’t injure Yue-san’s soul, so it can be used well desu.”

“That’s a nice one. For the moment, there is also the trump card that I prepared, but there is nothing better than having a lot of

cards. And if this won't affect Yue then I got no complain at all."

"Isn't that right. I was told, that the 'god killing' concept, it seemed the liberators lost their temper because they couldn't really create the trump card, so all of them drunk a lot in desperation. In the end when they were all stone drunk they opened a tournament to swear at Ehito with foul language and that concept got created. Things like official stance or reasoning or mission, those kind of *idle thoughts* weren't included at all in the concept, only the feeling of 'die Ehito you shitty bastard' makes up the concept, so it won't affect anything else other than Ehito desu."

"I, I see… yeah, well, I understand their feelings. Miledi is an endlessly annoying woman, but when we take back Yue guess we need to at least say thanks huh."

While feeling sympathy and exasperation at the good relation? of the liberators, Hajime made a smile at how they had obtained two kind of useful artifacts.

When he listened further to Shia's report, it seemed that Miledi would mobilize the golems inside the labyrinth. So Shia installed a gate hole there. It appeared those golems were also constructed from metamorphosis magic, so it wasn't like Miledi was moving them all by herself, the golems were living things that moved independently obeying commands to a certain degree.

Thinking about it now, indeed it was hard to imagine that Miledi alone controlled fifty golem knights at the same time.

However, regarding the Holy Precincts or whether there were any more retainer gods other than Aruvheit, the weak point of the apostle or effective methods to fight them, etc., it seemed that Miledi didn't know about those more than what Hajime and the rest knew. Rather, thinking about how they had already directly faced Ehito and tasted his strength right with their body, in a sense Hajime and the rest were the ones who knew more about that.

Although, even without obtaining any new information but after receiving these things, Hajime had no complaints at all. Though, if he actually met Miledi directly face to face, surely he would want to

smash her face.

When Shia finished her report in general, Hajime took out from his ‘Treasure Warehouse II’ another ‘Treasure Warehouse II’ exclusive for Shia and the improved Doryukken——the ‘Vire Doryukken’m and other various equipments he prepared which he handed to her.

“Hauuuu, this is it desuu, as expected, it’s no good without this hard-cold texture desuu”

The moment she received her partner the war hammer from Hajime, Shia rubbed her cheek on the mechanical part with bright smile. She was whispering scary things like “Splattering the enemy with this is unbearable desuu”.

While somewhat drawing away, Hajime explained about the new functionality of all the new artifacts, but then suddenly the door of the workshop opened. The one who entered was, Kaori… and then, Suzu and Ryuutaro.

Actually, a little bit before Shia got in touch, the two of them finished contacting Fair Bergen and Haulia and allocated the gate key in those places and then they went to Orcus. And then, while Kaori was gathering material she also became their guard on the side. The two subdued the monsters in the abyss and endeavored to pile up battle experience and mastering the metamorphosis magic.

“Ah, Shia! Welcome back. Fufu, looking at you, it seems there are various results from you, right?”

“Kaori-san. I’m back desu! Also the two of you came earlier, wasn’t it? How is Tou-sama——the people of Haulia clan and Fair Bergen?”

“Yep, Shiashia. There is no problem. The people of Fair Bergen don’t have faith from the beginning. When they understood that it concerned the fate of the world, they acted quickly.”

“Yep. Though they looked uneasy about the fighting, when we said that Nagumo’s artifacts would be shared in full, they got motivated, yeah. As for Haulia-clan… aa, hm, well, ain’t no problem, yeah?”

“… Why, it sounds like question?”

Shia directed a suspicious gaze at Ryuutaro. Ryuutaro showed a faltering state “Uu” at that gaze and his gaze wandered, then looking like he didn’t really want to remember it he opened his mouth.

“No, there is really no problem at all. Just… that… they suddenly began to cry loudly it made me spooked…”

“Come again? Crying loudly? Tou-sama, was crying?”

“Yep, Shiashia. Karm-san was also included, the whole Haulia-clan were crying you know. After that it was a storm where they all talked simultaneously. They kept screaming things like “Boss banzai!” or “Finally, we can fight at his side!” or “Kill! Kill! Kill!”. The mist in the forest got blown away a little bit just from their voices. It was plain scary.”

“…”

“I think Sergeant Ha-tman style of training is just bad news yeah. Somehow, all of them had bloodshot eyes. Their killing intent was just amazing. An animal that looked like monkey in the trees dropped down plop… when I looked at its eyes, they were all white and it was dead already. Guess its heart stopped just from the killing intent.”

“… Somehow I’m sorry.”

Suzu and Ryuutaro explained while their faces were pale and they began to shiver. It must be a really abnormally terrifying scene. To put it bluntly, it was inevitable for the two to see the Haulia clan’s respect and affection to Hajime as something the same like the fanatic’s faith to Ehito. Inside their heart, they secretly thought “As expected, Nagumo-kun is demon king… no, maybe he is a demon god?”

On top of being able to participate at Hajime’s battlefield, that request to join came from their respected boss. For them who wished to fight together with Hajime, the words “Lend me your

strength” from that boss was unmistakably something really joyous. The scene where all of them went ‘hya-ha’ floated in Shia’s eyes, her rabbit ears folded down with a plop and she also murmured words of apology.

Hajime who was smiling wryly at that exchange between Shia and the others moved the talk to Suzu and Ryuutaro in his wish to somehow avert from that topic.

“And then? What about your training result? Were you able to subdue good monster?”

“Uu-“

“Nope, not at all!”

Suzu who averted her gaze with awkward expressions and Ryuutaro who denied with lively laugh. For the time being, Hajime pulled the trigger of the new Donner and a rubber bullet shot Ryuutaro’s temple. “NUOoOOO!” Ryuutaro yelled while writhing on the floor, to him Hajime’s cold gaze was stabbing.

There Kaori put a stop to it in panic.

“Wa, wait, wait! It doesn’t mean that there is no result!”

“Hoo. Then? What is this result you speak?”

Suzu whose expression was trembling from fear due to Hajime’s lack of hesitation was twitching while answering.

“Ye, yep. As far as it goes, there was also Kaori’s help and I managed to subdue quite many but…”

“What, so you actually manage to do it properly. Then what’s the problem?”

“Err. First of all, I got a monster that can spit powerful acid, a large——centipede.”

“Aah, that one. At the upper stratum, there is also monster that is similar with that, but this one at the lower stratum can separate its

segment to leap, it's ability to scatter acid while separating its segment is unusual huh. I remember that one made me get a little cold feet you know."

"After that, a monster that can fire exploding needles rapidly like bullet, a large——bee."

"That one huh. Rather than calling it needle, it's more a small missile isn't it. I remember when I intercepted the needle I got swallowed in explosion, that was shocking."

"A monster that swim underground like a mole——ant."

"Well, it has surprise attacks going for it."

"Having six arms that fires off wind sickles——praying mantis."

"… Anything else?"

"… Things like spider or butterfly."

"… Why are all of them only bugs?"

Toward that splendid lineup Hajime sent a gaze at Suzu as though he was looking at something bizarre. Right away Suzu burst out in tears.

"I don't know-. Just why the monster that my metamorphosis magic can affect is only the bug type! Even though at the sea of trees I can properly tame the fluffy ones-. Orcus is just strange!"

It seemed that it wasn't actually Suzu's own intention. It appeared that she subjugated the bugs as a last resort. The figure of Suzu who was crying in anguish crumbled on the floor invited quite a pity.

Indeed, her monsters were a shuddering sight just from imagining the lineup. However, this place was the abyss, furthermore they were monsters of the lower stratum, compared to the monster in the surface they were far stronger. Putting aside the apostles, they would surely become a reliable enough battle force against the puppet soldiers of Eri and the monsters that Freed had put time to evolve.

“Well, come on, the other side might also show openings from the revulsion, right?”

“Are you telling me to fight while making the enemy disgusted? Suzu’s opponent is Eri you know? Even though Suzu wants to talk with her, yet from the beginning I already make her disgusted? Hics, surely Suzu will be thought as bug girl or something… uwah, disgusting, Eri will surely say that…”

“Bu, but but, Suzu-chan! See, you have that child don’t you! That one is fluffy, you know!”

“Wai-, Kaorin! Suzu told you that’s a secret!”

“Aa? Secret?”

Perhaps because the figure of Suzu feeling down while drawing circle on the floor was too pitiful, Kaori at her side was desperately cheering her up. However, the cheered up Suzu for some reason tried to stop her from talking in a fluster while giving glances at Hajime. Kaori too also returned to her senses and pressed her mouth.

The two who were obviously hiding something made Hajime narrow his eyes. His suspicious eyes were conveying “Don’t make a fuss trembling like that, quickly spit it out, ora.”

Suzu was making “uu” voice with her gaze wandering while Kaori was making troubled expression wondering what to do.

But, at that time, Myuu who rode ‘Belfegor’ entered inside the workshop. It appeared that she had something to communicate and she looked straight at Hajime, then she naturally stepped on Ryuutaro whose temple was shot and crouched at the golem’s feet. “Gue!?” Felt like such a voice resounded, but no one paid attention.

“Papa! There is rabbit-san nano!”

“Hm? Indeed if it’s rabbit then there is one here though.”

While tilting his head at Myuu who hopped up and down with both her hands above her head like rabbit ears, Hajime moved his gaze

to Shia. Shia too flapped her own rabbit ears up and down.

“That’s not it nano. It’s a rabbit-san that’s not Shia-oneechan nano. It’s really strong and cool nano! Even when Lu-chan and Sa-chan and Ma-chan fight it together it doesn’t lose nano.”

“What? It’s attacking here?”

“That’s not it nano. See, when the hand of rabbit-san went ‘kui-, kui-‘, seeing that Lu-chan and others said You bastard, in front of princess you dare to challenge us. Very well, we will teach you this thing called one’s standing! and then they began a bout? nano!” (TN: The ‘kui’ is an inviting hand gesture in challenge, like saying ‘come at me if you dare’. Also the question mark in front of the word bout is not a mistake. The raw put it there, it means it’s doubtful whether the bout is really a bout.)

“… Lusifer and others, they can talk? Furthermore they moved by themselves?”

“? Lu-chan and others always talk, they moved by themselves nano. That’s ob-vious nano. Papa, what’s wrong?”

“… By the way, right now, what is Belfegor that Myuu is riding right now is saying?”

“Nmyu? … Just wait -su. It’s seriously just impossible for me to suddenly begin to fight you know –su. Love & Peace is the best Please teach that to them, master is what he said nano.”

“… … … …I see.”

Hajime activated his well trained ignoring skill in full power and endured the barrage of questions that he wanted to ask. There was a lot that he wanted to tsukkomi, but for Hajime this was already over his capacity.

And so, for the time being, he only comprehended the part where it seemed the demon rangers called Myuu fondly as princess. This was something extremely weird, but for some reason he didn’t feel that it was something dangerous for even a bit, Myuu who was sensitive to ill will since she was kidnapped was emotionally attached to

them, so he judged to not worry.

Although now he couldn't grasp the situation, so he asked Myuu to stop the fighting of Lusifer and the others and brought the rabbit here. "Yes nano!" Myuu replied energetically and she exited the workshop together with Belfegor.

"So? The monster that you should have subdued was giving provocation and fought, what is the meaning of this? Furthermore, you don't look like you are doubting that the monster is running wild huh? … What are you hiding? Spit it out."

In order to solve his other doubt, Hajime's gaze moved at Kaori and Suzu who were obviously acting suspiciously.

Thereupon, perhaps they finally resigned themselves, the two opened their mouth.

"Yo, you see, Hajime-kun. That child, he, he is not a bad child, or rather he is special. That child is admiring Hajime-kun, I mean…"

"Ha? Admiring me?"

"Yes! That's how it is! In a sense, Nagumo-kun is also the cause, that's why the moment you see him, at least don't shot him dead okay! Absolutely don't! After all, he is the only fluffy one that *agreed to accept* Suzu's metamorphosis magic! Really please Suzu beg you!"

"Just what in the world…"

Hajime could only be perplexed at the incomprehensible words of the two.

Right after that, with good timing that 'rabbit-san' or something was led by Myuu and her golems and entered the workshop.

Its figure was certainly a rabbit. Long rabbit ears and reddish black——no, nearly crimson eyes. In its white fur there were several faint streaks of red running. The streaks didn't pulse like other monster, instead they were like a pattern that shined attractively on the white fur. And then, what made the rabbit most

peculiar was its hind legs that were developed to impossible degree for normal rabbit.

Even though it was somewhat different, for Hajime its appearance was something too familiar.

“Kyu!”

In addition its cry that sounded cute further stimulated Hajime’s memory.

Yes, what appeared in front of Hajime was the monster that once pulverized his left arm and made a sport of him until he was cornered, it was that ‘Kick Rabbit’. Of course, it was only the same species and this one was a different specimen.

What was difficult for Kaori and Suzu to say was because they thought Hajime was going to blast the rabbit with no question asked. As expected, in this period where they couldn’t pointlessly waste time, they couldn’t commit a folly where a monster that had been subdued with great pain got instantly shot to death because of uncontrolled emotion.

“No, it’s nothing big, I’m not going to pull the trigger just from seeing this after this long. Rather, this one is a monster that appears at the first level you know? Don’t tell me, even though you understand it’s weak but because you want a rabbit you went until the upper level… wait, guess you didn’t do that. There was just no time that you could do that.”

Hajime noticed something strange from what he said and closed his mouth. Come to think of it, the two said baffling things like it was admiring him, that it was special, that he was the cause, that it agreed to accept metamorphosis magic, he recalled all those and his gaze asked for explanation.

However, before the two could explain, the kick rabbit acted first. After it entered the workshop, it immediately stared fixedly at Hajime while strangely trembling in spot, then with *gabacho!* it leaped at Hajime.

To that, Hajime thrust out his hand and easily grabbed the rabbit ears, stopping the kick rabbit in the air while it was crying pleadingly “Kyu! Mokyu! Ukyu”. It seemed that it wasn’t jumping to attack him.

‘What’s with this guy’, to Hajime who was sending her suspicious eyes, Suzu stepped out to volunteer to translate. It was possible for monster that was subdued by metamorphosis magic to have mutual understanding with its master to a certain degree. Suzu and the others had also attempted the mutual understanding with this kick rabbit, that was how they got the explanation about various things.

“Err, he said, Ou-sama, Ou-sama, I’m extremely happy that I am able to meet you. In this occasion, I heard that I can become stronger and agreed to be made into the servant of your colleague. My best regards. Ah, also if possible, I want to be named by Ou-sama though… is it no good?… what’s with those eyes! It’s true you know! He is really saying all that!” (TN: Ou-sama = King. Also the rabbit is speaking in Kansai dialect.)

“… Even if, he is talking with that kind of meaning, there is no need to use Kansai dialect, right?”

“Because, Suzu is hearing it in Kansai dialect so it cannot be helped, isn’t it!”

Suzu’s face turned bright red from being gazed coldly by Hajime and she made excuse.

Looking at Suzu’s desperate state, Hajime glanced at the kick rabbit that was still dangling in his hand, and indeed, the rabbit was directing a gaze that actually felt like saying something like that at Hajime. The round and cute eyes were getting moist entreating at him.

Anyway, Hajime further mustered his greatly flourishing ignoring skill and asked about the story at Suzu.

According to Suzu, it went like this.

At first, Suzu wished for a monster as strong as possible and with

Kaori's cooperation they chased after the monsters on the ninetieth floor above, but as expected perhaps because the monsters were powerful, even with Hajime's special *new artifact* that raised Suzu's ability her metamorphosis wasn't really able to subdue them.

Having no other way, Suzu lowered the standard to around eightieth floor and searched the monster with the compass, but as expected it seemed the beast type monster felt that they were above Suzu's patronage with her fresh metamorphosis magic, after that even while thinking 'I don't wanna' but just in case she tried her magic at the bug type monster she encountered, as the result she was able to subjugate them with easiness that caused her wanted to tsukkomi 'what the hell' at all the trouble she met before this.

Even after that, Suzu who was able to subdue monsters limited only to bug type had her tension kept lowering drastically, for the moment she healed her heart gradually by catching a lot of butterfly monsters with beautiful appearance that could manipulate scale powder with various effects, while she was at it she was also subduing giant misshapen bugs in succession without trouble, and then she was about to start going back.

It was at that time. Suzu discovered a 'rabbit' that moved strangely quite human, it came from the stair of upper level full of vigilance, moving from shadow to shadow agilely and silently.

That rabbit also noticed Suzu and the rest, and its movement stopped still. It was a monster that they had never seen even once until now on the eightieth or ninetieth floors. Furthermore, fundamentally a monster wouldn't get out from the floor where they were born, so the act of the rabbit that normally descended the floor until here was obviously abnormal. And so, Kaori came forward with Suzu and Ryuutaro also in maximum alert.

However, as for the rabbit itself… it expressed with its whole body a joy that anyone looking would obviously understand. The severe killing intent and pressure that was characteristic for monsters of abyss were nonexistence. *pyon pyon* The rabbit hopped up and down as though dancing with its rabbit ears moving *myon myon*. The rabbit was like a lost child that finally discovered a human settlement after continuously wandering inside a deep forest for

many days.

Kaori and others felt perplexed and hesitated whether they should launch preemptive attacks or not, to them who were like that the rabbit approached near slowly. It was as though the rabbit was taking consideration so that the other party wouldn't get agitated.

While glancing repeatedly at Suzu and co, each time the rabbit advanced a bit it would stop and confirm "Is it okay?" "Is it fine, to approach a bit more?". Looking at such a rabbit, Suzu was knocked out.

To her heart that was stormy from the possibility of her being called as bug queen, the fluffy white rabbit——whose behavior was really cute and instead of hostility it looked friendly——was too powerful. Suzu ignored the warning of Kaori who was still wary and leaped out in front of the rabbit.

"Suzu had decided right from my first impression! Please become Suzu's rabbit!"

Suzu bowed her head and her hand was presented forward, that proposal looked like a confession. By the way, the first impression of Suzu toward the rabbit was that it was a really suspicious rabbit.

That proposal of Suzu made the rabbit got taken aback. And then it tilted its head in bewilderment. This monster looked more and more human.

On the other hand, Suzu who was at her wits' end went 'No way I will let go of this once in a lifetime chance!' like a fan(stalker) that chased after an idol passionately until her residence, her eyes turned bloodshot and her breathing roughened, she began a sales pitch.

Full guarantee of all necessities of life. Three meals a day. No, four meals with afternoon nap included, five days work a week with two days off. Paid vacation provided! In addition, free time also could be negotiated! Furthermore! If the offer was taken right now, oh my, a special magic stone of Suzu would come along free of charge! With this you could say good bye to yourself of yesterday! Now, in

this chance, wouldn't you take this status up surrounded by happy comrades in a lovely workplace!?

Kaori and Ryuutaro thought. Surely, no one would take that kind of offer right…

However, unexpectedly the bewildered rabbit, when it heard Suzu's last words——when 'status up' was mentioned, its eyes shined with fierce glared. As though saying "That one, more detaol!" the rabbit pinched forward eagerly and cried "Kyuu! Kyuu!"

Naturally Suzu's lips smirked broadly thinking "He snapped the bait!", even forgetting completely that the other party was a monster, she explained about the mechanism of metamorphosis magic cheerfully.

As the result, the rabbit who understood that he could evolve quietly presented its rabbit ears, accepting to become pretty much Suzu's subordinate monster.

Like this the rabbit became a comrade with that contract of employment?, and with Suzu's metamorphosis magic they attempted mind understanding. Or more precisely, from the start this rabbit was obviously possessing ego with intelligence that was impossible for a monster, with this rabbit as the partner it was possible to have mind understanding even using the 'heart guidance' of soul magic.

Accordingly, Kaori and Suzu heard about the circumstance of the rabbit with really different fur color, it seemed that this rabbit was formerly a same race with the 'Kick Rabbit' that Hajime once killed, and it was also from the same floor, but it descended down the floors in training trip and of all thing it became powerful to the degree that it was able to reach floor eighty with its own strength.

But, that was a behavioral principle and thinking ability that was impossible for a monster. The cause for that was Hajime. More accurately the 'God Water' that Hajime spilled behind.

It seemed that this kick rabbit actually witnessed when Hajime defeated the claw bear. For monster of labyrinth, the floor they

were at was the whole of their world, and the master of that floor was the king. To defeat that king meant the birth of new king. They instinctually couldn't help but being careful of that king. At that time, the rabbit which was no different with normal monster was holding the greatest wariness and terror toward Hajime.

For a while, the rabbit was hiding from a distant spot while observing the tendency of the new king, before long, it discovered Hajime's nest——the cave where the god crystal was located. When the rabbit was able to confirm that it was a place he must not approach by his instinctual understanding, the aforementioned Hajime easily went away from the floor.

The rabbit knowing that the master of the nest had gone entered what he thought as a really pleasant and safe nest. And what he discovered inside, piling up on a dent of rock, was a small quantity of water that made vitality to well up staggeringly——the god water.

The rabbit drunk it all up in a trance until it was all gone, and then he felt a power he never felt until that time overflowing in his body. Magic power was naturally surging up, his mind became clear, and he became able to sense the surrounding presence several times more sensitively.

It appeared in the case when a monster drank god water, that kind of effect would happen. There was no way anyone would make a monster to drink a miracle water, so this was something that had never been known.

After that the rabbit went out to search whether there was any more god water, and while kicking around the monsters he encountered——he got too carried away and encountered the claw bear. Any kind of monster would appear again in the labyrinth after some time, but the rabbit who didn't even know of such thing was completely letting his guard down.

After that it was a death match. There was no place to escape based on the place. If the rabbit showed his back then he would be killed. Normally a monster would instinctually felt the difference in status and shrunk back in fear or showed its back and escape, giving an

opening from that slip to be instantly killed, but the effect of god water made the rabbit to more or less have thinking capability, he challenged the claw bear half in desperation.

As the result——he survived. Ahead of the verge of death that he surmounted, he awoke to the derivative of his characteristic magic and splendidly pulverized the head of the claw bear with his tough leg. It was a fierce battle that it wasn't an exaggeration to say that the rabbit would die ten times over without the continuing recovery effect of the god water.

The rabbit looked at the previous king that he defeated and trembled. And then, he understood. That a living thing could grow stronger by training.

From there the journey of the rabbit to become strong began. His objective was to go to the new king who gave him the impetus. After catching up, he would show the king how strong he had became and he would say his thanks. And then, he wanted to try looking at a wider world… there he would fight many strong people and reach greater height!

Like that the rabbit who grasped the adverse fate like a certain protagonist somewhere, at that time he didn't have any convenient tool like 'Treasure Warehouse' or anything, when he found by some chance god water that collected even slightly at the dent of the ground from what Hajime spilled, other than a portion that he could save as much as possible he would drink the rest without any other way, and then while attempting to recover and strengthen his own body, the rabbit polished his technique and finally he acquired the strength to descend to floor eighty with his own strength and a thinking ability equal to that of an adult.

"… What's with that development that sounded like something in light novel."

"Kyuu!"

The first thing said by Hajime who finished listened to all the particulars was that. With an absurdly complicated look he moved his gaze at the rabbit who unnoticed was now sitting on his lap

while directing round and cute eyes at him.

“Ahaha, isn’t that amazing. While going back we tried making him fight, but just with a little metamorphosis magic he got strengthened to a level where he could fight monster at floor ninety one on one without losing you know. This is only a guess but, his movement resembled Shizuku-chan, so perhaps he can also use ‘Ground Shrinker’ and ‘No Beat’ I wonder? Also, just from kicking there was shockwave flying out.”

“… I see.”

Somehow, Hajime felt that just in these few hours he had said those words so many times already.

“Err, and because of that, if Nagumo-kun doesn’t mind, this child wanted Nagumo-kun to give him name… because he said that he wanted name from Nagumo-kun, not Suzu.”

“Haa. Well, if you are able to make a powerful monster as comrade then let’s just consider this great. It feels like there are a lot of tiring developments right now even more than the fight with Ehito and others though… even so a name huh…”

Hajime dropped his gaze at the kick rabbit on his lap. The kick rabbit was looking up at Hajime fixedly. The two stared at each other. And then, Hajime whispered quietly.

“… Mi—y” (TN: A character rabbit named Miffy)

“Rejected.”

Kaori rejected it instantly. Her eyes were telling Hajime to apologize at the world famous mascot character.

Hajime pulled himself back together and moved his gaze at the kick rabbit once more. The kick rabbit was also looking at Hajime. And then, Hajime whispered quietly.

“… Peter Rabbi——”

“No good.”

“… Udo—ge.” (TN: Udonge is a character from Touhou game.)

“I don’t know that but I feel like it’s no good. Rather, be serious!”

Kaori’s scolding flew. Hajime was thinking really seriously so he clicked his tongue at how awful Kaori was, his expression changed feeling how bothersome this was and then he spoke with careless feeling.

“Aah, geez, then you can just use Inaba. Its appearance is rabbit after all.” (TN: Seems the name Inaba is often used for rabbit in Japan.)

“Ee, isn’t that too simple? Something, a little bit cuter is…”

“Suzu too, Suzu’s other monsters are all like that, so a cute name for rabbit-san is…”

It seemed the name was unpopular with Suzu and Kaori. But, right after Hajime said Inaba, the kick rabbit cried “Kyuu!” while jumping up and down *pyon pyon*, perhaps it was feeling something from the name. It seemed that it was pleased.

And like that the reddish black——or rather the nearly crimson eyes that was even more red then the kick rabbits Hajime killed before, the same color like the lines running on his body were gazing at Hajime glitteringly.

“Looks like he is pleased with that name, see?”

“Ee, … well, if the one concerned is pleased then it can’t be helped though…”

“Uu, Inaba-chan… after saying it once more, it’s unexpectedly cute?”

Both of the girls were reluctant but it seemed for the moment they were consenting.

And, at that time Shia who was watching quietly all the time until now judged that for the present the talk was finished and she approached Inaba. As fellow rabbit ears, Shia’s interest was forming

toward Inaba. While smiling friendlily she was going to pat Inaba.

“Inaba-chan, I’m glad you got the name. As a fellow rabbit ears, let’s get along——”

“Kyu-“

The hand that reached out to pat was casually slapped down. Shia stiffened instantly in place. Inaba sent a glance at the rabbit ears of such Shia and then, “fuh” he snorted.

With blood vein pulsing on her forehead, Shia’s gaze turned at Suzu, asking what did this mean. A smile was still pasted on that face.

“Hih, Shi, Shiashia, calm down!”

“I am calm. And? What is this impertinent child is saying?”

“E, err, that…”

“Suzu-san?”

“Hii! Yo, you see, Rabbit ears like you are serving at Ou-sama’s sideee, I’m dying from laughter hereee? Polish your rabbit ears before coming back againnn! he said… uhii! No, Suzu wasn’t the one saying that!”

It appeared that Inaba felt something toward Shia who was a possessor of the same rabbit ears like him. He entangled his rabbit ears on Hajime arm with his eyes narrowing provocatively. To that Shia whose prided rabbit ears were made fun of also didn’t stay quiet.

“… To insult my rabbit ears that Hajime-san loved, that’s really a big talk, isn’t it. What nerve desu. Which one is worthy to become Hajime-san’s rabbit, I’ll engrave it into your body desuu!”

“Kyuu!!”

Shia’s reinforced fist grazed the nose tip of Hajime. A burnt smell stab the nasal cavity strongly.

On the other hand, Inaba who was attacked beautifully jumped and evaded, invoking his characteristic magic ‘Air Force’ he rolled and launched a powerful axe kick at Shia. To that, Shia blocked by raising her hand.

And then Shia’s beautiful legs were opened in front of Hajime’s eyes, it was swung to shoot down Inaba in midair. Above Hajime’s head Inaba’s kick and Shia’s kick clashed, producing fierce shockwave. Hajime’s hair was disarrayed.

Without rest. Shia and Inaba moved to inside the workshop while unfolding a fierce exchange.

“Hajime-san’s rabbit is enough with one desuu!”

“Kyukyuu!”

After that it went without saying that the two were shot by Hajime whose eyes were half-closed with messed up hair and burnt nose tip. It also went without saying that the surrealism of the shot down smoking two rabbits who were getting along at the corner of the workshop made the cheeks of Kaori and others twitching.

After that, the subdued monsters of Suzu——especially the amount of the butterfly type monsters and their ability were added with further improvement due to Hajime thinking that they had good affinity with Suzu, he also handed over the exclusive artifact for Suzu the ‘Twin Iron Fan’ and the artifact for transporting the monsters the ‘Magic Orb’ (Po—ball).

By the way, Ryuutaro who were neglected all that time was also given his artifact properly, he also grasped the way to use metamorphosis magic in his own special way also with Hajme’s help, so for the moment there was no problem.

Although the fact that Ryuutaro’s way of using the metamorphosis magic by using Tio as reference and how that way was the most compatible for him made Hajime and others got exasperated all together thinking, as expected from a muscle brain.

“At last, it’s tomorrow…”

“Yeah. Though it’s unknown what’s the exact time tomorrow.”

The time was just on the brink of late at night period. It was only one more hour until the day that Ehito informed as the day of the great invasion. Depending on the situation, it was also possible that it would start at the same time with the changing of day, so currently Hajime along with Shia were doing the last check regarding the departing preparation.

“Hajime-san.”

“Hm?”

“ ‘Even if for example something happened to me, Hajime and Shia will surely do something somehow. There is nothing at all that I need to be worried about’… she said that.”

“… Yue huh.”

“Yes desu. And I answered, ‘Obviously desu’.”

Inside the stretched out time inside the workshop, Shia was doing the final check to the new ability that she obtained half-forcibly using the new disposable type artifact of Hajime while talking with calm voice.

“Three days… that is the time in order for us to take back Yue-san but… at the same time, it is also the time until Yue-san’s resistance come to an end.”

“… Yeah.”

Yes, the time for Ehito to completely grasp Yue’s body was also the time limit until Yue was cornered to a state where she was unable to resist. No one said it, but at that time what kind of state Yue would be like… at the very least it was certain that it would be a state where no one could be optimistic about.

“Even so, I believe. That Yue-san is safe. That we will surely take her back. That even if she is unable to resist, Yue-san is believing and waiting for us.”

“Obviously. It’s Yue we are talking about. No way she is going to lose to that seriously ill chuunibyou that is painful to look at. Much less after she got beaten into shape by Shia just recently.”

“Fufu, isn’t that right. … But, it doesn’t change that the enemy is powerful. He is incomparable with everything until now. A resolve to cross the line of death is necessary for that.”

“… What do you want to say?”

Shia twirled toward Hajime and looked straight at him. Blazing flame of rage that her best friend was stolen and killing intent toward enemy, and then the resolve to take her back without fail was residing in those eyes so clearly.

Shia who displayed a spirit to the degree that made Hajime gulped unintentionally, resounded her words of determination.

“I, will be reckless. I will push through rashly. I’m resolving to die without surrender if Yue-san cannot be rescued. I will take even one more enemies to the grave together with me. I want it so my life and death are together with Yue-san.”

“… I see. And?”

“Please don’t stop me. And then, Hajime-san too please be together with me in this.”

Those words were telling him to die together with her depending on the situation. It was an ego that hated to survive only by themselves when only Yue died. And now she was telling Hajime to go along with her egoism, what unbelievable words. If Shia was a heroine in a tale, then those words would be a great disqualification for her.

But, Hajime who was told those words that sounded outrageous was common sense thinking,

“What are you saying after this late? That’s obvious, isn’t it. Whether we live together, or die together. Those two things are one and the same. After all, Shia, I don’t have any intention to let you get away. Don’t get cold feet just before the main event, okay?”

Toward Hajime who was showing a fearless smile while saying something even more egoist, however, Shia leaked out a chuckle “kufufu” as though agreeing to that answer.

“Yes desu. I want to form this feeling into words for once. After all, if at the last moment, I get told idiotic things like “Shia! At the very least you have to survive!” Then, I’ll lose strength.”

“Well, after all according to those guys in class, I am more a demon king than the demon king himself yeah. A demon king won’t let go of anything by his own initiative. I won’t spit out that kind of shitty cold line okay. Well, there is not going to be any death without surrender or anything. I will get into my hand everything that I want, I’ll crush all those that are in the way.”

“Ahaha, as expected from Hajime-san desuu. Your line is completely like a demon king——full speed ahead as the villain desuu!”

Shia who laughed humorously for a while shouldering the Vire Doryukken exultantly, showing that she was fully prepared. And then she spoke with a gaze that filled with determination.

“Let’s take back Yue-san quickly… and then do the earnestly desired threesome okay!”

“… You spoiled various things, this horny rabbit.”

Shia exited the workshop while whispering ‘looking forward to it desuu’. Hajime who gave a tsukkomi and exasperated gaze to that back figure, a beat later, saying ‘what a hopeless fellow’ he floated a smile where affection and trust could be felt.

And then, accomplishing the quota of the mass-produced weapons, Hajime and the others who were fully prepared finally departed from the depth of Orcus Great Labyrinth in order to link up with the surface group.

Arifureta Chapter 162

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/163/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. He also did the edits.

Before the Decisive Battle

Shizuku was waiting to welcome Hajime and others ahead of the gate that they passed through.

“Finally you all came. Everyone is waiting. Follow me.”

Shizuku only said that before turning on her heel and walking ahead toward the boorish fortress right in front of them from the plaza where the gate hole was set up.

In a glance, it was obvious that it was a fortress of red brick that was constructed in a hurry; however, the scale of the fortress boasted a degree of completion that was unthinkable for construction that was done in just one or two days. Surely, this was the result of overusing artifacts from the age of god rank that raised up the ability of the cheat-like earth elementalist Nomura Kentaro and the artisans of the kingdom and empire by several times over.

That fortress and the great plain in front of the kingdom capital where a several hundred thousand person battle force was camping was illuminated brightly by lighting artifacts. The area was bright like in the afternoon. The capital of the Hairhi Kingdom and the God Mountain that were visible from far away looked different than

usual. It was illuminated with light from the outside across the mountain's shadow, making anyone seeing it feel a mysterious deep emotion.

Shizuku's back figure as she led them was illuminated by such an artificial light, looking extremely ill-humored for some reason.

"Yaegashi, has something happened?"

Shizuku came to a standstill when Hajime unconsciously asked her that. Right after that, she vigorously turned back and with a brisk walk she approached him and grasped Hajime's arm tightly. Without any pause, she buried Hajime's arm between the valley of her breast. It was a 'linking arm' posture so to speak. While doing that, she urged him forward.

Shia and the others blinked their eyes at the unusual boldness of Shizuku's act.

"Oi oi, Yaegashi. Really what's the matter?"

"It's Shizuku. Feels like it's too late already now, but please call me Shizuku. I too will call you Hajime."

"Haa?"

Shizuku sighed tiredly toward the perplexed Hajime while explaining her true intention.

"His majesty the emperor is irritating you know. He tried to put up some kind of made-up reason to put me at his side, he came to make advances to me…yet even so, all of his reasons were logical and on top of that he did what he needed to do perfectly so I couldn't complain at all."

It appeared that Shizuku was fed up because Gahard was making passes at her.

"I told you that it's fine to give out my name at that kind of time, right?"

"I told him. That the one that I, lo, love is, Nagu, Ha, Hajime."

“You are being shy there. Then? If he was still coming at you even, then you could just contact me, right?”

There Shizuku’s expression turned from displeasure into a troubled look.

“…I didn’t want to be a trouble just from this much. After all, Ha, Hajime is the key of victory of the allied forces. Besides, in order to win against that Ehito, you need to work out various countermeasures, correct?”

“It’s fine even if you aren’t that considerate you know. It would be over just by opening a gate and filling him full of bullets.”

“Fufu, because I thought that you would do that I held back from doing that. Even though it is rubber bullets would attack a leader of a country, right? That’s why for compensation, right now, spoil me like this. His highness the emperor is also in the conference room so this will be also flaunt at him though.”

“I see.”

“Because of that, Shia and the others too, allow this a little okay?”

To Shizuku who said that with a little apologetic look, Shia and others also returned a smile telling her to not worry about it.

By the way, Remia and Myuu weren’t here with them but there were demon rangers who were accompanying the two. Myuu and Remia also wished to accompany them to the fortress because they could do the chores there, but Hajime obstinately didn’t allow that. However, in this dangerous time that threatened the world where a serious affair was concerning Yue-oneechan, to not be able to do anything depressed Myuu’s heart in a not slight amount, that was why Hajime attached a remote control ability to the living golem.

This ability enabled the controller to share the sight and hearing of the golem from the safe zone that was Orcus’s hideout. On top of that, the controller could send their instruction precisely. With that, Myuu could accept being left because she also had something she could do. Papa was really spoiling his daughter.

Along the way, the soldiers were whispering “That’s…” while sending them gazes filled with reverence. Even while feeling shy from those gazes from the soldiers, by acting spoiled to Haijme, Shizuku was able to endure and also reduced the stress that she got from Gahard. By the time she was able to heal to a certain degree, they arrived at a spacious hall inside the fortress.

A large table was put inside, at the seats of honor were Liliana and Randell, Gahard, and then Alfrerick, Karm, and Aiko. They were the center while other people were sitting around them. Aiko was sitting small and quietly with a really nervous look. Just from looking at that, it was obvious that the ‘Goddess of Harvest’ was forced to take the front stage.

When Hajime’s gaze looked further around, there were a lot of faces that he knew. Ranzi and Viz of Ankaji Dukedom, the guild masters Barus, Iruwa, Catherine, and for some reason the clothes store’s monst——Christabel. There were the commanders that he saw from each respective country and the aides of every representative, in addition, there were also Nagayama and Sonobe as the representatives of the classmates. Furthermore, although Randell was sitting at Liliana’s side, Liliana’s presence was stronger. It seemed that Liliana was serving as the representative of Hairhi Kingdom.

The moment Hajime arrived, all of them made expressions that said “So he finally arrived!”. Next, their cheeks cramped from looking how Shizuku was clinging all over him. Looking at the time, it wasn’t like Hajime was late, but to make the leaders of the world wait for him and when he arrived he came with a girl waiting upon him, what nerve…that was how the impression looked like.

Although, the aides let go of the matter with only their expressions reacting, the leaders with authority even among all the leaders here, the representatives of each force were all standing up noisily from their chair.

“Oi oi oi, Nagumo Hajimee. Making Shizuku wait up on you like that, is that an insinuation to me? Aaa?”

“Nagumo-san!? Why are you flirting with Shizuku!?”

“Ya, Yaegashi-san? Se, sensei is, thinking that kind of behavior is not healthy you know? Even though sensei thought that you are a person with a little bit more moderation that sensei can get along with…that’s enviou…not that, that’s really shameless!”

“You bastaard, in front of Kaori, you laid your hand even to her best friend-! Kaori! Just as I thought I won’t give up on you! I will separate you from that demon without faiiil!”

“As expected-, Boss! Even now when your beloved woman is kidnapped, you still have the composure to make a new woman wait upon you-! Are you going to do a debauched party for the cheering up before the decisive batt-heboo!?”

In order from above, the ones speaking were Gahard, Liliana, Aiko, Randell, and Karm. Karm was sitting at a seat of honor was surely the proof that the name and deed of the head hunting rabbit had permeated everywhere, but looking at his figure that was shot by Hajime and writhed around on the floor, his dignity was nonexistence. Shia at the side was covering her face with both her hands while trembling all over from enduring her shame.

“That Shizuku is like this is Gahard’s fault, all of it. Say your complaint to him. Also, Gahard, choose, are you going to be a manly woman or stop making a pass at Shizuku.”

“My my♡ Hajime-chan, you are going to increase my compatriot for me again? Geez-, you really aren’t stingy with your presents for mee! I love you!”

Christabel with her frilly costume that looked like a magical girl that looked painful in various meanings was wriggling her body excitedly while sending Hajime sidelong glances.

Hajime was desperately restraining his impulse to draw out Donner while conveying to Gahard with his gaze that said “I’m gonna turn you into this thing’s comrade”. Looking at that, Gahard shrunk back in terror that wasn’t like the broadminded majestic emperor. For him, it seemed that Christabel’s queerness was severe.

The attitudes of the top group that seemed unthinkable before the

decisive battle where the fate of mankind was gambled made the expressions of other people inside the conference room turn complicated. Should they feel it heartening or joyful that they had composure (seemingly) to act like that, or else should they felt uneasy that they were lacking in tension.

Hajime sat on a chair. Following him, Shia and the others also took their seats. It was because they understood the importance of the Holy Precincts storming group that seats were also prepared for everyone other than Hajime too.

Like that, they pulled themselves together and began the last meeting. The placement and distribution of the equipment and weapons, the learning rate of the soldiers, the action guidelines at the time of the grand invasion, the confirmation of the chain of commands, etc., they confirmed all the matters from beginning to end where they ought to be on the same page. It seemed that while Hajime was mass producing artifacts, the top brasses were already talking to each other. In the first place, the human side had been dialoguing with each other for many years and tied an alliance in the preparation for the battle against the devil race, so there was no big problem.

Battle forces of adventurers and mercenaries and so on were also coordinated by the guild masters, so it seemed that they could properly coordinate with the army. That too seemed to be because it was the duty of the adventurers at war.

The problem was the demi-human races which were added to that system, they had their own characteristic chain of command, so forcefully inserting them into the human side was a bad move. And so it seemed the demi-humans would be moved to fill the hole like hit and run attacks or supporting the human race.

Currently, the classmates seemed to become the core who taught the way to use and the effect of Hajime's artifacts, but because the artifacts didn't need particular magic circles or chanting, and also the characteristic convenience of modern weapons where everyone could use it, there didn't seem to be any particular problem in that aspect. Even now if they focused their ear, the sound of explosions and the dry sound of shooting could be heard resounding at far

away intermittently.

The fortress had been completed for the present, the work being done currently was for constructing the battlefield with things like digging trench and the likes. A fortress was useful for a place to put gun emplacement and taking various lines of fire that obstructed the field of vision of the enemy, but the fortress didn't have the ability to oppose the disintegration ability of the apostles, so till the end it was only a simple thing. Their best bet was to make use of Hajime's new artifacts and construct an advantageous battlefield for them.

"The timeline is really narrow, but somehow it's taking shape. This too is the blessing of the 'Goddess of Harvest' I guess."

Hajime turned his gaze at Aiko and others with a bit of admiration. Actually, he was thinking before this that half of the situation that he was hearing currently wouldn't be in order even now. But the preparation had progressed to a level that surpassed Hajime's expectation, that must be solely because of the existence of a powerful flag.

This was the result of a clear sense of danger and righteous indignation, and also feeling of solidarity that was born inside the people's consciousness. Each people wasn't moving because 'they were told to do so', but because they were thinking that 'I also got to do this' that the preparation could be done this quickly.

"…Isn't that right? In a sense, I felt like I was made to learn once more how terrifying mass psychology is. Aiko-san is scary."

"Wha-. Liliana-san too, you were also inciting the people in high spirits weren't you! Your eyes were teary, you clasped your hands as though you were praying, and then with a lot of heroic you said something like [I will fight. Even if I am alone!]. I saw it clearly that time! When the people who were there had their spirit raised, saying that they will fight together, you secretly laughed, didn't you! That time I really felt a princess is scary!"

"I, I didn't laugh or anything. Please don't say something strange. I wasn't thinking anything like, perhaps I will receive praise from

Hajime-san with this, not at all. It's the truth, you know?"

"Both the princess and the goddess, whichever of them are plainly creepy. As for me, this can affect the throne of the emperor, so I'm the one that got creeped out the most."

At the side of the princess and goddess who was having a low-level quarrel, was his majesty the emperor who didn't even hide his attitude as though he had seen something unpleasant. Looking further it seemed the elder of the sea of trees, the guild masters, and the lord of the desert also had the same expression. Only the clan head of the head hunting rabbit who was sending a thumb up at Hajime for some reason though.

By the time that they finished speaking about the main points of this and that, when the end of the meeting was approaching, Ranzi of Ankaji Dukedom opened his mouth calmly.

"Nevertheless, for the hero of my dukedom, he finally will be the hero of the world…as expected, it seemed that my decision at that time wasn't mistaken."

The receptionist lady of Brook Town's adventurer guild Catherine nodded deeply as though to agree with that.

"Since the first time he came to me, I thought that he would do something big for sure. But, never I imagine even in my dream that it would be something as big that controlled the fate of the world… as expected, even I couldn't anticipate this."

"That's right isn't it. That time when he rampaged at Fhuren, I thought that he would surely do something even much more than this, I thought that he could possibly be caught up in a strife that is related to the secret of the world but…for that to be a battle where the existence of the world will be at stake. Haa, my stomach hurts. The title of 'The Dagger of Iruwa's Branch Head' is already shamefully unusable with this."

"My? As for me, I understood already from the very beginning. If it's Hajime-chan then someday he would defeat even the devil king. Besides, he was always sending manly women for me, that was for

the preparation of the coming day, I proooperly understood that. A good manly woman also has good sense you know!"

Christabel winked intensely. Hajime absolutely didn't attempt to enlarge such excessively dangerous battle force though. Hajime's cheeks were twitching. However, the top brasses starting from Ranzi and others, he saw their eyes that were colored with complicated apprehension that could be taken as sympathy or sorrow, and he guessed Christabel's motive of intentionally acting cheerful like that.

Therefore, Hajime shrugged his shoulders as though it was nothing and returned a fearless smile at the members lined up here that made him felt nostalgic.

"It's not like this is really strange or anything you know? An idiot self-styled god that cannot read the mood laid his hand on my woman. That's why, he is going to die. That's all there is to it. You guys too, it's only a fight of this level, so survive with some composure to spare okay? When I bring back Yue, we are going to play at the towns of you guys one more time. This time it won't be with any adventure, just a carefree sightseeing, yeah."

Naturally it wouldn't be an easy fight just like Hajime said. It would be a deadly combat piled up on deadlier combat, a historical and unprecedented decisive battle of the whole mankind. Without any doubt this was a holy war that would decorate a page of legend. But, exactly because of that, the boasting attitude of Hajime instead encouraged Ranzi and others, they were all "Aa, it can't be helped if we are told that. Let's win." And all the people inside the conference room were also the same like that.

And, at that time, the outside suddenly became noisy. The people in the conference room were going "Uwah, is the invasion starting-" with their faces blurred by tension.

There, a soldier rushed in with flustered look and reported with a loud voice that had hope and awe mixed in it.

"A, a great number of dragons appeared from the teleportation circle at the square! They are the dragon race that comes for

reinforcement!”

It appeared that the last reliable ally had come back.

Hajime lifted the corner of his lips and quietly stood up, he exited the conference room taking Shia and others with him. The other people too, after looking at each other for a moment, they chased after Hajime’s back while feeling shaken from hearing about the legendary dragon race.

“Goshujin-sama! Thy beloved servant hath come back! Now, let me receive the love!”

Tio who instantly returned from the black dragon form to her human form beautifully ignored her dragonified compatriots and the people at the surrounding who were taken aback from seeing them. She dived toward Hajime’s chest.

And so, naturally, Hajime discharged his gun.

DOPAN-!

Like that, the familiar sound reverberated, the special rubber bullet hit the forehead of Tio who was panting while performing Lup-n Dive with a look of expectation.

After rotating beautifully three times backward in midair, the back of her head hit hard on the ground before Hajime’s eyes.

The place was filled with silence where even bug would hesitate to chirp. Amidst the people who were lost for words from being unable to grasp the situation, the shot down Tio was twitching in intoxication with an expression of ecstasy while her back arched like a bridge, and then she rose up smoothly without any preliminary motion. That disgusting movement and her slovenly expression creeped out the surrounding.

“Th, the punishment after three days long…haa haa, aahn, because I endured too much I felt it excessively…nn-“

“Welcome back Tio. It’s great that you made it in time. To arrive in dragonification state of all thing. …That was a good demonstration

yeah?”

“Fufu, art not that true? This is the legendary race that hath confined themselves for five hundred years. I thought that if we art going to do this then we might as well act the role to raise the morale…Yes, it’s great that we art able to strike them all dumb.”

As expected, the surrounding couldn’t follow the pace of Hajime and Tio who progressed the talk as though nothing happened. Rather than saying that the people were struck dumb by the arrival of the dragon race, the exchange of Hajime and Tio was the main reason they were struck dumb, but Tio puffed up her chest thinking that her plan succeeded.

“Tio-san, welcome back. But, if I have to say just in case, I think that this difficult atmosphere is because they are shown the relationship between Hajime-san and Tio-san that is showed too naturally even though it’s abnormal you know?”

“Yep. I have been thinking this many times before but, Hajime-kun too is mostly in harmony with Tio-san isn’t he.”

“In a sense, it feels like Hajime has to be Tio-san’s master no matter what huh, like that? My own familiarity that feels that this is natural even though it should be a spectacle to be shocked about is scary.”

Shia, Kaori, and Shizuku who were unable to be indifferent? were making tsukkomi with an exasperated face. Hajime and Tio were staring in puzzlement. It seemed that in various meanings it had been already too late for them to be treated.

It was at that timing that the six dragons that appeared in the square shined, the next moment six silhouettes of humans appeared. All of them were male. Their muscular appearances wore clothes that looked similar to Tio’s Japanese clothes. Every one of them was a handsome guy. But, their hair colors were colorful, the color resembled the color of the scales when they transformed into a dragon. Scarlet, indigo blue, amber, navy blue, gray, deep green, the colors were all over the place.

From among them, the scarlet haired person, a man past middle age that emitted out a remarkable dignity walked forward until he was in front of Hajime and the others. Liliana and the others who chased behind Hajime——the leaders of each country were also here. Certain footsteps that weren't timid at all even in front of those leaders and a 'weight' that was like a really big tree was approaching. Those factors were making everyone comprehending in a really natural way, that 'this person was king'.

Liliana, Gahard, Alfrerick, and the others, the leaders of each country were slightly faltering due to this great man; however, the man's eyes narrowed the moment he saw Hajime who warded off his pressure like a flexible willow. Those eyes weren't giving a dangerous look, but it was a gaze where deep interest and admiration were mixed.

"Hairhi Kingdom's Liliana S B Hairihi-dono, Helsha Empire's Gahard D Helsha-dono, Fair Bergen's elder Alfrerick Haipist-dono. This is our first time meeting. I, am the leader of dragon race, Adol Claus. In the peril of this occasion, we the dragon race will also ask to be allowed to participate. Our compatriots are still waiting in the village and they can be summoned through the gate anytime. They will surely be useful at the battle against the apostles. Please take care of us."

His voice wasn't loud by any means, rather it even made the listener feel calm. Even so, the words could be heard even by the soldiers who were looking from afar at the corners. They raised a commotion "Oo" hearing the man's words. The race that only made their entrance in the legend was really surviving until now, and in this time of crisis they would fight together with them. With how the dragon race had displayed their dragon form from the beginning, the morale of the soldiers looked like it increased by quite a lot.

Liliana and the others returned the greeting unanimously where Adol responded by nodding generously. It seemed that his personality was gentle, contrary to his stern appearance. He made anybody feel an intellectual tolerance that could envelope everything. Perhaps it should be said as expected from a race that Yue once treated as an example. This man was exactly a proper

dragon race.

Hajime and the others filled their eyes with disappointment in full power and sent their gaze at Tio. “Hm?” Tio cocked her head in puzzlement. It was as though she didn’t understand why they looked at her like that.

In order to talk about the action guidelines when the invasion came, Adol was going to head to the conference room with Liliana and the others. It was unrelated to the Holy Precincts storming group, so Hajime and the others stayed behind. He had reunited back with Shizuku and Tio so it was necessary to hand over artifacts to them and talk about their action plan when they entered the Holy Precincts.

But before that, a dragon man with indigo hair was walking toward Hajime’s direction. Actually at the point of time when Hajime appeared, this man immediately directed a fierce glint of eyes at Hajime, but it seemed that he understood the right place and time and waited until Adol’s greeting was over. He was a good-looking man at the age of early twenty. Come to think of it, all the dragon race people who came were all amazingly handsome guys.

“…You bastard. Just what in the world have you done to princess?”

The indigo-haired man asked that while glaring straight at Hajime with a voice that sounded like he wanted to kill. Hearing that, Hajime exposed a rare puzzled expression and he turned his gaze at Liliana’s direction, Not just Hajime, everyone would think about Liliana if they heard the word ‘princess’.

Gazes gathered at Liliana wondering if she had some kind of relationship with the dragon race that had been hiding from the front stage all this time, but Liliana herself had no knowledge of that at all and she shook her head left and right vigorously.

“Where are you looking at! If a dragon race says the word princess then it’s obviously about Tio-sama!”

Those words made Hajime and the rest stiffened. They moved their gaze to Tio in a state where the sound of *gi-gi-gi* almost could be

heard from their stiff movements. To that, Tio's cheeks puffed into crimson and she averted her gaze, as though she was a male in puberty that went shy because his classmates came to know that his family was calling him with '-chan' added.

Hajime murmured.

"Princess?"

Shia murmured.

"Princess?"

Kaori murmured.

"Princess?"

Shizuku murmured.

"Princess?"

And then, everyone whispered with their voices in unison.

" " " " "No waayy" " " " "

Tio howled.

"Wha, what! Is it bad if I am called princess! I am more or less the granddaughter of the clan head, so it's not strange even if I am called that!"

"Aaaa, yeah. You're right, princess Tio. It's nothing bad at all, princess Tio."

"Forgive me princess Tio. It sounds bad for some reason but, you are asking us to call you princess Tio from now on aren't you, princess Tio?"

"Ye, yep, it's not strange at all you know? Princess Tio? Yep, I think it sounds fine you know, princess Tio."

"I, I think it's fine. Even if, it sounds like that but a princess is a princess isn't it? Princess Tio."

Tio whose face was dyed bright red from shame was trembling while she howled once more with teary eyes.

“Nugaa—! Stop it already! I feel extremely embarrassed somehow! I beg all of thou, call me just like how it is until now! This kind of shame doesn’t feel good for even a bit!”

“What’s with you, isn’t it fine princess Tio. Isn’t it cute princess Tio. It has amazing echo you know princess Tio. Teach us this kind of thing sooner princess Tio. From here on too you will forever be princess Tio.”

“Stop it alreadyyyyy”

Approaching Tio who crouched down while covering her face and her body writhing, Hajime further called her princess repeatedly into her ear. In his face sadism and affection were splendidly existing in harmony, it was an ‘S’ face that could be called superb. As expected, Tio(pervert)’s master could be no one but Hajime. Everyone was comprehending that while sending their exasperated gaze at Hajime.

There, inside the atmosphere that became strange, the indigo haired man raised his voice at Hajime with a gaze that looked like a devilish homicide.

“You bastaard, what disgrace are you doing toward princess…as I thought, you are using some kind of suspicious artifact to brainwash her right!”

Somehow that statement closely resembled a certain hero (lol) somewhere.

“Hey, Ristas. Don’t say something so rude to Goshujin-sama. I had said this many times, but I long for Goshujin-sama from my heart. No matter even if thou art someone like my younger brother, I won’t stay quiet if you are too rude.”

“-, princess! You are being tricked! Please open your eyes!”

“Muu, really someone like thou. On what basis thou art saying such a thing.”

The indigo-haired man that was called Ristas by Tio, when he was looked at by Tio with a gaze as though she was looking at a child throwing a tantrum, it was as though his store of patience finally ran out. He raised an angry voice from his heart, from his heart that was filled with extremely fierce emotions.

“There is no way the princess of the dragon race is this kind of pervert-!!!”

“ “ “ “ “Indeed.” “ “ “ “

All of the people in that place nodded in unison. Certainly, what he pointed out was truly correct.

“Before princess left the village, she was wise and compassionate, her strength was also surpassing the clan head. She was a great lady to whom everyone harbored affection and reverence! By no means she is a person who will show expression of ecstasy from pain, or someone who would make a smile that looks strangely joyful while she was crouching in shame and writhing from verbal abuse. She wasn’t that kind of person at all! It’s only natural to think that the human over there had done something sinister to her!”

“ “ “ “ “Indeed.” “ “ “ “

Once more all the people in that place nodded in unison. Indeed, what he pointed out was the most correct.

“No, not to mention, for princess to call that kind of human youth, Go, Goshujin-sama or, or or or, or the likes! Impossible!”

Tio when she was at the hidden village of dragon race was surely a charming woman that no one could find fault at as the granddaughter of the clan head. Right now she was a hopeless pervert that couldn’t be saved anymore, but her wisdom and prudence that she displayed at every turn, and then her deep compassion and courage that wouldn’t consider even her own safety when it was for the sake of her comrades, all of those were also Tio’s charm that had been conveyed enough at Hajime and others.

Looking from the view point of the dragon race people who only

knew about Tio's good points, Tio who had turned into a pervert looked completely like a different person. Most likely when she returned to her village, in the process of showing the recorded image and explaining about Hajime and others, she freely displayed her perverted nature without restraint to her fellow clan.

When she came back, the princess that was loved by everyone had turned into a massive pervert…it was really easy to guess what would they think in their heart.

But, even so it also felt like that Ristas's fury was a little too far. The dragon people other than him didn't send gazes that was that unfriendly at Hajime. Rather they looked like they had interest in what kind of human the man that Tio chose.

Ristas looked like he was further heating up and about to argue even more vehemently, but it was at that time a remonstrating voice resounded.

"Ristas, act properly."

"Cla, clan head…but!"

Although Adol remonstrated Ristas, Ristas's expression wasn't accepting that. To such Ristas, Adol opened his mouth with his eyes squinting in amusement.

"This is something that Tio chose herself. If she is really brainwashed, there is no way I wouldn't notice it. The fact is that Tio is longing for him from her heart. Although Tio's change knocked me out of my wits, but…"

"Then!"

"But, that change too, if it makes Tio happy then I don't mind. That child was tired of the life in the hidden village. She had faithfully protected the law from her own pride as a dragon and her own position but…there is no doubt that her heart was drying from continuing to harbor dark and heavy matter without any outlet. She departed for the mission of this time half-forcibly was surely because she unconsciously was searching for 'something'. Tio had

found that ‘something’. And then, she is smiling in happiness. Isn’t that enough?”

“Tha, that is…”

“Jii-sama…” (TN: Grandfather.)

Ristas was at lost for words. And then, Tio’s expression too also loosened up from the gaze filled with affection that Adol sent to her.

“Besides, Ristas. For a dragon race, to dress up your jealousy with official stance and vent your anger, that is not an admirable thing to do you know?”

“Wha, what are-“

“What are you getting agitated for. You trained yourself day by day following Tio’s words that she wouldn’t take a spouse that is weaker than herself, that matter is known by all the people in the village. Did you think that it wouldn’t be known after you continuously challenged the fiancée candidates of Tio into a match?”

Adol’s expression turned a bit exasperated at Ristas who showed his agitation. When Hajime turned his gaze at Tio at his side, Tio looked back at him with an expression that looked troubled. It appeared Tio also knew about Ristas’s feeling. Furthermore with a small voice, “Those guys art also fiancée candidates” she turned her gaze at the other dragon people.

They were talking in small voices with deep interest, their faces close to each other with their eyes narrowing at Hajime and Tio. Ristas’s eyes lifted up once more. Of all things, it seemed that Tio at the village was seriously a popular girl. At the very least, they idolized her so much that even when her clan members had seen her perverted figure they didn’t immediately get disillusionment.

Adol asked to Liliana and others “Please give me a bit of time”, and then his gaze turned to Hajime.

“I am glad to meet you, Nagumo Hajime-kun. I heard about you from Tio. I was also shown the recording of the battle at the devil

king castle. It was splendid how you slaughtered a god. For us, even if we faced such opponent in a group we would be no match at all."

"Nice to meet you, Adol-dono. I am the reason that caused a strange door to open for your granddaughter. The decisive battle will be soon, but I have the resolve for at least getting a punch in the face."

The surrounding was making a stir. The reason was mainly because of Hajime's honorific language. Here and there comments like "Someone cast healing magic-!" or "The demon king went mad!" or "In this kind of time the trump card of mankind is…the world is already over-!" could be heard.

At the same time, Hajime's body was enveloped in light. It was a healing magic from Kaori. Shia was readying her Vire Doryukken. She was thinking that Hajime would be fixed by hitting him. Shizuku was covering her face. It was as though she was witnessing a tragedy that couldn't be recovered from.

And then Tio at his side was creeped out and drew away from him.

Hajime's cheeks were grandly twitching.

"Hmm. It seems that you are a little different from the image recording and the story that I heard but…from the reaction around us it looks like this is different from your usual."

"Well, you are Tio's family. If it's against the clan head of dragon race then I'll talk normally, but if it's Tio's grandfather, then I'll pay attention to my speech at least."

"Hou! So it's because I am Tio's grandfather. Fufu-, I see, I see."

Adol smiled broadly feeling a little happy at Hajime's words. His dignified aura until now instantly dispersed and his air became like a good-natured old man. Even the creeped out Tio, when she heard the reason for Hajime's abnormal attitude, her expression turned bright and soft as though she was made to eat something sweet.

"Then, this is a great chance. How about I call you Hajime-kun. Hajime-kun, I don't have any plan to punch you. I also said this just now, but if Tio can smile from her heart then that's enough for me.

Rather, I'm happy that you can accept this stubborn person who for the sake of her own creed persisted to be unmarried for five hundred years."

"Is, that so?"

"Yes. If she is happy then things like a fetish or anything is trivial matter. Rather than that, what I want to ask is regarding your beloved princess."

Hajime whose expression turned complicated from Adol's large-hearted statement now made a doubtful expression from those words. If talking about his beloved princess then he couldn't think of anyone except Yue.

"I had seen the image recording. I was surprised that the young vampire princess is alive. And then, for my granddaughter to love the same person with her, truly, fate is something mysterious. Princess Aleytia…no, she is Yue right now isn't she. That girl is your most beloved correct?"

"Yes, that's right."

Adol didn't really show any change of expression when he heard Hajime answering instantly. He just nodded. In exchange, the other dragon people narrowed their eyes dangerously. Ristas too right now looked like he wanted to raise an angry yell. Surely, they couldn't stomach that Hajime was building a relationship that was more than friendship with Tio while saying that another woman was his most beloved.

"I too am a grandfather that is thinking of my granddaughter. At the occasion of the great persecution five hundred years ago, I swore to this child's parents who lost their lives——to my son and his wife. That I will protect her without fail. Therefore, if you are saying that you cannot love Tio, even if Tio says that she doesn't mind with that, as expected I cannot just accept that. The feeling of wanting to entrust the beloved granddaughter is what is called parental love isn't that correct?"

"Indeed."

Adol's gaze stabbed straight at Hajime.

Surely Adol wanted to ask. What was the true feeling of Hajime toward Tio. Exactly because Adol understood that Tio would step into the Holy Precincts with Hajime, and also because he understood that he would commit to deadly combat against the apostles, in this time where it was possible that he would part away forever with his granddaughter in this life, that he couldn't help but wanting to know about the partner that his granddaughter gave her heart to.

Hajime slowly ran his gaze at the surrounding. To Ristas and others of the dragon race, Shia and others, Adol. And then, lastly to Tio.

Tio blushed slightly from being stared directly by Hajime and she was going to take a step back from the pressure she felt.

But, Hajime's arm reached out before she could step back. When that arm caught the waist of Tio who was going to draw back, it then pulled Tio close to him strongly. It really looked like as though Hajime was saying that this woman belongs to me. Tio was turning redder and redder. She looked really meek to the degree that made one want to tsukkomi just what happened with the usual pervert.

Hajime faced Adol once more with his arm still embracing Tio. And then, he opened his mouth with a calm but powerful voice.

"Recently, everyone said it really often, that I am like a demon king."

"Hmm?"

"That's why, I will take everything that I want, and send flying everything that is in the way."

The outsiders went noisy. Adol was listening quietly. Hajime declared clearly to the listening Adol.

"I want Tio."

Tio who was embraced by Hajime twitched noticeably. Her eyes opened widely while she stared at Hajime wholeheartedly.

“No matter what Tio is thinking, that’s already irrelevant. I have no intention to let her go now after this far. Indeed, Yue is my most beloved but…even so, I feel that Tio is lovely. That’s why――”

“That’s why?”

Adol asked. Hajime turned his gaze at Ristas and others for a moment, then he showed a fearless smile at Adol while declaring.

“Tio already belongs to me. If anyone cannot stomach that, then try to steal her with all your might. No matter when, no matter how many times, I’ll take on anyone.”

Those excessively unreasonable, selfish, and preposterous words made everyone who watched over the course of events with the dragon race people first on the lead to be lost for words. Only Shia and others were making an expression that seemed to say “Can’t be helped huh”.

And then, as for Adol who was curious of Hajime’s true feeling,

“Certainly you are an incarnation of unreasonableness――just like a demon king in a fairy tale. Fufu-, I see. So my granddaughter has fallen into the hand of a demon king huh. In the hands of the demon king that might save the world. Kuhaha-“

He raised a laughing voice that sounded amused. After laughing like that for a while, he turned his gaze at Tio and nodded as though consenting to something.

“That’s a good face. I have never seen your expression like that in the village at all. It’s just like your explanation in the village, you are loved by everyone, and then you are in love with them.”

“Jii-sama. Exactly. Not only Goshujin-sama, I also love Yue and the others. And then, right now I’m convinced. That everyone also loves me. I am too happy that it feels like right now I can murder even a god by myself.”

Adol whose smile deepened even more from Tio’s reply calmly straightened his posture and turned his gaze at Hajime. And then he lowered his head.

“Then, demon king-dono. I ask you along with your beloved people, please take care of my granddaughter.”

“…Indeed, I have received your request. I will protect her until the end of this life of mine.”

Hajime’s way of talking returned back to honorific language once more, to that Adol looked like a weight had fallen off from his shoulder, he nodded with relieved expression and then turned on his heel toward Liliana and others. He apologized for taking time for his personal matter while urging them toward the conference room. He also took the opportunity to breathe life back into Ristas and others who had faltered from Hajime’s declaration and urged them to follow him.

Liliana and Aiko were directing expression that looked absurdly jealous, and possibly even greedy toward Hajime, but urged by the surrounding they helplessly returned back inside the fortress even while they kept sending glances back with reluctance.

The onlookers were scattering gradually with the disappearance of the leaders, but the remaining people, especially the classmates who had gathered unnoticed were sounding out gossips like “Damn, Nagumo is seriously an ero game’s MC” or “Haa haa, maou-sama(TN:Demon king-sama)…haa haa” or “That’s just too unreasonable…but, I also want someone to act that unreasonable for me!” or “Hajime-sama’s harem…if I added myself nonchalantly into there, it’s possible”.

Amidst such an atmosphere, Tio who was clinging on Hajime’s chest with slovenly expression “nihee～” softly separated herself from him.

“Goshujin-sama. Those were truly, truly joyful words. However, there is one thing that I wished to confirm. For Goshujin-sama to speak your feeling for me that clearly, surely that’s not because Goshujin-sama hath been thinking of the final possibility, is it?”

If those words came out from a feeling of him wanting to convey his feeling because he thought they might die in this battle, then Tio had to warn Hajime. But, based on what Hajime saw from Tio’s

expression, it seemed that until the end it was nothing more than just her confirming it without her really believing that Hajime was thinking like that.

“A vow to be together in the time of death and thinking that we might die are different things. Naturally, the one who will die are those guys, not us. There is not even a speck of a chance for us to die. I merely didn’t want to take a half-assed attitude in front of your family.”

“Kufufu, I see I see. Then that’s fine. God or whatever isn’t worthy to be feared. After all I feel like I can defeat even Ehito alone if it’s the current me. Let’s take back Yue and then do ‘pii-‘ and ‘pii-‘ with everyone happily!”

“…That’s why, whether it’s Shia or you, in the end you girls just spoiled up everything.”

Behind Hajime, Shia was laughing “Ahaha, desuu～” shamelessly.

For the time being they changed the spot because they wanted to be spared of being a spectacle more than this. It was only the members of storming group that gathered at a corner of the fortress’s rooftop and spent their time to master the artifacts or resting. There was still a few more hours until the sunrise, but no one tried to take a nap. In this situation where it was unclear when the great invasion would begin, no matter how much they relaxed the subconscious tension couldn’t let their mind fall asleep.

In this kind of time, even Hajime who usually displayed a thick nerve, his sleepiness was naturally blown away when he thought of Yue. Right now, he was just earnestly polished his killing intent toward Ehito.

Before long the sunrise arrived. The face of the shining sun peeked out from the east horizon, and a large shadow stretched to the west.

The warm sunlight illuminated the world, at that time when the sun that blazed bright red completely revealed its appearance, Hajime quietly opened his closed eyes, and then he murmured.

“They came.”

It was at that moment.

The world was dyed reddish black and rumbled.

And then, ahead of the gaze that Hajime and the others directed, a crack ran on the sky of God Mountain, there the abyss peeked out its face.

It began.

For god, this was the world’s…

For mankind, this was the toyed history’s…

Beginning of the end.

Arifureta Chapter 163

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/164/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Elementalcobalt did the edits.

Peerless Outbreak of War Without Self-Restraint

The world was dyed reddish black.

It wasn't the orange color of the morning glow. It stirred up the people's unease further, a color that forced anybody to bear instinctive revulsion that was awfully eerie, fanning up one's fear. If it had to be said, it was the eye of a monster, as though the whole world was imprisoned inside the eyes of a monster. Even the beautiful sun that shined radiantly, right now it was merely a reddish black star floating in the east sky.

And then a strange sound was reverberating through the strange colored world. The world itself was rumbling. The ground too, the air too, the world was screaming while trembling with fear.

The people were made to understand that whether they wanted it or not, the end of the world was beginning. Amidst such an atmosphere, an even louder sound of destruction reverberated.

The soldiers, knights, mercenaries, demi-humans, everyone in the fortress trembled. Their gazes moved everywhere. Thereupon, on the sky above God Mountain something that looked like a line became visible. When the people focused their eyes in wonder, the

line warped distortedly, then once again the line raised crackling sounds and spread in all directions.

“The sky… is splitting…”

Someone whispered that. It was truly a murmur that was right to the point. The distorted line occurring in the sky was a crack that ran right through space itself.

That crack fanned up the terror in people’s heart, while the sound of destruction was played to the world, the crack was slowly spreading.

“-, All hands-! Prepare to fight-!”

A command mixed with scolding was handed down toward the soldiers who were dumbfoundedly mute. It was the angry roar of Gahard whose voice was amplified using an artifact. It seemed that he also got knocked out of his wits. But as expected from the representative of a military country, he was the first one who pulled himself back together among the top brasses.

That command released the soldier from their binding. They moved all at once in order to fulfill the role that was given to them.

Even as the crack above God Mountain was increasing in size, by the time the soldiers were deployed, the space was finally completely pulverized along with a thunderous roar.

Fragments of space were blown away everywhere and sparkled like glass. Like a chasm that was opened in the ground, the abyss was peeking from that thing that materialized in the sky. It was a deeply thick darkness that was the exact opposite of the golden whirl that made one feel its solemnity which Ehito and the others used to return to the Holy Precincts. In place of the whirl there was something viscous like miasma spurting out.

From there, black rain was pouring down. No, it only looked like rain——it was a great number of monsters. From the chasm in the space the monsters were raining down on the summit of God Mountain. The numbers already surpassed tens of thousands. At any

rate, it was in the amount that the soldiers who looked up from the ground could see it as black rain. It was a terrific number that easily reached millions, or possibly even tens of millions.

The heavy rain of black monsters painted the summit of God Mountain black in the blink of an eye, and then the blackness began to descend down like an avalanche.

Furthermore, from the chasm of space that was covered in black miasma, this time white rain was released horizontally. At the reddish black sky the white——no, the silver rain was really visible.

“The number of the apostles is also not half-baked, huh.”

The one who whispered with a grim look was Gahard. With his body wrapped in battle clothing, as the general of the allied force he came out to the front line together with the subordinates under his direct control. A ‘telepathic communication’ from the supreme commander of the allied force, Liliana reached his ear.

{Your majesty Gahard. Please don’t go too far to the front. It’s fine for you to die only after the battle is over.}

{Hah, you really said that. But, the strongest man in the allied force has to fight at the very front. If I die then I die, you just need to use my death to blaze up the soldiers. You supreme commander and that goddess are for that sake right.}

{Good grief… your majesty, ‘goddess’ and ‘sword’ are going out. Just as planned, please take care.}

{Yeah-, leave it to me!}

The general of the allied forces, in a manner of speaking, was the supreme commander in the field. Originally, Gahard who was the top of a military country should become the supreme commander, but giving a reason that there was no way the most skilled man could just shut in himself inside with a war going on outside, he stubbornly refused to be stopped from going out.

Although it wasn’t like that, Liliana was unsuited to become the supreme commander. She was a royalty, in anticipation of the

battle against the devil race in the future she learned tactic and strategy. Rather than Gahard whose character was for the front line, the girl who was extolled as the ‘Kingdom’s Prodigy’ was more suited instead to take command of the whole from the rear with an overlooking view.

Other than possessing the courage to run away from the capital alone, she also knew the importance of making a clear decision calmly; furthermore, in regard of barrier magic, she was excelling in base defense as an expert. And if she was accompanied with the skilled aides of each country, then it could be said that she was more than suited as a supreme commander whether in the aspect of status or morale raising.

And then, other than the general and the supreme commander, there was one more person who was given an important role.

“Everyone of the allied forces-. All of you brave warriors that stand up against the crisis of the world! Please don’t be scared! The divine protection of god is with us! We will be protected, all of us, from the evil god who tricked god and bared his fang against mankind right now-. In this point of time where everyone took up your weapon and stand in this place, all of you are already hero! Everyone of you are the warrior of god! Now-, let’s yell together with this ‘Apostle of God’ the ‘Goddess of Harvest’! We will not lose against evil no matter what-. What we are going to grasp is only ‘victory-!!”

Immediately, the soldiers of the allied force who was making tragic expression from terror while desperately holding down their trembling body, like a traveler who found an oasis after wandering in the desert for many days, their eyes shined with hope.

The ‘Goddess of Harvest’ pouring down her voice from the summit of the fortress, the flag bearer of the leaders of the allied force——Aiko, the soldiers directed their gaze that had recovered their strength and determination to her and stamped their feet all at once.

DON DON-, DON-. DON DON-, DON- The fifty hundred thousand soldiers who shook the ground rhythmically at the next moment

roared in unison even without practice beforehand.

“ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “VICTORY! VICTORY!! VICTORY!!!“ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “

“Ruin for the evil god! Glory for mankind!”

“ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “RUIN FOR THE EVIL GOD-!! GLORY FOR MANKIND-!!“ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “

Aiko was desperately recalling the content of ‘You Can Do It, Agitator! Compilation of Lovely Speech Case by Case’ given to her by Hajime while sending her voice that was amplified by an artifact to the battlefield.

“The servant of the evil god is not worthy to be feared! Oh ‘my sword’! Show that proof right now!”

The instant Aiko yelled that, an amplified calm voice echoed through the whole battlefield.

“As you command, my goddess.”

Right after that, the soldiers who looked up to Aiko saw the silhouette that leaped up from behind Aiko.

White haired eye-patched black coated young man——Hajime was standing still on air where there was nothing, and then he lifted above his head a jewel that looked like diamond that he took out from somewhere. Then, that jewel shined radiantly like sun and illuminated the soldiers. Looking from their point of view, it was as though a halo was shining behind Aiko. This too was Hajime’s production.

Hajime floated a wide fearless grin.

A beat later, that happened.

A part of the reddish black sky momentarily flashed, instantly, a part of the mountain surface of God Mountain that was in the process of changing color from being covered by the avalanche of black monsters was entirely blown away along with tremendous thunderous roar.

Right after that, just when it seemed the sky flashed, many things were further raining down to the God Mountain, the mountain with a height of eight kilometer above the sea was crumbling just like a sand mountain created on the beach that got pushed down by a kid.

It was a bombing that poured down straight from heaven. But it wasn't by missiles packed with explosives. What Hajime was doing was simply raining down large mass of metal lumps to free fall on God Mountain.

So to speak, it was Meteor Impact.

As expected, if Hajime made it drop from space then the impact would reach even the fortress, so he dropped the mass from inside the stratosphere, but even so the energy from several ton of metal lump freefalling had the destructive force that average explosive couldn't match.

Furthermore, this attack was falling randomly in local area in the unit of few hundreds.

Along with thunderous roars that could rupture the ear drum, the highest peak of the sacred mountain that was a pride of the world was collapsing like a joke. Rain of monster? Rain of apostle? Then I'll make it rain meteors! It was as though such a thing was said. Of course, Hajime thought that the same golden whirl like before would manifest, so it was completely a coincidence that both sides were making rain.

However, as though to make the comparison between the strength of the two sides, the allied force's soldiers were shown the spectacle of the God Mountain crumbling before their eyes along with the extermination of several tens, hundreds of thousands of monsters, their reaction was…

“ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “_____“ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “

Trembling. Not from fear. From joy. And also from the fighting spirit welling up inside their chest.

Right after that, shouts that weren't even losing against the

thunderous roar of the God Mountain along with the monsters' extermination were raised, it even felt like the shouts could drive away the fierce cloud of dust approaching them.

“ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “UOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOHH————!!!!!! “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “

From the bottom of their stomach, while their body trembling from the scene that came out exactly from legend, they roared from the bottom of their stomachs. They stamped their feet *DON DON*, heightening their fighting spirit without end!

“ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “AIKO-SAMA BANZAI! GODDESS-SAMA BANZAI!! “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “

——God Mountain demolition right after the start of battle.

The enemy had purposefully taught them from where they were going to attack. Then, it was fine to just blow away the place where they were coming out from, that was how it went. Of course, Hajime had also prepared something else in case it was a lie, but from what he saw at Ehito's expression that was full of superiority complex in the end, Hajime presumed that the possibility that he was lying was low.

The destruction of the God Mountain made the movement of the apostles in the sky also stop as expected. However, in the next moment they approached the fortress with a fierce speed while matching their movements like a mass of flying birds without a single disorder.

The capital that was in a half-destroyed state due to the crumbling of the god mountain was further enveloped by the approaching cloud of dust, without stopping the dust approached the fortress like a sandstorm. To that, Hajime took out a different jewel and made it shine.

“We were thoroughly made a fool by you guys before. There is no way this is the end with just this much right? Just like Icarus, fall down with your wings burning, all of you puppets.”

Right after that heavy rain of light that split apart the atmosphere poured down.

——Sunlight convergence laser　Burst Hyperion

The restored annihilation weapon released light of ruin from the sky. Not just a single line, at the altitude of ten kilometers, a total of seven Burst Hyperions were floating, controlled by the jewel that Hajime was holding, with pillars of light piercing down.

Like the tower of Babel, seven pillars of light connecting heaven and earth were swallowing in one go the apostles who were drawing near to the allied forces in a straight line from the chasm in the space.

The apostles who were annihilated unaware were uncountable.

There were a lot of apostles who attempted to defend by deploying their silver wings clad in disintegration ability, but this improved version of Hyperion that had been explosively evolved in heat quantity, convergence rate, lasting time, and so on couldn't be compared with the previous Hyperion. Against this even the characteristic ability of the apostles were pierced and their god constructed bodies were turned into cinders.

The apostles who somehow escaped from the firing lines and the apostles who only now came out from the chasm in the space stopped still, but a moment later they soared to the sky with terrific momentum. They flapped their silver wings and flew along the pillars of light where ahead of them were the astonishing weapons that annihilated their fellow apostles in hundreds.

"Don't be reserved. There is still more to come, eat up to your heart's content. Stuff yourself until your whole body burst out yeahh-"

Using the 'distant viewing stone' loaded on Burst Hyperion, Hajime saw the figures of the ascending apostles, his lips warped ferociously while saying that. At the same time, the diamond jewel shined even further.

Then, from all the Burst Hyperion that had total length of around five meters, several small type bits——'Mirror Bits' were flying out, they went toward the surface or scattered to the surrounding. The bits with isosceles triangle shape and size around thirty centimeters had crimson gem installed on their surface.

The mirror bits scattered as though to evade the charging apostles, to that the apostles frowned suspiciously for a moment, but seemingly judging that it would suffice to destroy the Burst Hyperion where they bits were coming from first no matter what scheme the bits served, they ignored the bits and continued charging ahead.

And then, the apostles focused their silver magic power, and at that instant where they were going to attempt to destroy the seven weapons emplaced at the sky with disintegration bombing,

"-!? This is-——"

One of the apostles that leaked out that voice had her head erased before she could finish talking.

It was by the laser *right from behind*.

The firing of Burst Hyperion stopped just for a moment. Immediately after, the lasers split into branches like a scattered shot and rained down to the ground… was how it looked like but an instant later, lasers from all directions filled the whole sky to the brim.

That was a cage that was instantly created from laser. Countless lasers from directions that were totally different from Burst Hyperion's positions were expanding through the whole sky as though laying out three dimensional web.

"Kuh, so it's that small artifacts-"

One of the apostle who attempted to defend by deploying her maximum disintegration ability through her silver wings that wrapped around her body spoke out a conjecture that was nearly conviction as though spitting out, to that surely it was just auditory

hallucination, but the words of the irregular that said “Correct” echoed in her ear with teasing tone.

Yes, the role of the mirror bits were to reflect the sunlight convergence laser of Burst Hyperion which was their mother machine. With that, they exterminated the enemy from every direction. The countless bits were constantly changing position and further reflected the reflected lasers, creating a cage of laser that covered the sky and realized a diversified random shooting that was hard to predict due to the irregularity.

By the way, the bits had the word ‘mirror’ attached to their name, but they weren’t reflecting the laser using mirror but by making use of space distortion. Using that it was also possible to bend the laser in sharp angles. In a glance, it looked nothing more than a reflection, hence the naming.

“Well, that’ll take care of that.”

Due to the omni-directional laser attack without pause, the apostles reflexively deployed defense of silver wings and their charge slowed down, seeing that Hajime snorted while murmuring that.

And then, through the ‘distant viewing stone’ Hajime sent a fearless grin at the apostles whose expressions were somewhat visibly distorting hatefully. He then operated the jewel and dropped something shining the size of a fist from Burst Hyperion.

Like a morning dew that dripped down from a leaf, the seven shining tears were dropped right in the middle of great number of apostles who currently were beginning to move in the attempt to break through the cage of laser with their silver wings deployed in defense.

“Disappear all at once.”

Right at that moment when Hajime whispered in small voice,

DOOOOOOOOOOOOOOON-!!!!

Flowers of sun bloomed at the reddish black sky.

——Treasure Warehouse to exclusively store converged sunlight Rose Helios

What Hajime dropped were special treasure warehouses that stored sunlight which was focused until the limit. It was different with the treasure warehouse that was built internally to shot lasers, so to speak it was a large scale heat bomb that made use of the suns energy by self-destructing to release all the stored energy at once.

This artifact was a treasure where one Burst Hyperion could only have one of it loaded in them, but its power was guaranteed. The heat that was continuously converged was liberated and caused a large explosion like sun flare, the reddish black sky was painted like it was afternoon.

The radiance that made one thought that seven suns were appearing at the same time covered the sky, immediately after that, tremendously powerful shockwave and heat wave poured down.

With this, not only the apostles who aimed to destroy the Burst Hyperion, other apostles who were following behind and the apostles who just came out from the crack in the space were also blown away altogether like leaves. Not only that, but the enormous dust cloud which was approaching the fortress due to the God Mountain's collapse was also washed back.

Naturally that force also assaulted the fortress, but the force was barely blocked by the shining membrane that covered the whole fortress. It was thanks to the 'Great Barrier' that was relocated from the capital to here. The former great barrier would surely be unable to endure the annihilation grade artifact of Hajime, but the current great barrier that had been improved seemed to be able to endure if it was just the shockwave.

The Rose Helios that displayed sublime destruction which surpassed expectation actually made Hajime who was the creator himself to be the one who was sweating coldly the most but… the result was no harm reached his ally so it was alright.

"Uhaa, is has become something amazing isn't iit~"

“Hajime-kun who completely stopped restraining himself change even the topography isn’t he…”

“… If an example is made with earth terminology, then it’s like Everest got annihilated and nuclear bombs are fired wildly. When the fight is over, we have to make him have restraint with all of our strength.”

“… Either way, Shizushizu is going to have hardships. Suzu will also cooperate as much as possible okay. It feels like Suzu can hear the crying of earth from here.”

“This world is already teary eyed… When I reach the other side, I’m gonna punch Kouki flying right away. If I don’t fight him first… if Kouki get into a fight with Nagumo, not even a dust will remain from him.”

Shia and the others leaked out their impression. All of them threw their gaze at the beyond and their lips were half-smiling. They knew that Hajime planned to launch preemptive attacks at the start of the battle, they also knew that he would do that by using ‘meteor impact’ and ‘converged sunlight laser’, but never even in their wildest dream did they even imagined that the eight kilometer mountain would be annihilated and pseudo suns would materialize in the sky in multiple numbers even if only temporarily.

Furthermore, behind such Shia and the others…

“How’s that, Jii-sama! That is my honored spouse! Isn’t it amazing!”

“… aah, yep, I guess. That’s really super awesome.”

“Cl, Clan head. I understand your feeling, but your speech is… no, nothing, please pay it no heed.”

Tio puffed up her chest proudly while Adol was opening his eyes wide looking like the shocked expression that came out in a shoujo manga of a long time ago. A close aide made a tsukkomi at the clan head’s discomposed tone, but it seemed that he gave up in the middle. Ristas was extremely surprised that he was unable to stand up with his soul coming out from his mouth. (TN: Shoujo manga is

a manga for girl)

Below the fortress was also noisy. Especially the rabbit ear group, they were making a hectic uproar.

“Hyahha-!! As expected bosss! He does impossible things so calmly!”

“Come on you trash! We are gonna break all of you into pieces yeah!!”
“Aaaaaan, bosss! Please hold meeeeeee! It’s unbearableee!”

“Red Flash Rondo!! Banzai!!” (TN: Akaki Senkyou no Rinbukyoku)

“Mad Whirlwind of White Fang!! Yiihaaa!!” (TN: Shiroki Souga no Kyouhyou)

“No, the nickname until now is not enough anymore! … Something, something that is more worthy for boss…”

“How about Demon King of White Night that Bring About Demise!” (TN: Shuuen Motarasu Byakuya no Maou)

“No, about that Ultimate Supreme Emperor of Death and Chaos is better!” (TN: Shi to Konton no Kyokuhatei)

“Why there is no crimson in there! It’s Ultimate Destruction God of Deep Crimson Gleaming Sky!” (TN: Shinku Kouten no Kyokuhashin)

It seemed that when the battle was over Hajime nicknames would become jumbled all over.

Amidst such resounding yells, Aiko yelled with a voice that sounded somewhat cramped yet still powerful.

“Thi, this is, the strength of my sword! Victory is together with us!”

“ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ VICTORY! VICTORY! VICTORY! “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “

Following that, Gahard somehow pulled himself together and took command with a faint smile. His loud voice resounded all over to the degree that made one think whether he really needed any

artifact to amplify his voice.

“All hands, ready your weapon!! The target is above! Don’t let the goddess’s sword take all the glory! Exactly as the goddess said, every single one of us is a hero! Fight until the last moment! Destroy every single enemy! Proove the strength of us ‘humans’!”

“ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “OOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO-!!!“ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “

A tremendous yell was raised. At the same time, the soldiers aimed the heavy arms they were provided with each of their roles to the sky. Their morale was at the highest peak. There was nobody who was trembling in fear anymore; in exchange, their body was trembling with a warrior excitement.

Teeth were clenched tightly, light of determination shined inside those eyes.

At the sky, the apostles who barely avoided destruction arranged their formation, and then new apostles were overflowing further from the chasm in the space. Several hundred apostles were supposedly annihilated by the previous attack, but perhaps the apostle of god was in inexhaustible supply.

Therefore, exactly because of that from now on would be the authentic war between mankind and the pawn of god.

Looking at the state of the allied force, Aiko released a sigh that couldn’t be noticed.

“Sensei, that was a splendid speech. As expected from the goddess of harvest.”

“Nagumo-kun… I already, don’t understand what I should say.”

Aiko looked over her shoulder at the voice behind her while floating an exasperated smile. While shrugging to that, Hajime handed over the jewel to operate Burst Hyperion to Aiko.

It was the important jewel which brought about that large-scale destruction. Aiko accepted it timidly. From now on Burst Hyperion

would be operated by Aiko's hand as much as possible. The one who was the worthiest to handle the sunlight was exactly the 'Goddess of Harvest'.

After glancing at Aiko who was trembling with fear, Hajime turned his gaze at Kaori.

"Your face is an apostle, but the color of your hair looks like Kaori huh. Yeah, as expected, black hair suited Kaori more."

"Ehehe, is that so? Then we have to finish this quickly so I can return to my former body."

Exactly as Hajime said, the current Kaori wasn't silver haired but she became black haired even with Nointo's body.

This was so that she wasn't mistaken with the apostles, the cause was the disguise artifact that Hajime prepared. The color of her magic power was also disguised, so currently when Kaori spread her wings what appeared would black silver wings. Her outfit also had black tone, so her appearance was just like a fallen angel. Perhaps it could be said to be a fitting look for an angel serving the demon king.

"I'm relying on you for the rest okay?"

"Yep. This side is fine. I will protect the place for Hajime-kun to come back here. I also won't let anyone to lay their hand on Myuu-chan and others anymore. That's why… please, save Yue."

"Yeah. Look forward to it. When we come back, I'll toy with you together with Yue."

"Geez-, Hajime-kun you meanie-!"

Kaori made an angry look at Hajime who was making fun of her. But, her gaze was strong, and also extraordinarily gentle. And it was also similar with Hajime, both of them understood well the immenseness of the trust that they directed at each other.

Behind Hajime, Shia, Tio, Shizuku, Suzu, and Ryuutaro walked closer. While Kaori and Shizuku took each other's hands with

somewhat yuri-yuri atmosphere (TN: Lilies on their background), Hajime's gaze moved to the surroundings.

The people inside the fortress could observe the outer part really well while being inside the fortress itself due to the countless crystal displays installed. But right now, on the contrary, the displays were reflecting the interior of the fortress's command room and the people inside there like Liliana and the others, and then Kam and others who were the leaders of each force too.

"Princess. Use the anti-apostle artifact well okay. After all, I entrusted them believing in your competence you know?"

{Ple, please don't put pressure on me. Well, we are going to make it somehow. Nagumo-sa——no, Hajime-san, may luck be with you.}

Liliana at the other side of the display smiled while nodding at Hajime. Hajime nodded to that and then moved his gaze to Kam who was projected on the same display.

"Kam. There is no need for tedious talk after this far. … Go rampage."

{Ku-ku-ku-, an exciting order, thank you very much. I certainly acknowledge that. All of us Haulia will be waiting in anticipation for boss's god killing.}

Hajime and Kam exchanged fearless smiles at each other. And then, Hajime's gaze further moved to all the people who were visible in that place——Ranzi, Alfrerick, Iruwa, the top leaders from each country, then he lightly shrugged and declared.

"Then, I'll go for a bit."

Even though he was going to step into the territory of a god after this, those words were awfully light. But, mysterious strength could be felt from those words. It made them unconditionally believed, that if it was this man then he would be able to accomplish anything. It was that kind of words.

That was why nobody talked much. They nodded strongly in return and said just two words.

“ “ “See you.” “ “

Immediately after, Hajime and the others flew up together.

Under their feet were skyboards. They could also go using ‘Air Force’, but their destination——the chasm in space was at the altitude of eight kilometers. They had no intention to be pushed back by sheer number or spending more time. They were breaking through in one go stressing on the speed!

Looking at the six streaks of magic power light in six colors ascending to the sky, cheers were raised from the allied force. It was the sally of the ‘Goddess’s Sword”. The hope of humanity! Like that, yells of hope tore their throats toward the sky.

There, the first wave of apostles appeared as though to block their route. Perhaps because right after the invasion start the actual first wave had been annihilated by impossible methods, the apostles didn’t charge ahead recklessly. It was clear that they intended to fight while observing the situation.

“Hah, you all got really jittery, huuh. You think you can stop me with that kind of cold feet aa!?”

Already, there were around twenty apostles gathering ahead of them, regardless of the twin swords and their silver wings which were deployed fully, Hajime didn’t slow down at all. Far from that, he accelerated the skyboard further. And then, while telling Shia and others to ready their weapons using ‘Telepathy’, Hajime took out a huge artifact from ‘Treasure Warehouse II’ and shouldered it.

“I’ll turn you all into Swiss cheese!”

Immediately after, a crimson storm attacked the apostles.

The violence that could only be expressed like that pulverized the apostles blocking the path like a joke.

Of course, the apostles possessed disintegration ability, they had the silver wings of protection and huge swords that severed all thing with disintegration. Therefore, the apostles wordlessly and expressionlessly tried to resist using those. But, such things were

easily smashed literally just like paper scraps.

KIIIIIIIIIIIIIII-!!

Huge gun barrels that rotated in high speed while resounding particular sound. Brilliantly vivid magic power light sparked wildly. Extremely thick crimson flashes that might even pierce the sky surged.

——Gatling Pile Bunker

That was the true form of the weapon that scattered twenty apostles without difficulty. Different from the pile bunker until now, the loaded pile bunker was two sizes smaller. But, its might didn't decrease for even a bit, in a second twenty electromagnetically accelerated shots spiraled forward and the huge and super heavy black pike pulverized the target.

Right now, just by facing each other the apostles couldn't hope to stop Hajime's advance! Only by wringing out their intellect, piling up study, and resolve with a firm will like humans, they would be allowed to finally stand in front of this opponent for the first time. That was how wide the difference was!

The apostles who stiffened for a moment in amazement then decided, a pincer attack from left and right! Like that they circled while trailing afterimages behind.

"We cannot leave this only to Hajime-san!"

"Indeed!"

Shia and Tio readied themselves to deal with that.

But two apostles that brandished their large sword clad in silver magic power toward Shia and Tio. At the next moment, their heads were blown away by the flash that tore the sky before they were falling down spinning.

"Fue?"

"Wha, what?"

Shia and Tio stared in puzzlement with their spirit dampened. Not only the two, Hajime and the others also looked over their shoulder following the line of the flash. They had already reached the altitude of five kilometers so nobody understood other than Shia whose body was reinforced and Hajime who possessed ‘Far Sight’, those two perfectly saw it.

The fortress on the ground, at a corner of the rooftop, while holding a very long sniper that was fixed directly on the floor of the fortress, Pal-kun (ten years old), nickname ‘Bardfelt of Certain Ruin’ was sending them a thumbs up.

Not just Bardfelt-kun. The sniping experts even among the Haulia which was put together into a squad were readying the ‘Electromagnetic Acceleration Super Long Range Anti-Material Rifle’ that Hajime provided for each one of them while floating fearless smiles.

In the first place, these were the fellows who performed super accurate sniping even with just a crossbow. With scope that was enchanted with ‘Far Sight’ and ‘Foresight’, if they could see the future position of the apostles then a five-kilometer sniping was possible. Though honestly, Hajime was feeling a little unbelieving.

In Hajime and Shia’s eyes, they could see the glint of Bardfelt-kun’s eyes narrow across the scope. At the same time, they could somehow see what he was saying from the movement of his lips.

{Boss! Anego! Just leave clearing the path to us!} (TN: Anego = big sister, this way of calling usually used by delinquent or thug.)

Perhaps that was what he said. As though to proof that, the apostles who planned to pincer attack were shot through one after another by the flashes soaring from below.

As expected, one shot one kill was impossible after the apostle became on guard, but even so they ate considerable damage, they became unable to attack carelessly and somehow their face looked vexed.

Even if the apostles tried to use long range bombarding or large

scale magic, Bardfelt-kun and others sensitively sensed it and they prioritized sniping at the apostle trying to do that. Their attack was interrupted, and even if they tried to attack forcefully regardless, Hajime and others would easily endure such attack.

“My clan is rapidly getting superhumanized desuu…”

“Perhaps, it’s not only Shia anymore that can be called as special truly.”

“Everyone that got involved with Hajime all become distanced from normal humans, isn’t it…”

“He, hey, Shizushizu. Suzu is still a human, right? Right?”

“Perhaps it’s already too late for me yeah～”

While riding their skyboard, the enemy at the front was dealt by Hajime’s Gatling pile bunker, while the enemy to the left and right were dealt with a terrifying degree of accurate sniping, so Shia and the others who only needed to intercept, evade, and defend minimally had time to have somewhat distant looks while murmuring that kind of thing to each other.

While the apostles were unable to even hinder them properly; finally, Hajime and the others arrived at the chasm in space that spurted out the muddy black miasma.

“Chih, even though its appearance changed, the ability is still the same huh.”

Hajime clicked his tongue. Exactly as he said, similar with the golden whirl, the black miasma was blocking Hajime and the others’ progress.

“You guys, hold back the puppets behind! {Sensei, you can hear right? Send the mirror bits over here!}. Taniguchi, you put a barrier on me!”

{Ro, roger.}

“Go, got it.”

Hajime was giving out instruction to Aiko on the surface and Suzu, and also at the other members while taking out a short sword from his breast pocket.

Although the item had the shape of a short sword but it didn't have any edge at all, rather it was made from a crystal that looked brittle.

It was 'Degraded Version Crystal Key'. Based on his experience when creating the real crystal key, Hajime produced with his all this short sword that possessed the effect to interfere with space. It didn't have the power to open a gate toward the Holy Precincts, but if it was just the power to lockpick a locked door then this item could do it.

Hajime's body became clad in vivid crimson. And then he poured the immense magic power of 'Limit Break' into the degraded version crystal key that used the very small amount of god crystal's fragment discovered at the abyss of Orcus, activating its ability.

"This time for sure, I'll pass through no matter what!"

Hajime yelled and stabbed that short sword at the miasma wall.

Creak, creak Such a sound came out, the degraded crystal key in trying to break the wall of miasma causing ripples. Hajime's crimson magic power also roared trying to blow away the miasma.

But, there a silver shining large sword thrust out from inside the miasma. The large sword of apostle.

Even while Hajime held his ground to break the miasma, naturally the swarm of apostles was still coming out from there. Hajime himself was pouring all his strength to break the miasma so he couldn't take any considerable action.

{I won't let you!!}

"Don't get in the way!"

That was why Aiko and Suzu were there.

The mirror bits deployed around Hajime and others were guiding the laser from Burst Hyperion and blocked the approach of the apostles like a barrier.

And then Suzu also waved her iron fans gently on her skyboard. Living up to her reputation of barrier master, a square shining shield thirty-centimeters large was invoked instantly, the barrier didn't block the large sword of the apostle that slipped through the laser net, but diverted the trajectory as though the barrier surface was slippery. This was because Suzu understood that defending the enemy's disintegration ability from the front was disadvantageous.

Behind Hajime, Shia and others were also buying time by putting importance on handling the enemy rather than defeating them. Apostles were overflowing from the miasma as though they were unlimited, if the scene was seen from slightly distant spot, surely it would look like Hajime and the others were enveloped in silver cocoon.

The great numbers of apostles attacked clad in silver magic power to remove the insolent people who were trying to step into the Holy Precincts. Shia and the other somehow held out right now, but with the current pace they would surely get swallowed by pure numbers in less than a minute.

For that reason, Hajime ignored all the attacks of the apostles. He entrusted his back, his life, everything to Shia and the others. He turned his whole mind only to advance forward.

"OOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO-!!!"

A shout burst from Hajime's mouth. Hajime's magic power further increased. The degraded version crystal key condensed the vivid crimson and got dyed with deep crimson. At the same time, cracks ran creakingly as though the key was screaming unable to endure the large power.

The cracks on the degraded version crystal key was widening second by second as though giving the notification that its life span was up already. But, Hajime further poured his magic power. The apostles who were breaking through even with half their body

erased by laser launched silver feathers that disintegrated even Suzu's barrier, cutting Hajime's cheek and gouging his limbs.

Shia and the others were also bearing wounds from the overwhelming amount of attacks and their limited battle scope.

As expected, were they really unable to break through. Was the power of god unmatched…

If the people here were 'average', surely such thinking would pass in their mind. But, if they were people with such good understanding, then in the first place they wouldn't be here. That was why, they yelled. Even while injured, even with enemies surrounding them from all sides.

(En: Battle scene pictured above)

“We can do this! If it’s Hajime-san!”

“Exactly, Goshujin-sama!”

“It’s fine! There is no such thing that can possibly stop you!”

“Gooo! Nagumo-kun!”

“Nagumooo! Smash it uuup!”

To those yells of Shia and others, Hajime was…

“Obviously-. Those guys that got in my way, I’ll destroy them, anything and everythiiiiiiing!!”

Right after that…

creak A sound resounded.

But, that wasn’t the sound of the degraded crystal key. It was from the invisible wall before his eyes, from the crack in space that spurted out miasma. The tip of the degraded crystal key plunged into the wall. With that spot as the center, ripples were spreading.

——Yue-

Following his desiring heart, Hajime twisted the crystal short sword.

Then, with the stabbed point as the center, space distorted flabbily, opening an ellipse hole.

The path to the Holy Precincts was opened.

“-, you guys! Here we go!”

“Yes desu!”

“Yes!”

“Roger!”

“Yep!”

“Ou-!”

The command that was given along with Hajime’s fearless smile was affirmed by everyone with the same smile floating on their faces and a nod.

Right after that, the swarm of apostles descended on them.

But, the figure of Hajime and the others were already gone from between the apostles.

After that, there were only the sparkles emitted by the remain of the broken degraded crystal key and the gate that was closing even now.

Soooo… giant hole in the sky. Disposable look-alike CGI army. Battle through the streets of a city. A team of assembled superpowered heros. Sounds like a Hollywood Blockbuster to me.

Arifureta Chapter 164

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/165/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert is pushing to release faster, so he has taken over all editing. I don't have the time in my schedule to keep up, so my involvement for the moment is to just post bakapervert's chapters. No read over from me, no schedule. I'll release them as I get them until the end. On the upside, you won't be waiting long for the finale.

Holy Precincts

A world that was richly colored.

That was the scenery that lept into the eyes of Hajime and the others who stepped in into the Holy Precincts.

There was no end that could be confirmed. Various colors mixed in this space. It was as though they were lost inside a world within a bubble.

In that mysteriously colorful space, there was a chalk white path stretching straight forward. No, rather than calling it a path, it was like the top of a dam wall, it was more correct to express their location as 'above a huge straight wall'.

Hajime and the others were taken aback for a moment. Despite so, they stored the skyboard that became ragged from the apostles' attack into 'Treasure Warehouse II' and stood on the chalk white

path. They couldn't see any apostles even after looking around. It appeared the space that Hajime connected to using the degraded crystal key was a different place from the place that contained the apostles and monsters. They had resolved to clash with a great amount of apostles and monsters as far as their eye could see right after infiltrating, so this could be said as fortunate.

"What a mysterious space. I cannot grasp the sense of distance."

Shia gave her impression while peeking down from the edge of the path. Just as those words sounded, even as she peeked below, the ground or the bottom of the wall were unclearly being swallowed by the extremely colorful space. Even the path straight ahead, after a certain distance, became swallowed by the colorful space that made it hard to confirm the distance.

"I guess it won't end well if you fall down huh. Everyone, be careful okay."

Everyone nodded briskly at Hajime's warning. Like that they all began to run following after Hajime while staying vigilant of the surrounding.

They were traveling at high speed following the chalk white path in the atmosphere that was filled with uneasy silence. The 'Compass of Guidance' showed that Yue's whereabouts was ahead of the chalk white path. Therefore they dashed believing on that, although there was not a single thing they could use to confirm the distance so they became doubtful whether they were really advancing forward.

If not for the compass that was teaching Hajime that the distance to Yue was closing even for just a little, perhaps even he would also feel doubt.

They advanced the path for several dozen minutes where no end could be seen with few words.

Finally, a change happened.

"It's coming-. Bombardment!"

Shia's rabbit ears stood up straight all of a sudden, at the same time

she gave a warning. Regardless of their vigilance, everyone other than Shia was completely taken by surprise. It was the proof that Shia's 'Future Sight' was activated, at the same time it also meant that the attack was a risky one that could possibly wipe them out.

Right after that, without any advance warning, silver radiant flashes attacked Hajime and the others from all directions. It was a meteor shower of death without a single gap, conveying clearly how no place of escape was left behind.

"Gather!"

Hajime's angry roar flew. Everyone reflexively approached Hajime's side. At the same time, Hajime took out a huge shield from 'Treasure Warehouse II'. And then that shield which was manifested in empty air pierced the ground while magic power was poured into it.

As the result, *Gashun! Gashun!* such sound was raised, metal plates were sliding from the inside of the large shield in great speed. In the blink of eye the plates formed a dome that covered Hajime and the others. Metal plates that looked like scales stretched, it was variable large shield 'Aidion'.

The moment the last metal plate slid into place and Hajime and co were completely covered, the flashes from all directions finally arrived. There was almost no impact. The attack was like a laser, the surface of Aidion was turning into dust. Obviously, the cause was the disintegration ability of the apostles.

But such thing was obvious the moment there was silver light. For that reason, Hajime chose the option of omni-direction defense with this Aidion.

"Hah, just try it if you think you can penetrate this."

Hajime whispered while smiling fearlessly inside Aidion where there was the illumination of green light stone installed. That was the expression of his confidence. An absolute confidence that the likes of the apostle wouldn't be able to penetrate his improved defense.

In front of the brutal characteristic ability of the apostles which was like a foul play, those words were something too insolent.

Normally.

Yes, even while Hajime was spouting out those insolent words, Aidion was completely blocking the disintegration bombardment. No, more accurately the shield's part that was disintegrated was regenerating. It went without saying that the cause was regeneration magic. 'Restoration Stone' that was enchanted with regeneration magic was continuously regenerating the part of Aidion that was turned to dust as though time was rolled back.

Of course, the disintegration ability of the apostles was at the level where a building would become dust in an instant, so no matter how much regeneration magic was enchanted the outcome would be that the item got blown away before it could show any effect.

However, this Aidion was similar with 'Sky Severance' where it was a composite shield made of several layers of adamantium inserted with restoration stone, furthermore, Hajime's 'Vajra' was also reinforcing it. In other words, even with one layer disintegrated, if the second, third, and fourth layer could buy time even for a second then the restoration stone could display its effect. Therefore, even with that disintegration ability, the apostles couldn't hope to penetrate it.

"You guys, save your strength for the time being. If it's just this many apostles then I'll deal with them."

"Eh? Deal with them…"

Shizuku was putting strength into the hand holding the black katana in the preparation of battle against apostle swarm once more, but Hajime's words resounded as though to dampen her spirit. Shizuku reflexively asked back, but inside the large shield that was illuminated faintly by green light stone, looking at Hajime's expression that supported the large shield——that look which looked like a wild beast made her words got caught up in her throat.

Right after that, the pressure that pushed on Aidion suddenly vanished. The all-out bombardment of the apostles was over.

Hajime transferred Aidion into 'Treasure Warehouse II', right after that the apostles showed their figure as though they were oozing out from the colorful space while making ripples. All of the apostles were clad in silver magic power, showing their seriousness right from the beginning. They sent narrowed gaze at Hajime who endured their all-out bombardment, in an instant…

——A curb stomp began.

DOPAAAAAAN-, at the same time when the familiar bursting sound roared, six apostles' head easily exploded like a joke.

"-!?"

It was a swift defeat unbecoming for god's apostle.

The apostles who lost six of their sister right at the moment when they made their entrance gulped audibly. The crimson flash that gouged the apostles' head certainly attacked faster than the gun sound, but it should be possible to evade if it was the apostle in full power state clad in silver light.

The cause that negated the apostles' evasion ability could be understood from the fact that all the six victims were all the people who blinked in that instant.

Hajime was taking the opening of the apostles' mind. The number of the apostles who appeared from the space was nearly fifty people. Hajime confirmed all of them instantly and aimed simultaneously only at the blinking apostles with pinpoint precision…

Hajime had survived many battles against the apostles, that was the reason this special move with difficulty level that was like threading the eye of a needle was working. There was no way the apostles could understand what happened.

Because of that, they were unable to understand the reason why their sisters were shot without being unable to do anything, this too

caused their head to be soaked in confusion for an instant.

DOPAAAN

With that four more people died. Their head exploded and fell on the ground like an insect with their wings clipped.

“Kuh, three people are to chant-. The rest continue on!”

One of the apostles gave out instruction while grinding her teeth with the usual expressionless face crumbling. It appeared that she was the manager who handed down the command even among the apostles. The remaining apostles obeyed the instruction and moved all at once.

The apostle that gave instruction——Zekst swung her twin large swords once and then took flight instantly with her silver wings flapped. She charged at Hajime while leaving behind afterimages.

But, to such apostle, the small murmur of Hajime reached her clearly.

“…Hee, so you are the captain.”

“____”

Amidst a large number of apostles flying around with countless afterimages filling the space to the limit, Hajime’s eye glint accurately caught Zekst’s figure.

And then, Hajime and Zekst’s gaze entangled inside the world where the rich colors looked fading and dull, right after that, slowly, and even slower inside Zekst’s mind, Hajime’s mouth…split.

At that moment, Zekst realized. This world where the flow of time became slow right now, wasn’t something produced because of her great speed, but it was the phenomenon of revolving lantern that someone watched at their dying moments. The reason of her realization was because, even while she was getting aware of the slowly approaching bullet clad in crimson toward her in the real world, the images of the many secret maneuverings ‘the apostle of god’ had carried out until now in all countries toward the people

were also passing through her mind.

All apostles shared their memory with each other. Even if it wasn't something that Zekst personally did, but something that 'apostle' did was something that Zekst did. …Zekst thought. Were the apostles who were destroyed before she also saw the same scene like this? The scene, of the people who they had been toying with until now, were now looking down at them mockingly.

Zekst's body was accurately moving even while watching the revolving lantern. Her neck moved by itself trying to evade the flying bullet by twisting aside. But, mysteriously even with that Zekst was convinced that the approaching bullet would still pierce her.

And then, that conviction was proved right within an instant. The moment Zekst twisted her neck, of all thing, the bullet before her eyes shifted its trajectory slightly. Its path was accurately heading to Zekst's temple.

'Aa, really, what an irregular…'

After murmuring such thing inside her heart, in the end Zekst felt an impact, along with that her consciousness fell into darkness.

At the same time when Zekst fell, further seven apostles also fell on the ground with their head similarly blown away.

Hajime glanced at that scene while rotating Donner & Schlag in gun spin, then he scattered more bullets of death to all directions.

Although because Hajime's arms rotation and the reloading speed were too fast, an outsider looking would only be able to see acrobatic gun spins repeating all the time. The realization of Hajime's killing intent was displayed only by the fact that the scattered crimson flashes were shooting through the foreheads of the apostles without the slightest deviation.

"Wh, why-"

Unable to endure, one of the apostles who wasn't shot down yet spoke with rough voice and words that could be taken as a question

or escaping reality.

It was natural for her to be like that. They were the ‘apostle of god’. The sword of god that the likes of mankind had no hope to oppose. They were an existence that could trample the world equally like a natural disaster with just a single one of them! And yet, why, how they could be easily exterminated like this, dropping out just like flies…. Impossible. There was no way this kind of unrealistic sight could exist!

Right after that, a flash flew toward that apostle.

With an unknown emotion welling up inside her, that apostle drew a slash at the air trying to bisect that light with her shining large sword. The information that Hajime’s bullet which generated impact could crack their large sword with one attack in the previous battle was naturally also shared with this apostle, therefore she decided not to ‘make her large sword into shield’ but to ‘cut down the bullet’.

Like that, the beautiful silver trajectory split the crimson flash…was how it should be.

Instead, the result that came out was the explosion of the apostle’s head. Just before the apostle’s mind sunk into darkness, she whispered inside her stretched out perception.

‘The light…slip through?……’

It wasn’t unreasonable for her to have that misapprehension.

——Combined Metamorphosis-Creation Transmutation　Special Bullet　Living Bullet

That was the true form of the attack that slipped through the apostles’ evasion and large swords.

This ‘Living Bullet’ was a special bullet enchanted with metamorphosis magic, the simple explanation was that the bullet could listen to the command of the user——it was literally a living bullet.

Hajime developed this bullet after understanding that the sealing stone and the pseudo scorpion in the abyss were created by blending organic matter and inorganic matter, so simply put the bullet was a living golem in bullet shape that executed a simple order.

This time the command that Hajime gave was just one. 'Hit the aimed place', that was all. It was a small bullet, so even though they listened to order but they had no ego. So to speak it was like a program. Evade if there was an obstacle in front of the target, chase if the target moved. That was all they could do. The bullet couldn't make U-turn if they passed the target and chased endlessly, it was also unable to circle around if a wall was made with silver wings to shot the apostle at the back of their head.

But, even so, the electromagnetically accelerated flash that reached the target within an instant corrected its trajectory just a few meters before it reached the target. No matter how unfair the perception ability and reaction speed the apostle had, there was no way they could evade or anything.

If the apostle tried to cut the bullet using their large sword but the bullet changed trajectory smoothly, it wasn't unreasonable for the apostle to mistake that the bullet 'slipped through'.

"Before, you guys said this right. That 'the analysis about you is finished'. Just what time are you talking about I wonder. By the time you failed to kill me for the second time, the scythe of death god has already lined up on the neck of you guys."

The gun spin moved at too high of rotation speed that it looked like a round shield. Hajime's figure that moved with sliding feet turning over and over while firing flashes in radial direction looked like he was dancing.

And then as long as that dance of death was continuing, one by one the apostles had their forehead pierced, their head exploded, and fell like a puppet with their string cut.

If they tried using their large sword as a shield, then an attack with three impacts compressed into it would assault and with just a

single shot, a fatal damage would be inflicted on the large sword, in a hairbreadth the second shot would pierce the forehead altogether with the sword. Even when they tried long range attack or magic, their breathing at the instant they were going to attack was perfectly read, so they were only exposing their opening instead, but if they attempted close range combat then they would be intercepted by a bullet with bending trajectory.

When they attempted to overlap their twin large swords and silver wings as a shield to charge through, six shots would burst with pin point accuracy at the same time, the tremendous shockwave was generated while smashing the iron wall, or possibly the apostle would run out of strength and got blown away. And then, that impact would spontaneously make them relaxed the guard of their large sword and wing, the curving bullet would attack weaving through that opening.

“While I was thinking of the ways to kill you guys, what were you guys doing? Did you analyze my fighting style? Hah, that won’t cut it at all. You got to train yourself, change your weapon, polish your tactic, heighten your proficiency, put double and triple layer of traps, and mass produce trump cards.”

The apostles’ worn-out remain vanished from the sky toward the ground like a cookie’s crumbling that spilled from a mouth.

“Shut up-“

Right after that, along with an angry voice that sounded like it was desperately repressing something that welled up inside the speaker, a silver sun materialized. The sun that brilliantly shined was something made from focused magic power of apostle enchanted with disintegration ability. Looking closer, under the silver sun there were three apostles raising their large sword piled into one. Most likely this was a large bombardment executed by multiple apostles.

Looking at that, Hajime was…snorting in exasperation.

“Is that your trump card! Fine, bring it on.”

“-…Vanish without any trace behind! Irregular!”

The three apostles swung down their sword in unison. The silver sun that was a compression of energy until the critical state radiated its light of ruin just like prominence. A super thick laser with diameter reaching ten meters approached Hajime in order to make everything of him into dust.

From ‘Treasure Warehouse II’, Hajime too out two pieces of disk——he took out two chakrams and threw them forward. One of the chakrams rotated in the air, when its flat part faced the approaching thick bombardment, at the next moment it divided into three parts.

The chakram was divided into three parts with equal distance between them, however, they didn’t scatter into pieces, the parts were connected by thin wire, the parts spread widely in an instant and created large circle before Hajime’s eyes.

At that moment, the silver huge laser reached Hajime…not, it was completely swallowed into the circle made by the divided chakram and the wire. And then, that swallowed silver light jumped out from the other chakram that also parted and created a similar large circle at a slightly separated place.

——Variable Chakram　Orestes

The chakram up to now could only create a gate at the small inside of the chakram, but this new type chakram ‘Orestes’ that had improvement applied in it could separate and with the built-in wire inside, a gate that could be freely changed in size would be made. Depending on the situation, it could also be used as a guillotine by making something passed halfway into the gate and then decreasing the size.

The apostles never even dreamed that the focused bombardment by three apostles which could be said as a trump card would be returned back to them as it was, perhaps they were unable to move while performing the firing, their reaction was dull and they got swallowed into the light that they fired themselves, they were annihilated literally without leaving even dust behind.

“You guys don’t evolve. You cannot struggle to the death for the sake of living, for the sake of your wish, for the sake of what’s ‘important’. That’s why, I told you right from the beginning didn’t I? You all just wooden doll.”

“Irregular! No, you are truly, a true monste——”

A gunshot echoed. The bullet that curved in trajectory approached easily like a joke and pierced the forehead of the last apostle.

While silver feathers and apostle remains were falling like an illusion, Hajime spun the smoking Donner & Schlag and finished reloading, then he silently stored them in their holsters.

Looking at the result, he was uninjured from a fight against the fifty apostles of god. Completely. It was truly overwhelming.

That fact made Shia, Tio, and Shizuku’s expression to turn a bit into ecstasy. Suzu and Ryutaro leaked out a dry laugh.

‘Meteor Impact’ that destroyed the God Mountain, sunlight convergence laser ‘Burst Hyperion’, gatling pile bunker and living bullet…when Hajime was given time, that many absurd weapons were produced one after another.

What did it mean by a non-combat job. What did it mean by mundane occupation. Indeed Hajime’s body itself boasted monstrous spec due to an irregular event, but Hajime’s true weapon was no other than that power of development. And then, in every age what became a threat to humanity was always ‘something’ that was newly created. In a sense, perhaps it could be said that Hajime was in possession of the most terrifying talent.

While it had been too late at this point of time, whether they wanted it or not Shizuku and the others were made to understand that.

“It’s going to be troublesome if they come in succession. Let’s go ahead right away.”

Hearing Hajime who started running while giving out the order as though nothing happened, Shizuku and the others came back to

their senses and chased behind him.

“Aaa. I wanted to show Hajime-san just now to Yue-san desuuu”

“Fufu, I thought that there might be this kind of thing. So I bring the image recording artifact. When everything is over, let art we hold a video appreciation meeting!”

“Tio-san, nice desu! As expected from the extraordinary pervert that might even leave her name in the history!”

“Fuhahaha, don’t praise me, don’t praise me! I would become shy thou know?”

Shia and Tio laughed with each other in composure while being inside the enemy base that was the Holy Precincts. Their feeling was loosening up with that while they dashed forward for a while.

Hajime and the others finally ran into a richly colored wall. When his hand touched the rippling wall, the hand easily sunk into the other side. They nodded at each other and the whole group leaped into the other side of the ripple.

If Nakamura Eri was asked what was her first memory that was the most intense, surely she would answer like this.

——The scene of Otou-san’s death.

It was when Eri was five years old. She went with her father to a public park with just the two of them, there the high-spirited Eri jumped on the roadway carelessly and with a devilish timing a car came charging forward, then her father died protecting Eri. In a sense, it was the result of a mundane traffic accident.

But, there was one result that wasn’t mundane. That was the state of her mother after that. Eri’s mother was a daughter from a slightly high-class family, but it seemed that she went against her family and married with Eri’s father, she was clinging all over the father to the degree that even Eri’s childish heart got embarrassed.

That wasn’t only because the mother merely loved the father, if someone took a step back and looked at it closer, perhaps it was on

the level that could be said as dependence. For that reason, Eri's mother that from the start wasn't mentally strong was unable to endure the death of the beloved husband that supported her heart.

Because she was unable to endure, she bared her fang to the cause of death. Yes, her target was her own young daughter——Eri. Normally, a mother would swallow her tears while supporting her daughter who should be hurt because she witnessed with her own eyes the death of her father, that would be the correct way of living as a mother. But, as expected, although Eri's mother held back in front of other people, when they returned home and there were only the two of them, she would direct her hatred at Eri without sugarcoating it at all.

For Eri's mother, if her daughter and her husband were weighed on the scales, the scale would tilt to the latter, she loved her daughter was also only because Eri was her husband's daughter.

At the time, the five years old Eri earnestly endured the violence that was carried out almost every day and the abusive language spewed out to her. That was because Eri who was smart for five years old was completely accepting the words of her mother that said "because of your fault" to her. Her carelessness killed her father——the one who believed that more than anyone else was no other than Eri herself.

It was only natural for her mother to be angry at her who stole the father that her mother loved. It was only natural that she who made her father died was given punishment to both her heart and body. Eri believed that from the bottom of her heart.

At the same time, Eri also believed that when this punishment was over, than her mother who looked like a demon would return to the gentle mother in the past who always smiled kindly.

Her mother's abuse was ingenious, she had never done anything that might leave any mark on Eri's body. Eri too had also never revealed anything for the sake of her mother, and also for the sake of the punishment to her. Because of that, such situation continued for a few years, but there was no one that could notice what happened.

However, for a child there was no way she would be able to always be smiling in such environment. As a child clad in gloomy atmosphere Eri practically didn't have any friend at school. Her lone quiet self that looked like someone bracing herself waiting for the storm to pass was surely eerie for the children of the same age.

Isolation and self-condemnation and the pain of her heart, her feeling that was thinking of her mother, and loneliness…Eri's heart was nearing its limit from all those. Like that she endured such situation for several years, but in a sense it also could be said as astounding how she endured that long.

A change happened at such gloomy days.

Nine years old——when she was in third-year elementary school. Her mother brought home an unknown male into their home. He was an adult male with an arrogant attitude and bad character. Her mother was making sickly-sweet coaxing voice at that man while clinging coquettishly all over him.

Eri couldn't believe it. Didn't her mother throw that much anger and hatred to herself exactly because she loved the father from the bottom of her heart, Eri thought.

That thinking wasn't mistaken. But, the heart of Eri's mother was far weaker than even Eri thought. To the degree that if she wasn't supported by someone, then she wouldn't be able to live properly.

From that day, Eri's house was lived by that man.

The way the man acted in the house was exactly like a typical trash that often came out in a cheap novel. And then in addition, as though to follow the clichéd story of such novel, the gaze of that man toward Eri wasn't something that was usually directed to a little girl.

The disgusting feeling that felt like it was crawling all over her body caused Eri to pass her time inside the house holding her breath even more than before. Even so, the act and speech of the man were gradually escalating, before long Eri called herself with 'boku' (TN: This way of calling oneself was usually used by a boy, a

girl usually used ‘watashi’) and she kept her hair in rough short-cut style. That was the meager measure of the small Eri to defend herself from the thinking that ‘if he is not seeing me as a girl then’.

At school, Eri who even at normal time was already seen as gloomy and somewhat eerie, one day she suddenly changed the way she called herself and came with short hair like a boy, that caused the few children who even though they weren’t her friend but they still conversed daily with Eri, even those children distanced themselves from Eri. Eri became isolated further and further.

Even so, even if she felt that her mother betrayed her father, Eri still believed. That her mother would surely return to the gentle mother in the past. She pretended to not notice that such thinking was only a type of escape that averted her eyes from reality.

That hope of Eri that was like grasping at straw, was destroyed by an event that made her realize that the hope was really just a fragile straw. Finally the man bared his fang of desire at Eri. It was while Eri’s mother was going out for her night work.

Fortunately, though it was unclear if it could really be called fortunate, the neighbors who heard Eri’s scream notified the police, thanks to that Eri’s chastity wasn’t scattered. Eri herself was thinking that perhaps this kind of day would come, so she had prepared every day by opening the window so her scream could easily reach, that was also the reason she was saved.

And so being attacked wasn’t something shocking for Eri. Rather, she even thought that it was a chance. With this her mother should finally open her eyes. Her mother would cut the connection with a man that attacked her own daughter and she would remember Eri’s father. In any case, the man was caught by police, so their connection was severed. With this the livelihood of Eri and her mother would be improved slightly, she thought.

Yes, she thought like that.

Only until her mother directed a hatred that was even more than until now to her.

After finishing with the questioning from the police and she returned together with Eri back to their home, what came flying the very first to Eri was the mother's slap. And then, the mother said this to Eri. "How dare you seduce that person."

It seemed, for her mother, the incident where Eri was attacked by the man wasn't an impetus for her to realize the trashiness of the man, but it was perceived by the mother as Eri stealing her mother's man once more. Rather than about her daughter receiving assault, the matter of how the man was separated from her and how the man's desire was directed at Eri were the matters that the mother couldn't stomach.

A mother that betrayed her father, a mother that hurt her, a mother that was sad because the man was gone rather than about her daughter got assaulted…at this time, Eri finally realized. No, perhaps it should be said that she finally looked straight at something that she had actually understood but she averted her eyes from.

That was, that her mother didn't love her. That her mother of the past wouldn't return anymore. That the real nature of her mother wasn't the gentle figure in the past, but the figure overflowing with ugliness in front of her eyes right now.

She realized those.

That was why——Eri broke.

Everything that she believed was an illusion. Her enduring was meaningless. And then, there was no hope for the future ahead. Those factors were far than enough to break the very young Eri.

When she woke up the next day not from her sleep but rather from her fainting, it was early morning when the sun still hadn't even risen, there Eri slipped out from the home. This wasn't an act of testing affection that children tended to do, to see if her mother would worry and came to search for her. It was for the sake of ending herself——in other words, for suicide.

She got out of the home was because she didn't want to die near her

mother for some reason.

Like that, Eri wandered unsteadily without any particular destination, and what she discovered was a river. A large river at a place slightly distanced from home. The well-maintained river plain became a good place for children to play. With this Eri who stared vacantly at the river flowing below from the iron bridge spanning above got a thought, let's do it here.

It was a river with quite the amount of water, but the flow wasn't particularly fast, and it wasn't like the water level rose due to rain. For suicide by drowning, this place could honestly be said as unsuited. Rather than drowning, there was more danger from jumping down from the bridge and landed wrongly. Although even that risk would be lessened by the river water and wouldn't cause death in many cases.

Eri's body somehow climbed up with her thin arms, her upper body jutted out a lot outside the handrail. Like that as though being sucked in, Eri's body was almost falling toward under the bridge… exactly at that time, suddenly a voice called at her.

——What are you doing? The voice said.

What entered into Eri's vacant eyes that looked back was a young boy around the same age of her, he was wearing a jersey and was obviously jogging. Eri also knew well about this boy, he was someone at the same school with her who gathered all the popularity into himself, a shining bright boy——yes, it was Amanogawa Kouki.

Seeing the dark expression of the looking back Eri, Kouki guessed that she wasn't in a normal state of mind, he pulled back Eri forcefully from the handrail and displayed his sense of justice in full.

To Kouki who persistently asked her situation, Eri explained with a lot of things omitted. She did that because if she didn't then it didn't seem like Kouki would let her go. Kouki who listened to the really shortened explanation of Eri then comprehended it like this.

Eri who was isolated in school was disciplined strictly by her father because of that. When she asked for help from her mother, even her mother than scolded her together with her father. Eri didn't have any ally and feeling sad, she tried to suicide.

That conclusion couldn't be said as mistaken from hearing only that fragmentary information. For Kouki who was still immature and fiercely under the impression that human nature was fundamentally good as his thinking foundation, thing like the principle behind the act of Eri's mother was beyond his understanding, he was unable to even imagine that an adult male would make a girl the same age as him into the man's outlet for desire, furthermore, the mother would instead blame her daughter for that. And so, the conclusion became like that within Kouki's sphere of understanding.

Understanding it like that, with a smile and strength that made the girls in school into his captive even in that age, Kouki put his hands on Eri's cheeks while declared from point-blank range.

——You are not alone anymore. I will protect Eri.

He said that. The word 'protect' was told to her, into the heart of a broken girl, right after she comprehended that she was worthless for everyone. It was said so surely without a doubt. From the most famous boy in the school that was like a prince, in a situation that could be said as dramatic in a sense, that kind of thing was said to Eri.

In the bottom of her heart, for the little girl who had been continuously searching for affection from someone all this time, that word was extremely intense.

Furthermore, at that day, Eri who somehow given up suicide was driven out by her mother to go to school, there at the school she was surprised because the girls in the class came to talk to her brightly one after another, furthermore when she knew that this situation was because of a word from Kaori…to say it frankly, her heart fell to him right there.

After that, the staffs of child consultation center suspected mistreatment from the behavior of Eri's mother and they visited to

investigate several times. However, even though she was young, she knew that if she was separated from her mother here then at the same time she had to move to another place, in other words, she would be separated from Kouki, Eri who sensed that then acted a 'girl who loved her mother' with all her might.

She felt like she was going to vomit, but in front of the staffs she embraced her mother with a full smile and acted the scene of a close mother and daughter. Even now Eri still remembered the expression of her mother at that time. Her expression that changed from shock into a cramped face, and then it vividly changed into definite fear.

Looking at her mother like that, what Eri thought was, "Aah, so it's like that." Just by changing the method, something like position or emotion could be overturned easily. Just by her smiling cheerfully as though her gloominess until now was just a lie, her mother immediately averted her eyes and shut up. When later she whispered "Next, what do you want me to steal?" jokingly, her mother went pale and she screamed while rushing out from the home.

Eri was convinced, that all of these were thanks to Kouki——the prince who suddenly appeared and swore to protect her. That in that day her prince saved and changed her. That she was reborn due to Kouki. That was why, her life from now on would be together with him who was like a radiant light and she would live similarly within the light.

She indirectly threatened her mother, and then she induced so her mother only delivered the living cost to the home, she arranged the environment so she could be at Kouki's side…she was convinced that she was someone special that was chosen by the prince…

But, Eri was in a misunderstanding. For Kouki, Eri was nothing more than one person who should be saved by the hero of justice. After calling out to his classmates and asked them to be friendly to the isolated Eri, Kouki's rescue was over with that. Similar with how in anime the people that were saved by the hero didn't come out anymore at all in the next episode, for Kouki the matter of Eri was 'a story that was already over'.

That was why Eri thought strangely of Kouki who only came in contact with her as though she was the same like ‘that other crowd’, why the other girls were unable to understand that she was Kouki’s ‘special one’ for some reason. ‘Because, that spot is the spot where I belong right?’ she wondered.

Due to that, Eri who was unable to approach Kouki in mind and body and could do nothing else except continuing to stare at Kouki began to notice various things.

The girls in the class who talked to her intimately did that only ‘because that was Kouki’s request’.

That at Kouki’s side, there was already ‘special one’ who accompanied him from even far earlier than the time when they exchanged words at the bridge in the early morning, that there was no place for her to belong or anything there.

That For Kouki, she was a someone whose story with him was already over.

The moment she realized that, it was as though she was going mad, no, she was literally going mad while thinking about the same thing continuously every day.

——You said that I’m not alone anymore right?

——You said that you will protect me right?

——I am special for you right?

——Heey, why, are you saying the same words to another person I wonder?

——Heey, why, are you not looking at just me I wonder?

——Heey, why, right now, you are not rescuing me even though I’m in this much pain I wonder?

——Heey, why, are you showing that kind of face to another woman I wonder?

——Heey, why, are the eyes you are looking me with is the same like with ‘that other crowd’ I wonder?

——Heey, heey, heey,

“I see…. You’re right. I also feel the same. We have to quickly release Shizuku, Kaori, and Ryutaro, also our classmates from the brainwashing. Nagumo too, he is unmistakably a classmate but… that guy has done too much evil. Even if I have to turn my heart into a demon, I have to defeat that guy. Even if I have to bear the stigma as a classmate killer, but I have to save everyone, isn’t that right?”

“It’s going to be okay you knooow, Kouki-kun. Because I’m right at your side seee? I will help you every time. It is me, only me, that will be Kouki’s ally no matter what happened you knooow?”

“Eri…thank you. I can become strong like this, how I can fight that guy too, everything is thanks to Eri. Eri is my…”

“My? My what I wondeeer?”

Eri whispered into Kouki’s ear and deliberately pressing him to speak out the obvious answer. Against that, Kouki’s cheeks reddened slightly yet his words were firm.

“You are my…’special one’. No matter what happened, ‘I won’t let you be alone’ from here on. ‘I will protect Eri’.”

“Fuh, fufu, kuh, fuufufu…”

“Eri? ——Nmu-“

Eri who leaked out a chuckle from being unable to endure it caused Kouki to look across his shoulder with a worried gaze at her. While showing an expression of ecstasy, Eri piled up her lips on Kouki’s lips. And then, their lips separated with a silver string stretched between them. While staring back at Kouki’s eyes that looked empty somehow, Eri murmured smilingly.

“Yes, it’s fine like this. Kouki-kun, we are going to be together forever aren’t weee”

Dry wind blew.

——in the world where there is nooo one other than the two of us

The last words whispered inside Eri’s heart didn’t enter Kouki’s heart. In exchange of that, from a slightly distance place there was a sound echoing. Kouki’s expression warped into an ugly look. His eyes contained flame of hatred.

It was the footsteps of the hated enemy, and his childhood friends.

Arifureta Chapter 165

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/166/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. He also did the edits.

At the Ruined City

“It looks like a city at the end of the century right from the movie…”

“Yeah really. I’ve seen this kind of scene at Bio –zard or something…”

Suzu and Ryutaro whispered those kinds of things while making crunching sounds with their steps. They ran their gaze at the surrounding alertly, but bewilderment was running on their face.

“Wait, Ryutaro. Stop that already. What are you going to do if zombie really comes out here.”

Shizuku replied with a repulsed face. And then, with her expression looked similarly bewildered, she ran her gaze at the surrounding. The scenery of a devastated city was spreading in the eyes of Shizuku and others.

When they came out from the rich colored space, they arrived at a modern city that looked nearly similar with earth with its maintained street and high-rise buildings crowding together. However, just like what Suzu and Ryutaro said, it was as though

several hundred, or maybe even several thousand years had passed, everywhere they looked there were only decaying ruins.

There were buildings that looked like they could crumble anytime, there were also buildings that were barely standing by leaning on the neighboring building. All the spot that seemed to have glass attached had been smashed thoroughly, with the remains scattered everywhere. On the ground, there was rough and hard material like asphalt blanketing the ground, but there were countless cracks and undulations and also caved-in spots.

From how the faintly remaining words on the signboard scattered everywhere on the building wall or ground weren't earth letter, and how they couldn't find any traffic light at all on the street, furthermore from how the material of the building wasn't reinforced concrete, they could barely grasped that this wasn't a city of earth.

"Perhaps, in the past this city was crushed and then it was brought here whole. Something like taking a memento of what he crushed seemed like something that shitty bastard would do. There is also the trace of construction technique using magic that is completely impossible for the current earth applied here, it's like someone that thoroughly built a complicated card tower before smashing it."

"…There art a limit even for having a bad taste."

"This is the worst…"

Even on earth, there was a lot of romance stories about ancient cities that didn't remain in literature, cities that were excelling in technology even more advanced than the modern time or the like. Even this world might be a country that developed using magic in place of science until near the level of the modern earth.

And then, what was built up by those people was unmistakably trampled down by that Ehito Rujue while laughing. The figure of Ehito Rujue laughing loudly floated in their mind, turning their face into fierce loathing.

Although the city was devastated that it looked tragic just from

looking, the townscape that looked similar to the modern city of earth made Hajime and others be somewhat nostalgic, they also felt that they were shown what would happen if Ehito was let free in the earth, causing them to tense their mind even further.

Before long, by the time they passed who knows how many intersections following the compass, a clock tower that looked just like London's Big Ben entered their sight from between the gaps of buildings. It appeared that clock tower was the entrance to go to the next area.

Hajime stored the compass in his breast pocket while taking the path that was heading toward the clock tower through a huge intersection.

But, right after that, his eyes quietly narrowed and his foot that was about to step forward returned back. Looking at his dangerous gaze, even the members other than Shia guessed that there was enemy and readied themselves. Only Shia seemed to be the one who had determined the location of the enemy, her gaze fixed for a moment on a part of the surrounding buildings before moving to another location continuously. There seemed to be something ahead of her gaze.

"Hajime-san. We are surrounded, what are we going to do?"

Shia was tapping Vire Doryukken on her shoulder while asking.

Toward that, Hajime's answer was…

"Hm? Of course, if there is a prey that enters the cage, then pulverizing it all together with the cage is common sense right? Everyone, prepare to jump."

" " "Eh?" " "

In front of Shizuku, Suzu, and Ryutaro who raised befuddled voice from being taken aback again, Hajime took out large type weapon from 'Treasure Warehouse II'. It had a huge cross shape, at one of its side there were three protruding objects that looked like a wing attached.

——New Rocket & Missile Launcher Agni Orkan

There were two of them. The figure of Hajime holding two three-meter crosses attached with wings in both arms had the impressiveness as though he was clad with a reinforced exoskeleton.

“Now then. First of all, it’s troublesome so let’s blow up all of these thoroughly.”

Hajime who fixed himself in place with Agni-Orkan at both his sides was showing a demonic grin while pulling the triggers without hesitation. The inside of the surrounding buildings became noisy, but it was already too late.

pshuu pshuu pshuu With such sound the small metal plate on the surface of the wings slide, inside it, there were countless pencil missiles loaded up, those missiles flew out all at once.

Their number had already surpassed three hundred. The swarm of pencil missiles was trailing orange fire line while slipping smoothly through the door and window of the ruined buildings as though understanding that the enemies were there.

Furthermore, *bashuuuuu* with that kind of gentle sound, sixty large missiles were scattered from the six muzzles at the tip of the cross to the center of the ruined city, all within a few seconds, they scattered to all directions in order to trample their respective target.

Right after that, gruesome explosion sound and tremendous shockwave – flame explosion trampled the center of the ruined city.

gogogo Along with such roar, the group of ruined buildings who were only barely standing even in the best of times began to crumble all at once.

“Wai-, thi, this is bad. Everything, is falling toward here!”

“That’s why, I told you to jump.”

“Don’t say that so calmly, you one man army!”

The silhouettes lurking in the ruined buildings who barely survived

the fierce attack of the pencil missiles tried to jump out from the windows in order to escape the collapsing ruins even while they had lost some limbs. Hajime who courteously sent them back(blown them inside) with the additional bombing of Agni-Orkan that was completely merciless got a tsukkomi from Shizuku while she invoked the 'Air Force' in her boots and leaped to the air.

The fragments of crumbling buildings rained down from above like a heavy rain, Suzu and Ryutaro also jumped away in panic amidst the sky that was rapidly getting cramped due to the group of the tilting buildings.

And then, they somehow avoided being swallowed by the crumbling buildings and landed on the rooftop of a derelict building in slight distance away.

"…You see, Suzu once saw the news on television. It was the image of an air raid in a conflict area. Suzu wonder if that feel like this."

"Fighting is something fruitless huh. …No one will ever imagine of blowing up the whole city huh. This is already unrelated with technique or experience huuh."

"Both of you, don't get far-away look like that…I understand your feelings too."

Dust rose up grandly. Looking at the ruined city that was instantly turned into a scene like a conflict area made Suzu and Ryutaro have a far-away look. Shizuku patted their shoulder while thinking inside her heart "Just what is strength?". It was at that timing, *gacha* such sound that was like the symbol of ominous itself resounded.

Shizuku turned her face to that sound with creaking motion like a gear without oil, over there the figure of Hajime readying Agni-Orkan that he had finished reloading was…

" " "You are going to attack again!?" " "

"If you are going to do something then do it until not even a piece of meat remain. This is the culture of Japan that is even got placed on the Kojiki." (TN: Kojiki = Record of Ancient Matters (Japan's

oldest historical record))

There is no such bloodthirsty culture! Suzu and others were going to make such tsukkomi, but the triggers were pulled faster than they could open their mouth. The swarm of large and small missiles danced on the sky once more. Rain of death was pouring down at the intersection where the wreckage of destroyed buildings was scattered.

“There is nothing to do isn’t it?”

“Goshujin-sama too, he looked calm but it looks like his frustration hath piled up considerably. It can’t be helped. How about we watch over him warmly until our turn comes up.”

Amidst the flame explosion and the dust, Shia and Tio were sending gentle gaze at Hajime who was laughing loudly “HAA—HA-HA-HA” (TN: Imagine the laugh of Laharl from Disgaea) while continuously gifting lethal wounds at possibly hundreds of enemies lurking in the ruined city. Looking at those two, Shizuku who was plugging her ears with her fingers from the thunderous roar let out a sigh from the many difficulties in her future wondering if she really had to reach the level of the two.

“Why did I fall in love with this kind of person I wonder?” Just when she was thinking of something that was actually similar to what Shia once thought, suddenly Hajime turned back and aimed Agni-Orkan’s muzzles at his allies.

And then, in front of the startled Shizuku and others, Hajime pulled the triggers with not even a speck of hesitation just as expected. Looking at the missile swarm that immediately flew out, Suzu went “Hii!” with a pathetic shriek.

But, naturally the missiles weren’t aiming at the allies, the missiles drew irregular trajectory while evading Suzu and others beautifully and flew behind them.

And then, flame explosions were scattered one after another at abandoned building around five hundred meters away from them. It was truly an air strike.

Just what in the world is he attacking there? Suzu and others were thinking that while trickling with cold sweat from the attacking method that was bad for their heart. Right after that, pure white light pierced the sky from that ruined building.

“That’s, don’t tell me-“

“Na, Nagumo-! Stop it! Didn’t you say that you gonna leave Kouki to us!”

Suzu and Ryutaro turned back at Hajime while yelling. Yes, the pillar of light rising to the sky was undoubtedly Kouki’s magic power. Most likely Kouki released his magic power to defend against the sudden air strike. Hajime supposedly promised to leave Kouki and Eri to Shizuku and others, so the two of them directed flustered look at Hajime.

“That’s why I attacked them. Those two looked like they were going to run away after all. I made the explosion to surround them without any direct hit so it’s fine. In the end, it was just to hold them in place.”

Hajime declared “hold them in place” while looking at the scene of high-rise buildings collapsing like a joke at the surrounding. He only looked like a guy screwing around saying “I hit them with the back of my blade” while directing the sharp blade at the enemy.

However, in actuality Kouki’s magic power kept piercing the sky from inside the flame without any sign of weakening at all, so certainly Hajime didn’t hit them directly. Even when they understood that, as expected the cramping of Suzu and Ryutaro’s expression didn’t stop.

“It appeared they were heading at that clock tower to escape. As expected, we can go to another space from there. I don’t know why they are in this kind of place but…well, you guys can talk with them to your heart’s content.”

“Ye, yep.”

“Ou…”

Suzu and Ryutaro nodded, at the same time, Hajime leaped toward the clock tower in one breath. Following after he were Shia and others. Their movement that applied ‘Air Force’ and ‘Ground Shrinker’ made the distance of five hundred meters into zero instantly.

Kouki and Eri who had no place to escape surrounded by shockwave and flame from four directions also didn’t show any sign of moving from the rooftop of their ruined building, perhaps they had guessed they would be targeted with missile swarm once more if they tried to run.

Hajime and others landed on that ruined building.

“Aaaaa, we got discovered. Even though we expressly hid in one of Ehito’s space collection, why did you all came here of all placeee. Even though this place is the farthest place from the Divine Gate spatiallyy”

“Eri. Either way, I have to liberate everyone from Nagumo. If the other side comes by themselves to us, then this is actually a godsend instead, right?”

Kouki and Eri clung tightly to each other like a pair of lovers while exchanging a talk that strangely didn’t mesh with each other.

It appeared that from the bottom of her heart Eri didn’t want to get involved with Hajime and others, but it seemed that Kouki’s thinking that he had to rescue his comrades who he was convinced were brainwashed by Hajime didn’t vanish, so Kouki’s action was contradicting Eri who wanted to run away. Kouki’s eyes also looked cloudy, so they guessed that he had been brainwashed by ‘Bind Soul’ to the degree that he couldn’t feel the contradiction as a contradiction.

The gaze of Kouki who like always was equipped with a painfully bright holy sword and holy armor captured Hajime. Hatred, jealousy, rage——his gaze was muddy with such negative emotions boiling up.

And then, there was Eri who was rubbing her cheek on Kouki’s

shoulder while letting out a coaxing voice that sounded sticky sweet, it was unclear whether it was subconsciously or consciously, but her attitude looked exactly like how her mother once was. Her outfit was clothes that had the chest and back part largely opened, the bottom also had deep slit inserted, the color of the clothes was pure white that matched Kouki. As though she was implicitly asserting that the one who was Kouki's heroine was exactly her.

"Nagumo. You too are my classmate more or less. Originally you are someone that I have to save no matter what but…what you had done is too much. You killed your classmate, and you even brainwashed them…I, even if I have to dirty this hand, I will defeat you. And then, I swear I will save everyone from your filthy hand!"

"Yaaahnn. Kouki-kun, you are so coool~"

Kouki sent a smile at Eri who was clinging to him with intoxicated expression before readying his holy sword.

"…Hajime. Please go. Leave this place to us."

"Is it fine? Those guys had become something strange you know?"

Shizuku severely gripped her black katana so hard that it felt like creaking sound could be heard while she was urging Hajime to go ahead. Hajime was scrutinizing the two with the magic eye behind his eye patch while confirming at Shizuku. What he referred at wasn't about Kouki's behavior, he was pointing at the overflowing strength from Kouki that was incomparable with everything until now.

"I know that. But, it will be fine. Your artifact is together with me. Besides, you have the objective to rescue Yue correct? We are the one who should do something about this absolute moron somehow."

"….Well, I guess."

Hajime agreed with Shizuku with a shrug, he gave a glance at Kouki who was sending him intense gaze with eyes lifted up in wonder hearing the way Shizuku called Hajime's name and their

talk that was filled with trust. And then Hajime urged Shia and Tio to go ahead with his gaze.

Kouki that guessed that Hajime and others were going to advance by ignoring him released killing intent so thick that was unthinkable coming from the Kouki before. His magic power also further roared and burst up.

“You want to escape-! You coward-! As I thought, I will defeat the filthy yo——”

The moment when he lifted his holy sword to let fly a slash, Kouki was blown away by an impact. Eri who was clinging to him was also forcefully separated from Kouki by an explosion of a really small barrier that was deployed near her unnoticed.

At the place where Kouki was standing before, there was the figure of Ryutaro with his fist outstretched unmoving.

“Kuh, Ryutaro. As I thought, you too are brainwashed by Nagumo…”

“What are you saying? Rather it’s me who is trying to help you right now yeah? Doing something like sending killing intent at Nagumo…no way I can let my best friend get turned into minced meat like that.”

“What are you saying…”

“So you ain’t getting it huh, the you right now. You got really messed up at the head there. That’s why I’m telling you, this awesome best friend is gonna beat you up black and blue until you wake UUUUP!”

Ryutaro howled. Kouki’s state that looked really tragic fanned up his rage. That violent rage was directed at his best friend who didn’t want to look at reality, and at his powerless self who couldn’t do anything until his friend was turned into something like this.

That violent rage was poured into the fist that was tightly clenched like a rock, Ryutaro leaped toward Kouki.

“Aaaann, geez-. That’s cruel to separate me from Kouki-kun. Is that something that a be-st-fri-end would do? Hey, Suzuu?”

“…Because Suzu feels that Suzu is your best friend, that right now, Suzu is here. Suzu won’t let Nagumo-kun and others lay their hands on you, so it’s fine to not be that scared you know, Eri?”

“…Hee, looks like you can talk big right now eeh”

Eri’s expression quietly vanished due to Suzu’s calm words and gaze. That was because Suzu’s image as a naïve girl and a docile enemy of little importance in her mind was crumbling, Eri could feel a larger presence from her. And also because she who was fully wracking her brain inside her heart due to the unexpected encounter with Hajime was seen through by Suzu.

Suzu floated a smile on her lips from looking at Eri’s change. She understood that she had finally become someone that Eri couldn’t ignore.

“Nagumo-kun. Just as Shizushizu said, leave this place to Suzu and others, ‘kay?”

Suzu said while drawing out the twin iron fans dangling on her waist and readied herself.

“…Don’t get half-assed. After all, it will be troublesome if I’ve got to kill her myself later.”

“Yep. Suzu gets it. Suzu will properly settle this, no matter what shape it ended in. Nagumo-kun and others too, be careful okay.”

Hajime shrugged, then he directed his gaze at Shizuku. Shizuku too, she smiled slightly and nodded.

“See you later.”

“Yeah. Later.”

A light parting. Be that as it may, those words were filled with the resolve to reunite again without fail. Gazes of trust certainly crossed each other there.

This time Hajime turned back for sure. Without looking back, he rushed to the clock tower accompanied by Shia and Tio. “Wait-“ Kouki’s yell could be heard toward that back, but Ryutaro’s war cry that immediately resounded after that and the thunderous roar that his fist played erased that voice, making it immediately inaudible.

And then, Hajime, Shia, and Tio followed the guidance of the compass and vanished into the rippling dial of the clock tower toward another space.

“Araraa, he really went away. Even though it would be better if you weren’t obstinate and said ‘help meeee’ instead. Putting it bluntly, if that monster is not here then there is no problem at all you knooow?”

While laughing with a broad grin, Eri moved her gaze at Suzu and Shizuku who faced her.

“I wonder about that. Indeed, I am feeling an abnormal aura from the two of you right now. But, even we are by no means the same like before you know?”

“Ahahah, scary scary. I cannot let my guard down against Shizuku especially isn’t iiit. Then, how about I call my reassuriiing comrades tooo!”

Eri snapped her fingers. Right after that, *BOOM* with a thunderous roar the wreckages of the destroyed buildings at the surrounding exploded. From inside the bursting up dust and scattered debris, countless silhouettes leaped and surrounded Suzu and Shizuku.

“Puppet soldiers…weren’t they get crushed by Nagumo-kun…”

“Fufufuh, didn’t I told you. There is no problem if that monster is not here. You see these guys, their body is specially made, as expected a direct hit from missile is impossible to recover from, but they won’t break with something at the level of the building collapsing you knooow”

Furthermore,

“DOWAAAAAAAH!?”

Ryutaro was sent flying toward Shizuku and Suzu while raising such loud scream.

“——’Light Halo’”

Suzu immediately swung her iron fan, deploying a net made from linked light rings and caught Ryutaro.

“Ouch ouch. Suzu, you saved me there.”

“What happened, what about Kouki-kun?”

“No good yeah, that guy. He is not getting it at all, about his position, what the hell he is doing right now, everything. Even when I pointed out anything inconsistent, he just settled it as ‘brainwash’. It doesn’t look like that just one or two punch gonna be enough for him.”

Ryutaro sighed and scratched his head while reporting. Shizuku moved her gaze toward the surrounding puppet soldiers and Kouki who just landed beside Eri while asking more question.

“What about his strength?”

“No doubt about it, he got something done to him. You see him putting on the light that looks like ‘Limit Break’ right? He practically became strong like when he used ‘Limit Break’, but it doesn’t look like he is getting tired at all.”

“Is that so…well, we already resolved from the beginning that there will be many difficulties anyway.”

Looking at the three people who confirmed the situation with a small voice, Kouki showed a sad expression and opened his mouth while being wrapped in light.

“Shizuku, Suzu, Ryutaro. Won’t you three surrender? I don’t want to fight you guys. You are being brainwashed, and perhaps everything I say only sounds like nonsense for you, but I, want to save everyone. I will free you all from Nagumo’s curse!”

“Kouki-kun, how saaad. Beetrayed by your childhood friends, even so, you still try to save them heroicallyy”

“Eri…it’s fine. It doesn’t matter about me. As long as everyone is safe then that’s it. If I can just defeat the incarnation of evil that Nagumo…”

“It’s going to be fineee! After all Iii, only Iii, am Kouki-kun’s ally okaaay～”

“Thank you, Eri. Since the past, I only keep getting supported by you…”

Eri and Kouki gazed at each other. The emptiness in Kouki’s eyes increased while the rift of Eri’s warped smile deepened.

“See? That’s not a level where talking can go through right?”

“……Haa, indeed, looks like it. If that’s the case, to return that idiot to normal, we have to release him from Eri’s ‘Bind Soul’ and…”

“On top of that, there is also the need to beat up Kouki-kun until he is half-dead to teach him the reality isn’t it. …For the time being, Suzu will take care of Eri. After all, the destructive strength of Kouki-kun, with the support of Eri’s darkness magic is the worst combination.”

The three of them nodded to each other. Looking at such three, Kouki looked down sadly.

“As I thought it’s no good…got it. Then, first I’ll make the three of you powerless even if you will hate me for it later. And then I’ll defeat Nagumo and unravel the brainwash!”

Kouki’s mood heated up by himself and he readied his holy sword in overhead stance. Immediately, unusual magic power burst up from his body. A pressure that was even more powerful than ‘Supreme Break’ scorched the air.

“Chih, I don’t know what that is, but that looks bad-!”

Ryutaro tried to charge once more in order to stop Kouki’s

technique. But, at that instant, the surrounding puppet soldiers assaulted the three all at once.

“Ahahahahah, I won’t let that you knoow? Don’t forget the lovable heroine-chan who is supporting the hero okaaay!”

Eri was laughing loudly while a western sword that seemed to be artifact appeared unnoticed in her hand. She waved it like a conductor baton. The double-edged blade that had thin red lines on its surface was clad with gray magic power.

“You only look like an evil female leader you know, Eri. If you aren’t self-aware of that, then Suzu will lend you my mirror.”

Suzu replied like that while elegantly waving her twin iron fans. The fans opened and a gentle wind blew, along with that tender magic power light spread like a sunset.

“Call the sanctuary right here, ‘Holy Severance’.”

Right after that, a barrier of light enveloping the three deployed. There the attacks of the puppet soldiers that came one after another——every single one of them struck using sword artifact that was clad in magic power. *Gakin* Hard sound resounded, the barrier emitting holy light perfectly blocked the countless sword attack.

Furthermore,

“Swallow, ‘Holy Severance – Burst’.”

The instant the twin iron fans were closed with a snap, the barrier exploded with heinous destructive power. Fierce shockwave and the broken fragments of the barrier blown away the grouped up puppet soldiers altogether.

“Nice job, Suzu!”

Ryutaro leaped forward. His sharp eye glint pierced straight at Kouki.

“Don’t let your guard down! ‘Holy Severance – World’.”

Suzu supported by lining up many layers of barrier possessing the radiance of Holy Severance to make triangle tunnel that matched with Ryutaro's path. It had been proven that Suzu's Holy Severance couldn't be broken by the attack power of the puppet soldiers.

Ryutaro rushed fiercely inside the tunnel. The unknown technique that Kouki was going to invoke was so powerful that the air was rumbling. But, if he had Suzu's protection, he could shut Kouki down before the invocation. Ryutaro was convinced of that.

But,

"You underestimate me too muuch"

At the same time, one puppet soldier jumped high forward at the same time when they heard that voice tone which rubbed anyone's nerve the wrong way. That puppet soldier aimed his large sword at the barrier tunnel and swung down in one breath.

PAAAAAAN!!

"Wwha-!?"

The sound of destruction reverberated. Of all things, the moment an attack of that puppet soldier hit Suzu's barrier directly, reddish black ripple spread and a violent impact scattered, just like that the barrier was pulverized like a paper scrap.

Ryutaro raised a shocked voice while twisting his body to barely evade the large sword that was swung down on his path, then in a perfect timing another sword attack approached from another puppet soldier.

A horizontal sweeping attack. In addition, a pincer attack that aimed at his neck and his flank. Ryutaro tried to repel away the attacks even while his posture was unstable by using the gauntlets of both his hands.

But, these two puppet soldiers weren't normal. The swung sword flickered like an illusion, the real sword traced a trajectory that was different from the trajectory that Ryutaro focused on and approached him.

“____”

While screaming wordlessly, Ryutaro who realized that the defense of his gauntlets wouldn’t make it in time, within an instant, he used partial strengthening of Vajra to strengthen only the locations that the sword would hit.

Gakin A sound of metals clashing with each other sounded, the two attacks of the puppet soldiers were blocked by Ryutaro’s Vajra. But, the third puppet soldiers that appeared unnoticed at the front mercilessly thrust his bright red large spear that was flaming hot toward Ryutaro’s heart.

Ryutaro immediately crossed both his arms and resolved to receive the attack. Fierce impact assaulted Ryutaro, but his trusted partner, the gauntlets were somehow not pierced, it was enduring the attack of the spear. If the gauntlets hadn’t gone through Hajime’s demonic remodeling, perhaps even both his arms would also get pierced through.

But, the true worth of the burning large spear wasn’t just to burn the opponent that it touched. In the next moment, it looked undulating, and then instantly a large explosion occurred along with a thunderous boom.

“-aAAAAAA-!?”

Ryutaro who raised his scream this time was forcefully made to go back through the tunnel, he fell on the ground using ukemi technique and tried to stand right back up immediately. (TN: Ukemi, judo technique that is a way to fall safely.)

At that moment, two more puppet soldiers thrust their bastard sword. Not toward Ryutaro, but toward a ground slightly away from him.

Right after that, *bikibikibiki* such sound came out, the place that the swords stabbed instantly froze completely. That freezing instantly stretched toward underneath Ryutaro like a crawling snake, it attacked with perfect timing at the instant where Ryutaro was kneeling from his ukemi.

Due to that, the ground under Ryutaro's legs was frozen and he got restrained, and then four puppets jumped for the final blow. Every single one held a large sword, the swords were similarly flaming red hot like the previous large spear user, if Ryutaro kept getting showered with attacks like this, then at this rate he wouldn't come out unscathed no matter how sturdy he was.

Behind Ryutaro who was cornered into a desperate situation, there was Shizuku who was losing ground against the puppet soldiers who was attacking her until now using impossibly unique abilities. Shizuku saw Ryutaro's distress and tried to go to his help, but due to a puppet soldier that created an improvised binding tool by manipulating the floor of the rooftop, Shizuku was held back in place.

Not only that, similar with Ryutaro, four puppet soldiers also leaped toward Shizuku whose feet was restrained. Two puppets held spear clad in lightning while the other two brandished sword clad in gray sands. It was obvious that it wouldn't end well for her no matter which one she got hit with.

Shizuku showed unease from the unexpected strength of the puppet soldiers while she was about to use her new card.

"First is the most troublesome Shizuku, yes you. ——'Wicked Wrap'."

"Uh, a?"

However, she was hindered by Eri. Black flickering globe suddenly appeared before Shizuku's eyes, the moment it entered her sight Shizuku's body became unable to move at all.

Darkness magic 'Wicked Wrap'——a magic that obstructed the command from the brain to be sent to the body.

With this Shizuku failed to show her card and she exposed a fatal opening. Eri smugly made a sticky grin.

By using 'Bind Soul', Kouki was made to think that even if the three were injured lethally they could be revived later on. And so Kouki

who was thinking about ‘saving Shizuku and others’ didn’t feel that hurting the three was evil, and he wielded his strength without any hesitation. There was no need to hold back because later they could be restored back to live.

Of course, there was no way such thing could happen, in the first place Eri wouldn’t let such thing happen. She would at least added the three into her puppet soldiers using ‘Bind Soul’, but she had no plan to properly let them stay alive.

Therefore, she chuckled when she was about to kill the first victim but,

“Dance down, ‘Holy Severance – Sakura’.”

At that instant, countless shining fragments rushed through the battlefield just like a sakura storm. Small countless radiances danced in the air with rustling sound *zaaaaaa——*. They spiraled with Shizuku and Ryutaro at the center while raising up a whirlwind.

And then the attack of the puppet soldiers was blocked softly by the condensed gathered fragments, dispersing all the impact. Not just that, the flower storm of light swooped down on the puppet soldiers who after attacking were showing lethal opening, like a muddy stream swallowing small fish.

After the flower storm of light passed through, there were the tragic appearances of the puppet soldiers there. Their whole body was mangled, their limbs couldn’t maintain their original form. And the most striking thing was how their head had become in pieces as though the head was exploded.

‘Holy Severance – Sakura’——this magic was literally making the powerful barrier that was Holy Severance into small fragments like sakura petal, if anything was touched by it then they would be cut, and when an attack came they would become flexible wall like a willow bamboo, it was a barrier that unified offense and defense into one.

When Suzu waved her twin iron fans like a traditional Japanese

dancer, the sakura flowers of light moved like a stream matching with her movement.

“Fuu. Thanks for the save, Suzu.”

“Ou, thanks. Rather, what the hell with these puppet soldiers.”

“You are welcome. …Those looks like the characteristic magic that monster has aren’t they? Suzu cannot see anything like chanting or magic circle.”

Shizuku and Ryutaro pulled themselves together using the time that Suzu bought and they gathered beside Suzu. Their eyes narrowed gravely, vigilantly looking around at the puppet soldiers surrounding them.

But, at that time, Kouki’s technique was finally completed, the pure white magic power that pierced the sky began to converge on Kouki’s back like a video that was rewound. That abnormal magic power was gradually forming a shape with swaying motion.

“…This is your last chance. Although you all can be revived back to life later on, if possible I don’t want to hurt you three.”

Kouki sent calm voice at Shizuku and others.

Before long, the mass of magic power that Kouki emitted spread out like wings, and then thick and tough tail stretched out, a long neck and head rose, sharp fangs were formed and clanged with each other, brutal claws carved the floor of the building.

Kouki continued his words at Shizuku and others who were looking on in wonder.

“’Heaven Might – Infinite Change’——this is a technique that makes it possible for Heaven Might that could only be activated as bombardment before to be continuously controlled in its activated state. This dragon, just by existing it carries the destructive power equal of the Heaven Might in full power. In addition, as long as we are in [Holy Precincts], I won’t run out of magic power, so trying to buy time is pointless. …You understand right? The current me is stronger than even Nagumo. All of you absolutely cannot win

against me. That's why…surrender."

The light dragon that was formed from Heaven Might itself roared. At the same time, a bombardment was fired from its mouth, obliterating a high-rise building one kilometer from their spot in one attack. Indeed, on top of the 'Heaven Might' being released in full power without time limit, Kouki's power didn't seem to weaken at all, so it appeared that he was supplied with inexhaustible magic power.

"By the waaay, you see, all the puppet-chan at the surrounding, they have magic stone inserted in them, they are a hybrid of monster and human you knooow? With their teamwork and skill unchanged when they were still alive, they now also have the characteristic magic and spec equal to monsteeer. That's riiight, for the time being, I gueeess you can call them 'corpse beast soldier'." (TN: That's too long, in Japanese their name is just 'shijuuhei', but in English it got that long.)

Eri said that. She was implicitly conveying that there was an overwhelming difference in battle strength between them while smiling repulsively. She unfolded her gray wings on her back with a loud flap. With that she conveyed that she herself possessed a strength that resembled an apostle, inviting the three to despair.

Furthermore at the surrounding, it seemed there was corpse beast soldier that could use characteristic magic of healing, even corpse beast soldiers that were carved and blown up by Suzu just now stood back up with their wound healed, other than that there were also reinforcement corpse beast soldiers who seemed to be made to standby for just in case, they were gathering one after another.

Even after excluding the several hundred puppet beast soldiers that were exploded by Agni-Orkan at the beginning, there appeared to be nearly a hundred and fifty battle strength still remaining.

There was Kouki who controlled Heaven Might that carried immense destructive power with complete mastery, furthermore he had no time restriction, his own body was also able to constantly maintained 'Supreme Break' state. And then, there was Eri who was likely to possess a spec that nearly approached an apostle and also

mastery of darkness magic, added by her ability that could thoroughly control a group of a hundred and fifty corpse beast soldiers.

Indeed, this situation could be said as hellish. If it was the normal classmates who were here then perhaps they would fall on their knees in despair.

But, the ones who were here were the people who had challenged great labyrinths, who had their weakness thrust before them and made to know their powerlessness. These people had faced themselves and swallowed down their dirty and embarrassing part, taking a step forward.

And then, these people had seen that young man, the one who no matter what kind situation he was in, no matter who he faced, he still wouldn't take even a step back.

That was why,

"Stronger than even Hajime? That's just too excessive even for a misunderstanding. That man, he is truly 'the world's strongest' you know?"

"Yeah, exactly. Besides, aren't you two looking down on Suzu and others too much? Something like this won't even count as 'strength'."

"Infinite change, corpse beast soldier, whatever…hah, all these just ain't enough at all."

Only something in this level at best wouldn't even count as a difficult situation.

Kouki's eyebrow twitched in reaction. Eri's expression changed from scorn into something cold.

In contrast, Shizuku took the stance of her sword draw art, Suzu looked like she was dancing with her twin iron fans, and Ryutaro took a karate stance. In their eyes, there was not even a speck of nervousness or despair. There was only calm resolve there, to do what they should do.

“Somehow, it’s really irritatiiing.”

“So the brainwashing influence is this deep…it can’t be helped. I will wake up all of you.”

With those words as the signal, the gong of the second round rang.

Arifureta Chapter 166

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/167/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. He also did the edits.

The Reached Out Hand, Didn't Reach

"I won't hold back. It will be fine, after this I will revive you all without fail after all."

Kouki thrust his holy sword together with those words. At that moment, the dragon of light that was made right from the highest grade light element attack magic 'Heaven Might' itself——the light dragon fired breath attack of Heaven Might.

The pure white light that scorched the air drew a spiral trajectory while approaching Shizuku and others.

Looking at that, Suzu was about to wave her iron fans to invoke Holy Severance for scattering the energy.

But, as though foreseeing that, Eri invoked her magic a step faster.

"Ahah, 'Mind Sliip'!"

"____"

Darkness magic 'Mind Slip'——a magic that temporarily sealed the target's memory of a few seconds before until the current time. It was only a memory that felt like a blink of eye, but even so, if that

magic was used in the middle of a battle it was an extremely troublesome spell that created a fatal opening. It was supposedly difficult to handle this magic because it was a high-class magic, but Eri could use it without difficulty.

“Chih”

In front of the approaching light of death with Suzu failed to lay out a barrier, Ryutaro lightly threw away Suzu while he jumped away from that place together with Shizuku.

Right after that, the roar of Heaven Might passed through the spot where the three were just at the moment before, it pierced through a ruined building and fiercely shaken the whole building.

The corpse beast soldiers leaped from all direction in careful aim toward Shizuku and others who escaped to the air.

“Shred, ——’Fang Flash’!”

Shizuku invoked ‘Fang Flash’ while drawing out her black katana toward the corpse beast soldiers who swung their large sword from left and right. This attack would carve three lines simultaneously with one slash, however, although the arms of the corpse beast soldiers were cut off, the attack didn’t reach until their torso.

Shizuku narrowed her eyes looking at the result of the attack that she let out with the purpose of bisecting the enemy into two. The reddish black magic power enveloping the corpse beast soldiers was reflected in her eyes.

“’Vajra’ is it.”

As though to say that they didn’t feel any pain, even while they lost one arm the corpse beast soldiers switched to their other arm and swung their sword, Shizuku was whispering to herself while kicking on the air using ‘Air Force’ and rotated her body to evade.

Nearby her, there were the figures of Ryutaro who blocked the approaching countless wind blades with his ‘Vajra’ and Suzu who parried red a spear using petals of light.

It appeared that the corpse beast soldiers had full array line up. Other than people who could use elemental offensive characteristic magic, there were also other people with defensive skill and healing skill. The group was really abundant with variation. In this aspect, perhaps there were also corpse beast soldiers that could hide themselves or absorb magic like the chimeras they faced before.

When Shizuku was being vigilant against the ability of the soldiers, suddenly a chill ran through her whole body. The warning bell of her instinct was ringing loudly. Shizuku immediately invoked 'Air Force' in conjunction with 'No Beat' and leaped away from that spot using her full strength.

At that moment, countless light blades passed through the space that Shizuku just vacated. The light blades kept soaring without stopping and cut into pieces the side of a ruined building at slightly far away place, the ruined building that lost its support collapsed with a thunderous sound.

Furthermore, Shizuku obeyed her ringing alarm bell that still wasn't stopping and twisted her body, without even checking she turned behind and drew out her sword. The black katana that was accelerated with the unsheathing motion returned resistance and hard sound *GAKIN!*.

There, the figure of Kouki who blocked the black katana with his holy sword was standing.

"As expected from Shizuku. You're strong."

"You are the one who became weak. It's a disgrace for Yaegashi-style's name."

"…How pitiful. So you are also made to be unable to understand even the difference in strength between us. But, that's fine. Because I'll protect Shizuku-!"

Perhaps thanks to the light dragon on his back, Kouki was able to normally fly in the air. He was smiling to Shizuku while locking sword with her in the air. But, the reply that came back to him were sharp words that made him murmured misdirected words and

his expression distorted.

At the same time, the light dragon that glared at Shizuku from behind Kouki opened its jaw widely. And then, Heaven Might was fired from point-blank range at Shizuku with no lag time.

“-, ‘Scorch Wave’! ‘Draw Sky’!”

Shizuku swung her sheath at Kouki. Using the generated shockwave she forcefully separated their distance and Shizuku escaped from the firing line. But, she was unable to completely escape from the breath attack of Heaven Might that looked like an extremely a laser.

And so, using the black katana’s ability the ‘Draw Sky’ that she invoked almost simultaneously, she attracted the breath of Heaven Might to her blade. And then, the moment the breath touched the blade, she used the twisting of her wrist and body and parried the pressure and shockwave toward behind her.

A sword art of Yeagashi-style——’Wood Chip Dance’. A parrying technique that made use of the blade to slide the opponent’s attack. This time the technique was used in conjunction with ‘Draw Sky’ that was an ability to attract the target to the blade. She attempted this technique without any prior preparation, but she succeeded splendidly.

In her back, the sound of one more building collapsing due to Heaven Might was audible. Shizuku sent an exasperated gaze at Kouki while hearing that sound.

“Protect, is it. You had said that to me a few times in the past, but honestly, there is not even one time that I can remember where you protected me. Even now, you are saying you will protect me while releasing outrageous attack at me aren’t you?”

“Is that so…that bastard Nagumo, he even falsified your memory. I guess you don’t remember, but I was always at Shizuku’s side, protecting you. Well, even if I said that I think it’s pointless no matter what I said to the current Shizuku though.”

“That’s completely my line. I wonder, would I feel a little better if I put even just one large wound on that handsome face.”

Blood vein was pulsing on Shizuku’s forehead in irritation. Corpse beast soldiers were circling behind Shizuku. Looking closer, all of the soldiers had reddish black wings growing from their back. With that, they wouldn’t have a problem even in mid-air battle.

Furthermore, when Kouki swung his holy sword, the light dragon on his back fired countless branching lights that formed small light dragons. The number was roughly thirty dragons.

“Shizuku, I will end the battle with this. As expected, you won’t be able to endure simultaneous attack in this number right? It will hurt, but I will nurse you properly after this. Just sleep in peace.”

After saying that one-sidedly, Kouki turned the tip of the holy sword at Shizuku. Immediately after, thirty small light dragons and corpse beast soldiers assaulted Shizuku from all directions. There was no place to escape. Ryutaro couldn’t approach because of the light dragon’s breath attack and the corpse beast soldiers.

Suzu immediately tried to act, but Shizuku herself stopped that using ‘telepathy’.

{Shizuku-}

{It’s fine, Suzu. I’ll show you I can manage somehow against just this much!}

Right after those words reached Suzu through telepathy, Shizuku was swallowed by human silhouettes and light.

Kouki shook his head sadly looking at that. And then, as though to say ‘If it’s to save everyone, then I won’t balk from dirtying this hand or getting hated!’, with a resolute expression as though putting on airs like a tragic hero, he moved his gaze at Ryutaro who he designated as his next target.

At that moment,

“My bad, but I flatly refuse for my sleeping face to be seen by any

man other than him. ——'Flash Blossom'."

"-gua!?"

A straight horizontal line cut was opened on Kouki's chest and blood spray danced in the air. Thanks to the impregnable holy armor it wasn't a fatal wound, but even so it was quite a damage.

Kouki gazed in wonderment at how Shizuku was speaking calmly and how he got cut even with the distance. He was moving back with his hand pressing on his chest. And then, he discovered that.

"The, the katana, is flying?"

Kouki whispered by reflex.

Exactly as he said, in front of Kouki, Shizuku's black katana and a jet black katana that looked exactly the same were floating in the air with their tips pointing at Kouki.

Then, was Shizuku giving lethal wound at the corpse beast soldiers and small light dragons unarmed…Kouki moved his gaze gravely at Shizuku who was crowded by soldiers and dragons that they looked like an enclosed sphere shape.

Then, *slid* the soldiers and dragons that surrounded Shizuku had their bodies slipping off diagonally and fell down. Such astonishing scene entered Kouki's eyes.

And then, what appeared from between the gap of the enemies that fell down or dispersed in tatter…

Was the figure of Shizuku who blocked all the attacks with a barrier of countless black katana deployed around her.

"Sever off, ——'Omni Blade – Flash Blossom'!"

Shizuku raised her voice once more.

In an instant, the barrier of black katana shined in dark blue color, then this time all the soldiers and small dragons were bisected for sure. The soldiers fell to the ground, and the small light dragons

dispersed. Amidst those, Shizuku headed straight to Kouki with black katana in hand.

Then, the naked black katana at the surrounding all pointed their tip down and lined orderly with Shizuku as the center. The number in total was twenty katana.

That figure standing in the air with straight back and dignity, a swarm of jet black katana following her, looked just like a hero in an illustrated story. The beautiful black hair in ponytail fluttered, the calm eyes carrying tenacious will pierced through Kouki.

Beautiful…Kouki whispered so in his heart without realizing. It was out of place, yet Shizuku's figure that was like a war maiden caused his heart to be stolen helplessly and he gulped.

"——'Living Swords(Swarm of Katana that Exemplify the Will)'. My soul is poured into all of these black katana. I wonder, can Kouki who continue to escape into convenient dream endure this?"

"Shi, Shizuku…"

Despite the calm voice, Kouki fell into a hallucination where he was struck physically, his voice got unconsciously caught in his throat. The current Shizuku was filled with a pressure that couldn't be pushed down using the difference in magic power and body spec.

"…Toward my Kouki-kun….what cheekiness. As expected, I just can't stomach Shizukuuu!"

Eri's expression distorted into ugliness and she was about to fire a magic at Shizuku. It seemed that she sensitively sensed how Kouki was fascinated by Shizuku. It was unforgivable for her that Kouki was attracted to anybody except her now when he was under her brainwashing. Her hatred and jealousy exploded, she was about to direct a magic to disturb Shizuku's mind and sent all her soldiers at Shizuku.

But, at the eyes of such Eri, countless fluttering shadows were reflected as though to hinder her.

Eri's gaze ran at the surrounding dubiously. And then she gazed in

wonderment.

“Wha, what? This is, butterfly?”

Her murmured words hit bull’s eye. Before she noticed, a swarm of a lot of butterflies was fluttering about the battlefield.

The source of this scenery was Suzu who unfolded her twin iron fans. Butterfly monsters were summoned continuously from the jewel that was attached to the handle of the iron fan. The spectacle of black crest butterflies with a red pattern on their jet black wings flying in spiraling orbit with the light petals deployed at the surrounding while rising to the sky were showing a mix of charm and mystique that usually didn’t exist in Suzu, giving off a beauty that couldn’t be put in words.

“Suzu had endured your first attack you know, Eri? This time it is Suzu’s turn. Suzu won’t let you ignore her anymore.”

“Ahaha, what is the like of Suzu is saying——”

Amidst the battlefield that brimmed over with light petals and black crest butterfly, Suzu yelled at a different summoning artifact dangling on her waist——at one of the magic orbs.

“Inaba-san! Please!”

“Kyukyuu!”

At that moment, a white and crimson rabbit leaped before Suzu’s eyes, its figure vanished leaving behind afterimage, and instantly, the rabbit’s figure appeared behind Eri.

Eri was unable to react at that extreme speed. She was only able to barely catch that figure using her physical spec that was reinforced using the technique to create apostle.

Therefore, right after her eyes opened wide,

“aGUH!?”

Eri received the strong leg of the kicking rabbit ‘Inaba’ and crashed

into a ruined building with a tailspin. Without stopping she pierced through that the building and got blown away for few hundred meters more. Just before she got hit by the attack, she enveloped her body with magic power equal to that of an apostle and performed reinforcement, so her life wasn't ended with the attack just now.

"Eri-! Shit-, Suzu, what are you doing to your best friend-!"

"That's why I told you, don't keep sleep talking like that on and on!"

Kouki saw Eri was blown away and raised his voice. And then, when he was going to blame Suzu, an impact right from the side blocked his voice.

Kouki blocked Ryutaro's fist using his holy sword while creaking sound resounded *creak creak*. The two of them glared at each other from point-blank range in a posture similar to sword locking contest.

Kouki averted his gaze from Ryutaro and glanced at the direction where Eri was blown away, at the same time the light dragon unleashed its claw and tail at Ryutaro.

Ryutaro paid attention to the claw and tail of the light dragon while he took no evading action. In exchange, he invoked the age of god magic that he obtained.

"Come, steel demo-n! 'Sixth Heaven's Demon Transformation!" (TN: Tenma Tenpen)

Right after, Ryutaro's body was tinged with light green magic power and transformed. *beki-beki* With such sound the muscles of his whole body enlarged and tore apart his tunic. His tall body that was originally a hundred and ninety centimeters easily surpassed two meters now, the corner of his eyes lifted up sharply and his canine lengthened and became exposed.

The radical change of Ryutaro made Kouki gazed in wonderment, during that time the swung tail of light dragon attacked Ryutaro's

back while the claw attacked his shoulder.

But, the attack of the light dragon that hit directly didn't make Ryutaro got wet with blood, *gakin!* a hard sound that was impossible for living flesh body resounded and the attacks were blocked.

"Wha-, Ryutaro, that's-"

"Kuuu! I felt that, oi! But, I endured it yeah? This time it's my turn! 'Scorch Wave'!!"

"____"

As expected, it seemed that it was impossible to be undamaged after directly receiving the attack of the light dragon that was the avatar of Heaven Might, even so Ryutaro didn't get any serious wound, Ryutaro who was grinning fearlessly with literally demonic look unleashed enormous shockwave from his gauntleted fist that was locked with the holy sword.

That attack didn't consist only from the magic power that was converted into impact, but the addition of the pure physical strength that was drawn out from the muscled arm that had enlarged two sizes bigger like ogre's arm became a tremendous strength that blown away Kouki.

Flying away with his voice caught up in his throat, Kouki crashed into a ruined building at the other side similar like Eri just now.

The corpse beast soldiers aimed at Ryutaro who stayed unmoving with his fist thrust forward, but they were scattered by the many black katana soaring at high speed. Shizuku arrived beside Ryutaro who transformed into an ogre and she opened her mouth after gazing briefly at him.

"Looks like you can use it well aren't you. That's wants pressure."

"Hehe-, well, it's also thanks to Nagumo's cheatmate though. If it's just by myself, I'm not gonna be able to easily use it this far."

Ryutaro glared at the ruined building Kouki crashed into without

letting his guard down while acting humble in contrast with his appearance.

Metamorphosis magic ‘Sixth Heaven’s Demon Transformation’——using magic stone as a medium to change one’s a body, the characteristic of the monster whose magic stone was used would A great into the body, it was a little unique magic for a metamorphosis magic.

Ryutaro had the aptitude for the metamorphosis magic itself, but he was unskillful in the usage of the magic (because he waswantsa muscle-brain, he did nothing but punching and kicking), he was unable to subdue the monster in the abyss in such short time.

There, Ryutaro who thought of various things obtained a hint from Tio’s ‘dragonification’, and arrived at a conclusion typical of a muscle-brain.

Namely, ‘if I cannot subdue the monster, then isn’t it fine if I just become the same like the monster that I want to subdue?’, a that. Ryutaro who was also familiar with his a body because he had done karate since he was little tested that idea of his without delay.

And the result, the metamorphosis magic Sixth Heaven’s Demon Transformation actually had a good compatibility with Ryutaro, this magic could be classified as a super advanced magic even among the metamorphosis magic but he succeeded in it with relative ease.

Of course, there was no time for him to train so the time he could transform was really short, his result was also erratic so that when he released the transformation he got a severe feedback and it became a trump card of trump card that could only be used as last resort, but there Hajime resolved the problem.

That was, cheatmate——minerals that didn’t have an adverse effect to human body like calcium and the like were enchanted with metamorphosis magic and sublimation magic, it was then turned into powder and then transmuted and became a solid food with a particular effect. With this food the body was temporarily transformed into an optimum condition in metamorphosis, next, strengthening effect that was nearly like ‘Limit Break’ was also

applied on the eater so that they could endure even heavy burden.

This cheatmate once taken would maintain its effect for half a day, on top of that there was also no side effect after use. It was a top product of Hajime, all the members who stormed into Holy Precincts had already taken it. Shizuku was able to use twenty katana at the same time which was impossible without increasing her brain throughput was also thanks to this one-time use food artifact.

By the way, the naming was from Calo—Mate (TN: Calory Mate). If you believed the story that the meaning of 'mate' was 'friend' then…it was quite a horrible naming.

Shizuku and Ryutaro were making frivolous talk while running their gaze through the corpse beast soldiers at the surrounding, then suddenly a 'telepathy' reached them.

{Shizuku, Ryutaro-kun. Let's divide the two like this. Leave Eri to Suzu. Both of youa large amountplease take care of Kouki-kun.}

{Suzu…you are going to be fine right?}

{Yep. Suzu will say what she wants to say, ask what she want to ask, and then, punch that idiot flying.}

{Heh, that's great. …Don't you die yeah.}

{You too, 'kay.}

Far away, Suzu who put Inaba on her head gave a thumb up to them. And then, she turned on her heel and chased after the crashing Eri while handling the attack of the corpse beast soldiers at the same time.

Right after that,

DOGOOOOOOOON-!!

A thunderous sound resounded and the ruined building before Shizuku and Ryutaro's eyes collapsed——no, the building was blown up from the inside. There shining brilliantly like a star, the

figure of Kouki followed by a light dragon and countless small light dragons appeared.

Kouki was silent and expressionless. Like that without any sound he directed the tip of his holy sword at Shizuku and Ryutaro.

“Ryutaro!”

“Ou-!”

As expected, the two of them were war comrades who had fought together until this far. Dancing to the same beat they entered the stance for a pincer attack as thought they had arranged it beforehand. After that, the howl of Heaven Might passed through.

Even the after effect struck the body with immense impact, amidst that Shizuku and Ryutaro paid attention to the light dragons that were flying near them and the surrounding corpse beast soldiers while moving toward their absolute moron childhood friend.

Part 2

Suzu advanced between the intervals of the ruined buildings, followed by light petals and black crest butterflies, and also Inaba.

Inaba who possessed sensitive rabbit ears taught her that the presence of Eri who was blown away was already gone from where she crashed.

Suzu thought for a moment whether Eri had headed to back up Kouki, but her instinct whispered to her somehow that Eri wouldn’t leave her alone and she would head toward her.

And so, she moved through the area that was surrounded by the ruined buildings of the ruined city while being on guard but…the corpse beast soldiers had also vanished from the area without her noticing, in the area that was enveloped in eerie silence except of the battle sound of Shizuku and others from far away, Suzu was trickling sweat from unknown nervousness.

“Kyuu, kyu”

“Inaba-san…thank you. I’m just a little too nervous.”

Inaba said “Suzu-han, you are too nervous ya. I’m here so you can puff up your chest without worry, you are betting on the winner here.” and used his front leg to pat Suzu’s forehead. Suzu’s cheeks slightly loosened up and her shoulders relaxed. Inaba who was riding fluffily on Suzu’s head crossed his arms as though to say ‘That’s good’ while nodding his head going ‘uh huh, uh huh’. (TN: Inaba still talk with Kansai accent here)

The comical gesture made Suzu’s cheek loosened up further.

At that moment, Inaba rolled over vertically above Suzu’s head. And then, with a handstand he crumpled Suzu’s hair while rotating, he turned behind and let out a strong kick.

zugan-! Shockwave sound resounded, what Inaba blocked was a shining gray sword.

“…Really, this disgusting rabbit is just irritating.”

“Eri-“

Yes, the one who had taken Suzu by surprise from behind and swung the sword was Eri herself. When Suzu looked behind her shoulder, her eyes met Eri’s cold inhuman gaze that was like ice.

The slashed sword was blocked by Inaba’s leg which was equipped by Hajime’s special leg armor artifact, without that the sword would be in a direct course to Suzu’s head. Looking from the strength of the leg armor and sword that were locked fiercely with each other, Eri was obviously trying to kill Suzu in the surprise attack.

Inaba twisted his body further. He rotated as though breakdancing on Suzu’s head and fired a shockwave with his opposite foot. Characteristic magic ‘Sky Walk’s’ derivative skill, ‘Rending Spiral’——an ability that launched shockwave from the kick.

Eri flapped the gray wings on her back and somersaulted in the air

while evading that shockwave.

“I heard that to evolve monster using metamorphosis magic will take quite some time thouugh. That monster, isn’t it a little too abnormal?”

Eri asked in a bad mood while scrutinizing with her eyes.

“Well, that’s because Inaba-san is special in various aspects. Most of this is from his base ability.”

“What’s with that, so cheating huuuh. But, that rabbit won’t match the violence of number riiight? As expected, I don’t think Suzu is employing so many monsters of that level riiight! ——’Wicked Wrap’!”

Eri materialized dark sphere in front of Inaba’s eyes. Using that, the movement of Inaba who tried to immediately move was obstructed for a moment.

Using that timing Eri launched gray bombardment. It was a brutal bombardment that was enchanted with disintegration ability. Furthermore, the corpse beast soldiers that lurked in the ruined buildings leaped out all at once to block the path of escape.

“Everyone, please! ——’Holy Severance – World’!”

With Suzu’s command, her subordinate monsters jumped out from the magic balls hanging on her waist. Two centipedes with body length of ten meter, ten one meter tall bees with striped pattern of black and red, four praying mantis where each of them had six sickles, one spider with eight reddish black eyes and four meter body length. This was Suzu’s prided(?) bug squad!

While defending against the approaching grey flash with fifty overlapping Holy Severance and replenishing the disintegrated layer at the same time, Suzu further used her other iron fan to control the light petals——the ‘Holy Severance – Sakura’ to back up her subordinate monsters.

The soldier who swung red hot spear was met by the barrage of the missile bee. Ten bees all at once were rapid-firing with shooting

rate of five shots per second, right after the shot impacted flower of explosion bloomed.

The blown away soldiers were finished off by the web of steel thread laid out at the valley of the ruined buildings by the steel thread spider sticking on the building wall. Their body was carved apart into pieces.

Furthermore, the soldiers who slipped through the barrage of missile needles and approached close were met by the wind blade praying mantises, wind blades that were unleashed from their six sickles minced up the soldiers.

The soldiers with defensive characteristic magic were defending using large shield while charging forward, from their shadow large sword user with 'Magic Shockwave' ability leaped out and swung their swords at the acid coiling centipedes protecting Suzu's back.

At the same time with the reddish black ripples spreading, violent shockwave came into being. The acid centipedes that got hit by those large swords were easily scattered.

The soldiers that used large sword and impact weaved through the gap of the scattered centipedes and approached Suzu. But, that moment, from all direction——more accurately, the fragments of the centipedes that scattered at the surrounding sprayed dissolving liquid like surging waves from their segmented parts.

The flawless surprise attack bathed the soldiers' whole body in dissolving liquid and made them wet as though they had encountered a squall, white smoke were rising grandly from their body and in the blink of eye they changed from human into bone model, they changed job into skeleton and at last they dissolved completely leaving not even dust behind.

So that the acid centipedes who had split into ten segments didn't hit their fellow subordinate monsters and their master Suzu, they performed the spraying of their dissolving liquid like bit weapon.

Reinforcement gushed out further from the shadow of the ruined buildings. However, the moment the soldiers jumped out, the

ground and wall undulated and from there ants that had grown until one meter long jumped out with their jaws grinding, they crunched the soldiers and pulled them back into the ground or the wall.

Barrage of exploding missiles and terrifyingly sharp wind blades, heavy rain of dissolving liquids that accurately weaved through the gaps and rained down on the enemies, spider webs made from lines of death that were gradually tightening its encirclement, swarm of ants that ambushed from underground the moment anyone approached.

The corpse beast soldiers who were supposedly turned into super human with the combination of human skill and technique added with monster's toughness and characteristic magic, were killed one after another like a joke.

"Wai-, this is a joke right!? What's with those monsters-! Even Freed only have a few monsters that are evolved until that far!"

Eri spontaneously yelled angrily. Her gray bombardment was also unable to break through Suzu's protection, even though she should have obtained immense power! Her irritation grew violent.

And then, while maintaining her attack she tried to send grey feathers toward Suzu's subordinate monsters and darkness magic 'Slip Mind' toward Suzu.

There,

"Kyuu!"

"-!?"

The white rabbit materialized. His crimson eyes narrowed dangerously as though to say "Now you have really done it, youuu! I'm gonna punch you arounddd!". The extreme speed *zurararara—* left behind overlapping after images of Inaba, at the same time that strong leg shot out toward Eri.

Although Eri immediately defended using her gray wings, she was unable to endure the fierce destructive power and got blown away.

“KYUUuUUUU!!”

“You-, a mere beast, is getting carried away-“

Inaba chased. His rabbit ears flapped, he kicked on the air, polished kicking attacks that were like surging waves were launched right and left. Up middle bottom, high speed three stage kick attacked like a flash, before all those could be processed by the mind, Inaba rotated horizontally and a serial round kick filled with a lot of centrifugal force exploded.

PAN-! Along with such dry sound, air wall and shockwave were generated with Inaba’s kicking leg as the center. The effect wasn’t due to magical skill, but pure kicking speed that broke through the sound barrier.

Eri barely defended that storm of kicks using sword skill and apostle spec. Yes, Eri was barely dodging direct hit using superb sword skill. Ahead of the gaze of Suzu who exposed her shock of that, magic power of disintegration burst out from Eri’s whole body.

Unable to endure it, Inaba kicked on the air while returning to Suzu’s side.

“What’s this? Why am I getting pushed back? My body was changed into apostle’s body, I also obtained skills, I also prepared corpse beast soldiers, I made the supreme swordsman of the kingdom possess me, despite so, why? Hey, why do I have to get cornered like a loser? My opponent is not that monster right? Despite so, why? Hey, why? Why? Why!?”

Despite tiding over Inaba’s attack safely, Eri’s expression warped into something ugly and repeatedly said “Why?” in hysteric, while her hand was scratching her hair so roughly that her hair might get torn off. That figure had madness that was a little too thick to be waved off as just a child that was throwing tantrum because the reality wouldn’t go as she expected it to be.

Toward such Eri who was yelling “why?” repeatedly in madness, Suzu turned her eyes and voice that were calm like a quiet water surface.

“That’s obvious. It’s because Suzu wants to talk to Eri.”

“Ha?”

Suzu’s words made Eri stopped talking and leaked out dumbfounded voice. Her expression was befuddled from not understanding what Suzu meant.

“This is because Eri thought that Suzu isn’t worth to take on seriously. Suzu has worked hard in training to come here. In order to make Eri unable to ignore Suzu. Well, there is Nagumo-kun’s help so it feels pathetic though.”

“…Hee. And? You want to yell at me? This time you are going to make me grovel, and then sneer while cursing at me? Geez Suzu, you got that desperate for that kind of thing? You have become really distorted nicely aren’t youuu~. It’s ok then you knoow? How about trying to curse at me as you likeee? I’ll listen for you okaaay?”

Eri guessed what was inside Suzu’s heart and sneered. It seemed that she recovered her composure from feeling that she had seen the bottom of Suzu’s heart, that Suzu only miserably acted for the sake of revenge.

But, Suzu’s expression didn’t even twitch from such Eri. She kept looking straight at Eri and spoke out calmly.

“Curse? Sneer? No way. There is no way I can do that kind of thing. Because…Suzu was also using Eri the same like how you were using me after all.”

“…What does that meaaan?”

Eri scrutinized Suzu with one eye and tilted her head. It appeared that she held interest toward Suzu’s story. Even the soldiers right now were only surrounding Suzu without any sign of attacking.

“Just like Eri said, Suzu laughed foolishly and plainly acted like idiot, totally shallow, however Suzu isn’t hated by anyone——Suzu lived like that until now. Because Suzu hated to be alone. Because being lonely is unbearable. Because Suzu want to be always

included inside the circle of people.”

“Well, Suzu is like that aren’t youuu”

“Yep. Because Suzu was like that, the existence of ‘best friend’ was necessary. Suzu was thankful. Because, a child that isn’t hated by anyone, if you change the way you look at it, that child is merely everybody’s friend. Something like being equal and fair to everyone is really a heresy. That’s why, an existence for Suzu to favor was necessary for Suzu. So that Suzu can let the surrounding know, that Suzu isn’t that kind of heresy, that Suzu is a normal child who has a special friend with good relationship.”

“Fuuun. So? You are saying that it was me?”

“Yep. Though of course, Suzu wasn’t being best friend with Eri while being fully self-aware of that thinking. Right now when Suzu looked back, Suzu realize how Suzu acted like that. …That time when it became a pinch in Orcus, Shizuku and Kaori tried to be together at the end right? At that time, Suzu was convinced. Aa, Suzu and Eri are not like that huuh. Suzu desperately pretended not to notice that at the time though.”

“….So? What do you want to say then?”

Suzu’s words that sounded like she was talking to herself made Eri asked with a voice that sounded a little irritated. Toward that, Suzu looked straight at Eri and then she quietly lowered her head.

“…What?”

“Sorry, Eri. Eri said that Suzu is a convenient tool, but Suzu didn’t even have the qualification to get shocked because of that. Suzu is also the same like Eri. Because Suzu treated Eri like a convenient tool.”

“…Look hereee. You mean you are coming this far to say that kind of shitty trivial thing? You thought, that I’m even caring about that kind of thing? If that’s true, then I cannot help but say that your head is gnawed whole by bugs inside. After obtaining Kouki-kun, someone like Suzu is just worthless thing like a rock in roadside for

me you knooww?”

Eri’s eyes warped, as though to say from the bottom of her heart that she had just listened to something stupid, however, Suzu replied while grinning.

“Yep, I know. This is just Suzu’s self-satisfaction. Suzu just wanted to apologize to feel refreshed.”

“You have become really brazen aren’t youuu. That’s all you want to talk about?”

“Nope. There is still something Suzu want to ask. Hey, Eri. Why did Eri fall in love with Kouki-kun?”

“Haa?”

There was a limit even for being out of place, Eri who was asked with a girls’ talk raised a disarrayed voice. Without minding such Eri, Suzu continued her question.

“Since the past Suzu somehow felt sympathy to Eri though, as expected did Eri had problem in home? Eri often came to play to Suzu’s home, but not even once Suzu could visit Eri’s home. So Suzu wonders if Eri actually felt hard to stay at your own home. You also nonchalantly avoided talking about your father and mother didn’t you? Your relation with your parents is bad? By any chance, did you get help from Kouki-kun when you were worried about that?”

It was a storm of questions that came pushing like surging waves as though Suzu was dancing tap dance on a minefield. Suzu was stepping in brazenly with muddy shoes into Eri’s childhood that could be said as her heart’s darkness. Furthermore, her question was strangely right on the mark so it was nasty.

From the point of view of Eri who had reminisced of her past just now, it felt like Suzu knew about that yet she still dared to dig up at the painful memory to throw at her.

And so, Eri’s answer was a wordless bombardment. Grey flashes mercilessly attacked Suzu from shortest distance. To that, Suzu defended from the front with ‘Holy Severance – World’ while

grinning sweetly. The soldiers also moved once more, following that the subordinate monsters also reacted perfectly.

“Hey, come on, teach Suzu please, Eri. Suzu want to know about Eri. All the part where Suzu didn’t dare to step in even while calling you best friend, right now, Suzu wants to know.”

“Like this your personality has become really wicked isn’t iiit, Suzuu? Were you warped from the shock of my betrayaaal?”

“Don’t dodge the question here. Come on, teach Suzu? About Eri. What happened? Why are you warped? What kind of feeling are you looking at Kouki-kun with? Please, teach Suzu?”

“Aa, geez-, you are really annoyiiing!”

Suzu who continuously laid out barriers one after another at the same speed with the rate they were disintegrated, was piercing Eri with her straight gaze from between the gaps of the barriers and flashes. There wasn’t any scorn or contempt in those eyes, only sincerity of wanting to know about Eri was residing there.

Having such gaze directed at her, Eri became even more irritated. Her heart was disordered in a level that was far exceeding her own expectation. She used magic with that irritation staying in her heart.

“——’Lawless’!”

Darkness magic ‘Lawless’——a magic that blocked the target’s image supplementation for using magic.

How Suzu was maintaining the deploying speed of barriers in the level that could oppose disintegration ability was possible because there was the abbreviation in her magic invocation using image supplementation. Consequently, if Suzu received interference in that, naturally her barrier’s deploying speed would drop——that was how it should be.

“Why-!?”

Eri’s shocked voice resounded. Ahead of her widely opened gaze,

Suzu was continuing to lay out her barriers without any change. Her speed was equal with before.

“-, you are interfering with the image supplementation aren’t you. Thanks to that now Suzu doesn’t have any leeway left.”

“Don’t tell me…you are saying that you were going easy on the barrier deployment just nooow!?”

“Yep. After all Suzu is a barrier master. In protection Suzu won’t lose to anyone. Well even though Suzu said that, there is also the help of Nagumo-kun’s artifact, if this is a bombardment from a real apostle, Suzu won’t be able to say this though.”

Suzu squinted and looked at Eri while whispering “Suzu cannot block Kaorin’s bombardment after all.”

“Eri’s body. Indeed it looks like you are able to use apostle’s power, but you are unable to do it perfectly like Kaori I think? Twenty percent…nope, looks like the spec dropped by thirty percent. You also cannot use the experience trace among apostles aren’t you? The sword skill before this, Suzu guess you got it from Melt-san using necromancy? If we are talking about the pinnacle of the knight’s sword art, Suzu cannot think of anyone else except that person.”

“-, don’t get carried away!”

After having been analyzed and gotten seen through various things one after another, Eri was feeling like she had been totally seen through because of how all those analyses were correct. Eri raised an angry yell. The color of scorn and composure that filled her expression at the beginning was already gone, there was only the display of lack of composure that merely wished to erase even for a second faster the opponent she was unable to stomach.

“Eri, Suzu won’t avert her eyes anymore. Because, Suzu doesn’t want to overlook what’s important and lose everything helplessly again. Suzu doesn’t want to keep being ignorant anymore. That’s why, please. Teach Suzu about Eri.”

“You keep saying teach me, teach me, annoying! What are you

going to do after knowing such thing at this lateee!? You want to grasp my weakness and then attack me mentallyyy!?”

Eri fired a large number of feathers from her gray wings. The bombardment circled around and launched an attack from all directions in a plan to break the equilibrium. The soldiers were blocked from approaching by the iron wall formation that Suzu’s subordinate monster formed, with that Eri had to do something herself. She was lamenting that she got separated from Kouki who excelled in offensive power.

But, as expected that plan of Eri was crushed by Suzu. At the other side of the barrier, Suzu elegantly waved her iron fans. Then, *zaaaaaaa* such sound came from the surrounding and light petals gathered, drawing spiral around Suzu.

And then, the spiral swallowed all the soaring feathers where the two magic neutralized each other. The petals were erased, however, the petals were immediately replenished again and showed no sign of decreasing at all.

Suzu sent her words to Eri as though nothing happened.

“You are wrong. You see, Suzu want to know about Eri. Suzu will know, look properly, feel, think……then Suzu wants to become friend with Eri, one more time.”

“——What are you saying?”

Eri’s bombardment unconsciously weakened. The grey feathers also flew toward wrong directions. That was just how much Suzu’s words were incomprehensible and lacking in common sense for Eri.

That was only natural. After how she betrayed them that nastily, killing a lot of people, and furthermore she was trying to kill them right now. If someone was saying that they ‘want to be friend’ toward such person, she could only think that there was something wrong with that person’s head. If this was the mental attack of Suzu-style, then in a sense it could be said as effective. Though until the end it was effective only in the meaning of taking her by surprise.

Suzu continued her words to that Eri. Her voice was powerful, her gazing eyes were endlessly clear.

“Is that strange I wonder? Yep, that’s strange isn’t it. Eri has done bad things after all. Even now you are trying to kill Suzu.”

“…What, so just as I thought you have gone mad?”

“Nope, Suzu is sane. Even Suzu herself is thinking that it’s strange huuh, but, this is Suzu’s true feeling without any falsehood. Because, Suzu remember.”

“Remember?”

“Yep. Eri’s smile.”

Hearing those words, Eri’s expression turned even more confused.

“Eri was always a child that smiled reservedly from slight distance away, but right now Suzu understands that it was fake smile. But, but see. Like the time when Eri came for sleepover at Suzu’s home, or the time when the two of us talk leisurely on the way home after school, or when both of us slackened up at the nearby park when there is really nothing to do on holiday, your languid smile that you suddenly showed at those time, or your smile that looked a little cynic, or your smile to Suzu that looked exasperated, but also looked a little amused, Suzu remembered those.”

“…”

“Surely those were, smiling faces that the ‘Eri who is acting’ must not show isn’t it right? Those smiles were fragments of the true Eri that couldn’t be shown to other people, isn’t that right? Eri rested your heart just for a smidgen, only when Suzu was with Eri, isn’t that right? You see, that’s what Suzu think.”

Eri was wordless. Her eyes couldn’t be seen because they were hidden by her front hair. The shadow created from the light was also hiding Eri’s expression.

Suzu’s words echoed. The Suzu who feared being hated and wouldn’t step forward had gone. Even if she had to take the risk of

what she wanted slipping away from her hand, she would still take a step forward. Because she had learned, that ahead of the constant risk, there lied what she exactly wanted.

“Eri, come back. Together with Kouki-kun. Something like a world with only two people is just sad. Suzu, want to be together with Eri. It’s better to be together forever even after this. Suzu want to become best friend with Eri, this time for sure.”

“…”

Suzu closed one of her iron fans with a snap and hung it on her waist. When she noticed, the feather attack had stopped. There was no need to control the light petals anymore. And then, like that her empty hand reached out straight toward Eri.

“If you take this hand, Suzu won’t let anyone hurt Eri. No matter what anyone says, even if, Suzu have to oppose Nagumo-kun, Suzu swear that she will protect Eri!”

The gray bombardment was gradually losing momentum. Before long, it was decreasing until it became like a thin string and like that it melted into the air and vanished.

Suzu also erased her barrier. At her surrounding her monsters were standing by quietly. The corpse beast soldiers also stopped moving.

Her words reached her. Perhaps even her heart…Suzu thought that and her lips broadened slightly.

Ahead of Suzu’s gaze, Eri quietly raised her face. What was reflected in those eyes was the color of passion and happiness——not, but coldness that was like ice filled with endless scorn.

And then, her words too.

“Are you an idiot?”

“____”

Suzu loosened cheeks instantly stiffened. Right after that, a huge

gray magic circle manifested on the sky.

Eri's feather attack wasn't only intended to circle around Suzu's barrier and attacked her. Amidst the turmoil, Eri secretly slipped her feathers toward the sky. She bought time by going along with Suzu's talk and created a huge magic circle there with her grey feathers.

That magic circle was shining gray even while spurting out muddy black miasma. That shape was exactly the same like the crack of space that appeared above God Mountain.

The déjà vu that Suzu harbored was immediately proven to be correct. As expected, similar with the crack of space a lot of monsters appeared from there. What Eri created seemed to be a summoning magic circle.

"The nonsense is enough until this far isn't it? Just when I thought what are you going to talk about…Suzu really exposed your stupidity plainly here aren't youuu? Thank you for letting me buying so much timeee. Well theeen, can you die swallowed by these waves of monster?"

"…"

This time it was Suzu who was the silent one. From the sky, monsters that could fly or fought midair appeared continuously. The number of the surviving corpse beast soldiers was also still around seventy.

In contrast, Suzu's subordinate monsters, there were three missile bees, and one wind blade praying mantis, although they didn't die but they bore heavy wounds that made them unable to continue to fight. Although it was only a few but it was still a decrease in Suzu's fighting strength.

No matter how strong Inaba was, in front of the violence of number it would be only a problem of time before he was overwhelmed.

And then, far away the sound of fierce battle was still resounding, the possibility of Shizuku and Ryutaro coming for Suzu's

reinforcement was remarkably low.

And so, Eri's expression warped in ecstasy. Indeed, Suzu's strength made her got cold sweat, but when the lid was opened, Suzu pointlessly wasted her time to persuade Eri and now she got the situation reversed, it was really an amusing joke. "Really what a stupid girl", Eri whispered one more time inside her mouth.

"I am your be-st-fri-end yes, even after a fashion? Then I'll at least listen to your last will you know?"

A great number of monsters covered the sky, amidst the darkness that fell on the battlefield like a dark cloud, Eri lifted up her sword and said such thing. Most likely, when that sword was swung down, an all-out attack would start.

In contrast, Suzu who realized that her word didn't reach Eri's heart and now she fell into an absolutely desperate situation said,

"Eri. You looked down on Suzu too much. ——Inaba-san! Please take care of the magic circle!"

"Kyukyuu!"

Taking out the iron fan that she settled on her waist before, as though to say that she had resolved for everything, Suzu stared back straight at Eri with eyes filled with determination without any unease or agitation there.

That excessively strong gaze made Eri took a step back unconsciously. When she noticed what she did she gritted her teeth. And then, feeling fed up with all the worthless talk, she swung down her sword that was equal with the scythe of the death god.

At that moment, the monsters in the sky and the corpse beast soldiers attacked all at once.

However, the corpse beast soldiers went toward the monsters.

"Wha-, what is-. Even though my command reached them properly-!"

Looking at the sudden friendly fire which began between the soldiers and monsters, Eri yelled angrily with confused tone mixed in. Eri's command was certainly reaching the soldiers without any obstruction. Despite so, they mistook their target and assaulted the monsters.

The one who brought the answer to the confused Eri was Suzu herself.

"Suzu's black crest butterfly——what do you think Suzu was letting them flying around for?"

"Do, don't tell me…"

"Finally noticed? You see, these children, they can scatter scales with various traits. Looks like the soldiers has been showered with enough. Right now, they should be looking at the monsters as Suzu and Suzu's monsters."

Eri felt like clicking her tongue. It seemed Suzu was thoroughly prepared.

Furthermore, at that time, a smashed sound resounded as though making doubly sure everything was screwed for Eri. Looking at the sky, a part of the summoning circle was blown away. At that spot, there was Inaba in a stance of kicking. He slipped through the gap between the monsters fully covering the sky in high speed and destroyed the magic circle.

The corpse soldiers who were originally the soldiers and knights of the kingdom, who were experts in anti-monster battle, with their specs increased like a joke they now killed the summoned monsters one after another.

There, naturally the subordinate monsters of Suzu, also the injured ones were healed by the corpse soldiers with healing ability because they looked like allies. After they returned to the battle line, the monsters in the sky were completely reduced to the hunted side.

Eri gritted her teeth while making the monsters to prioritize dealing with the black crest butterflies. The loyal monsters headed toward

the butterflies fluttering in the battlefield and rushed them all at once.

At that moment,

DOOOOON!! DOOOOON!! DOOOOON!!

Flowers of explosion bloomed one after another at the sky of the ruined city. The moment the butterflies were touched, they instantly exploded.

The voice of Suzu resounded to the dumbfounded Eri.

“Did you think that Suzu can really subdue a total of a hundred butterfly monsters? Even though only three days has passed?”

“…Are you saying there are also fakes there?”

“Yep. More than half are Nagumo-kun’s handmade butterfly golem. In exchange of scales they are carrying a large amount of combusting powder, see. Although it’s only mini treasure warehouse, seems like gunpowder that cannot be compared with dynamite is packed full into it. How scary isn’t it.”

Eri narrowed her eyes. When she looked, she didn’t notice before but there were black crest butterflies clinging on the head or the back of all the soldiers. Anybody would understand what the meaning of that was. While the soldiers exterminated the monsters and decreased their number, simultaneously it was also the countdown for the death of the soldiers.

“…This is checkmate? In this kind of place? Ahahah, how strangeeee. For Suzu to be the one who is destroying my plan. Even though you could just grovel like before without standing up again. Is this, also because of that monster I wondeeer.”

“Suzu don’t think she can say that Nagumo-kun has no relation in this. But, Suzu is here is unmistakably by Suzu’s own will. Because Suzu thought that if Suzu leaves this alone then Eri will be killed by Nagumo-kun.”

“What? Are you planning to say that you saved me I wonder?”

“Yep. Suzu come in order to save Eri. Because Suzu wants to restart with Eri one more time.”

“…enough already.”

Eri fell quiet once more. But, different from until now, it was only for a moment. Right after that, she invoked darkness magic ‘Slip Mind’ to Suzu while at the same time leaped at her. In a straight line, with her eyes carrying killing intent.

As though to say, would Suzu kill her or would she get killed by her, there was nothing else that could be done but to choose between those two choices. As though to cut away all of Suzu’s words as complete nonsense. As though to declare that it was impossible for her to take Suzu’s hand after this late.

“AaAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!! JUST DIEEEEEEEEEEEE-!!”

Toward Eri who performed suicide attack while yelling an abnormal shriek, Suzu bit her lip tightly. Her feeling wasn’t conveyed to Eri. It couldn’t be conveyed. Frustrating. Mortifying. Her reached out hand——didn’t reach.

“Why, it has become like this…surely, Suzu mustn’t say such words isn’t it.”

Suzu who looked like she was laughing and crying, bit her lip and blood trickled down, then she swept her fan.

At that moment, barriers were deployed enveloping the rushing Eri. Naturally, Eri used her disintegration ability and immediately cut apart the barrier but she was forced to stop for a moment. That was a fatal opening that was created forcefully by Suzu.

The moment Eri destroyed the barrier, the light petals that were controlled by the other iron fan rushed to Eri and wrapped her. Eri tried to sweep them away using her gray wings and bombardment and also her sword, but the light petals were like leaves fluttering by the wind, or possibly like river water that flowed unhurriedly, they swam in the air and evaded the attacks.

And then, right after that,

“Everything into the light, ——’Holy Severance – Falling Flower of Light’.”

Light exploded.

All the light petals exploded in a chain reaction. A combination technique of ‘Holy Severance – Sakura’ and ‘Holy Severance – Burst’. Surrounded by flower storm without any place to escape, impacts were fired inside without any spot spared from it.

With a timing that matched that, further thunderous sounds rang out consecutively in the battlefield. Along with those explosive sounds, several grand flowers of flame and impact bloomed proudly in the sky of the ruined city. The corpse beast soldiers that finished defeating the monsters were swallowed by the self-explosion of the dummy golems of black crest butterfly attached on their body and died.

Suzu was bathed in orange light by the several explosive flames. On her head, the fluffy Inaba fell. Inaba’s fluffy front leg patted on Suzu’s head *peshi peshi* as though to console her.

From inside the flame of light, *bobat* sound rang and a silhouette fell. White smoke was rising from Eri’s whole body and she fell on the ground. Her four limbs were twisted to strange direction, her ash gray wings were already scattered. Magical shockwave also exploded simultaneously at that time so her magic power should be already blown away too.

Suzu quickly waved her iron fan.

“——’Light Halo’.”

Then, halos of light linked into a net that materialized at the falling point of Eri. Eri was caught by that and she was dropped on the ground.

Suzu accompanied by Inaba landed down beside Eri.

“Kahah, gohoh……just, kill me.”

It appeared she barely retained her consciousness. Eri didn’t even

move her empty eyes toward Suzu, she was staring far away and demanded for the killing blow.

“Eri…”

“Fri, end? Impos, sible…dying, is….better”

“…”

There was no disdain or contempt. Eri talked as though she wasn’t looking at Suzu, to that, Suzu bit her lip tightly.

“Everything, is just, the worst. …I, only…”

“Eri? Only…what? Tell Suzu.”

“…”

The words that stopped midway might be words that spilled out unconsciously even for Eri. Even with Suzu asking, she didn’t show any sign of opening her mouth anymore. It was obvious that Eri’s body was in a state where life was spilling out from her. Although her body was upgraded with the technique of apostle creation, the might of Suzu’s trump card the ‘Holy Severance – Falling Flower of Light’ wasn’t something half-assed. Without any treatment, she would only expire like this.

Suzu took out a container in the shape of test tube from her ‘Treasure Warehouse II’. The content was healing medicine. It was something that had its effect dramatically increased by Hajime’s metamorphosis magic, so it had ten times the effect of the highest grade healing medicine. It couldn’t be like god water that immediately completely recovered the health, but it was able to keep alive someone even from a near death state.

But, Eri who saw Suzu taking that out and guessed what she was going to do, pierced Suzu with a severe gaze that was unthinkable coming from someone who was about to die. There was no word. But, those eyes talked more eloquently than anything. She would decline any pity from Suzu even if she was on the verge of death.

Suzu clutched the healing medicine tightly, wondering with

clenched teeth if this was going to be their conclusion. This was something that she was half-resigned to. Even so, as expected her heart clenched tightly.

But, she couldn't be half-hearted. She couldn't reach Eri's heart. She couldn't reach her. She couldn't half-heartedly let her stay alive here. The path to let Eri live and brought her back wasn't by sheer strength, it had to be done by connecting their heart and pulling her hand. If Suzu acted half-heartedly here, the tragedy of that day would be repeated once more in the future.

That was the only thing that she absolutely mustn't do. A wish that blindly believed at convenient future and averted eyes from reality, what kind of future such thing would be connected with was something that Suzu understood really well to the depth of her bone.

Then, at the very least not by other's hand, this should be done by her hand.

That was Suzu's resolve.

Because although it was warped and imperfect but Eri was once her best friend. And then even now, she was able to wish to be best friend with her once more. That was why…

Suzu stored back the healing medicine. And then, in exchange her hand gripped the iron fan tightly.

Suzu and Eri's gazes crossed.

But, at that time, suddenly immense magic power burst up from a place that was separated from them by several ruined buildings between here. Before long the pure white magic power that stabbed the sky changed into a shape of human ten meters tall, the arm of that giant was swung down below.

The fierce impact was transmitted even until the place where Suzu and Eri were at.

"…Kouki, kun."

Eri opened her eyes and whispered.

Right after that, the light giant dispersed. It was as though it showed the fate of the caster…

“Kouki, kun…Kouki-kun!!”

“E, Eri-!?”

Eri’s body that should have been in the death’s door instantly shined gray.

And then, at the next moment her flickering wings and ragged body flew away with immense force toward the place where the light giant was seen.

Suzu who was unable to immediately move from being completely dumbfounded returned to her senses and chased after Eri in hurry.

Arifureta Chapter 167

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/168/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. He also did the edits.

The Respective Conclusions

After Suzu pursued Eri and vanished at the other side of the ruined buildings, Shizuku and Ryutaro held a battle evenly against the attacking sixty corpse beast soldiers while also opposing Kouki.

If Ryutaro who metamorphosed his own flesh and invoked advanced metamorphosis magic 'Sixth Heaven's Demon Transformation' to display a monster's special characteristic approached Kouki, then the soldiers would try to hinder him or possibly take him by surprise, but Shizuku would deal with them.

The swarm of black katana she received from Hajime——'Living Swords' rushed freely around the battlefield, they cooperated like a single living thing and grouped on the soldiers and cut them down.

"'Group Two – Flash Blossom'! 'Group Five – Flying Claw'!"

Shizuku's command echoed in the battlefield. Following that command, inside the swarm of twenty katana, four katana cut apart the large shields of the corpse beast soldiers who were possessing defensive type characteristic magic, even space was cut along with them. And then, the ranks of the soldiers became disordered. Four more black katana launched wind blades toward the soldiers who

lost their steel shields.

The wind blades soaring invisibly with spectacular timing and mercilessly cut apart two large shield holders. The soldiers didn't get bisected because of their high defensive power, but both their arms were severed from the shoulder and rotated in the air.

"'Group Three – Draw Sky'! 'Group Four – Flash Blossom'!"

Furthermore, nimble soldiers were using the shield holder soldiers as stepping stone, jumping in the air to stab Ryutaro in the back, but they were pulled back forcefully by four black katana shining dark blue. The large sword and spear they held in their hand were attached tight *gakin* to the blade of the black katana flying in the air.

The large sword user and spear user who exposed fatal opening were immediately split vertically into two by the space rifts launched behind them. As expected, although they were corpse beast soldiers they would be rendered unable to fight without fail after getting bisected vertically like that.

Even the soldiers with healing type characteristic magic would need time to heal the loss of limbs or from getting bisected. And then, there was no way Shizuku would give them that kind of time so this was the same like removing them from the stage.

The soldiers attempted simultaneous attacks from up, down, left, and right to such Shizuku. Reddish black glints' of eyes stabbed Shizuku, the killing intents rode the wind and caressed her skin.

Yet, a soft mentality that would shrink back against something of that level had already been thrown away by Shizuku. Especially now that at her side she had the swarm of black katana given as protection to her from the man she was in love with.

"'First Group – Gravity Flash'! Cut apart, 'Soaring Claw – Four Ream'!!"

Four black katana pointed their tip outward at the four directions around Shizuku and then they orbited around her, the katana even

rotated with twirls that looked elegant. The skill that was invoked was a skill that could temporarily cut gravity——'Gravity Flash'.

The result, the approaching soldiers were suddenly released from the chain of gravity and their balance was greatly broken. Not letting such decisive opening escaping, Shizuku's sword-draw slashed. With a speed to the degree where her sword arm looked blurred, four sword-draws were repeated within an instant. Each time bell-like sound *clink* rang, invisible slash made the head of the soldiers flew.

Furthermore, from behind them the black katana that were launched to the surrounding returned with fierce speed, cutting into pieces the headless soldiers without any difficulty.

Shizuku's 'Living Swords' were basically organized into five groups with four katana in each group. By chanting the group name and skill name, she could give the same order to one group. Also, every single one of the twenty katana had their own respective name like 'Slash One, Slash Two', Shizuku could also give an order to individual sword using those names. When Shizuku chanted the name of the technique, each of the Living Swords would attack the enemy with their own judgment using sword art based on Yaegashi-style that wasn't inferior to the skill of Shizuku herself.

Exactly as the name of 'Living Swords', all the black katana could have mutual understanding and image sharing with Shizuku using metamorphosis magic, so all the black katana could be controlled as the display of Shizuku's will without any time lag.

And, at that time, an angry yell reached Shizuku who was evading the fierce assault of the soldiers.

"Shizuku! Dodge!"

"____"

A warning from Ryutaro. Without confirming the content of that warning, Shizuku activated 'Air Force' and 'Ground Shrinker' and evacuated from that spot in one breath.

Right after that, the spot where Shizuku was at just a moment before was shot through by the flash of Heaven Might along with thunderous roar. One soldier who was swallowed in a bad luck was erased not even leaving any dust behind.

“Kouki. Bastaard, you purposefully overlapped the line of fire. Now you’ve really done it.”

“I’m thoroughly familiar with Ryutaro’s movement pattern after all. It’s really easy to guide your movement.”

“Shut up! If it’s about that, then even me also know how you gonna move!”

Ryutaro rapidly approached Kouki with his ogre flesh. The scene of the huge body that easily passed two-meter scattering shockwave around while advancing had the intensity that could make anyone felt their stomach went cold.

“That’s pointless.”

However, on the other hand, Kouki’s expression didn’t even twitch. And then, without any chanting or gesture, the dragon on his back——the avatar of Heaven Might was controlled and shaped into a shield. Although, because the shield was made from Heaven Might itself, even though it was taking the shape of a shield it was still the light of destruction that contained the property of attack power of annihilation.

“Come on! ‘Folded Vajra’!”

Ryutaro didn’t falter. He crossed both his arms and applied the special trait of the ogre he metamorphosed into, the deployment of multiple ‘Vajra’. It was a derivative technique that boasted toughness in the same level with concentrated reinforcement, this ‘Vajra’ was folded into double and triple layers and formed a protection of steel wall.

Ryutaro who was turned into a single steel mass charged into the shield of Heaven Might without stopping.

And then, even while his ‘Folded Vajra’ was blown away, he

splendidly managed to breakthrough with only some wound.

“Yes. I thought that if it’s Ryutaro he would surely do that.”

The voice that resounded there was Kouki’s calm voice.

The moment Ryutaro charged through the shield, with excellent timing a breath attack approached him. Ryutaro who had just released his ‘Vajra’ was approached by destructive light where it wouldn’t end well for him if it hit even with his tough flesh of ogre.

But, even while being illuminated by the light of Heaven Might, Ryutaro showed a fearless smile. As though to say “I thought you are going to do that yeah?”.

“Come, wolf king of the abyss, ‘Sixth Heaven’s Demon Transformation’!”

Right after that, the breath of Heaven Might swallowed where Ryutaro was.

At the same time, Kouki turned his holy sword to the side and took a defensive stance, there *gakin* hard and powerful impact sound rang.

The tip of a claw was barely stopped in front of Kouki’s eyes. The one who unleashed that claw was a bizarre shape with wolf head, furry upper body, and five sharp claws growing. It looked exactly like a werewolf in a fairy tale.

Kouki wordlessly brandished the light dragon to attack. But, when the light dragon’s claw swept at where Ryutaro was, Ryutaro had already circled to the opposite side and his roundhouse kick attacked Kouki’s shoulder. That abnormal speed blew away Kouki who could only gaze in wonderment.

And, the next moment Ryutaro caught up to the blown away Kouki, his wicked claw swung.

“Kuh”

The outrageous speed and offensive power made Kouki raised a

groan reflexively. Even so, while repelling the claw with his sword, he commanded the light dragon and let flew countless light bullets. The Heaven Might's light that swept up like gatling gun became a counterattack that assaulted Ryutaro, but Ryutaro evaded all of that while leaving behind afterimages.

Metamorphosis magic 'Sixth Heaven's Demon Transformation'——Mode Werewolf. Compared to the ogre shape the power and endurance of this from dropped, but the speed increased to an incomparable degree.

Ryutaro who slipped through the light bullets rushed into Kouki's bosom and lunged with a slash of sharp claws.

"Something like this-"

Instantly, Kouki broke the shape of the light dragon and exploded the light of the Heaven Might. Light swelled up all at once with Kouki as the center. Kouki who turned into a star made Ryutaro unable to endure and withdrew back.

But, his body was quite burned from what he couldn't evade. Ryutaro had immediately crossed both his arms and protected his vital spots, but this model wasn't suited for its endurance. His fur was greatly carbonized and smoked while he was made to take distance.

"Ryutaro! You okay!?"

"Ou, I only got hit a little bit there. Just this much is no biggie."

Shizuku who cut apart several soldiers and rushed toward Ryutaro poured down special healing liquid she received from Hajime on Ryutaro's head. This time Ryutaro's body smoked up for a different reason while Ryutaro's wolfish gaze glared at Kouki.

"Rather than that, as expected that Heaven Might is troublesome. It changes shape too much. I cannot attack him when it matters."

"Then, let's try it with the two of us this time. Thanks to Ryutaro holding back Kouki, I have finished taking care the majority of the soldiers."

“Okay. Suzu is also going all out after all. No way we can say that we cannot win even with two people here.”

“Right. We are going to beat up that idiot quickly!”

“Ou-!”

Confirming that Kouki changed the shape of Heaven Might into a light dragon once more and fired breath attack to them, Shizuku and Ryutaro dispersed in one breath.

Looking at that, Kouki shook his head once and then burst out with even more magic power, his expression was an expression of determination.

“I’m getting worried for Eri. I got surprised in various things by the two of you, however, you two has used up your trump card right? I’ll end this right now.”

Kouki simultaneously invoked the mini light dragons, the Heaven Might version of Sky Flying Sword, and the Heaven Might version of Heaven Meteor Rain in the attempt to overrun the two altogether with the battlefield.

The current Kouki was just like a fortress that randomly shot laser cannons. The light of Heaven Might that was formed into various shapes around Kouki thoroughly destroyed the ruined buildings in the area while approaching Ryutaro and Shizuku to envelop them.

But, putting it another way it also could be said that it was a rough attack that lack refinement. For that reason, Ryutaro laughed. Because he had guessed that Kouki who got impatient after witnessing their persistence would surely rely on large technique.

Right now it was the time to show their trump card that was prepared for against Kouki.

“Come, great tree that pierces the sky-, ‘Sixth Heaven’s Demon Transformation’-!”

Amidst the many approaching Heaven Might, the fur of the werewolf fell out, and that body transformed. Everywhere

throughout the body turned gnarled, the skin was dyed into blackish brown color, the hair also changed into deep green color. In all that changes, only the eyes were releasing glaring light of reddish black color.

Right after that, Ryutaro was attacked by small light dragons and the meteor shower of Heaven Might. Ryutaro didn't even dodge, he charged toward Kouki while being swallowed into the light.

"Ryutaro, sleep for a while for me."

Kouki was convinced that Ryutaro was defeated and murmured that. Putting aside the ogre shape that was specialized for defense, there was no way for Ryutaro right now who didn't seem to use 'Vajra' to be able to endure that.

But, that thinking was immediately proved to be wrong.

"Don't screw with me. No way I'm going to sleep before beating you until you wake up."

"Wha-!?"

Ryutaro leaped out unhurt from inside the light.

And then, Kouki who was completely taken by surprise and shown opening was punched by the fist of the rapidly approaching Ryutaro. The straight punch that lunged straight stabbed toward Kouki's stomach across the armor. The aim that accurately struck to the solar plexus produced a grand impact that was transmitted toward the inside of Kouki's body without anything spared, whipping up his internal organ.

"Gohah!?"

Kouki knew well about the destructive power of Ryutaro's fist, but still, even with his holy armor and impact mitigation skill, the terrific power that might blow away his consciousness made his mind fell into chaos for a moment. His throat was blocked by the blood he vomited from the unbearable pain.

Metamorphosis magic 'Sixth Heaven's Demon

Transformation'——Model Trent. It was a plant type monster that lived at floor ninety of the abyss. Its special trait was to absorb light and converted the light energy that it absorbed. The converted energy could be changed into anything, whether magic power, stamina, or pure muscle power.

Yes, Ryutaro with this trent shape absorbed the light of Heaven Might that was a light element magic, he then converted that into physical strength.

Because the impact didn't disperse and was concentrated at one point when it was let out, Kouki didn't get blown away, his body was lifted up and laid down on the fist. To this Ryutaro laughed fiercely at Kouki.

"Yoo, are you waking up a little with this, best friend."

"Guh, Ryuta——"

"This one is a freebie. Just how long you are going to sleep talking huh!"

"——Gua!?"

The face of Kouki who couldn't move immediately from the impact was punched by Ryutaro's fist that was like a rock. *Goba-!* Incomprehensible sound rang out from the attack to the face, Kouki scattered around nosebleed while getting blown away.

Even so, his body that was reinforced by Ehito was barely able to keep the connection of his consciousness. He somehow controlled the light dragon that was connected with him and tried to fix his posture.

In a moment, a goosebump suddenly went through Kouki's spine. At the same time, his 'Presence Detection' notified him of the existence of the swordsman lying in wait in the direction where he was blown away.

Naturally, the one who endured the storm of Heaven Might and corpse beast soldiers and circled around was Shizuku. She was standing still in her stance of sword-drawing, while compressing her

magic power to an amazing density. Her sheath was creaking loudly as though unable to endure the power, dark blue magic power was overflowing out from the mouth of the sheath.

Kouki desperately attempted to put a brake on himself while calling Shizuku's name with a voice that sounded similar with a groan from the burden in his body.

"Shi, zuku-"

"Be obedient and accept it, this one attack."

Like that, while her figure vanished with 'No Beat' Shizuku stepped forward while faintly whispering "——'Soul Demolition'". The flash of sword-draw that was unleashed along with that whisper drew a splendid straight line on the air and bisected Kouki.

"____"

The definite sensation of a slash passing through inside his body made Kouki screamed wordlessly while feeling that he was unmistakably cut.

But, he finally escaped from the impact Ryutaro inflicted on him while seeing Shizuku who passed through him and stayed unmoving in slashing posture, and then he managed to stop moving. Kouki's eyes reflexively widened, and then, feeling dumbfounded his hand crawled on his body.

Under his hands there wasn't any sign of cut for even a bit, his body was certainly still connected in one piece safely.

"Just, what in the world…-, what, my magic power is-"

For a moment, Kouki was thinking something convenient that the feeling of getting cut was only his imagination and as expected Shizuku was unable to cut him, but right after that, he was made to know that Shizuku's slash had definitely reached him.

The light dragon that Kouki had on his back was split into two with the upper part slipping off diagonally, but it dispersed all at once right after. Not only that, even the meteor swarm of Heaven Might

– Heaven Meteor Rain that he launched, also the flying slashes of Heaven Might – Sky Flying Sword, and also the small light dragons that flew around like all-range weapon, they were all dispersed.

In that situation, a feeling of lethargy attacked him like it was only natural. Kouki's body staggered and fell on the ground. Even his flight using the light dragon, also the 'Air Force' from his boot became unable to be maintained.

Even so in order to avoid falling to his death Kouki landed on his knees. Shizuku and Ryutaro landed down in front of him.

"Shi, zuku, what, did you do…"

Kouki asked with trembling voice.

"'Soul Demolition'——the base of this skill is the ability of soul magic that could interfere with the immaterial of the living thing. This skill will search for the source of power in the target. The target's magic power, stamina, mental, those things that eye couldn't see could even be cut with this. Cutting only what you want to cut…the farthest territory that a swordsman should reach, I cheated and progressed until there." (TN: There is the implication that she was asking Hajime's help in accomplishing this.)

Kouki's eyes opened wide at Shizuku's explanation. His expression was dumbfounded as though to say "What the hell with that".

It was only normal for him to be like that. After all Shizuku didn't affect Kouki's body and only cut apart the magic power overflowing inside the body. Indeed, it could be said that cutting only what one wanted to cut regardless of any obstacle was the swordsman's farthest territory.

Shizuku was being humble saying that she was cheating as a swordsman thanks to the help of the black katana, but in actuality just by invoking 'Soul Demolition' wouldn't so easily let the user choose the target to cut.

After all, it was an act of penetrating every factor of the human body and cut only the target. It would take a really clear image

supplementation and above all a tenacious will to accomplish that. A clear will without any hesitation, of cutting only what one wanted to cut while absolutely not wounding anything outside it at all.

It sounded easy to do just by listening to the explanation, but it was actually not as simple as it sounds, it was something impossible if the swordsman wasn't someone at Shizuku's level. At the very least even Kouki who learned the same Yeagashi-style wouldn't be able to use 'Soul Demolition' perfectly.

"…But, that was a bit of a blunder. I thought that I'm going to sever the curse of 'Bind Soul' with the attack just now, but I couldn't reach it because it was protected by magic power. …You are still watching a convenient dream right now aren't you?"

While the swarm of katana was following on her back, with a *cling* sound Shizuku prepared the black katana in her hand once more, seeing that Kouki's expression distorted.

"Shizu, ku. You couldn't, cut me, because…you are still, thinking of me, in your heart….that feeling, still remained, right? Nagumo's, brainwashing, isn't perfect. …I cannot, feel your killing intent, is the proof of that."

"Kouki…"

"It's, fine. Ryutaro also, didn't, try to kill me. I will save the two of you——"

Kouki's words were halted. Because Shizuku unleashed the 'Soul Demolition' with the drawing out of her black katana. Ryutaro who was crossing his arms on the side while wrinkling up his eyebrows patted Shizuku's shoulder as though to say 'thanks for the hard work'.

Shizuku also sighed 'fuuh' while sheathing her katana back. That was because she was convinced that Eri's 'Bind Soul' was cut. With this, the mind that was filled all over with inconsistencies planted by Eri should be crumbling.

“Kouki. How do you feel? With this the brainwashing should be released already. What have you been doing until now. What are happening right now…you understand aren’t you?”

“…”

“Well, no matter. Anyway, just reflect on yourself there. Later we gotta chase after Nagumo and others quickly, punch that shitty god, and then help the guys fighting on the surface……we are going back yeah, Kouki.”

“…”

Shizuku and Ryutaro called at Kouki, but there wasn’t any reply from Kouki. He kept being down on the ground on all fours without even lifting his face. His expression was hidden by his hair and completely unseen.

Although, even though he was not replying it seemed that he wasn’t in silence. The ears of Ryutaro and Shizuku caught the faint sound. A small voice that didn’t even form words. Kouki was hanging his head down while whispering inaudibly.

“Kouki?”

“————Lies, impossible. This is strange. Absolutely, wrong. Because I am correct. I was just being brainwashed. For me to be the enemy…to Shizuku…to Ryutaro…what had I done…even though it shouldn’t be like this…even though I just want to act righteously…I just want to be a hero…just like Jii-chan…that’s, all…why something like this is…everything is stolen…because Shizuku and Kaori too were stolen by that guy…Ryutaro is also that guy’s ally…”

“O, oi. Kouki!”

“That’s right…this is a trap. A foul scheme…that guy plotted this…I just got caught in it…I’m not in the wrong. I’m not wrong. This is because that guy stole everything important to me. The wrong one is that guy. If only that guy isn’t here then everything will go well. Yet, Kaori and Shizuku and Ryutaro and Suzu too, everyone, to that

guy…this is a betrayal. I was betrayed. I was-, betrayed! By all of you!”

Kouki ignored Shizuku and Ryutaro’s calling and kept whispering before he suddenly lifted his face in the blink of eye with a dangerous look, glaring at the two with a gaze filled with hatred.

No, perhaps that expression, should be called as grief instead. The feeling of guilt and remorse, the uneasiness of being unable to return anymore, fretfulness, despair, and so on, the saturation of the negative emotions was attacking *himself*, even he himself already didn’t understand just what should he do, it was that kind of expression. Kouki was in a state of panic.

His appearance, was just like a lost child.

But, the strength that he possessed wasn’t that of a child by any means. A scream that was filled with plenty of Kouki’s hatred and grief resounded, at the same time his magic power that should have dried up surged out with an unbelievable force. The magic power thunderously twisted in a spiral and pierced the sky.

That radiance, was as if…

“-, Kouki! Stop it! Your magic power should have dried up already! Doing more than this will affect your life!”

“Damn it! What the hell! Why his magic power is overflowing like this! Wasn’t it gone already-“

“It should have been gone! It was severed together with the line that supplied magic power to Kouki. Even now he isn’t absorbing the magic factor at the area to recover!”

“Then just why-!”

“Something likes that-, because it is gone then he can only take it from another thing! Perhaps, his life force or his soul, he is pulling out magic power forcefully from those kinds of things right now! Sooner or later this won’t end well for him!”

“Fucking shit! Koukii! Come back to your sensees!”

Yes, as if it was the radiance of Kouki's life.

Shizuku had certainly used 'Soul Demolition' to sever the magic power and the supply line that provided him with infinite magic power inside Kouki. There was no doubt about that. And then, even with 'High-Speed Magic Recovery' that recovered oneself by absorbing magic factor from outside, it was impossible to recover this radically. Actually, even looking at the flow of magic power that Kouki spouted out, they couldn't catch sight of any magic from the surrounding flowing into Kouki at all.

That there was the magic power that shouldn't be there, meant that Kouki was paying some kind of compensation to forcefully bring it from somewhere, such thinking was a valid one. And then, this method that normally was impossible couldn't be expected to be safe or anything. If Kouki was left alone as it was, undoubtedly there would be compensation that Kouki couldn't shut his eyes from.

In front of the storm of magic power that released outrageous light and pressure, Shizuku and Ryutaro braced themselves, they held their arms in front of their face while calling at Kouki. But, Kouki kept being in a frenzied state, his ear didn't listen. With hatred and grief in his expression, it was as though he was trying to destroy the reality before his eyes, no, it was as though he was trying to destroy himself, the radiance of his light was strengthening.

"…Anything and everything are over. I wonder, why has it become like this. Kaori is there, Shizuku is there, Ryutaro is there, Eri and Suzu are also there, together with everyone, we are overcoming the difficulty…that's how it should be, and yet"

Kouki's monolog with an expression of crying smile, was resounding extremely clearly.

"Something like this is not what I wished for. If everything, is lost then…if not a single one cannot be taken back then…then I'd rather everything is gone, with this hand!"

The ground and building in the area that were hit by the torrent of magic power became dust and got annihilated. Right now, the

radiance of magic power became the radiance of Heaven Might. At the same time, that raging light was gradually focusing and forming shape.

“…Oi, Shizuku. I’ll take care of the Heaven Might. I’ll leave Kouki to you.”

“Are you sane? That Heaven Might is far more dangerous than before you know? You won’t be able to absorb it even in trent model. …You are going to die there.”

The words that Ryutaro murmured while enduring the tyranny of light with a grim expression, made Shizuku frowned even more. But, in contrast Ryutaro was making a fearless smile on his lips.

“Heh, I’m not gonna die here. No way I’m gonna get killed by that guy’s hand. I cannot die here no matter what, that’s why I’m absolutely not gonna die!”

“You muscle brain. There is no logic or anything in what you said just now. …But, fine then. Right now is not the time where logic is needed. Beat up that sulky desperate idiot until he is crying and apologizing okay!”

“Ou-!”

Ryutaro leaped forward. With a fierce smile, he clenched his fist hardly like a rock filled with the resolve of bringing back his best friend without fail.

Right after that, along with a scream, a torrent of light——the bombardment of Heaven Might spiraled out from the thrust forward holy sword and violently assaulted the two.

But, Ryutaro didn’t falter. Rather “BRING IT OOON!” he raised a war cry and met the attack from the front. He crossed both his arms and stepped forward while fully displaying the trait of the large tree monster.

Along with a tremendous impact sound, the bombardment of Heaven Might directly hit Ryutaro. But, Ryutaro wasn’t annihilated. He wasn’t blown away. Like a rock that blocked a raging stream

and changed the water flow, like a towering large tree that didn't even twitch against a furious storm, he kept blocking the light of devastation right from the front and advanced a step, and then one more step forward.

Looking at that unshakeable figure, Kouki's eyes opened wide. He was convinced that the Heaven Might that he unleashed right now had the greatest power compared to everything until now. Yet despite so, Ryutaro blocked it from the front. As though to say, that he wouldn't run away from Kouki, as though to say that he wouldn't avert his eyes.

The reddish black glint of eyes of his transformed best friend that pierced him straight from between the torrent of light, made Kouki's leg backed off unconsciously. Those eyes were telling him "I'm absolutely, going right there. I'm not gonna let you run away no matter what!" more eloquently than anything.

Like that, Kouki who was half dazed from that intense will of his best friend came back to his senses with a 'hah'. When he noticed, he had been approached until there wasn't that much distance remaining between them.

"Do, don't come! Don't come here! If you, come closer than that, I'm going to kill you for real! Even if it's Ryutaro, I'm really going to kill you!"

Kouki yelled with an expression that was going to break in tears anytime in derangement. Seeing the figure of Ryutaro who had approached near him until the distance where he could even see his face, Kouki's heart became even more disturbed.

Yes, Ryutaro was already wounded all over his body. No matter how great the trait of light-absorbing the trent model had, there was this thing called limit, in actuality, the light of destruction that couldn't be dealt by the trent's trait was making both his arms torn all over, everywhere in his body had blood spurting out.

But, nonetheless Ryutaro was still smiling fearlessly. And then, he advanced, one more step.

“A, a, aaAAAAAAAAAH!”

Kouki screamed. Even himself already didn’t understand just what he was doing. He was merely repeating ‘it shouldn’t be like this’ in his heart while wielding his strength to deny the reality before his eyes.

The mass of Heaven Might that was completely formed was a giant that could even come out in legend. The giant of light held its large arm aloft, and clenched its fist. And then, light exploded with Kouki’s scream as the nourishment, like that the fist swung downward toward Ryutaro below like a star.

DOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO-!!!

A thunderous sound resounded. The ground was bursting open with the place where Ryutaro was at as the center, everything was swept away in a radial shape.

“A, aa…”

Kouki moaned. While being in a daze he was convinced in the corner of his mind. Right now, he had killed his best friend with his own hand. Kouki’s heart was creaking. His eyes lost focus, meaningless thought was running around in his head.

Like that, Kouki’s mind was almost breaking down, at that time,

“Yoo, best friend. What, a shitty pathetic face, you are making there.”

“Eh?”

The dust was blown away.

There Ryutaro was standing. He was alive. Not only that, while grinning fiercely, he was stopping the crushing blow of the giant with both his arms lifted up. His body that was like a gnarled blackish brown tree had cracks running everywhere on it, blood was spurting out from all over his tattered body, yet the strength residing in those eyes wasn’t weakening even for a bit.

“Ryu, Ryutaro? Su, such thing, why, this should be impossible to bloc…”

“Stupid…idiot. A fist, like this…without any spirit in it…is not gonna work on me. …Hey, Kouki. You…just cannot kill me. Do you…understand why huh?”

“U, e?”

“See. That’s because, the current me…is invincible. Since the time I decided-, that I’m gonna bring back my stupid idiot best friend-…I am invincible-. That’s why-, you…won’t be able to kill me-. Until I bring you back-…I’m absolutely…not gonna get killed or anything —“

“u, a…wh, why are you, going that far…”

The heroic words and figure of his best friend caused Kouki’s voice to be caught up in his throat.

Facing such Kouki, Ryutaro smiled broadly with wounds all over his body and formed his words.

“Something like that, is obvious, right? If your friend went the wrong path…punching, and stopping him…is a best friend’s…role ain’t it.”

“Because, a best, friend…”

“Ou. …But, well, for this time, that role, I’ll leave it to her. It’s pathetic but, my fist…doesn’t look like…it will reach.”

“Eh?”

Hearing Ryutaro’s words, Kouki was taken aback for a moment. Ahead of his gaze, under the giant’s crushing blow that Ryutaro blocked, a black shadow was rushing through. With her trademark ponytail fluttering, and a dignified gaze that was looking straight at him, it was the girl who was his childhood friend.

“——’Soul Demolition’!”

“——!?”

The invisible slash cut apart the magic power inside Kouki once more.

The giant of Heaven Might split into two and the upper part slipped off diagonally while dispersing. Underneath it, Ryutaro collapsed with all his strength used up. Before Kouki’s eyes were a figure standing still in a stance of drawn blade staring at him with a gaze that looked likes obsidian stone. While all of those were reflected in his sight, Kouki was falling backward from the slash’s impact.

And then, Kouki who saw how the intent to attack didn’t disappear from Shizuku’s gaze even after she swung her black katana, “Aa, so this is my retribution…” with a strangely calm feeling he prepared to accept the blade of his childhood friend.

But, there a voice resounded. A familiar dignified voice.

“Grit your teeth-! You big idiot-!”

“-!? Guah!?”

Dogo-! With a dull loud sound, a severe impact was transmitted on Kouki’s cheek. The force that echoed until the core of his head blown away his consciousness for a moment. His sight that immediately returned after that was also flickering black and white. Strength naturally left his arms and legs from a cerebral concussion.

The sky was visible in his distorted sight. Kouki was vaguely understanding that he had fallen down.

Right after that, the following impact came from his opposite cheek. His head was snapped with a force that might tear off his neck. Just when he thought that, the next moment his head was snapped to the other side again along with an impact. And then further impact, impact, impact…Kouki’s head was blurring left and right in high speed like a broken toys.

“This one is for all the trouble you caused for me! This one is for all the troublesome things you pushed on me! This one is for wasting the follow-up I did for you! This one is for not seriously listening to

my scolding! This one is for various other things but anyway this if for me! This one is also for this and for that and for there and also for me!”

“Buh! Beh! Boh! Bah! Goh! Hih! Gih! Gee! Oboh! Abeshih! Buberah!?”

‘ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA-!!’ With a force that made anyone looking at this scene would feel like hearing that, Shizuku was earnestly talking about her share of retribution while doing not a double slap but already double punch on Kouki’s face. The white object glittering in the air was surely Kouki’s tooth.

“Shi, Shizu-, wa-——”

“I won’t wait I won’t stop punching until you are crying and apologizing! My store of patience already has run out completely here, no more playing around! How long you are going to throw tantrum! Because everything is not going how you want it you get sulky and want to break everything! You pushed that tantrum to your surrounding! This shitty brat-. I’m not going to listen to whatever you say anymore! I’ll teach this idiot that cannot be talked with using a beating! Prepare yourself!”

Shizuku’s angry yell echoed in the war site of the ruined city. She was straddling Kouki who was lying down facing up and mercilessly punching repeatedly with her left and right fists.

“Shi, Shizu-, gahah”

“It shouldn’t be like this? That’s obvious! There is nobody who is living with everything going their way! Everyone, they gritted their teeth, held their head, they will say ‘even so-‘ and then they did their best still! Running away from the reality in front your eyes, without even trying to fight, there is no way you can obtain the future you wished for like that! You, in the end, you are just a spoiled brat-. You averted your eyes from anything inconvenient, you are only wracking your head for excuses, and if that’s still not enough then you will think that’s because of other people’s fault…”

Before he knew it, the fists of Shizuku lost their momentum, in

exchange they grasped up the collar of Kouki strongly.

“Anything and everything is over you said? Don’t screw with me-. If you think you can just end it all by yourself then that’s a big mistake. You think I’m going to let you die easily like that-. If you are not going to understand no matter how many times I said it, then I’ll make you understand forcibly. Even if I have to tie your neck with a rope, I’ll drag you back. After that, every time you do stupid thing I’ll beat you up!”

“Shizu, ku…”

‘If you still feel like making impertinent talk then I’m going to hit you until you cannot talk’, the eyes that were glinting right before he were telling him that. Blood was already leaking from Kouki’s mouth and nose, his face bloated up looking like a goblin, Kouki who was turned into such a horrible state opened his mouth with a voice that sounded like a groan.

“Di, didn’t you, choose Nagumo…”

“That’s right. The one who I like is Hajime. It’s not you. So what?”

“…Why…aren’t you giving up…on someone like me…even though I did horrible things…why…”

Even though she should have chosen Hajime, even though he had troubled a lot of people, even though he had done horrible thing to his important best friend and childhood friend, yet why didn’t they abandon him, to Kouki who stared at her unable to hide that bafflement, expression of rage finally vanished from Shizuku’s face and a troubled smile appeared.

“Isn’t that obvious. Because you are my childhood friend. We have been together all this time since childhood, for me you are the same as an important family, that’s why. Family, absolutely will not forsake family. Well, though I want to be spared from having a bothersome little brother like this.”

She couldn’t abandon him because he was like an important family. No matter what stupidity he perpetrated, he wasn’t abandoned, that

was why they were family. Like that, inside Kouki who was told that along with a smile, something fell with a thump.

For the sake of the world, for the sake of the people whose face he didn't know, because he was a hero, because he had to be righteous, all the things that he was fixated with until now suddenly looked small.

Only, because they were family, because they were best friend, they said that and they acquired strength incomparable from before, they came pursuing him until a dangerous place like this Holy Precincts despite him being the betrayer, even though they might die they just laughed and stopped him from running wild.

…Even though those should be an insignificant reason, just why they felt so big to him. Why, did they felt so powerful.

Tears were falling from Kouki's eyes in large drops. His pathetic self that he finally became aware of from the bottom of his heart, and the childhood friends who still reached out their hand staking their life until the end even for someone the worst like that, caused an emotion that was indescribable and soppy, yet by no means it felt unpleasant welling up inside himself.

"So, rry. …Really, I'm sorry…I, something like this…aa, I, what have I…"

"You are crying while apologizing huh. This big idiot."

After an indescribable feeling toward his childhood friends, a tremendous feeling of guilt and remorse welled up next. For Kouki who was fixated with the right thing until now, what he had done was the lowest and the worst deed. To the degree that he thought that he should repent for that with death.

But, that thinking was something that would make the act of his childhood friends who staked their life into something worthless, and then, in the end that thought was,

"Don't you run, Kouki. Live, fight. We won't forgive any path other than that."

Death was just an escape. Even if it was hard, even if he lost his place to belong, even if he was cursed and disparaged by anyone, he had to keep living. That was exactly his atonement, a fight that Kouki had to do. In place of all his wretched escape until now, he had to continue to live and fight from now on.

Kouki cried while biting his lip at the straight gaze of his childhood friend. As though the feeling of his childhood friends was carved in his soul. As though he was determined to part with the him before this.

"…Shizu, ku. I…must not die. I'll live, this time for sure, I have to fight. Not against anybody else, but against myself."

"Yes, that's right. That's why, cry now, after that stand-up and do your best. If you are mistaken, then I'll beat you up until you cry once more."

Listening to what Shizuku said, Kouki showed a complicated expression that seemed vexed and pathetic, but also a bit happy where he couldn't say anything. And then, he directed red eyes at Shizuku who let go of his collar and moved aside from above him. Those eyes had clear color as though evil spirit had left him.

"…There is, no need for that. Because, I'll change. I swear I'll change. To the degree that a childhood friend the same age as me cannot treat me like a 'little brother'."

"Is that so? Well, even if you become like that, I won't treat you as a man you know?"

"Uu-, don't put up defensive perimeter like that. …Is that how much you like Nagumo?"

"Yes, I love him. I am deeply in love with him. It's vexing that I cannot monopolize him, but I'll even share him peacefully. About the hardships of that side, if it's him then he will easily shoulder it."

"Don't speak fondly of another man in front of your beaten up little brother like that…"

Kouki smiled wryly. There were plenty of frustration filled in that

gaze, but he didn't look disturbed from jealousy. Because in his heart he had an understanding. Just what attracted Shizuku to Hajime. That something was exactly the difference between him and Hajime, possibly even the difference between him with Shizuku and Ryutaro, it was the reason for his defeat, he finally understood that.

"…You two, are you two forgetting me?"

While Kouki was feeling frustration and self-reproach of his childishness until now and resolved to change for his atonement, Ryutaro had crawled and approached their spot before letting out a voice of displeasure.

"My, Ryutaro. You really can move even with that tattered state aren't you?"

"Because I already drank Nagumo's Yunke– special recovery drink just now. I barely can move." (TN: Yunkeru Royal C, a drink in Japan.)

Kouki directed his gaze at Ryutaro who was answering while waving around a test tube container. He looked straight at his best friend who was wounded all over because of his fault, at the man who continued to call him 'best friend' through and through.

"Ryutaro…I'm sorry."

He mustn't lower his head. If he lowered his head, he would take off his gaze from Ryutaro. Because he had decided, that he wouldn't avert his eyes from any truth, any reality, for the second time.

Ryutaro who received that gaze of Kouki returned a calm gaze after a little pause. And then a beat later, he smiled broadly and only said a word,

"Ou."

As though to say that excessive word was unneeded, he replied with just that. The answer that was just like Ryutaro made Kouki smiled a bit. Between the two of them, just that word was enough.

But, at that time, a voice suddenly resounded.

“What, is this…”

Shizuku came back to her senses with a ‘hah’ and quickly turned aside with the black katana in hand. Ryutaro also tried to ready himself somehow, but his damage was too deep, on top of that his ‘Sixth Heaven’s Demon Transformation’ was also already released, so he couldn’t stand up.

And then, Kouki who was in the same state that couldn’t stand up called the name of that voice’s owner.

“Eri…”

With wounds all over her body, Eri was floating in the air with her flickering gray wings flapping. She was staring at Kouki and others in a daze.

Suzu also came in pursuit from behind. Shizuku averted her gaze from Eri for an instant and met Suzu’s eyes. They were happy for each other that they were all safe, and then, the next moment they stared at Eri with an expression that was pregnant with tension.

Eri didn’t even notice Suzu, she was letting out a cracked voice.

“Heey, why, is the atmosphere is warm like this? Heey, Kouki-kun. These guys are the enemy you know? They followed the hateful, hateful enemy that stole every single one of Kouki-kun’s important things, they are betrayers you know? Why are you talking with them peacefully I wonder? Why I wonder? Heey, why?”

While tilting her head bobbingly like a broken toy, Eri talked with an empty gaze and unfocused eyes. Her four limbs were smashed and twisted into the wrong direction, so she looked like a marionette that was created with bad craftsmanship.

“Eri…I’m sorry. I already, cannot fight against Shizuku, or Ryutaro, or Suzu. All this time I have been mistaking the enemy that I should fight.”

“…What’s with that?”

Eri's head tilted to the side and stayed still unmoving. The angle of her head made them hallucinated that the bone of her neck had broke. Eri gazed at empty air and opened her mouth with madness riding her voice.

"What's with that? What's with that?"

"E, Eri, listen to me-. I, I am a stupid idiot that don't understand anything, but right now there is one thing that I do understand, that surely I hurt Eri. That's why, perhaps you think that it's too late right now but-, just one more time, let's talk-"

Eri repeated the same words like a broken record. Kouki who reflexively called at her one more time made Eri's eyes that stared at empty air to catch sight of Kouki in a snap. And then, she stared at him for a while with an expressionless face like a noh mask.

The air was strained tightly whether one wanted it or not. Kouki didn't avert his eyes. His words were clumsy, inside his heart he didn't understand anything at all, he didn't understand about what he should do and everything didn't go well even for himself, but even so he thought that he had to look at Eri properly.

But, that straight gaze looking at her desperately seemed to have the opposite effect that made something inside Eri couldn't accept it.

Strength suddenly left Eri's body. And then, she made a sweet smile that looked the most human from everything until now. That was a mysterious smiling face, where resignation and scorn, cynicism and exasperation were mixed…

Like that, a single word, her last word resounded in this world.

“Liar.”

“Eh?”

Kouki tried to ask back.

But, before he could let out any word, intense light surged out from Eri’s chest.

“Tha, that’s-, Eri, you-——”

Shizuku who saw through what was the source of the light raised her voice in shock.

That thing which emitted intense light from Eri’s chest. Once, when Kouki and others were cornered in Orcus Great Labyrinth, in order to save them Melt Logins tried to use that magic tool for self-explosion——’The Last Loyalty’.

But, the light that Eri emitted was incomparable with that time. It was obviously letting out strengthened power. It was obvious that it was hiding a power of artifact class. Most likely it was ‘The Last Loyalty’ that she stole from among the leader class knights that she turned into corpse beast soldier, then she reinforced it with some kind of method into artifact class.

Its destructive power was unfathomable. And then, the activation speed was also incomparable with the original ‘Last Loyalty’.

Shizuku’s words were cut off. Because an explosion that erased even the sound trampled the area along with the light.

The torrent of light dyed everything white. A silence that made anyone hallucinated whether the world had vanished was violating everyone.

Shizuku, Kouki, Ryutaro, they all immediately covered their face with their hands. And then, by lifting their hands like that, they noticed that they were able to recognize that the world was dyed with white and silence. At the same time, they saw a shadow that stretched long toward them.

That was the shadow of the protector they could rely on. The barrier master who had protected her comrades many times over until now. The girl was standing in the way of the torrent of light without taking even a step back, two iron fans readied like a shield. There was also the shadow of Inaba clinging to that back as though supporting her.

No voice could reach. But, Shizuku, Kouki, and also Ryutaro prayed wholeheartedly. Because they could do nothing else except that, they prayed that at least their pray would reach, becoming her strength.

Suzu felt like nodding a little.

Before long, even her figure was buried in light and became not visible.

Suzu was in a mysterious space.

Right after she nodded feeling as though she was hearing the voice of Shizuku and others, when she noticed she was already in this white space. There was no light or impact in this really deep space.

In such mysterious place, there was only one person other than Suzu.

“Eri…”

“…Suzu.”

The two of them faced each other with a certain distance between them. They stared at each other for a while wordlessly. The one who opened her mouth first was Eri.

“What a strange place. Is this a revolving lantern one see before death…a bit different I guess. Or a near death experience…I died already though so I guess that’s really not it.”

“Then, Suzu has died too perhaps. Suzu thought Suzu managed to defend to the end however.”

“Who knows? If possible I want to take you all along with me though.”

“Suzu want to live. Suzu also wants Shizuku, and Kouki-kun too, also Ryutaro-kun to live too…Suzu also wants Eri to live.”

Suzu’s words made Eri snorted as if she making fun of her.

“Hmph. After sending me flying mercilessly like that, you can still say that so shamelessly.”

“Ahaha. Yeah.”

Eri became plainly displeased looking at Suzu who was smiling wryly. And then, without even hiding that displeasure she further opened her mouth.

“I somehow feel that we won’t be in this world for long, that’s why I’ll say this right now. Suzu is seriously gross.”

“…Hee. For example?”

“Let’s see. Like when you always laughed foolishly. Or even when you were talked behind your back, you still laughed as expected. Or how your inside is a perverted old man. How you said disgusting thing like wanting to become a friend even when in the middle of killing each other. It won’t end if I keep showing other examples, but the grossest thing is, how even when you are already in this age, you are still calling yourself with your own name. No, really, you are impossible aren’t youu”

Suzu’s forehead was twitching with her vein visibly rising to the surface. And then, still smiling she counterattacked.

“Suzu seeee. But, Eri is also mostly disgusting aren’t you?”

“Haa?”

“You always had a friendly smile while standing behind. Even when

you were talked behind your back you only smiled as expected. Your inside is just someone dour. You wear glasses and act reserved like a library committee member, you tried too hard fitting in with that cliché. Also, Suzu doesn't want you saying anything about how Suzu called herself. Just what with your 'boku'. Seeing a glasses girl getting too worked up calling herself 'boku' like a library committee member is just painful. Furthermore, [I am the heroine] you said. Pupu-, you need to graduate from being a chuuni." (TN: Chuunibyou = Sickness of the youth where they kept mass producing black history. They were convinced that they were a character of fantasy story.)

Eri's forehead was twitching with her vein visibly rising to the surface. And then, still smiling she counterattacked.

"Chuuni? I don't want to be called that by a painful girl who said something like [Onee-samaa] in real world seeee. Geez Suzu, you have an inclination for yuri aren't you. I have felt the danger to my body several times before. What an impossible pervert. Really gross."

"Ahaha, something like that is still in the range of joking, right? I don't want to be treated as a pervert by a misunderstanding female who got hung on her first love and rushed full speed to the hill seee. Seeing that is really impossibly painful you know. Really gross."

"…"

"…"

" "*AAaa*?" "

Both of them were slinging violence of words at each other with a thuggish expression that didn't look like high school girl beauty. After that for a little while abusive language that would make anyone wanted to cover their eyes flew back and forth between the two.

Like that, perhaps unable to continue to breath the two of them were going "Haa haa" with their shoulders heaving, around that time the white space suddenly began to crack.

“Hmph, looks like this world is finally ending.”

“…”

Suzu couldn’t reply to Eri who was making a refreshed expression. With her hands on her knees she was facing down while hiding her face. But, she couldn’t hide the things that trickled down on the ground.

“…What, you are crying? Stupid.”

“Sh, shut up, already. The one who said, idiot, is the idiotic one…”

Suzu held back her sobbing while roughly wiping the overflowing drops. Guessing that the true parting was approaching, she was unable to hold down the something that was welling up in her heart.

“…I said something like that just now but, perhaps, Suzu and others haven’t died yet. The one who is going is me(boku)…just me(watashi).” (TN: Eri suddenly changed the way she called herself there.)

“E, ri?”

The way she called herself that suddenly changed, no, returned to normal made Suzu lifted her still crying face. Ahead of her gaze, Eri who was still averting her face was making an expression that was deliberately displeased.

“Suzu also understand somehow right? Despite so why are you crying like that.”

“That, is”

“…Really what an idiot. Just what are you feeling regretful for, for this kind of betrayer, this worst woman trash.”

The white world was noticeably dispersing from the edge.

“At this late you were saying ‘want to be together’ or ‘protect’, I thought whether you were actually aiming for that.”

“Eri, Suzu is…”

“Come on, that’s disgusting so change the way you call yourself.”

“Uu, Eri…”

A collapse separated the two. Almost everything had been mostly dispersed other than the foothold of the two. Amidst that, Eri’s words that sounded like a monolog resounded.

“…At that time, if the one that I met on that bridge was Suzu… what would happen I wonder? For me to think of sooomething like that, yep, I’m the biggest idiot.”

“Eri, Suzu is——I, am glad to be Eri’s best friend! Even if that was faked, even if it was distorted, it was fun! I-“

The foothold dispersed. The body of the two was also turning into sand and vanished as though blown away by the wind.

Eri who was facing aside turned her face toward the yelling Suzu. Her expression looked expressionless, but somewhere it also seemed to be filled with a relieved atmosphere.

And then, the true last words of the girl named Nakamura Eri reached only the girl named Taniguchi Suzu who was once her best friend, who by some chance, might even still her best friend even now.

“…Bye bye. The time when I was with Suzu, I felt at ease, just for a little.”

“____”

Suzu’s yell was swallowed by the vanishing world and didn’t become sound.

Even so, from the expression that Eri showed Suzu in the last moment, she believed, that surely she had reached her.

drip, drip Such feeling caressed her cheeks.

Other than what was behind Suzu, everything was turned into dust in this ruined city. There a sobbing reverberated.

The twin iron fans that Suzu held with both her hands crumbled in pieces as though to say they had finished their role and fell on the ground. Suzu herself also sat down on the ground with a body full of wounds, but Shizuku and others who were completely protected behind her didn't call at her worriedly.

Shizuku and others didn't know about the mysterious phenomenon that Suzu experienced. Even so, they were able to guess that the tears that Suzu let out were her feeling for her important friend. That was how pained and how sacred her figure looked.

Before long, as though to say that she had cried enough, Suzu wiped her eyes briskly, and then with those bright red and clear eyes, she clenched her body and stood up. And then, she turned toward Shizuku and others with an energetic turn.

"Now, Shizuku, Kouki-kun, Ryutaro-kun. Let's advance ahead!"

An innocent smile. Just like how it usually was. That smile which protected her comrades in a different meaning than a barrier, right now it looked a bit like an adult. Compared to when they were in Japan, compared to when she cheered up everyone in the labyrinth, it looked far more charming.

The source of liveliness that was overwhelmingly effective made Shizuku and others to naturally slacken down their cheeks. Though it was only Kouki who was making a complicated expression.

Has something happened, he didn't ask that. Because surely that was something that was stored inside Suzu's heart inside even her treasure box. To forcefully ask her would be a boorish act.

"Yossha! Let's chase after those guys and help them with this and

that!”

“Even if you said that, I and Ryutaro cannot move properly though…”

“Besides, the clock tower was also destroyed you know? It doesn’t look like there is other entrance that can connect the spaces.”

Shizuku turned her gaze at the place where the clock tower was at. Over there, she couldn’t find the ripple that connected the space.

“Aa, now that you mentioned it, the ruined city of this space is not only in this place, I heard that story before.”

“Then, let’s search for another city! The skyboards are quite ragged, but I think if we use every trick in the book then they can still be used for a while. We surely can find another city if it’s from the sky!”

“I guess there is that. Anyway, Kouki and Ryutaro, you two have to recover quickly. I’ll make you two drink restorative medicines until your stomachs are bloating like a balloon.”

Kouki and Ryutaro looked at the recovery drinks lined up before their eyes with reluctant eyes, even so they poured them down their throat somehow and their body was healed with the combination of their own recovery strength.

Like that after resting for a while, they took out their skyboards and flew to the sky. Kouki was riding together with Ryutaro on his skyboard.

Suzu who soared high to the sky in the lead twirled to turn behind and looked down on the ruined city below with a bit lonely expression. However, that too was only for an instant. She immediately made a strong and lively smile and raised her voice.

“Now, everyone, continue after *me*!”

“Geez, Suzu.”

“Haha-, this is the Suzu that we know.”

“We are no match for Suzu huh.”

Like that Suzu, Shizuku, Ryutaro, and Kouki, the four of them in order to chase after Hajime and others they searched for other ruined city and soared in the sky of another world.

Arifureta Chapter 168

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/169/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. He also did the edits.

The World of Holy Precincts

“Just how many spaces there are here.”

“Hmmm. It’s fortunate that they enemies art not a big deal but… Goshujin-sama. How much further will it be until we reach Yue?”

When Shia who stayed still in a posture where she had just blown away an attacking monster to the beyond with Vire Doryukken murmured that, Tio who also similarly just blew away a monster to the beyond even with her magic power restrained using compressed and spiral movement to increase her breath attack’s power turned to Hajime while asking that.

“Comparing it to the starting point at the first space…we have gone through around four-fifths of the distance. I guess it might be the next space or the space after that.”

“So you say that it will be soon then!”

When Hajime answered that while activating the compass, a monster came attacking in that timing from behind. With a fierce step Shia stepped between the monster and Hajime and while sending the monster flying with a full swing, she made a happy

expression. For the moment if a comparison was made, then the monster here was at the same level with the middle level of Orcus Great Labyrinth's abyss, but for Shia, they were not enough at all as an opponent. Hajime was also in a state where he wasn't bothered at all.

At the night before storming this place, Shia and also Tio continued to train inside the space where the time was stretched using Hour Crystal until the sky turned bright, so their strength had been raised from obtaining new power like utilizing the metamorphosis magic and so on. Although it also felt like a hasty preparation, they were in possession of enough cards that could become a trump card.

Although, that too was also thanks to Hajime's cheatmate, the outrageous food that was overflowing with fishiness, this item had quite a strong influence but…they could only pray that their stomach wouldn't get hurt. In here there was no toilet, so it would become something dreadful for the female camp if such thing came to pass.

Currently, Hajime and others were smack dab in a middle of the ocean. As far as the eye could see there was not a single island, it was a space of sea. Sometimes, sea monster leaped out from the sea and bird monster flew from the sky, but they were dealt with without any particular problem.

Although, it was a place without any landmark or anything, so if they didn't have the compass, just how much they would need to wander here…just imagining of being in that situation where they didn't have any time to waste made them shuddered.

Just as could be understood from Shia's words, Hajime and others had passed through several words until this point. After they parted from Shizuku and others and passed through the clock tower of the ruined city, they had traveled through a space where the ground and sky were reversed, a space where countless white blocks were floating, a space where there were only large mountains like God Mountain towering over, and a space that was like a giant library where countless bookshelves were cluttered together.

They were able to discover the exits to the next space at all those

spaces without getting lost thanks to the compass, so not much time had passed since they parted with Shizuku and others. Even so, when they thought about Yue, they got impatient no matter what, so there was nothing more aggravating than all these countless spaces for Hajime and others.

They did nothing but advanced straight ahead for a few minutes in this space of large ocean with really good visibility that showed them nothing but water, to the degree they wanted to doubt whether there really was an exit in this place. Thanks to their skyboard, Hajime and others covered a considerable distance in a short time, but they suddenly lifted their face.

“Dark cloud?”

Hajime whispered so while narrowing his eyes. His words weren’t really a figurative expression that pointed at the end of this journey. In actuality, the sky that was supposed to be clear was beginning to be covered by dark cloud rapidly like seeing a video that was fast forwarded. Furthermore, even the calm sea was beginning to be stormy due to the strong wind. It appeared that a large storm was suddenly generating.

The obviously strange situation made Hajime quietly narrowed his eyes, his gaze was turning below.

“…Looks like there is something big there.”

“Uwaa, this is also…this is the largest size we have seen from all the monsters we have encountered until now isn’t it desuu.”

“Yes, I can feel a strength that is in a different league with all the monsters we hath encountered until now.”

The expression of Shia and Tio who followed Hajime in looking below distorted unpleasantly.

Ahead of their gaze, a giant whirlpool began to form on the sea. It was obviously not something natural. The phenomenon wasn’t created by sea current. It was a whirlpool created by the side effect of a living thing’s movement.

Before they realized undulation was coiling to the degree that covered the whole sea below——there was a giant snake there.

Looking from the shadow projected on the water surface of the stormy sea, they could see that the whole length of it might be more than three hundred meters. The diameter of its body was so thick that it couldn't be so easily measured by sight. The whole body was covered by metallic scales, on its back there were also fins attached that possessed hard shine, they glinted just like a blade.

And, at that time,

KISHAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!

A terrific roar thundered, space was rattling. That roar which was accompanied by physical impact struck Hajime and others violently, in addition, an unknown wave was transmitted to their mind. Probably this roar was accompanied with an effect that awakened terror in the listener's mind.

Normally the one who heard this roar would have their body along with their mind blown away into darkness due to the shockwave, and even if they barely maintained their consciousness, their brain would be in disarray and their body cowering in fear, they would be turned into prey and could only tremble while waiting to be eaten.

However, amidst all the people that were here, not even a single one of them was someone cute like that.

"So noisy. Anyway eat this."

Hajime took out Agni-Orkan with a gloomy expression and began an all out shooting. Furthermore, he casually took out from his 'Treasure Warehouse II' metallic spheres the size of a basketball——huge explosive and dropped them all into the sea.

A beat later. For an instant light flashed below the sea surface, then along with muted explosive sound countless water pillars burst up toward the sky.

GUOOOOOOOOOOH!!

The monster of sea raised a shriek. It wasn't a scream. It was a roar of pure fury. It was enraged from the impertinence of the puny being's attitude.

As though to display that fury, reddish black light surged from inside the water. That light which made anyone felt severe killing intent was a glint of eyes. While the roar of fury was still shaking the air, the sea surface swelled up like a mountain, and that figure appeared.

A head that looked like dragon leaped out from the sea surface with a long neck that was longer than fifty meters. As for the size, if one was told that each one of its scales was as large as a human child then its hugeness surely could be felt. There, there was a pair of eyes emitting reddish black light and the two layers of sharp fangs that lined up smoothly, and also something like fin at both sides. The fins were similar like the torso, they possessed metallic shine and sharpness of blade, it felt like just by touching it would cause the one touching to be bisected right into two.

An absurd pressure. Just by existing there, the sky was enveloped with a dark cloud, the sea was raging as though the end of the world was coming. The large snake, no, the sea dragon was coated in countless scales that looked harder than even steel, its appearance was just like the leviathan that was told in the legend of earth.

"If we hath to classify this then this must be a 'Divine Beast' doth it not."

"Certainly, from here I can feel a pressure above that of the 'Evil Eater' we fought in Meljine Undersea Ruins. If this one is above even an ancient monster, then that's a valid expression desu."

Shia agreed with Tio's opinion about this monster. But, even after calling the monster a 'Divine Beast', their expression was comparatively composed. There was also no color of tension that could really be heard from their voice. By the point of time they could converse calmly about the naming of the divine beast, it had shown how the pressure of this divine beast leviathan wasn't something that worried them.

Perhaps such composure was transmitted to the divine beast, because the divine beast then roared once more. As though to say that it was impossible for his might to not affect these puny existences, the roar was even more powerful than the first one.

But, that roar made it a little too defenseless.

“I told you, you’re noisy.”

Hajime took out his improvised Shuragen.

No, what Hajime took out, whether in the aspect of form or spec, both aspects were already far excelling the territory of an ‘anti-material rifle’. The barrel that stretched straight for four meters long had extensive caliber more than the previous version, no matter how one looked at it this size should be called as gun turret instead. In total the whole weapon had become more than two sizes larger.

——Electromagnetic Acceleration Large Caliber Sniping Cannon(Rail Cannon)　Shuragen AA(Acht Acht)

Are you looking for a lovely weapon of man’s romance? Very well, then it’s the 88mm! This rail cannon was something that resided in Hajime’s soul.

Hajime who fixed his aim by holding it under his arm made it so crimson spark was running through the rail cannon. Right after that, the large muzzle turned at the divine beast and the trigger was pulled without any hesitation. With acceleration incomparable with anything until now, the charged cannon that was specialized for piercing let out a fierce thunderous sound and blast while bullet flew out, the bullet had a trail of red flash behind and flew into the divine beast’s mouth.

And then, *DOPAN!* such sound came out while the scale on the back of the divine beast’s head was smashed and sent flying from inside, in addition, the bullet didn’t stop, it also blew away the cloudy sky above and vanished at the beyond of this another world.

GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!

The roar that was raised once more was obviously a scream. The beast's head was thrown back from the impact and its mouth stayed opened with blood scattering everywhere.

While snorting at that, Hajime made something ran in the shadow. Its speed was too fast and because of the dark cloud the surrounding became dim and it was hard to see, the divine beast also just received damage and got agitated, so it missed that shadow and allowed the thing to infiltrated inside its mouth.

In order to vomit that out, and then also to vent its violent rage toward the one who granted it damage, the divine beast spewed out a terrific heat from its jaw.

Hajime kept silent and took out crossbit. Right after that, the four point barrier that the crossbit created was hit by the blaze, its surface was licked all over by the white hot flame. But, as long as it wasn't the disintegration attack from an apostle, the barrier wouldn't be broken that easily, the face of Hajime inside the barrier was unruffled.

The divine beast gazed in wonderment for a moment seeing its flame got stopped, although as though to show its pride as a divine beast it increased the force of the heat further, attempting to roast Hajime to death. Perhaps it should be said as expected from a divine beast, the heat of the blaze was absurd, the flame was something that one mustn't touch at all cost and the sea surface began to evaporate and smoked up. There was also the effect of the blaze, but the dark cloud that was once blown away was rapidly beginning to come back.

But, right after that,

"Even though we have to hurry on ahead, read the mood already desuu!!"

A mass of faint blue pierced through the sea of black cloud and fell down like a meteor. Rabbit ears were flapping violently from the wind and got unruly. It was Shia.

Right after Hajime defended against the flame, Shia stored her

skyboard into ‘Treasure Warehouse II’ and leaped in one go to the sky, she broke through even the dark cloud, danced in the clear blue sky, and turned around after that. Using ‘Air Force’ to continuously stepped on the air, she fell like a meteor aiming at the target.

A wall of air appeared with Shia as the center. Shia instantly shook free from that and plunged into the world of the speed of sound, her momentum didn’t decrease even for a bit and Vire Doryukken which had its weight increased until twenty tons using gravity stone were readied in overhead stance.

And then, the head of the divine beast that got absorbed in spewing out blaze from its large mouth was struck with a gruesome attack without even a drop of mercy or reservation.

A thunderous roar. The sound of pulverization. And then a shriek.

The divine beast whose mouth was forcefully closed had blaze spurting out in trickles from the gap of its mouth while its muffled shriek was also leaking out similarly from the gaps. The head that was covered by those metallic scales was pulverized like broken glass, reddish black meat became visible from there.

Shia’s attack was considerably effective. The divine beast showed a staggering motion that didn’t fit its status. Perhaps it even got a concussion.

But, there was no way these people would loosen their hand just from seeing that,

“I think it’s better using Goshujin-sama’s transmutation though.”

While whispering that kind of thing, Tio was hovering in the sky while flapping her wings, both her hands were joined into a shape like a jaw and black magic power was focused there. And then, she released that in one go. Dragon’s breath that was compressed in this way became a piercing attack.

The attack that was fired advanced in spiraling motion like a thin lance, it impacted the place Shia pulverized accurately and pierced

the head of the divine beast.

The black spear went through the head and entered inside the mouth, without stopping it pierced to outside from inside the throat and the attack continued to pierce the sea.

A fatal wound. Everyone who saw that would surely think so, but it seemed that was still insufficient to kill a divine beast that was superior even compared to the ancient monster.

GUAAAAN!!

The divine beast didn't die instantly, it raised a sound that was a little high-pitched and sea water crawled up its body. And then, when the place that was destroyed was covered by water, the water was swallowed into the wound. Right after that, the wound bulged and recovered like a rewound video.

"Uhee, by any chance, it can recover as long as it has sea water, something like that?"

"In that case, it will take time to kill it completely. It will be best if we art able to destroy its magic stone but…Goshujin-sama, how doth it goes regarding that?"

Tio landed beside Hajime while asking.

Hajime was looking at the divine beast with a strange glint in his eyes while shaking his head.

"No, I cannot find its magic stone. There is a chance I overlook it with how large its body is but…magic stone will grow large in the proportion of the monster's size, with how much I'm looking but still cannot find it I guess it doesn't have it from the start. Its whole body is dyed reddish black just like the Evil Eater."

"Muu, how troublesome. I don't feel we art going to lose at all, but I want to avoid wasting time…"

"What to do, Hajime-san?"

Ancient monster seemed to be the ancestor of monsters. Shia and

Tio frowned from hearing that this monster was the same type with that ancient monster that they once fought.

But, in contrast Hajime only shrugged lightly.

“Facing a giant sea monster like this, the theory is to enter its body and attack from the inside right?”

“Ah, the thing just now…”

Shia raised her voice as though she was noticing something.

Right at that moment, the divine beast whose head was in the middle of recovering raised a scream as though to drown Shia’s voice.

aAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!

It was unmistakably a shriek. Its whole body was writhing as though being in an intense agony.

Looking at that state, Tio also nodded in understanding while asking Hajime.

“By the way o Goshujin-sama. What art the meal course?”

“Broiled eel roasted by tar from the inside. The garnish dishes are explosive and deadly poison.”

“Oou…hearing that, I feel a little sympathy for it.”

Hajime’s quick answer made Tio sent a pitying gaze to the divine beast as though she was looking at a poor thing.

As for the divine beast in question, it was shrieking while writhing around fiercely without stopping.

That couldn’t be helped. After all, the crossbit that was sent inside its body opened a gate and poured down a large amount of tar and explosive inside, in addition it also scattered around the strongest poison that was the product of the abyss, where in the end, all of those were lit on fire all at once. Like that even its hard scales were

irrelevant.

The divine beast began to drink sea water. Surely it was trying to fill its body with sea water in the attempt to heal. But, that was a bad move.

As though to proof that, right after the divine beast drunk sea water, a part of its torso burst up along with a grand explosion sound. Flame blast also jetted out from its mouth. A scream filled with bewilderment rose from the divine beast.

“Giving a lot of water to flame above three thousand Celsius… obviously a vapor explosion is going to happen. Ah, a beast won’t know anything like that huh.”

“That is, someone who had ever set flame inside the body of something like that must be only Hajime-san. This is absolutely its first experience with that desu.”

“How unpleasant, this first experience is. …No, rather is it not a lovely first experience instead?”

“Don’t get deeper and deeper into your fetish. It’s scary when I wonder if you are going to demand something that is incorrigible even for me in the future.”

Hajime’s expression became unpleasant from hearing Tio’s nonsense. And then, ignoring Tio who was going ‘ehe ehe’ shyly for some reason, his gaze returned at the divine beast.

The divine beast who somehow felt like it was giving off an air of despair from experiencing how the damage in his body got increased instead when it tried to recover. Even so, perhaps because of its dignity as a powerful monster, even while spouting out a lot of blood it was glaring at Hajime with eye glint boiling with killing intent.

Hajime who received that gaze…licked his lips for some reason.

The divine beast twitched.

Hajime murmured to himself while floating a fierce smile to that

divine beast.

“I want to eat…”

“ “Eh?” “

Even though it was a small whisper, regardless of the stormy wind and the raging sea, for some reason those words resounded clearly, it caused Shia and Tio to whip their head quickly at Hajime.

The divine beast too, even though it was supposed to writhe in agony, its movement stopped still and its gaze was fixed at Hajime.

Hajime was directing his eyes that were strangely sparkling since some time ago at the divine beast, while whispering further.

“Its flesh is nicely filled to the brim with strength. If it’s this beast, than it surely can become even my nourishment.”

And then, he licked his lips one more time.

With that finally even the divine beast noticed.

The enemy before its eyes, the fiercely glaring gaze this enemy directed at itself wasn’t something easy to understand like hostility or killing intent…it was an appetite for food.

With a shudder, a chill that the beast had never felt since it was born ran through its whole body. Unaware, the divine beast was ‘drawing away’ unbecomingly. The gaze that was by no means had never been directed to it who was an existence that stood at the top of food chain——that gaze from the predator caused an indescribable terror to invade its body.

This person wouldn’t be able to do it——the monster didn’t think of anything like that. At present, the one who was cornered like this was itself. The divine beast was convinced. If it kept fighting on, itself would be definitely…eaten.

The moment it understood that, the divine beast turned aside adroitly with an agility that surprised even itself. The heat inside its body that was burning it up, or the pain of the invading poison, or

the impact of the explosion when sea water touched the burning in its body, it ignored all of those and poured all its strength just to escape earnestly.

The divine beast that attempted to escape with a resoluteness that should be nonexistent for the strongest level of monster made even Hajime to get taken aback for a moment. That was just how splendid the escape was. As though *pyu～* such sound effect was accompanying its escape.

“-, bastaard. Wait, meaat! How can you run away despite being a divine beast huh!”

PIGYAAA――――!!

When Hajime used the crossbit inside the divine beast in panic to try to stop it in its track, the divine beast raised a roar that sounded a little pathetic, that long body deflated just for a moment, and then it vomited a large amount of sea water that made one wanted to ask just from where it took all of that from.

Naturally, explosions occurred grandly, parts of here and there of its body were blown up, yet it somehow managed to vomit out the crossbit. And then, it manipulated the sea water to make several tornados on the sea, it directed them to Hajime while diving into the bottom of the sea at full speed.

“Let, me, eat, the, meat, of you, bastaaard～”

While blowing away the tornados that were approaching from all directions using impact conversion of magic power, Hajime demanded for the divine beast’s meat with a voice that resembled a deeply held grudge.

The divine beast that looked back just for an instant from under the sea surface met the bloodshot gaze of the tiny being demanding its meat, while harboring a tremendous terror to that, it averted its gaze in panic as though to say “I’ve seen what must not be seen”.

And then,

PIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIII～～～～!!

While a crying voice that had surpassed being pathetic and instead invited pity was resounding in the air, its figure vanished into the darkness of the deep sea. It felt like they could hear something that somehow sounded like “I won’t come out from home anymoreee～”, but surely it was just their feeling though.

“Son of a bitch! It should be impossible for a monster of that level to immediately decide to escape! Even though it’s a chance to power up at this last minute!”

Perhaps because the divine beast had disappeared, the dark cloud was dispersing and the stormy sea was recovering its calm once more, amidst all that Hajime stamped his feet in frustration.

There, Shia and Tio were approaching with an exasperated gaze.

“For Goshujin-sama, even a divine beast is already nothing but predation target.”

“Until now surely it had never been looked at with that kind of gaze, that’s why it has no endurance isn’t it. Its last cry, it sounded a little pitiful. Perhaps this will even become a trauma for it that turns it into a shut-in after this.”

“Chih, that snake got no guts.”

There was no doubt that surely not even in a dream that a divine beast of all things could have its bravery to be questioned.

Hajime stored the returning crossbit in a bad mood and took out his compass once more to decide the route.

Then, right at that timing, ahead of Hajime and others’ gaze, the space a few kilometers separated from them began to shake like jelly. And then, after a few moments the space melted and disappeared and a large island appeared from the space gap.

“…It seemed, there is an entrance to the next space at the center of that island.”

“Does it appear because the divine beast withdrew?”

“That possibility art high. No one would even imagine that it would withdraw in that way though.”

Shia and Tio sent a gaze of pity at the spot where the traumatized divine beast vanished, and then they followed Hajime’s lead and departed from that spot.

It appeared that the island had quite the size. The island was covered with really tall trees that could reach a few dozen meters in the whole, other than the shoreline they couldn’t see the ground at all. The entrance to the next space seemed to be at the center of that forest.

And then, Shia’s rabbit ears sensed that powerful monsters were running rampant in large number there, especially at the center part.

The monsters weren’t at the level of the divine beast, but every single one of them was a powerful monster. They wouldn’t lose against the monsters, but the monsters’ number was a lot so it felt like it would take quiet the time to fight the monsters just like against the divine beast.

Shia asked Hajime “What to do?” with her gaze.

Hajime took out ‘Shuragen AA’ from ‘Treasure Warehouse II’ once again and took a kneeling posture on his skyboard and entered a sniping stance. Using heat detection, the scope penetrated the trees and projected only the image of living things.

“Aa, don’t tell me Hajime-san is…”

“Wait a bit. I’ll take care of this right away. This is a lightning speed accurate bombardment from outside their detection. Surely they won’t be able to react. I’ll blow away the head of things that looks troublesome.”

Shia took the confirmation from Hajime with a cramped face, and then crimson flash rushed through the sky instantly.

That streak of flash wasn’t noticed at all by a giant gorilla that looked like a giant kong walking heavily deep inside the forest, its

head got blown away instantly, and its brain matter was scattered everywhere. Next the bullet impacted the ground and a large crater was created with the trees on the area got blown away.

Furthermore, thunderous sounds reverberated in succession. From a far distance of more than ten kilometers, the lights of death that flew at a speed that was impossible to detect dispersed one after another the heads of the giant monsters loitering around the area that seemed to be the space entrance. The thick forest was instantly turned into a battlefield site that was littered with holes.

“Surely, after defeating the divine beast, next powerful monsters would go ROAR! in a great swarm and the intruder would go Kyaa, what a disaster! Originally this must be for something like that isn’t it.”

“Well, this art not a labyrinth so this art not even a trial…though there art no doubt that this art intended to be obstacles perchance.”

While half laughing Shia and Tio remembered the time until now, where Hajime easily removed the obstacles using methods other than frontal attack, that was why the two of them hadn’t made any significant contributions yet.

Both of them exchanged gazes filled to the brim with sympathy to each other from how their expectation of rampaging with their all in order to take back Yue was betrayed.

But, that ardor would be demonstrated just before they reached Yue’s location.

After massacring the island’s monsters one-sidedly, Hajime and others transferred to the next space from the stone statue at the center of the forest and leaped out into a world of sky where several gigantic islands were floating.

There were islands with a diameter of only a few dozen meters, but there were also islands with a scale of a few kilometers. River water was continuing to flow down from the edge of the floating islands without end with some kind of mysterious logic. Because of the height, the water became mist after some distance of falling as

waterfall, the scenery of white mist drifting at the surrounding was very fantastical.

Above all the floating islands were overflowing with greenery, there were plains and also forests. There was not a single floating island that was merely a floating rock.

Sea of clouds was spreading below. The clouds lingered at the height of their gaze, drifting on the sky like cotton candy. Even now it felt like the clouds were giving off a sweet aroma.

Even though there was no sun, but brilliant light was pouring down, light pillar weaved through the gaps of the clouds——several of what was commonly called as 'ladder of angel' could be seen.

There were white clouds overflowing with great numbers of floating islands, and then there were also beams of light pouring down.

It was truly a solemnly mystical scenery. If someone who didn't know anything was told that this place was heaven then they would unconditionally believe it.

After their gazes were stolen just for a little while by that scene, Hajime and others shook their head and advanced forward. Their objective was the floating island that looked conspicuously large even among all the many floating islands. The compass was pointing at there.

They flew their skyboard and closed the distance in the blink of eye. At the same time, they caught strong presence at that floating island.

Before Hajime and others who narrowed their eyes in vigilance, that guy appeared.

"As expected you came. Nagumo Hajime. The fool who defy god."

With silver wings and hair that looked like an apostle rustling from the wind, the monster user devil race——Freed Bagua was there.

Arifureta Chapter 169

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/170/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. He also did the edits.

White Divine Dragon and the Platinum Apostle

On the gigantic island with diameter around ten-odd kilometer.

There were grass plain and forest, with branching small rivers in between, where the upper stream was linked toward the mountain with bountiful greenery.

A chalk white obelisk was enshrined at the grass plain area of that floating island. The huge tower that was around fifty meters tall looked out of place in the middle of the magnificent nature. Coupled with that artificial whiteness, it looked strangely conspicuous.

But, something even more standing out existed further above that obelisk, it was a silver colored man sitting cross-legged on a shining magic circle. His silver hair and wings fluttered in the wind. His skin was so white that it looked transparent, even the color of his eye pupils looked shining radiantly silver.

His clothing looked like a pure white priest outfit. Coupled with his calm and self-possessed state, his appearance gave a divine impression. If anyone who didn't know anything saw him, they would surely think that a messenger from heaven had descended.

The first voice that man, Freed Bagua let out made Hajime who was facing him to snort while he started talking frivolously.

“Is that new fashion? If that’s the case then there is nothing I can say except you have got no fashion sense at all. It’s because you are still accepting the clothes that your parent(god) prepared for you without protesting that you looked incredulous like that. Your red hair and darkish skin before this looked manlier you know?”

Hearing Hajime’s speech, Tio and Shia burst into a snort “bufuh” beside him. Perhaps the two of them also had such experience, that the clothing that parents prepared for their children was usually embarrassing. Just what kind of clothing that Karm and Adol presented to their daughter, and then, the complicated expression that Shia and Tio surely made at that time…it was something that made Hajime felt relatively curious.

Although, Freed who was obviously got made fun of only reacted slightly with a twitch of his eyebrow from that speech, his calm behavior still didn’t break. And then, as though to say that he got no intention to follow along with Hajime’s frivolous talk, he talked with a cold voice.

“…Indeed, you really are still alive. When Aruvheit-sama didn’t come back, and my lord informed me that you are going to come, I thought what kind of a joke is that yet…truly what an obstinate man you are. It would be better if you just graciously die.”

“Hee, so that shitty bastard Ehito predicted this. Well, I guess he at least has that much brain. He understands just how great my feeling toward Yue is after all. So? What about you? Were you told to defeat us here? Getting ordered to come to your suicide here, what a cruel order that is. So that’s why your hair got totally white like that then, because of the stress huh.”

Once more, snorting sounds “buhoh” could be heard from Hajime’s both sides.

Freed ignored the sympathetic gaze that said “Freed-kun, you really got it hard” which was directed at him and continued on talking.

“No matter the time you are still screwing around. Really, you don’t seem like a man whose woman is taken away at all.”

“Yue is the best woman there is after all. It can’t be helped that she is popular. I only need to straighten up all the guys who laid her hand on her. Even the master you are proud of, I’ll carve a lot of agonies and regret into him before killing him.”

“That haughtiness, it will be immediately broken apart. My lord has already grasped that body perfectly. There is not even a one in million chance for you to take back your woman.”

As though to beat despair into Hajime, as though to show that it was the truth, Freed informed Hajime using a matter-of-fact tone without getting worked-up at all.

However, in regard to that Hajime’s face contained not even a single trace of agitation. Rather, he was giving back a fearless smile.

“The one who is calling me irregular is your side you know? Something like a worthless scenario that you guys prepared, I’m going to messed them up into pieces.”

“…”

Hajime and Freed exchanged gazes wordlessly for a while. The Wind of killing intent began to blow suddenly. That atmosphere which licked at the skin like coiling snake was truly apt to be described as an explosive situation.

Hajime’s finger touched Donner, at that moment, Freed opened his mouth as though to beat Hajime to the punch.

“Your previous question.”

“Aa?”

“Your question of ‘were you told to defeat us’——half is correct.”

“Half?”

With his hand still touching Donner, Hajime narrowed his eyes

questioningly in a state where he could draw his gun and shoot anytime.

Freed suddenly stood up from his cross-legged sitting posture and flapped his silver wings to float in the air, then he opened his mouth.

“My lord——Ehitorujue-sama granted me the command to let you pass without any obstruction when you arrived at this place. There is nothing more mortifying then the lost of my chance to strangle you to death with this hand, but it’s still inevitable for your life to meet its end.”

“Hou. Then? During that time you are going to face Shio and Thia, that’s what you mean?”

“Exactly. While you are receiving divine punishment from my lord, I’ll thoroughly torture to death the women who love you dearly.”

Right after Freed said that, the obelisk shined radiantly.

Hajime drew out Donner with the end of the talk. The fired bullet became a red flash and approached Freed’s forehead.

However,

GIIN!

A hard sound reverberated, that attack was completely blocked. When Hajime looked, it was as though the bullet crashed into an invisible wall in front of Freed, the bullet flattened and stopped midair.

“If you think that my space magic is the same like before than that’s a great mistake.”

It appeared Freed had laid out a protective wall of space isolator around himself beforehand. From how Hajime’s magic eye stone was unable to detect the wall, then it was just like Freed said, his level in space magic had increased.

At that moment where Hajime’s first attack was blocked and a bit of

time was bought, the obelisk that was emitting strong radiance shined explosively.

The white light completely dyed their field of vision. But, Hajime's magic eye stone that wasn't affected by the amount of light accurately caught what kind of phenomenon this was.

Before long, the light settled down, and what flew into their cleared up field of vision was the scenery of a great swarm of monsters clamoring together to the degree that no empty space could be seen. Their number was definitely in four digits. Roughly there might be around two thousand monsters.

From each and every single monster, they could feel the strength at the level of the monster at the lowest level of the abyss *at the very least*. There were also monsters that they had encountered before, but based on their appearance every single one had been evolved.

A black wolf with four reddish black eyes had its head increased by two like a watchdog of hell. A black panther with tentacles seemed to be combined with a chimera, it had draconic claws and snake tail while the air at its surrounding was flickering. A monster with horse head Ahatd had further two arms added, and it was also further enveloped in reddish black magic power that seemed to be 'Vajra'.

Especially the dragon flock that covered the sky, every single one appeared to possess strength at the same level with the white dragon that they faced at Guryuen Grand Volcano.

And then, the leader of that dragon flock, the white dragon that was also the partner of Freed, it was emitting an absurd pressure that easily surpassed all the monsters. Its physique was already nearly twenty meters big Its pure white scales were giving off the radiance of steel. The wings on its back increased to two pairs of four wings, each time it breathed pure white spark was surging from its mouth.

The scar on its chest was exposed with ferocious dignity. Its magnificent body was shining brilliantly and emitted divinity. A white dragon that came out in legend——or perhaps it should be called as a white colored holy dragon, a white divine dragon. In any

case, it appeared to have a strength that easily surpassed the divine beast leviathan that they encountered just now.

Hajime and others were surrounded by a few hundred, a few thousand monsters of abnormal level, the fierce killing intent was showered on them from all direction, amidst that Freed was floating calmly right at the side of the white divine dragon with his silver wings flapping.

“Now, Nagumo Hajime. You can leave behind the women who love you dearly in this despair and progress ahead.”

Hajime directed a scorning smile toward Freed who elaborated this disgusting plan where Hajime had to leave behind Shia and Tio among this swarm in order to meet her beloved woman.

“Are you idiot? Just why do I have to listen to what you are saying? I can just instant-killed all of you before going forward brazenly.”

There was no need to purposefully divide their battle strength in front of the enemy. Hajime who talked that doing this with all three of them was faster was given a cold gaze by Freed.

And then, he proclaimed.

“No, you are going to go ahead. To head toward despair, alone by yourself.”

“Hah, saying whatever you like——!?”

Instantly a golden light poured down toward Hajime. The ‘angel’s ladder’ that suddenly appeared from the gap of the clouds really resembled the torrent of light that once captured Yue.

“Hajime-san!”

“Goshujin-sama-“

Shia and Tio, perhaps remembering that time they reached out their hand toward Hajime with a slightly uneasy voice. As expected, their hand was repelled away.

Hajime was going to take out his pile bunker to show that the same trick wouldn't work the second time. However, Freed opened his mouth faster than that.

"That light was a light of teleportation. It will lead toward the location of your 'beloved'."

Hearing that stopped Hajime's hand for an instant. Indeed, the light that was pouring down right now didn't have a harming effect at him for even a bit, it felt like it was connected with a space somewhere.

But, Hajime immediately rethought his thinking and he was going to destroy the light torrent. He could just exterminate Freed and the monsters together with Shia and Tio, then go to Yue altogether. As expected, he was unwilling to leave behind just the two of them in this space.

But, the one who stopped such Hajime was no other than Shia and Tio.

"Hajime-san, please go ahead."

"Truly. It's an invitation that art hard to come by. Just the two of us art enough to take care of this side."

Hajime's eyes widened slightly. But the two added more words without being concerned of that.

"Leave this place to us and go ahead! I wanted to try saying that sentence at least once desu."

"Doon't worry, we art going to follow immediately after finishing here. Fufufu."

Hajime's face turned exasperated toward the rabbit and the no good dragon who sent him a wink while raising their death flag daringly. And then, he also sensed how they were seriously telling him to go ahead even while joking around.

That was a scolding toward him not to let go of the chance to arrive at Yue's location even if it was at a stage that the opponent

prepared, it was also a resolve to not let any other to become hindrance at his battle against Ehito, it was also their faith that if it was Hajime then he would surely rescue Yue without fail, and it was also the expression of their confidence that if it was the two of them then they would make it somehow against a situation of just this level.

Hajime's figure was fading. He was being transferred to another different place. Although Hajime was slightly hesitant, he directed a gaze that was filled with his utmost trust at the resolved Shia and Tio and strongly nodded.

In actuality, it was outside of their expectation for the inside of [Holy Precincts] to have this many varied spaces contained inside it. They had the compass, so they didn't get lost in searching Yue's whereabouts. But, if for example, Ehito rearranged the spaces' configuration like a block game or if he could teleport without limitation, then there was the risk that this would become an endless chase.

In that aspect, it was honestly painful when the degraded version crystal key broke when they entered the [Holy Precincts]. In the worst case, there would be a need for Hajime to recycle the very small amount of god crystal he used for his other artifact to create a new degraded crystal key, so if the other side was giving him the invitation then it was an unexpected windfall for him.

Shia and Tio also understood about that, for that reason they proposed this dispersion of battle strength that could be said as a bad move.

"Got it. Shia, Tio…"

"Yes desu."

"Yes."

Just before Hajime was teleported, he made a fierce smile and left behind his words to the two in exchange for leaving from here.

"No need to hold back. Kill them all…in a way fitting as my

women.”

“Yes, siiir desuu!”

“Fufu, leave it to us!”

Shia and Tio were also returning a smile that looked like a wild beast at Hajime.

At that moment, the light dispersed and along with it, Hajime’s figure vanished.

The two who were left behind——Shia was tapping her war hammer Vire Doryukken on her shoulder while glaring over the monsters around them, while Tio was cracking her neck audibly with a somehow bewitching smile on her face.

“Now then, it seemed that you said something about torturing us to death or something but…”

“Instead, the one who wouldst be made sport to death art thou, just like all those time before, and from here on too. Thou art truly a man without any learning capability.”

While being surrounded by several hundred, several thousand monsters of absurd level, far from having their calm expression crumbling, Shia and Tio were instead giving Freed a gaze as though they were looking at an idiot. Freed narrowed his eyes to that.

“Don’t think that I am the same like the me before this. This power that I was bestowed by my lord——putting aside that monster, there is no doubt that I have surpassed the likes of you two. Prepare yourself. The bitterness of being looked down, I’ll return it completely, no, I’ll return it by several folds to the two of you. The two of you can meet your end while yelling that man’s name with your death cry.”

“Enough with the tedious talk desu. Crushed, beaten up, punched, exploded, splattered, they are all similar, but I’ll let you chose the method that you preferred to be massacred with.”

“So this is what art called as big talk. Let me taught thou this thing

called as the difference in status.”

Both sides sent each other caustic words.

A beat.

Killing intent burst out from the whole body of each of them.

And then,

“Kill them-!”

“I’ll kill you to death desu-!”

“Be annihilated-!”

The spark of battle was lit up.

Rain of aurora rained down from the sky, immense blazes were spat out from three-headed wolves, violent shockwave surged from the six-armed horse-heads, silver flash and a large amount of feathers rushed from the front.

Lethal attacks from all directions. The field of vision of Shia and Tio were completely covered with death.

But,

“Tio-san, two steps to the right, drop a little then go three steps ahead desu.”

“Right, that helped.”

Tio moved almost reflexively following Shia’s murmur. Aurora poured down at the spot where she was at just a moment before, furthermore when Tio lowered his altitude shockwave passed through above, and when she stepped forward she evaded silver feathers in return.

At the same time, Shia was also similarly taking steps as though she was dancing in midair. She slipped through the gaps of the attacks as though it was actually the attacks that were avoiding Shia.

The place where Shia moved at, and then, the place where Tio moved at following Shia's instruction, those places were places with the thinnest concentration of attack.

The derivation of characteristic magic 'Future Sight', the 'Revelation Sight'——an ability that could automatically take a peek at the future a few seconds ahead. Shia predicted the trajectory of attack with this ability and calculated the safe spot swiftly.

Nevertheless, it was not an exaggeration to say that the density of the attacks sent to them was like a wall. Even if they moved to the place where it was relatively harder to be hit, that didn't mean that they were unharmed.

Therefore,

"URYAAAAAAAA-!!"

"Just this much-!"

Shia took out from the empty air a kendama made from adamantium and coated with sealing stone, and then she launched it instantly overhead. Vire Doryukken struck the metal ball and a thunderous sound roared, at the same time the kendama was rising to the sky with a violent momentum like a rocket flying to space.

The surface that was coated with sealing stone displayed its trait fully and reduced the intensity of the rain of aurora. Next, the aurora rain was snapped away to far beyond due to the kendama's pure destructive force.

And then, for a brief time, the gray dragon that was defenseless due to firing the aurora could only get startled funnily by the approaching metallic mass from below. At the next moment, *mekyo!* such graphic sound resounded and while the kendama was sinking into its stomach, the dragon was further blown away to the sky.

The gray dragon got the bones in its whole body got pulverized and disappeared at beyond the sky. An instant later Shia then appeared at the place where that dragon was at as though in replacement,

without stopping she used the chain to swing around the kendama, giving rise to a whirlwind that beaten to death the surrounding gray dragons.

Freed slightly narrowed his eyes toward such Shia, but when he directed his gaze at Tio who was left behind, there he could see the figure of Tio who was crossing her arms while getting swallowed by the impact of light and blaze.

Although in that spot the attack was relatively fewer, but she was still getting hit by attacks at the amount that might be enough to inflict lethal wound considering the level of the power of the attacks.

However,

“That appearance…”

“Hmph, compared to Goshujin-sama’s reward, this level of pain art too lukewarm.”

Tio was floating unmoving with a fearless smile while saying such sentence. Her appearance was completely changed compared to her appearance just a moment before.

First of all, the color of her skin was different. Her beautiful skin that was like porcelain was now covered with jet black color, only her golden eyes were piercingly shining in there. Looking carefully, Freed noticed that the source of the jet black color was from dragon scales on her skin.

It was the derivative skill ‘Partial Dragonification’ from characteristic magic ‘Dragonification’. The dragon scale that originally could only came out in Tio’s black dragon form was now being put on like a chainmail so that it wouldn’t obstruct the movement of her small human form. Furthermore, using ‘Dragon Scale Hardening’ that increased the hardness of the scale in respond to the magic power consumption, Tio completely endured all the attacks solidly.

Of course, if Tio was actually hit by all the attacks then the damage

would pass through, but with Shia's help the number of attacks that she got hit with decreased remarkably, she would have no trouble at all if she only got hit by one or two of each variation of attack.

By the way, the reason Tio didn't turn into dragon completely was purely because her human form was more maneuverable and it was also harder to hit her because she was a smaller target like this. Although her physical strength dropped compared with the state of complete dragonification, she had already mastered the 'Partial Dragonification' to the degree that there was not that much difference in defensive capability aspect, so this state was convenient for her in this case.

If this technique was to be given a name then this would be composite dragonification and metamorphosis magic——the 'Dragon Scale Armor'.

"A return gift!"

The instant a pause appeared between the attacks, Tio turned into a counterattack. She stretched both her hands horizontally and instantly focused tremendous magic power, at the next instant she fired breath attack from the tips of both her hands like a laser that had been compressed to the limit.

The right and left breath attacks that were fired straight like black string easily pierced the monsters at their line of fire. Even the horse head that looked excellent in defensive power was also no exception. This attack of Tio had been refined until its might heightened by that much.

In addition, that was not the end of it. Tio spread wide her hands horizontally and then she twirled on the spot.

Naturally, the super thin breaths that pierced and bisected everything were matching Tio's movement and trampled the battlefield, mowing down the monsters.

Her clothing that looked like Japanese clothes gently fluttered along with her long beautiful hair, exhibiting elegance like in a dance in this battlefield. The blood spray scattered everywhere by the

bisected monsters that were falling to the ground colored Tio's surrounding like a blizzard of falling sakura petals.

"Impudent…Uranos. The disgrace that you once received, clear it up right here!"

Freed who frowned from looking at Tio's figure gave instruction at the white divine dragon(Uranos) beside him. Uranos's reddish black eyes shined in joy.

GOGAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!

Uranos raised an extremely loud roar.

It didn't fire aurora as breath attack, it was merely roaring, but just with that space itself trembled, a shockwave of sound was generated. Normal people would have their body pulverized just from that, and even if they endured it a primitive terror would well up and they might be driven mad, a violent howl.

Truly a roar of a divine dragon.

Due to that, even the monsters who should be its ally couldn't help but get paralyzed, the attacks that were raining down like storm also got completely dispersed.

Although, it was by no meant that Tio was helped just because of that.

"Nuoo!?"

While her whole body got strongly struck by the shockwave, combined with the lightness of her small human body caused Tio to get blown away. She fell toward the ground like a meteor. Looking carefully, there were few small shining fragments scattered at the trajectory her body passed through. Although it was only a few, but Tio's prided dragon scales were smashed, just from a single roar.

Tio impacted the ground like that without being able to kill her momentum. *BAM* Tremor hit the ground and a small crater was created on the floating island, Tio's figure got concealed by the rolling up dust.

There, a merciless pursuit attack was fired.

GOAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!

The world was dyed by white radiance, by the breath of the Uranos——by aurora.

Even the word tremendous couldn't represent a fragment of that attack's might. The absurd torrent of light caused the space itself to creak, just its after-wave gouged out the ground of the floating island.

And then, at the place that got hit directly…the aurora pierced until far below——it broke through the bottom of the floating island and pierced until the far beyond.

Yes, the aurora pierced through the ground of the floating island that had the diameter of ten-odd kilometers until it came out on the other side. The sea of clouds spreading under the island had a hole opened there like the eye of a typhoon that dispersed in a radial shape.

A terrifying might. It was just like the light of divine punishment. Everything that stood on its way would be completely destroyed without any discrimination by that breath of devastation.

Before long, the flash that dyed the world was disappearing as though melting into air.

"Tio-san-!"

Tio was swallowed by the aurora, no, any possibility other than Tio got destroyed altogether with the ground leaving not even dust behind was unthinkable from witnessing this spectacle, seeing that caused Shia to spontaneously called Tio's name with shrieking voice.

While beating to death several gray dragons with her kendama, Shia focused her eyes at the spot where Tio got blown away at, but she could only see a hole in the ground that was completely empty of any living thing and she couldn't discover Tio's figure.

“Hmph, perhaps that’s overdoing it. Despite my intention to torture her to death, but to be annihilated with one attack…the situation just cannot go as I hoped for.”

“There is no way such thing is——!?”

Freed glared at below looking not amused.

Shia raged to deny those words.

And then, Shia changed the Vire Doryukken into bombing mode and aimed at Freed…at that moment, the figure of herself getting slashed into pieces by countless large swords was reflected in her brain. It was a death prediction from her characteristic magic ‘Future Sight’.

A chill rushed through her whole body instantly, her voice got caught in her throat while she twisted her body half-forcefully. From the superb timing of the attack’s instant, it brought to Shia’s intention that this was an attack that leaped through space——an attack that couldn’t be dodged perfectly based on Shia’s experience.

In an instant, the space around Shia was undulating, from there large swords were thrusting out in a flash.

“____”

While raising a wordless scream, Shia’s legs and arms cartwheeled midair in order to at least avoid a fatal wound, and then four large swords grazed her and blood sprayed up.

Another large sword approached her head, she avoided that by turning her head and the blade grazed her cheek, two large swords approached her neck from left and right, she blocked one with her Vire Doryukken, and used the chain connected to the kendama to block the other one.

She pulled the trigger of Vire Doryukken next and used the fierce recoil to rotate like a spinning wheel, three blades rushed at her as though blocking her escape path, but she barely evaded them even while her shoulders got gouged.

And then, even while bearing injury, Shia somehow succeeded to get away from her future of death and put her feet on air using 'Air Force'. At the same time, the apostles with *platinum* hair flew out from the undulating space with their wings flapping, their twin swords launching severe slashes at Shia.

"KuUUUU-"

Vertical bisecting attack using two large swords at the same time. Shia blocked that attack using the handle of Vire Doryukken, but she was pushed toward the ground by immense pressure and impact where the weapons of both sides were locked with each other.

Amidst the sparks scattered by the large swords and the war hammer, Shia fell with fierce momentum toward the ground, the platinum apostle who wielded that bizarre strength from really close range then opened her mouth at Shia.

"The first apostle Erst. Judgment to god's enemy."

Immediately after, the large swords shined in *platinum* light. Right after that power swelled up explosively into a torrent. The apostle that introduced herself as Erst swung out her twin swords in one breath then.

"Gua!?"

Shia's body was struck fiercely due to the impact, she fell on the ground like that. *BAM* Fierce shockwave radiated loudly and a crater was created, dust rolled up. It was like a reproduction of Tio's fall before this.

Sure enough, five platinum flashes aimed for Shia at the bottom of the crater, all of them were fired simultaneously.

"The second apostle Zweit. Judgment to god's enemy."

"The third apostle Dritte. Judgment to god's enemy."

"The fourth apostle Vierte. Judgment to god's enemy."

"The fifth apostle Funfte. Judgment to god's enemy."

The four apostles that appeared unnoticed were conducting their introduction proclamation while launching their bombing. Even if the color of their magic power light was different, but it only stood to reason that the light that an apostle launched must have disintegration ability.

Thinking of the apostle's explosive power that struck Shia into the ground, the spec of the platinum apostles were obviously above even the normal apostle, from that it could be easily imagined that their bombing would be something absurd too.

Shia immediately pulled her kendama close to use it as shield replacement, but in the end would it make it in time or not… Similar with Tio, it seemed that Shia was also going to vanish inside the light.

But, at that time,

Gigantic black flash that was fired from somewhere approached the apostles, furthermore *hyun* a sound of cutting wind resounded and something like a rope rushed inside the dust cloud and entangled around Shia's body, it then extracted Shia from that spot in one go.

The platinum apostles flapped their platinum wings and evaded the black flash. At the same time, the ground where Shia was just at before she got pulled was pierced by the platinum bombardment. The ground after the dust got swept away had been gouged really deeply, even though the attack didn't pierce until the bottom of the island but the bottom of the hole couldn't be seen from above. As expected, the might of these apostles had wide difference compared to the normal apostle.

"Shia, art thou safe?"

"Tio-san!"

Shia who was entangled in black rope——or more accurately in black whip was pulled up and received into an embrace of Tio, who although she was in a sooty state here and there with various sizes of wound all over her body, her expression still looked

comparatively fine.

Shia spontaneously sighed in relieve, to that Tio grinned widely while the corner of her mouth was holding a test tube container.

And then, Tio moved her lips and tilted the test tube container, she drained up the content in one go before *puih* she spat away the container also with a wild gesture, she then released Shia from her black whip.

"…So you escaped. What a toughness that is as expected from that man's woman. How annoying."

The expression of Freed's eyes warped while he spouted out abusive language.

"Well, I thought I was going to die for a bit there though. For the large shield created by Goshujin-sama to be pulverized, although it couldn't use 'Vajra' or 'Transmutation'…thou have really evolved this dragon of thy."

It appeared in that instant when the aurora poured down, Tio summoned a large shield artifact from her 'Treasure Warehouse II' and she barely escaped at the slight time it took until the shield got pulverized. In other words, the protection of Tio's Dragon Scale Armor got overtaken only by the after wave and she bore this much damage from that. As expected, the aurora of the Uranos was something absurd.

"Hmph, is it really okay for you to act composed? The aurora of Uranos who has reached the territory of a divine dragon is increased not only in its might. Its additional ability to obstruct healing is also evolved. It obstructed even the regeneration magic. On top of that, it is making the wound to worsen further with the passage of time. Although you got hit only by the after wave, if you bore that much wound, it won't take that long for the effect to gnaw at your body until you die you know?"

"Is that so? All these monsters, and then these platinum apostles, these art quite troublesome. …Well, normally that's how it would be."

“What?”

Ahead of the gaze of Freed who was feeling dubious at Tio’s way of talking, Tio was wrapped in the light of magic power. That was the sign that regeneration magic was being used. As though to show that, the wounds that Tio bore were being healed one after another.

Freed was gazing in astonishment while raising his voice from being unable to endure his question.

“Ridiculous…the invasion of the aurora is being nullified? Impossible-“

“The ridiculous one art thou. Just how many times do you think Goshujin-sama hath been showered by that light. Obviously something like one or two countermeasure would be created for that.”

“…Don’t tell me, is it the liquid just now?”

Tio shrugged at Freed’s question. It seemed that was the correct answer.

Anti-aurora magic medicine ‘Fix It J’——the ability to obstruct healing that was included in the magic power of the aurora, Hajime who understood that it came from the magic factor with opposing nature against the magic power contained in the aurora made this magic medicine. Hajime enchanted magic that would negate the effect of the aurora into powder of metal that didn’t have bad effect to the human body to make this medicine.

It had been proven by the ‘God Water’ that it was possible to forcefully heal the affected wound using something with healing power that surpassed the obstructing effect. And so, if the obstructing effect was weakened by this ‘Fix It J’, even if the effect had been evolved but the wound could be healed enough using regeneration magic.

Freed showed an irritated expression that the additional effect of the aurora didn’t show result. Even the Uranos at his side was making growling sound from its throat in dissatisfaction.

But, at that time,

“-, Tio-san-“

“Yes-“

Suddenly, Shia raised a voice of warning, both of them immediately leaped away from their spot.

After that, platinum flash rushed through.

“Freed-sama. These people are that irregular’s comrade. Please don’t let your guard down.”

“Acknowledged.”

Erst was giving a warning to Freed using polite language. It seemed that before they knew it the status between the Freed and the apostles had been reversed. Most likely it was because the transformation that happened with Freed, but right now there wasn’t any free time to know the detail.

The platinum apostles flew out simultaneously focusing at Shia.

“We will hand down the judgment at that rabbit person first. Is that fine?”

“Yeah. I’ll leave that one to you. I too want to judge that dragon woman, the one who made fool of me once.”

Erst nodded briskly at Freed’s words, she then flapped her platinum wings in order to deal with Shia herself and flew away.

When Shia guessed that all the apostles were designating her as their target, she raised a ferocious war cry while forcefully blowing away the large sword that was swung down at her by the second apostle Zweit along with the holder.

“Bring it on desu-! Just try it if you think that you can desuu!”

Immediately after, faint blue magic power burst out from Shia. Using the derivative skill of magic power operation, ‘Body

Strengthening', and then also the further derivation skill 'Impact Conversion Increase III', Shia's body capability was explosively raised up.

And then, she rotated the kendama in high speed using only snapping motion of the wrist of the hand holding the chain, swinging around the super heavy kendama like a flail.

The gigantic metal mass was rotating in circle with abnormal speed and became like a streak of light.

There, the third apostle Dritte came attacking right from the front. Shia pulled the trigger of Vire Doryukken and fired out bursting slug bullet to check Dritte in place.

Dritte evaded that like it was only natural and kept advancing. But, Shia read ahead the path that she took and launched the kendama that looked like it would snap away anytime with superb timing. The liberated red kendama that looked like a wild beast made Dritte unable to take evasive action…was how it looked like, but the moment she was almost hit, Dritte's figure vanished.

And then, at the next moment, she materialized right at Shia's side. Furthermore, unnoticed the fourth apostle Vierte from behind and the fifth apostle Funfte from below were approaching, they slashed their twin large swords as though to block Shia's place to escape.

"ts, youu-"

Shia entrusted Vire Doryukken to her physical strength and swept it horizontally, she repelled away the large swords of the two apostles while dodging the last sword with a somersault.

But, it seemed that this time it was the apostles who read ahead of her movement, Zweit who was sent flying before this was already slashing her large sword in a timing that couldn't be dodged.

Inside the flow of time that felt strangely slow, the eyes of the inhuman apostle and Shia's eyes crossed with each other. No emotion or anything could be seen there, but vaguely Shia could feel something like triumph "Even if you can see the future, you

cannot avoid this right?", surely it wasn't just in her imagination.

Shia wasn't even agitated or impatient, she returned back a straight clear gaze. Shia didn't blink even once while capturing the rapidly approaching blade that left behind trail of platinum light in her field of vision.

A predicament of this level was nothing to speak of. Don't think that the one who obtains new power is just you! Shia proclaimed that implicitly. And then, just when she was about to use that new power…a black whip stretched out smoothly and entangled the wrist of the apostle before her eyes.

(Oh my, I don't even need to use it. As expected from Tio-san. That's a superb follow-up desu!)

Shia who whispered that in her heart changed her plan. While a smile formed at the corner of her lips, Vire Doryukken leaped up from below.

The slowing world returned to its original speed.

Right after that, the arm of Zweit was tugged away and the trajectory of her large sword slipped away from Shia's body. At the same time, the war hammer repelled away the second sword from below at the opposite side while rising up with powerful speed.

GOGYA!

Such graphic sound resounded, Vire Doryukken that hit the jaw of Zweit blown her away to the sky above as though rocket propulsion was carrying her away.

"Disappear."

Toward Shia who was just lifting up Vire Doryukken, a cold voice——Erst's proclamation came at the same time with a platinum flash that attacked Shia.

Shia was unable to evade due to an instant of her body stiffening after launching her attack.

But, as expected the color of anxiety was nonexistence in her expression.

Right after that, Zweit who was blown away just now was returning. That wasn't because Shia's blow wasn't effective and she came to attack once more. The black whip that Tio controlled was still connected to her hand, therefore she was now being pulled back forcefully, toward the line of fire of the platinum light.

"____!"

Erst and the pulled back Zweit reflexively gazed in astonishment, at the next moment, Erst's bombing was defended by Zweit's own platinum wings.

And then, Zweit shook off the black whip entangling her wrist and got out of the line of fire in hurry.

This was happening in less than a second.

But, that was enough.

"SEYAAA!!"

A yell exploded.

Shia's Vire Doryukken caught the platinum flash in a full swing. A tremendous shockwave was generated, at the same time, the surface that was coated with sealing stone dispersed the disintegration ability along with the flash.

And then, the apostles who attempted to attack Shia without any interval were held back by Tio's breath attack, while Tio's body slipped in to become shield using her dragon scale against the opponent that couldn't be held back. Although the black dragon scale of the dragon race that boasted supreme hardness was disintegrated, coupled with its unparalleled endurance it somehow pulled through with only faint wound created by the platinum magic power.

"Those arts quiet the cooperation, but it's troubling for thou to then look down on our cooperation!"

Tio opened her mouth. At the tip of her mouth, magic power was focusing with fierce momentum. Dritte who was looking at that across the arm covered with dragon scale that blocked her large sword immediately leaped away. The compressed breath pierced that vacated spot.

Naturally, Shia and Tio became standing back to back.

“Tio-san, thank you very much. It’s truly amazing that you can breakthrough to here.”

“Well, if I charged with the resolve to be damaged, then as long as it’s not against that white dragon I am unstoppable.”

Yes, Tio saw Shia who was receiving a concentrated attack from the apostles, and then she resolved to receive damage from Freed and the monsters’ attack while cutting across the storm of attacks to come at Shia’s side.

“But, Tio-san, your wound…”

“Shia. It will be okay with this. Just so thou know, there is this.”

“…Aa, I see desu.”

Shia and Tio talked back to back with a small voice that could reach other.

During that time, with Erst at the front as the starting point, the apostles were surrounding the two. Beside Erst, Freed finally arrived accompanied with his Uranos.

“Sorry. It seems that dragon woman is not really bothered by damage. I misread the way she fights a little.”

“No, we too were unable to finish off Shia Hauria. It appears that she has further increased her fighting strength in these few days. … What an unbelievable thing.”

It seemed that the two of them were revising their analysis of Shia and Tio.

“Then, we will pull away Shia Hauria away and exterminate her.”

“Aa. Even the dragon race won’t be able to maintain that kind of reckless fighting for long but, I too will use my full strength here.”

Shia and Tio, and then Freed and Erst, each side exchanged words with each other. The wind of tension blew once more.

And then…

“Exterminating god’s enemy.”

“Receive your judgment, foolish people.”

Erst swung her twin large swords, while Freed distorted the space at the tip of his stretched out hand.

At the same time,

“I’m going-, ——’Level IV-‘!!”

“Come, mine retainer, ——’Dragon Army Summoning’!!”

Shia’s body reinforcement rose by a level, the light magic power enveloping her further increased in radiance. Along with Tio’s proclamation, a hundred armed black dragons materialized from the ‘magic orbs’ that were scattered in the battlefield unnoticed by anyone.

Right now, the gong of the second round was sounded.

Arifureta Chapter 170

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/171/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Tingle translated this chapter. Bakapervert did the edits.

Author's comments: Time for Shia's culmination

The Young Girl With Rabbit Ears is Excelling

"UryaA!!"

With a cute and brave voice, Shia jumped out.

Body strengthening Level IV — More precisely, this skill was one level above the magically operated derivation Conversion Efficiency Up III. This skill which could turn magical power into physical strength with a ratio of 1:3 had been evolved into Conversion Efficiency Up IV with sublimation magic, raising the ratio to 1:4.

At the same time,

"Fire!"

Tio issued her command.

GoAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!

Surrounding Shia and Tio were the swarm of monsters. Surrounding the swarm of monsters were the armed black dragons summoned by Tio's artifact, which simultaneously fired breath.

It was a perfect surprise attack for the monsters who were struck from the rear by a series of breaths.

The poor monsters resembling prisoners locked in iron maidens were mercilessly penetrated and killed by black flashes resembling Tio's breath attack.

The power was more than enough. It was around the same level as the aurora of the white dragon back in their first encounter. In other words, it was above the power of the reinforced ash dragons.

In fact, the breaths fired from the black dragons who numbered roughly one hundred instantly pulverized over two hundred monsters. That is to say, each breath was able to break through at least two monsters which boasted an unusually high level of defense.

Just where did these ridiculously powerful dragons come from? Freed grumbled as he directed the silver bombardment towards Tio. Even though he personally improved the level of the ash dragons to the level of the former white dragon, even though if received the assistance of god… Just how much effort and training would be required to go against that?

Even if Tio had a high aptitude with metamorphosis magic, if you were to compare her current skill with her skill back in the devil king castle, it was indeed an impossible development. No matter how you put it, her current level could not be reached in only a few days.

(In that case, as expected, the cause for this is the equipment attached to the black dragons. Such a thing as equipping monsters with artifacts… how absurd. That must once again be that guy's doing. How annoying!)

Freed came to that conclusion and cursed at the white-haired boy who wasn't here. Seeing his bombardment was repelled by Tio, he issued instructions to the monsters while preparing his next attack. That is, to eliminate the surrounding black dragons.

Following the main order, the large number of faithful subordinate

monsters turned around and their new targets shifted from Tio to the black dragons.

Just as Tio planned. It was already bad enough that they had to face the platinum apostles, freed, and the divine white dragon, but if they also had to watch out for the attacks of the crowd of the monsters while fighting the other opponents, it would become unbearable.

'Numbers against numbers'. She was glad she had anticipated such a situation and had been preparing for it.

These armed dragons were from a species of dragon that inhabited a hidden village, Tio's hometown — located on an island that could be reached by heading north on the continent until reaching a mountainous area, making one's way through the mountains until the seaside, and then navigating through the sea for several hundred kilometers. Originally, their power level was not less than that of monsters on the upper level of the abyss.

With the strengthening obtained using metamorphosis magic, their power became on par with the middle-level monsters. Add to that the artifacts bestowed upon them by Hajime's sublimation magic, however dirty that was, and their power rivaled that of lower level monsters. Finally, taking cheatmate into account (TN: The food Hajime made for them before the fight), their power could even be said to rival that of monsters in the lowest parts of the abyss.

Incidentally, even though the dragons used to be a different color, the fact that there were only black dragons was because Tio had used metamorphosis magic. The reason being something as stupid as: [The wife of the devil king (TN: refers to Hajime here) should be accompanied by evil dragons. Who says evil means black, right?]. The person herself showed a self-satisfied look.

Freed's monsters simultaneously attacked the armed black dragons. Their number was still more than ten times more. Specs-wise they were roughly equal. Therefore, it should be expected that the black dragons would be overwhelmed by the enemy's numbers.

However, that expectation would soon be betrayed in the truest

sense.

First, as if to say the skies belong to them, the ash dragons simultaneously unleashed a series of breaths expressing their anger. Countless traces of light shone through the air. Totaling more than three times the numbers of black dragons, the series of breaths looked like a wall to them.

However, against the multitude of attacks which were expected to become direct hits, the black dragons performed evasive maneuvers that looked like barrel-rolls and successfully dodged the series of attacks, a little like someone finding gaps and weaving his way through a crowd.

These moves seemed like the movements of Shia, who knew the safety zones, made just before.

The origin was the helmet the black dragons were wearing.

This helmet covered the entirety of the head, until the tip of the nose, and had a Foresight ability. Unlike Shia's foresight, this ability could not show a distinct picture of the danger beforehand, but once an attack had been fired, it did have the ability to sense the trajectory of the attack. They took precise evasive action according to this ability.

The black dragons counterattacked with breaths and mowed down the alarmed monsters. A monster with the head of horse which managed to slip through the black light dove towards a black dragon's chest and swung its strong arm. The fist that was thrown into the part of the armor that covered the black dragon from its lower parts up until its stomach made contact and a dark red wave spread as the monster's magical power was turned into a shockwave.

However, at that moment, a similar wave was caused by the armor, and the one getting blown away was the monster with the horse head. That was obviously the effect of Impact Conversion. The moment the armor the black dragon wore perceived a shock, it returned it. It was a reactive armor, so to speak.

In addition, a three-headed wolf and a black panther chimera launched an attack on the black dragon, only to be counter-attacked by its claws and tail. The two monsters scrutinized the counter-attack, as if they were mocking its dullness, and quickly dodged it. Or so they thought, but in the next moment, they fell on the ground with their blood splashing out.

Even though they should have certainly dodged it, their bodies had been split into two. The cause for this was the activation of Wind Nail which had been installed on the dragon's claws and at the edge of its tail.

Though equal specs-wise, comparing the strength only based on numbers was presumptuous. The artifacts equipped could overturn the difference in fighting strength of both sides!

"Fufu, this is the result of my group work with goshujin-sama. Not bad, don't you think?"

"Uranus! Mow them down!"

Ignoring Tio's prideful moment, Freed twitched his eyebrows and gave the order to the divine dragon. An enormous torrent of aurora was fired in the direction of Tio.

'How many times do I have to deal with that?' Tio thought as she quickly went out the way of the incarnation of death which mowed down everything in its path. At the same time, she made a telepathic communication with the black dragons that stood in the path of the attack to urge them to evade.

The black dragons made a tailspin and performed an emergency escape, but as expected, it was impossible to perfectly evade the maxed-out death beam which made Tio feel her scales were being shredded just from the aftershock, and several black dragons sustained wounds.

Then, without a moment's delay,

"— Boon of the Dragon King."

Tio sang to herself.

Then, a black wave spread through Tio. The black dragons having lost their wings and limbs who were tumbling to the ground recovered in the blink of an eye, allowing them to keep flying.

Spirit magic and regeneration magic combined, Boon Of The Dragon King. This magic is a combination of regeneration magic and spirit magic, used to select only the black dragons as the scope of effect.

Just as the name of the magic suggests, the black dragons received healing from their own king. They raised a cry of great joy as they resumed the fight. The dragon king had protected them. No matter how wounded they had been, they showed no fear. Even if they were in a situation where they should instinctively prioritize evasion, they moved forward and swung their claws and bore their fangs at the enemy. As a result, this made the black dragons in superior position again.

And, Tio swung the black whip she was holding in her hand. Even though its length appeared to be five or six meters at most, once it was swung, it expanded to an impossible degree and took an irregular trajectory as it soared through the air. The speed of the tip of the whip was slightly above the speed of sound.

It was a horizontal slash aimed at Freed.

“Tch!”

Freed clicked his tongue, and tried to used the silver wings as a defense. However, the trajectory of the black whip suddenly changed and its tip struck the white divine dragon’s eyeball.

GuluaAAAAAAAAAA

Normally, even if the divine dragon’s eyeball were to receive a direct hit, its aberrantly huge stamina would not allow there to be even a single trace of a wound. But, the moment the tip of the black whip made contact, it followed the surface of the eyeball, creating a gap in space, easily tearing through the eyeball.

That black whip was naturally an artifact made by Hajime, and its

name was Black Whip of Slavery. On one part of its design was attached a small Treasure Warehouse. Stored inside was the biggest black whip in existence, three kilometers in length. By pouring magical power, one could freely take more length out or in, effectively changing the size of the whip. At a glance, it was a whip that could stretch infinitely.

Furthermore, countless small pieces of metal were attached along the whip, so if one were to concentrate one's eyes on the whip, one would see something similar to a cat's tongue, or possibly the skin of a shark, that would shave off its target.

And, a space magic, Decapitation Silk, was embedded in those metal pieces. By the will of the user, it could cut off the surrounding space.

Although the divine dragon narrowly avoided another strike coming for its other eye, its pride had been damaged. It showed fury at the fact that it had received a wound. In its anger, it started mowing down the battlefield with its aurora.

Countless of its own allies were swallowed in the attack, but it didn't hit Tio, which only made the divine dragon angrier.

"Overcometh by emotions on the battlefield? How inexperienced."

Even if it had changed and its power increased, it had a long way to go as far as combat experience is concerned. It seemed the white divine dragon had lost its composure.

In a sense, against the white divine dragon leaving lots of openings in its attacks, Tio, showing the dignity of a senior, swung her black whip of slavery.

However, this time it was aimed at the three-headed wolf that was still staggering from the after effects of the previous aurora.

"GuGaaa!?"

The three-headed wolf let out a surprised voice at the sudden black whip of slavery that twined around its neck and tightened.

“Cometh to life, together with the first cry of birth, —— Authority of the Dragon King!!”

The voice which carried Tio’s dignity resounded.

At the same time, the three-headed wolf screamed.

“GiiiaAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA”

It was a strange scream you would totally never expect from this three-headed wolf.

The cause would be obvious for anyone.

“Wh, what, what are you doing!?”

Freed said in an unintentionally shaken voice.

That couldn’t be helped. After all, the three-headed wolf whose neck had been entangled by the black whip of slavery, underwent a sudden transformation while it was screaming.

In terms of seconds, it took approximately three seconds.

In this short timespan, the three-headed wolf turned into a monster that was covered in black scales. It grew thick, strong limbs and a tail, as well as sharp claws, and hard wings showing radiance —— It had turned into a dragon.

Authority of the Dragon King, a combined magic made of spirit magic and metamorphosis magic. A spirit magic that took the information of dragon transformation from her own dragon race soul and copied it, Dragon Soul Reproduction, and a metamorphosis magic, Sixth Heaven’s Demon Transformation. This combined magic forced the monster to undergo a transformation into a black dragon.

Normally, no matter how high Tio’s aptitudes were in metamorphosis magic, it should be impossible to turn a monster, controlled by someone else at that, into her own underling in mere seconds.

What made such a thing possible was Black Whip of the Slavery. Its

real worth didn't lie in controlling its elasticity at will, nor in its ability to cut through the surrounding space, but in its ability to act as a device that assisted a compulsory change into a dragon. Using this black whip of slavery as an intermediary, Tio was able to force the usual monsters to turn into black dragons.

She could make the monsters she whipped obey her.

Maybe it could be said It wasn't something fitting for an extremely masochist pervert, or maybe it could be said it was something too fitting for a pervert's wildest ends. It couldn't be helped that Shia and the others looked at Hajime in disbelief in lots of ways when he handed the black whip to Tio.

While Freed was shocked at the fact that one of his underlings had been snatched away, two more of his monsters were again changed into black dragons.

"As if I'm going to let you do anymore than that."

A magical attack like surging wave was fired by Freed. The magic that contained all attributes rushed towards Tio to engulf her. At the same time, silver feathers were fired to cover the remaining gaps. And, to seal any means of escape, the white divine dragon unleashed its aurora.

Tio, without a moment's hesitation, jumped inside the storm of the attack unleashed by Freed without fearing damage.

If she wouldn't be able to avoid it, she might as well leap into Freed's attack, was the conclusion she reached. This evasion action, which could be said to be reckless, was actually a success taking into account the power of the aurora and its after effects.

However, although most of Freed's attack was repelled by her black scales, his magic, and most of all the decomposition ability, were pouring constantly and she sustained by no means only light damage.

As the pulverized black dragon scales reflected light, blood began slowly falling to the ground, and before long, it turned into a spray

of blood.

“How unsightly. Now that you can’t rely on restoration from the stubbornness of your dragons and your magic, you’re showing such a disgraceful way of fighting.”

“I wouldn’t put it like that. Those are also legitimate tactics.”

“Foolishness. You just don’t understand the concept of abilities. I was surprised at your ability to snatch away my monsters, but it seems the person herself is going to meet her end soon after all.”

Freed made fun of Tio’s fighting style, who was ignoring the damage she received. And, once more, she was faced with a barrage of magic and decomposition magic, while the divine white dragon breathed its aurora breath.

Tio once more weighed the aurora breath and Freed’s attack, chose the latter, and exposed herself to the storm of the attack.

At that time, she expanded the length of her black whip of slavery to turn more monsters into black dragons. Seeing such behavior, Freed thought she was acting like a desperate chicken trying to invert the tide of the battle by increasing her war potential because her own power must be reaching its limits. His mocking face grew even more mocking as he saw this.

‘If you like being bombed so much, I’ll let you have as much as you want’ thought Freed as he turned a sadistic look to Tio. The density of the barrage of attacks increased yet again.

On the other side, Shia jumped out. A fierce battle was going on with the platinum apostles on this side too. Though, by no means could it be said to be a fair battle.

Just barely, yes, really just barely, did Shia manage to endure.

If she didn’t have body strengthening Level IV and her native magic Divine Revelation Sight, she would have probably been instant-killed by the platinum apostles. With a quick estimation, the specs

of the platinum apostles could be said to be several times that of Shia. She had expected these apostles to be stronger than the average apostle, however she hadn't expected them to be this strong.

"How about giving up? Shia Hauria."

Erst, who held a large sword and was engaged in a sword lock with Shia, stared at her and said so from point-blank range.

There, for a moment, an improbable thought like 'Maybe it's better to do that… ' popped in her head. When she realized she had been taken aback by the earlier suggestion, a long sword came sweeping sideways from the back.

At once, using her weapon which was engaged in a sword lock as support, Shia used Air Force to perform a handstand and kick into the air. The trajectory of the sword missed her by a hair's breadth.

"Don't underestimate me desu!"

While performing her handstand with her twisted body, she also pulled the trigger of Vire Doryuken, firing a slug bullet from point blank range. It was a special bullet that had been improved and whose power had been increased, and it caused a violent shock. Shia aimed for the moment the two apostles were recovering from the shock, and made use of it to jump back.

Immediately after, a silver flash passed through the place Shia was standing before. Without taking a moment to be relieved, Shia used Air Force once more and jumped. As expected, another silver flash came from another angle and grazed Shia's feet.

Rolling over in the sky, she hardened herself in midair and immediately descended towards the ground. That's right, at the very least, if she was on the ground, she wouldn't have to face attacks coming from below in addition to all other directions.

Then, once she had successfully taken distance from the enemy, she made a sour expression and started a monolog, while staying alert and keeping Vire Doryuken ready.

“To feel uneasiness caused by Charm this late in the game…that’s such a failure on my part.”

“Or rather, did I just feel surprised when I broke out of the spell? Even though I have strengthening against charm type effects.”

The apostles who had also descended onto the ground surrounded Shia from all five sides.

Facing the perseverant Shia, Esrt sent her a somehow amazed look. Even so, the fact that Erst was not showing any sign of impatience was not only due to her being inhuman, but mostly to the fact that she was convinced they would overwhelm Shia.

Erst and the other apostles knew that the reason Shia was able to keep up was because of her native ability. And also that it would consume a non-negligible amount of magic power each time. Even if she was in possession of an artifact supplying magic power, it was bound to run dry after some time.

“Originally, you shouldn’t have lasted even a few moments. Good grief, even I am amazed at your degree of strengthening … This is Yue-san’s magic, right?”

Shia narrowed her eyes dangerously.

The original color of the light of the apostles’ magic, silver — There was now orange mixed in it, making it a platinum. And, Shia had come to see and feel that gold magic countless times during their travel, so she couldn’t be mistaken. It was a precious part of the elder sister she had befriended … It was Yue’s magic.

Of course, she knew that it was the doing of Ehito Rujue, who occupied Yue’s body.

But, to think that the power of her special person was being used arbitrarily, and pointed at them as a weapon … the anger rising up from her chest was not average.

Feeling she might lose herself to her anger boiling like magma, Shia frantically held her anger back.

Then, intending to turn all the heat she had generated from her anger into power and leave her thoughts for later, she tried to do as Yue, her battle master, taught her, that is, to remain calm like the cold of ice.

In return, Esrt replied with a voice seemingly devoid of emotion.

“More precisely, it should be called the magic of our master, Ehito Rujue-sama. That body, as well as its magic. Everything already belongs to master.”

“ … … ”

Shia’s anger skyrocketed as Esrt calmly gave an answer she seemingly considered really natural.

Shia took out a vial from Treasure Warehouse II. She put it directly before her open mouth and drank the contents in one gulp, just like instant foods. To make her even more unreasonable. To break through her limits.

Then, she exhaled like Tio did, and rashly threw the container away. She swung Vire Doryuken once.

Then she spoke in an extremely cold tone and used words she would absolutely never let her family, or Hajime and her friends, hear.

“Fuck you! I’ve heard enough. Yue-san’s body and magic, and her everything else, it’s obvious who owns all that. That’s right, everything is Hajime-san’s. The one you guys call irregular. I, the one with the title of Divination Expert who can glance into the future, certify that. To the likes of you, as well as your master, I can make the following prediction — ‘There is no future’.”

“ … Nonsense. What do you think a diminutive existence whose hands or feet can’t reach master do? Accept reality, Shia Hauria. Tio Claus doesn’t even compare with Freed-sama. And because you are being once more overwhelmed by us, the best you can do is try to endure. Can’t you understand? Or is it that you’re trying to escape from reality? The ones who don’t have a future are you people.”

Esrt had suddenly been overcome by a strange chill, and her voice had faltered. She objectively analyzed the situation, and precisely refuted Shia.

Certainly, although Tio was aiming to turn the tide by increasing the number of black dragons, the wounds she had sustained weren't minor, and she was probably planning to use up all her strength to thwart their plan before it succeeded. And, on this side, Shia had also been overwhelmed to this extent.

There was nothing that could prove Erst wrong.

Up until now …

Shia who had daringly refuted her started laughing with an atrocious face resembling that of a beast.

"'That's the limit of my power'. When did you hear me say such a thing?"

"? What are you —"

Puzzled, Erst tried to make sense of that with a questioning voice —

However, her mouth suddenly stopped —

Shia's power swelled up. Along with an angry war cry.

"—— Level V ! ! "

The atmosphere shook with a thud. Light blue magic sprang out depicting a screw-like trajectory and rose up.

Originally, with sublimation magic, she could enhance her magic one level above. Which is why, using sublimation magic, the limit of Shia's body strengthening should have been Level IV. However, what allowed her to surpass that limit was Hajime's special magic potion Cheatmate Dr.

What Shia drank some time ago was not restorative medicine, but a drinkable Cheatmate. A specialized version containing an excess of ingredients with the use of sublimation magic at that. If it weren't

Shia who was specialized in body strengthening, it wouldn't be strange for the user's body to be disintegrated within seconds. It was the kind of body strengthening this was about.

Shia, who had broken through her limit, immediately jumped out, breaking the ground beneath her.

"Huh, again, more power … However, even with this, you're still no match for us!"

Erst stopped Vire Doryuken which was swung at her from the front using her large sword. With a thunderous roar, the surrounding ground cracked, but the large sword didn't make a sound.

Then, using mere physical strength, Erst repelled Shia, as if proving her earlier words.

In truth, if one were to compare the status of Shia and the status of the platinum apostles, the difference would be clear.

How much of a gap there was between the two.

For argument's sake, if the platinum apostles had a status plate, the stats indicated on it would be something like this:

= = = =

For normal apostles, their stats would all be at 12.000, and at 36.000 after being strengthened. Meaning those white-platinum apostles almost had twice their stats.

And, Shia's body strengthening Level V was (TN: CM stands for Cheatmate, SM for sublimation magic, BS for body strengthening):

= = = =

“—— Level VI ! ! ”

“!?”

The following impact. If one depicted this scene with a painting, the physical impact would be the same as the facial impact between Erst’s face moments before and now.

However, just before the blow with the strength of Shia’s propelling, she operated Vire Doryuken’s gravity magic and its weight increased. The white-platinum apostle couldn’t turn a blind eye to the destructive power that was created.

With a terrific roar, a shockwave was created from between the two who clashed. Dust shot up, and inside, a pair of large swords had caught Vire Doryuken’s blow and were crossing against it.

The blow couldn’t be stopped with only one hand anymore. Zweit’s feet which had been slightly pushed back testified of that.

Shia’s body strengthening Level VI. Its values were:

= = = =

made up for that gap.

Shia poured magic into Vire Doryuken which was engaged in a sword lock with the twin large swords in the center, thus activating a gimmick.

KASHUN! One part of the center of the damaged surface on the ground slipped, and inside, the jet black stake that had been charged started emitting light blue sparks, and immediately rotated at high speed.

“Pierce through!”

Following Shia’s pattern, her finger pulled the trigger.

GoOOON

A thunderous roar reverberated.

“Na!?”

Came Zweit’s surprised voice.

Vire Doryuken’s IAP pile banker mercilessly pulverized the pair of large swords into thousand pieces and drew near Zweit’s head.

Zweit, surprised, barely managed to move her head out of the way, but the jet black stake which grazed her cheek inflicted a significant wound on the face of the beauty that resembled a piece of art, and tore through most of her beautiful platinum hair.

From the sky, Dritte shot silver feathers. So did Vierte and Funfte from the left and right.

Furthermore, Zweit who was at point-blank range moved to avoid the silver flash, and Erst swung her silver twin swords.

There was no way out.

They had reassessed the increase of specs in Shia’s body strengthening, and maybe they were aiming to bring her down quickly. Maybe she was actually strong enough to take down Zweit

if they weren't careful.

Any means of escape was virtually nonexistent for Shia.

All of a sudden Shia closed her eyes.

"Have you given up!"

Came Erst's voice.

She couldn't think of any other reason why Shia would close her eyes under these circumstances. Anyone else would naturally think along the same lines as Erst.

But, there was no way the monster rabbit would stand there and accept defeat.

And in the next moment, all attacks missed their target.

"!?" X5

Their inhuman expressions lost their perfectness.

Instead, their faces were painted with confusion and surprise.

That couldn't be helped. Because, after all, Shia was still there. She was there, and even so, all the attacks slipped through.

It was not that the person herself had been cut into two so skillfully that she hadn't realized anything, neither that she had been obliterated by the feathers and flash.

The cause was the strange sight displayed before their eyes. That strange sight was a Shia that had become semi-transparent.

The space magic Half Transition —— a magic that shifted one's body halfway to a different space. All interference from the origin space wouldn't reach the body. In other words, it was a magic of absolute defense.

This was, so to speak, a failed transition magic that connected two spaces. If someone other than Shia were to do it, it wouldn't be

unlikely that their body would get scattered in pieces, so it was an emergency defective magic that was quite dangerous. Because in no way were her magic aptitudes poor in spite of being specialized in body strengthening, and because she was in a state where she had broken through her limits thanks to the Cheatmate she used, Shia could immediately use space magic as a physical ability.

Of course, it was a magic even Shia could not use at her own convenience. It consumed a huge amount of magical power. And on top of Shia not being able to interfere with the origin space either when half-transitioning, she couldn't even move. Therefore, it was a trump card she could only use once in a battle.

Which is why, Shia wouldn't miss this chance.

As soon as the attack passed through, she undid the half-transitioning and returned to the origin space, and dove forward while firing explosive slug bullets around her.

She closed in upon Zweit's bust, who had lost her pair of large swords and had only been firing silver bombardment. Then, she moved past Zweit's drawn out icefish-like hands in a move resembling a snake, and Shia's hands grabbed Zweit's head.

Placing her palm so it covered Zweit's eyes, Shia used her nails on Zweit's forehead to lock her grip.

Then,

" —— Level VII ! ! "

Additional body strengthening.

= = = =

Agility : 130 ⇒[CM 260] ⇒[SM 520] ⇒[BS VII 53720]

Magical power : 3800 ⇒[CM 7600]

Magical resistance : 4000 ⇒[CM 8000]

= = = =

even with gravity magic.

Yes, this hammer really weighed 100 tons.

“Let the earth be scarred desu!”

Shia let out a loud yell.

Using her physical strength which had been strengthened beyond the realm of humans at full throttle, she swung down the hammer, preparing to cause an impact nothing short of comparable to that of an asteroid on a star.

When Zwei was finally able to raise his body from the storm of the explosive slug bullets, her whole vision was already covered with a wall cold metal.

“____ !”

At once, she entered defense mode using her white-silver feathers to cover her body in a knit. But, on the surface of the strike, there was obviously a sealing stone, and the moment of impact, it unknitted the feather, which then completely vanished under the weight that defied common sense.

Then, a severe earthquake occurred.

The artificial island that had caused the unnatural earthquake rumbled. The ground collapsed where the head of the hammer had crashed like a grave-marker. And, as if to make doubly sure of the deed, the hammer started rotating.

At that time, on the surface of the hammer that was touching Zweit, countless sharp edges grew out, and grinding sounds resounded as holes were being made into her. As a matter of fact, a drill gimmick was attached to the head of this hammer. In order to pulverize into million pieces the enemy that had been crushed by it.

Moreover, sealing stones had also been put on the sharp edges to deny enemy resistance. Even if Zweit used her white-silver feathers to protect her body, it would be useless. Truly, men were fond of drills.

Glancing at the 100t hammer that kept digging into the ground little by little, Erst and the other apostles, with a disciplined attitude that seemed indifferent to their fellow apostle's situation, rushed towards Shia.

Shia had just brought down the true 100 tons. She began the process to detach Vire Doryuken from the head of the hammer by shrinking it. She would definitely not make it in time, and she couldn't use [Half Transition] once more. If she did, the consumption of magical power supply from demon crystal stone would become unbalanced, and her body strengthening would be undone.

If that happened, if she was hit only once, there would be no second time.

There, Shia would have to use another of her trump cards.

"It's over!"

Erst's sentence penetrated her ears.

At the same time,

Gakin!

A hard sound resounded.

From Shia who had received and stopped the pair of large swords.

It was not that she used an equipment relying on an artifact to block the swords, nor that she used the pommel of Vire Doryuken.

It was just that she only had her body at her disposal, and she stopped the blow from the pair of large swords.

"Steel Clothes —— It"s going to take more than normal attacks to bring me down you know?"

Shia's fearless voice echoed.

It was literally as if she wore steel clothes: it was a metamorphosis

magic that strengthened her body.

Her neck, shoulders, arms, feet. The sword that obviously aimed to chop off Shia into several pieces, although it managed to bite into Shia a little because of the disintegration ability, was stopped from inflicting a major wound.

The apostles stiffened unintentionally. They started searching their data at high speed for an explanation, but no matter how much they searched, there was obviously no data recording of Shia having an advanced defense system skill as Hajime did. The fact that she immediately became impenetrable using metamorphosis magic indicated that her way of using it had to be very unique.

Sixth Heaven's Demon Transformation was unique in its use of the demon stone, which was similar to Ryutaro's. It immediately made one's own body undergo a metamorphosis. It wasn't much different Tio's Dragon Transformation. It was Steel Transformation, so to speak. Though its consumption of magical power was not at the level of Half Transition, it was still significant, so its use had to be carefully thought about.

The apostles started trembling slightly. But this mere action would leave a fatal gap in this battle that was anything but usual.

Gashun! Vire Doryuken's shrinking process completed. Shia's face showed a faint smile at the return of her partner in her hands.

Then she let out that war cry once more.

"—— Level VIII ! ! "

"Na !?"

A light blue magical power surged. Shia's specs went up once again!

= = = =

Resistance：　100 ⇒[CM 200] ⇒[SM 400] ⇒[BS VIII 61200]

Agility：　130 ⇒[CM 260] ⇒[SM 520] ⇒[BS VIII 61320]

Magical power：　3800 ⇒[CM 7600]

Magical resistance：　4000 ⇒[CM 8000]

= = = =

Even though they had the conviction that they were overwhelming the enemy, when they noticed there were only three of them left.

Closing in on Shia, suddenly her previous declaration passed through their minds.

——To the likes of you, and also your shitty master, I can make the following prediction 'There is no future'.

Dritte who was in the lead gritted her teeth.

She was thinking about something insignificant, that was all nonsense.

Then, she shook off the ominous feeling that was sticking to her and swung down her pair of large swords with all her strength.

That sword swing, to which was added the power of her drop, could only be described with one word: powerful.

In response, Shia readied Vire Doryuken's lower part and took a stance of interception.

'What a fool', Dritte thought. Her body strengthening surprisingly deserved credit. Certainly, it was an outstanding boost that allowed her to approach them, the white-platinum apostles.

But, even with this, she couldn't reach them. This attack, which also used the speed of her fall, was simply something that exceeded the power of Shia's stats. Therefore, there was no way she would be able to defend against it. Let alone intercept it!

However …

(… … Why is your mouth moving!? What the hell are you intending to say!?)

Actually, she knew. In this slow motion scene, the movement on Shia's lips was something familiar, something she had come to see many times in this battle. Each time those powerful words were unleashed into this world, little by little, she was growing closer to it. To their height, that is. It was like an evil spirit lurking in the

abyss, whose hands was growing longer in order to drag them in.

Dritte's muscles froze.

Therefore, without even realizing herself, she made a wish.

(Please stop!)

But, naturally, there was no way this wish would come true ——

"Level IX ! ! "

= = = =

“To stand against the apostles of god, what arrogance! Go down! Shia Hauria!”

The apostles had no such things as emotions. That was a lie all right.

Dritte, who had gotten aggressive and betrayed the usual calm of the apostles, fluttered the wings on her back in an attempt to smash up Shia.

After all, as she stated, it was unforgivable to stand against a being like herself who deserved the title of apostle of god. But, what was even more unforgivable was the fact that she would harbor the feeling of ‘fear’ caused by Shia, someone who had entered their own territory.

In order to deny this, she desperately poured more power into her pair of large swords.

Shia caught sight of Vierte and Funfte sneaking up from behind to attempt a pincer attack from left and right, spoke.

“Ha, I had no idea! So much for your rules.”

Shia wrapped it around Dritte’s neck.

Her hair that is.

“This is ——”

“You’re in the way!”

Her hair, like it was a living being, tightened around Dritte’s neck, and threw her with terrific force at Vierte who was approaching from the left. Neither Dritte, nor Vierte, could ever have expected Shia’s hair to move like a living being. They were completely taken by surprise, and were thrown onto the ground.

And then, the expression on the face of Funfte who was approaching from the right … froze.

Yes, at the sight of that face.

“Impossible, that can’t be! Such a thing as surpassing us!”

“Now then, this is the last one, —— Level X ! ! ! ”

Funfte screamed in denial as Shia, whose sky blue magic was reflected on the walls, stepped forward.

= = = =

after having been previously thrown onto the ground along with Vierte. At the end of her sight was the surreal scene of Funfte's head pulverized, with only a stain left on the ground.

"Dritte … At this rate … "

On Dritte's side, Vierte, who readied her pair of large swords, addressed her fellow apostles as she kept her trembling eyes on Shia. However, there were no follow-up words. It was obvious she frankly didn't want to say what came next.

Dritte couldn't respond. Nevertheless, at that time, she caught sight of an unusual phenomenon surrounding Shia. No, more precisely, it was an unusual phenomenon surrounding what deserved the title of Shia's partner, the war hammer.

"This is … "

If they focused their eyes, they could see countless cracks on Vire Doryuken.

That was not a coincidence.

After all, it stopped countless attacks from the front, each of which had decomposition ability and unusually high impact, and what's more, it now has to cope with Shia's insane physical strength which surpassed reason. Rather, what was more of a wonder was how it had withstood all that so far.

"Vierte, target the weapon."

" … I see."

She understood the intention behind these words.

Immediately after, Shia's shape disappeared.

The moment Dritte realized this, Shia had already appeared behind her. A truly overwhelming speed. If it was only physical ability, she would be surpassing even a Hajime who was on Supreme Break.

However, the apostles would now be aiming to avoid physical contact at all costs, even if barely, after seeing what happened to Funfte.

The moment she saw Shia disappear, she immediately covered her body with her wings and pointed her of large swords overhead.

Her feathers were pulverized in an instant, but they managed to reduce the strength of Shia's blow to some extent, allowing the pair of large swords to stop the blow completely next.

"GuUUUUUUUUU!?"

Even so, Dritte unintentionally leaked an anguished cry at the tremendous shock that resulted. Both of her arms made an unpleasant sound which seemed to reveal they had reached their limit. Then, Vierte used her decomposition ability at its maximum.

The target was not Shia, but the cracks spreading on Vire Doryuken. She estimated that if Shia were to lose her weapon, they would only be up against living flesh, and thus have a chance of winning.

However,

"I predicted that you know?"

The derivation of her native magic Future Sight, Hypothesis Sight. Shia had become suspicious of Dritte and Vierte's discussion. What if I attack Dritte? She glanced into the future at this eventuality with her ability.

Therefore, she was aware of where Vierte would probably be aiming to strike.

Shia's beautiful legs disappeared. Her fine, toned, long legs precisely fixed on Vierte's neck.

Gokin!

Resounded the lively sound of smashing.

Vierte's neck was bent towards the direction of the day after

tomorrow. Immediately following, fluently fired in a flash, came the explosion of an elegant, tremendously powerful roundhouse kick, that sent Vierte's body flying with terrific force.

"Ku, that damn monster"

"Please don't go around suddenly praising me."

Dritte fired white-silver bombardment. In terms of distance, it was from point-blank range.

However, as if naturally, it didn't land on Shia. Her shape disappeared instantly, and the next moment, she had snuck upon Dritte's bosom.

Without even having time to take a breath, Dritte received an elbow strike in the pit of the stomach. Gohaa! To this Dritte who was reduced in a sorry state where she was spewing out bloody vomit, a kick that seemed to pierce the sky was raised up. Before the beautiful form that bent 180 degrees top and bottom, Dritte, whose jaws had been pulverized, was sent floating into the air in a hopeless state.

"Explode desu!"

A scream, then an explosion.

While returning her feet, bent overhead, to their original position, Vire Doryuken had already picked up a speed too fast to be visible.

In that moment, it broke the speed of sound, causing an explosion in the air, and the next moment its full swing appeared.

And, Dritte, who received that full swing …

Her shape was no longer anywhere to be seen.

All that were left were red stains on the ground.

There, a war cry resounded.

"HaaaAAA ! ! "

It was Vierte. It seemed she didn't die even with her neck bone pulverized. She created a tidal wave of flames around a magic square using her white-silver wings, went inside, and started approaching Shia.

"Such a thing won't work against the current me!"

Swinging her rabbit ears, she sensed the presence of Vierte inside the large fire, and swung Vire Doryuken with a splendid timing at the place where Vierte was covering herself with fire.

There came jumping in … two shadows.

" ! "

Shia was surprised. She opened her eyes wide at the fact that she, who was excellent at the perception of presences, had been deceived.

By Vierte's presence, the large fire, as well as their whole resulting strategy.

"Be destroyed!"

The large sword that was swung against Vire Doryuken, the moment it hit Vierte, was Erst's.

As if trading Vierte's life for more power, Vierte's limbs were pulverized simultaneously with Vire Doryuken. Inside the flames starting to disperse because of the death of their caster, Erst ran past Shia to face her back. Then, she immediately turned around, and swung her large sword to pierce Shia who had just lost her partner.

Performing a rotation that seemed like a dance, she had taken a striking stance and her large sword was approaching Shia to take her life.

On the opposing side, Shia, who had her back turned to Erst, turned around like a mirror.

Then, for a moment, their gazes met. In this slow-motion space,

both of their feelings were conveyed to one another.

(The apostles cannot lose!)

(I will be the one to win!)

The brightness of the large swords swelled up. It was a radiance that showed that even against Steel Clothes, it would be ready to chop off Shia's neck. That was the radiance of a will strong enough to question its emanating from a puppet.

Or maybe it was that at this moment she was betting her pride as an apostle, that she didn't want to lose, and she would carry out the mission of god and them apostles.

But, 'I don't want to lose' and 'I want to win'. There was a gap of strength between those two wills. When they clashed, the one with more pressure was undoubtedly … the latter.

As if to prove this fact, inside the slow-motion space, something started to form in the hand of Shia which should have been empty. Red liquid, as if it were alive, started to converge.

Erst opened her eyes wide in surprise.

That was because … Shia was holding a war hammer made of blood that had gathered from the cut she inflicted on her own arm.

Crimson War Hammer —— it was a magic that used metamorphosis magic on one's own body, just like Steel Clothes. Something allowing her to freely manipulate her blood.

Leaving the slow-motion space and returning to the original world, the next moment, they both clashed ——

Once more, their backs were turned on each other.

The blood war hammer was falling and scattering blood like cherry blossom.

Pushu! Blood gushed out from the neck of the alert Shia.

Then a voice spoke.

“ … I wonder what this thing rising up within me is. This tightening thing that makes me want to scream. Shia Hauria. Do you know what it is?”

“ … Isn’t it frustration?”

Hearing Shia’s answer, Erst nodded ‘I see’.

Immediately after, something came falling from the sky and stuck to the ground separating the two of them.

It was the large sword that had been broken halfway.

On closer look at Erst’s stance, it wasn’t that only Erst’s sword had been broken. On her chest, there was a big hole. It was obvious whatever was inside had been pulverized.

Erst finally relaxed her alertness and threw away her broken sword. Then, she looked over her shoulders at Shia who had likewise relaxed, and muttered her last words with an expressionless face.

“I hate you.”

Just as Shia said, that was the result of the considerable level of frustration she had been holding in …

Erst only said this, then fell down like a puppet whose strings had been cut.

At this sound, Shia fluttered her rabbit ears and hair, and turned around. Then, she muttered something in turn. Really as if to say that this was the cause of her victory. With a broad grin and fearless smile.

“I hate you ‘very’ much.”

Then, she collapsed.

“Ahh, as expected, Level X takes a heavy tollll. And because I also used Crimson War Hammer, I am getting anemiaa”

While taking out a restorative medicine from Treasure Warehouse II, Shia muttered a monolog and held onto her consciousness that seemed ready to fade at any moment in some way or another.

“Now then, I’ve dealt with the apostles but … what is happening on Tio-san’s side —— ”

Shia redirected her consciousness towards Tio whom she had been separated from while she fought with the platinum apostles. Searching her memory, when they got separated, the armed black dragons were surrounded by countless more monsters, and seemed to be rampaging without losing.

The black and white flashes flying about in the sky were worthy of a space battle between two fleets in a sci-fi movie.

Because the black dragons didn’t seem to be losing ground, and that their master, Tio, seemed to be fine, Shia breathed a sigh of relief.

But, the next moment,

OoOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO ! ! ! !

Came the violent yells of countless numbers, that gave the sense that the sky was going to fall. And, simultaneously, a large army of monsters made its appearance, making completely light of the previous ratio.

Shia thought this was bad, and that she had to try and stand up, but the adverse effect of Level X was overwhelming, and it didn’t look as if she would be able to stand up immediately.

Meanwhile, something else occurred. She wondered if it was the terrific flashes in the sky,

ZuDooOOOON ! !

An earth tremor spread, and something came crashing with terrific force right next to Shia, who was lying on the ground. She was swung back and forth by the oscillations.

Wondering what it was, Shia turned her sight ahead as she

revitalized her upper body. There, there was …

“Eh, Tio, san?”

Lying down on the completely smashed-up ground, having wounds all over her body, was the figure of Tio.

Arifureta Chapter 171

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/172/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Bakapervert did the edits.

Dragon God Manifestation

(TN: The kanji used for dragon here is for the Chinese dragon, not the western dragon.)

Going back in time for a little.

During the time Shia was embroiled in a mortal combat with the platinum apostles, Tio was also in the middle of a fierce fighting.

Tio unified the armed black dragons with the new black dragons which were transformed using the black whip of slavery, with them Tio challenged the abnormally powerful monsters that filled the surrounding to the brim while enduring the aurora breath of the white divine dragon and Freed's variegated chantless-limitless storm of magic, bearing damage that wasn't few in the process.

The number of monsters that were turned into black dragons using the black whip of slavery was already nearly a hundred. The number of the dragons' fighting force had become doubled. In addition, with Tio's regeneration magic 'Boon of the Dragon King', they became an astounding battle force that should be called as the undying black dragon army.

But, even so, the one who was cornered in this fight was Tio.

(…Hm. The ‘Fix It J’ at mine hand wouldst be used up soon. When it becomes difficult to evade the aurora completely, it will cause mine damage control to be harsh.)

Tio took out a new magic medicine ‘Fix It J’ to reduce the additional effect of the aurora and then she gulped it down in one go while making a bitter face.

The aurora breath of the Uranus was excessively powerful. It was exactly like the main cannon of a battleship. Even just its aftershock granted the additional effect of obstructing healing magic and worsened the already existing wound to the target, so completely avoiding that attack was next to impossible.

Not only that, the Uranus didn’t only have aurora breath as its attack, it was also creating countless aurora bullets that floated in the area where they would then flew around like a strafing Gatling gun.

Furthermore, Freed’s all elements magic in full burst and silver feathers, his silver bombardment, and space magic was pressing on Tio like a surging wave, then the gray dragons above that couldn’t be handled by the black dragons would also launch a heavy rain of aurora one after another.

Tio who was continuously enduring through that in paper-thin difference could be said as astonishing. But, if the magic medicine ‘Fix It J’ that Tio only had several bottles remaining was used up, then that situation would also crumble down, she was placed in a brittle equilibrium right now. The moment Tio became unable to nullify the effect of the aurora showering down on her and she couldn’t evade, Tio would surely become cornered in one go at that time.

How much her dragon scales were already broken, how much her blood had flowed out…

Even if she used regeneration magic, there was a limit to the amount of her magic power. Not only for regeneration, her magic

power was also being consumed in great amount for her breath attack and metamorphosis magic. To put it bluntly, her situation was gradually getting worse.

Freed also understood that, even now when a hundred of his monsters had been stolen by the black whip of slavery, his composed expression didn't crumble.

Tio was aiming to overturn the situation by turning the monsters into black dragon before she became unable to endure anymore, that was what Freed was thinking, so now that he was looking at Tio's situation where it became difficult for her to heal, on top of that the difference in battle strength where his monsters were still five times the number of the black dragon, he became convinced of his victory.

Looking from his slightly distorted lips, perhaps he was already planning to make sport of Tio until she died. Perhaps in his heart, he was already laughing, looking at the fool who was meaninglessly resisting in desperation for a result that was already obvious to see.

While vaguely guessing that thinking in Freed's heart, Tio was flipping over at midair even now to evade the aurora breath, she swung her whip in a world where up and down was reversed to hold back Freed, at the same time she counterattacked at the Uranus with super thin breath attack from the tip of her gun finger that made a gun shape.

While confirming that her attacks were easily repelled by a barrier of space magic and the white divine dragon's claw, Tio grumbled in her heart.

(Muu, I compressed that attack considerably already. That damned white dragon. To flick away mine breath attack entirely like that. Is that the revenge for previously? The subordinate monster is just like the master. It is making a disgusting grin.)

A fierce barrage of attack approached Tio. Light bullets and silver feathers, plus great number of magic.

Tio activated the space ripping magic enchanted in her whip and

tore apart several of those attacks with the meandering movement of the whip that looked like a snake, she weaved through the gap that was created in the barrage and passed through. But, as expected she was unable to perfectly evade, the attack that impacted the edge of her body shaved off her dragon scales.

And then, an aurora breath attacked Tio at that timing. *GOU-!* It blew away the atmosphere while approaching Tio, annihilating a part of Tio's right shoulder and one of the dragon wings growing on her back.

"Kuuuuu-, that's effectiveee"

While leaking out voice unconsciously from the pain that she already didn't remember how many times it had been, Tio used a certain power and immediately used regeneration magic to regenerate her dragon wing before she rebuilt her posture from her midair tailspin.

However, what was regenerated was only her dragon wing while her shoulder blade was still bleeding mostly unhealed. Wondering whether Tio's regeneration magic had finally become unusable, Freed's faint grin became even deeper.

In contrast, Tio was sighing while pondering in her mind.

(Good grief, if Goshujin-sama is the one who did this to me then I would hath reached one or two climaxes already. Even without the side effect from the ability's activation, that kind of attack only granted me pain, and above all, it feels disgusting.)

Surely even Freed who was planning to torment Tio until death would be troubled without end if that only made Tio happy instead. No, before that he would undoubtedly draw away in revulsion.

(The black dragons art increasing favorably. At this rate it wouldst be possible to overturn the difference in battle force. …However, in the end, will it progress that well…. Above all, to head to Goshujin-sama's location with mine own strength and then face against the god…as expected, I hath to prepare *that* ahead then. In that case, I will need some time…)

Tio who squeezed out a conclusion from wracking her brain repeated attacking and evading the attacks while lamenting the inconvenience of her own trump card. Then she suddenly talked to Freed also with the intention of buying time.

“Which reminds me, thou. What happened with thy brethrens? They should have crossed into the Holy Precincts along with thou shouldn’t they?”

Tio who suddenly chatted lightly at him despite her cornered situation made Freed retracted his grin and he narrowed his eyes suspiciously.

Tio made a wry smile at such Freed.

“What’s wrong, as thou can see, I can possibly increase my battle force for more than this. At this rate, it seems I can somehow manage this somehow don’t thou think? So I am just making a little probe here.”

Freed nodded once while grumbling “Fumu” toward Tio who was transparently conveying her true motive.

And then, looking at Tio who was harboring hope that she could possibly overturn the difference in battle force at this rate if the devil race didn’t participate in the fight, Freed was making a pitying expression while opening his mouth.

“Let me say that it is a needless worry if you are feeling apprehension about the possibility of participation of my brethrens. All members of the devil race are sleeping at another domain. After all they need to have the strength that is worthy as the vanguard of the god residing in their body before we arrived in the new world.”

“I see now. However, this made me wondering though. Why art thou following someone like that Ehitorujue? That guy incited war from the human race side. Because of that there were a lot of devil race people who died isn’t that correct? Dost thou not have any ill feeling for that?”

While getting hit by a light bullet once more that caused her dragon

scales and blood to be scattered, even so Tio repeated her question calmly.

Freed kept the intensity of his attack without any slackening and returned a sentence.

“Everything is according to god’s will.”

As though it was only obvious, as if that was the truth, Freed said that without any hesitation or sadness on his expression.

Tornado was generated from the four pair of wings of the Uranus which crumbled the balance of Tio. The aurora breath that was fired at her at that timing burned half of Tio’s body. The damage surpassed the reduction effect of ‘Fix It J’ toward the secondary ability of the aurora. Because of that Tio grimaced due to the additional effect that was invading her body while she drained up a new ‘Fix It J’ and used her regeneration magic.

However, she was unable to heal herself completely, her constricted waist and burned skin that were exposed from her torn clothes stayed unhealed. Her sleeve was also stayed torn up from her shoulder blade and her white graceful arm swelled bright red.

Cold sweat was perspiring from her skin as though to express her pain, even so Tio repeated her question.

“Even so won’t thy comrade become unable to rest in peace? If Ehitorujue didn’t summon people of another world here, the Goshujin-sama also wouldn’t arrive here. In that case thou wouldn’t lose several thousand of thy brethrens like in that day. If the people who hath departed, see thou right now…what art they going to think I wonder?”

Hearing those words that sounded like provocation, or even possibly scorn, Freed suddenly stopped his attack. Not only Freed, the attacks from other monsters including Uranus also stopped coming.

Inside the silence that suddenly visited, a severe earthquake thundered from far away. It was surely the sound of Shia

rampaging. But, Freed and also Tio didn't move their gaze there.

Did some kind of change of heart happen in him? Was rage welling up in his heart, or else he wanted to defeat Tio's impudent argument? Tio didn't understand what was going on in actuality, but for the time being this situation was something that she would greatly celebrate for. After all for the time being Tio had the need to receive nonlethal *pain from the enemy* for a while.

"The likes of you, don't you dare to talk impertinently about our matter."

"Even if I'm not being impertinent, but I could not find even a single factor in Ehitorujue's way of doing thing that I can possibly give my approval forth."

"But, your premise is mistaken. There is no right and wrong in what the god is doing. The intention of the lord is exactly the true path. Therefore, all of my brethrens whose life were scattered, they are all martyr. There is no way they would regret it or anything, surely they will also take pride in what I'm doing."

Tio sent an exasperated gaze at Freed hearing those words.

"The true path, is it. In the end, thou art merely stop thinking for thyself. That's a blind faith. To put it in another way thou hath been brainwashed. Since the first place thou were already a religious fanatic, but even so I could see thy pride as a devil race and thy affection toward thy brethrens. But right now thy art completely a controlled puppet."

"That's what I called as an impertinence."

Freed cut off their talk for once, then he sent a pitying gaze at Tio before started talking once more.

"The many wars, the many hardships, all of those were the trials that god handed down to us. That great person was searching, for existence that is worthy to walk together with him. And then, the one who overcame those trials and got recognized by that great person is only our race, that's all there is to it. The me who was

unable to grasp that divine will and instead insulted that great person as a pagan god, that foolishness makes me want to vomit right now. However, that great person forgive this foolish me, and not only he welcomed me in, he even granted me the qualification to be the retainer of god. This depth of god's mercy…why, are you unable to understand it?"

Freed who began to get into a trance while talking caused Tio to groan "oou" in repulsion inside her heart. Freed talking like this was also because of her provocation, but he was even more unsightly to see than she expected.

And then, the content of his talk also felt in perfect form in a certain meaning. There were truly a lot of places that were fully loaded with double standards she could throw retort at. After listening this far, perhaps it could even be said that it felt refreshing instead.

"Just like thou said, in the first place it has become like this because I am someone impertinent. Leaving that aside, 'qualification to become retainer' thou said? Doest that referred to that transformation to an apostle?"

"Correct. First my lord had elevated me to an apostle's rank. And then, eventually I will climb to the rank as retainer god, similar like Aruvheit-sama. It's truly something awe-inspiring, but now that Aruvheit-sama has died, I am serving as my lord's immediate follower. In that case, my race will become the follower of me who is the follower of god. That is to say they will become the people chosen by the true god——a divine race."

Perhaps feeling the extraordinarily great honor that he received, or else, perhaps he was imagining how his own race would rule over the people at the new land as the race of god, whatever the reason Freed's expression was turning into something that might be prohibited to be broadcasted to public while he kept talking even to the topic that he wasn't asked for.

But, at that time, space undulated as though to obstruct the talk of Freed. No, it was a generation of immense power to the degree that it made them thought that space was undulating.

When they spontaneously directed their gaze at the direction of the power, there a faint blue magic power was pulsing like heartbeat while winding up. And then, several of the platinum apostles leaped forward yet they then got blown away instead, they could see such spectacle at the far away.

“Impossible…the apostles are being pushed back? Absurd-. The first until the fifth apostles had been strengthened by my lord’s power to a great degree already-!”

Freed’s expression changed from a look of ecstasy into a look of shock as though he had been showered with ice water.

That was just how hard it was to believe seeing the scene of someone who regardless of battling five platinum apostles at the same time, far from matching the apostles, this person was even gradually beginning to overpower them.

But, for Tio who believed in Shia from the start, she replied back with an extremely composed tone.

“What art thou feeling surprised for. Among all of us, with the exception of Goshujin-sama, the one who is the most monstrous is Shia just so thou know. That person is without any foundation like being a vampire, dragon race, or apostle’s body, even if we look back at her ancestor, she is only a demi-human which mean she also doesn’t hath talent in magic. To say further, something like a rabbit race is a race that is the most cowardly in the world. That maiden overturns all that with just her feeling. The likes of the soldiers of the self-proclaimed god who hath no ability other than soaking in joy from belittling other people at best, there art no way they would be able to rival her with just some strengthening don’t thou think?”

Tio talked as though it was the truth of this world.

Freed could only leak out a murmur of “…impossible” to Tio’s words.

And then, he shook his head as though to shake off something, and then he glared at Tio with a gaze that contained coldness.

“I have to go to support the apostles. Tormenting you to death end right now. You can quickly meet your end.”

“Don’t say that. The main event will be from here on just so thou know.”

“Nonsense. Your scheme won’t result in anything. The difference in battle force is impossible to overturn. You are already wounded all over. Further, just I and Uranus are enough to be your opponent.”

Freed quietly raised his hand. It was as though he was saying that if that hand got swung down then the scythe of the god of death would be swung down on Tio’s neck. Answering its master’s will, the white divine dragon roared and its eyes glinted with killing intent.

The fact was that there was five times difference in their battle force. There were still a thousand of Freed’s monsters remaining against the two hundred black dragons.

But,

“I don’t remember saying these art all of my black dragons though?”

Tio smiled fearlessly.

And then, she resounded the command to revolt simultaneously.

“Awaken! Reborn! O children of dragon king——’Dragon King’s Corpse Life Army’!”

Immediately the land squirmed.

No, more accurately the monsters who fell on the ground from the mortal combat unfolding at the sky——that great number of husks were moving like sludge.

At the ground right below where nearly a thousand monsters were lying down, their husks were dyed reddish black and the scenery became a painting from hell. There the first cry of newly born life rose, the husks’ shape was gradually firming up, and then the long

necks there that were rising up looked like the lid of hell that was sliding open.

One body, and then one more body, those things that were born from the heaps of bodies and streams of blood unfolded open their wings vigorously and flapped, those large bodies were floating up in order to hasten to join at their king's location.

"What, is that…"

Freed's movement spontaneously stopped, his eyes narrowed while looking down at below while he whispered. Tio then answered that whisper.

"What is necessary for black dragon transformation is not only this black whip of slavery. How much dragon scale and blood doth thou think I hath scattered in this battlefield?"

"What? Don't tell me, you used a part of yourself as the medium?"

"Fufufu, now, this is the celebration of thy birth! Raise the grand roar fitting for a dragon!"

"____"

It was Tio's——the dragon king's command.

The black dragons who were just born, and the black dragons who were dancing in the sky simultaneously answered that command. Breath attacks in black color of Tio's magic power light were fired in countless number.

Skewering flashes pierced the sky from the ground. Flashes were rushing horizontally from back and front, left and right. The black flashes that were fired almost at the same time formed a cage of heat ray that put the monsters of Freed at the center with no place to escape.

The shriek of death agony rained down from the sky.

Soul and metamorphosis composite magic 'Dragon King's Corpse Life Army'——this magic was using Tio's own blood and scale as

the medium, where the soul magic Dragon Soul Reproduction and metamorphosis magic Sixth Heaven's Demon Transformation were applied on the monsters' corpse to create black dragons.

By offering flesh and blood, making use of corpse, it created a new army——in addition, the created dragons were all black dragon with an evil and atrocious appearance that could be mistaken as an evil dragon. It could be said as a worthy deed for a woman who looked up at a man who was titled as demon king that she called as goshujin-sama…perhaps.

Normally someone who listened to detail of this magic would feel one or two repugnances, but Hajime who listened to the report about this magic instead said "To be able to make use of the killed opponent, that's really ecological. What a convenient magic huh" and looked a little envious. As expected from the man who was called as demon king or demon god. And then, Tio who blushed and fidgeted around shyly but happily after getting praised like that could also be said as having enough quality to be a female general of the demon king.

"How's that? Thy monsters hath been reduced considerably with this don't thou see?"

The corpse life army that was created was roughly consisting of four hundred dragons. Combined with the armed black dragons and monsters that were turned into black dragons using the black whip of slavery, then the total number of the army could reach six hundred dragons.

And then, with the simultaneous breath attacks just now, the monsters of Freed that got slain were roughly three hundred monsters. If added with the numbers of monsters who got heavily injured and became unable to fight satisfactorily then the number of the victim would jump to five hundred. The remaining monsters in good health and all their limbs intact were more or less five hundred.

In other words, the condition had been overturned.

Although Tio's appearance was wounded all over, but her figure

who was standing imposingly in midair with black dragons obeying her in the background was truly worthy to be called a dragon king.

As for Freed, he took a slow glare at the battlefield, and then he suddenly lifted the corner of his lips.

It was as though he was looking at the struggle of a bug that had all of its wings already plucked out, as if he was laughing mockingly at a person who ran desperately at non-existence hope, that smile was awfully warped, expressing his ugly emotion.

Freed's mouth opened. His eyes were muddy like dark sludge in his expectation to trample the other party's hope. And then with a voice that was filled to the brim with scorn and ecstasy,

"I don't remember saying these are all of my monsters though?"

Right after that, a pillar of light rose up from the obelisk.

Furthermore, it didn't seem to come only from the obelisk in front of Tio's eyes, the same white light was also rising to the sky one after another from the islands other than the floating islands where Tio and Freed were at. That implied that there were the same obelisks at the surrounding floating islands, this scene was enough to stir up unpleasant premonition in Tio's heart.

"…Hmmm. As expected, it won't go well that easily. If I hath to say in Goshujin-sama's style, then this must be a 'template'." (TN: I guess what she mean by template here is something like cliché or trope I guess.)

Tio was reflexively making a bitter look while whispering that, while at her field of vision the worst situation was coming into view.

OOOO

Not only at the floating island where she was at right now, all the islands floating at the surrounding were also wholly covered with swarms of monsters.

Just how many their number could possibly be? Several thousand, several tens of thousands, the monsters' number wasn't at that level anymore. Even hundreds of thousands weren't enough at all to express their total number. Most likely the monsters here were in the millions.

"Although they are a level inferior compared to the previous monsters, I think their number has compensated for that for more than enough, don't you think so? Now then, Tio Claus, the sport is now over. Prepare to be trampled down."

Right after that, Freed swung down his arm.

That was the signal for the trampling.

The monsters in a great amount of numbers simultaneously rushed at the black dragons.

(-, no matter what this number art just too many. As for Shia… looked like she is victorious, but as expected she cannot immediately move. If she is attacked right now she wouldn't last even for a bit. Thinking about the future, I wish the time could pass a little bit more yet…it can't be helped! A woman is all about guts!)

Although the armed dragons were somehow fighting hard, yet the black dragons other than them were in the middle of raising scream of death agony right now. Tio made her decision.

Until this point of time, she was thinking about after this battle, she was taking safety margin as much as possible while continuing to save her power so she would be able to support Hajime later with the greatest strength possible that she could muster but…now she flung off that thinking to the wind.

This method was a dangerous method where she could possibly die instantly is she mistook even a step.

However, she could only do that in order to activate it instantly!

For the sake of her friend, and then, for the sake of her beloved master, she didn't hesitate!

"Cooome on, o white dragon! That indomitable that still hath not hit me properly, now I'll receive it head on without evading, so put thy spirit and fire it at me!"

While saying that provocative sentence, Tio swung around her whip like a tornado around her and cut apart the swarming monsters while her other hand was firing her compressed breath attack.

The black compressed breath that was specialized for piercing became a streak of light and pierced the monsters on its line of fire and arrived at its target the white divine dragon.

Uranus seemed to hear Tio's provocation, it dispersed the approaching breath merely with its roar while its eyes were sparkling with killing intent as though to say "Then take this if you can", it then fired an extra-large aurora.

DOU! A bombardment that looked like the main cannon of a space battleship firing that came out in science fiction movie approached in a straight line at Tio while turning the allied monsters into dust just from its aftershock.

Tio drained up in one breath the 'Cheatmate Dr' that she wasted no time to take out, she then threw away the container while performing partial dragonification.

Both her arms swelled up and turned into dragon arms covered in dragon scale and sharp claws elongating out. Furthermore, her whole body became covered with jet black dragon scales leaving no spot exposed, she crossed her arms and took a defensive posture to protect her vital spots.

Freed saw her doing that and guessed that Tio was seriously not going to evade to receive the attack. He made a sneer thinking that she had resigned herself already. That was only natural he guessed. There was no way she could come out safely after getting hit by the aurora. He could see no merit in doing that, that was why it was only natural for him to think that she was now accepting her death

graciously.

But, just before the aurora hit, he saw the powerful and resolute gaze of Tio that was visible from the gap between her crossed arms, and he got caught in a violently bad premonition.

He was about to call at Uranus to stop the dragon's attack unconsciously, but the aurora had already got fired by then. It was impossible for him to make it in time, and right then,

ZUDOOOOOOOO-!!

Tio's figure was swallowed into the aurora along with a thunderous sound and she vanished from sight.

A track of light divided the sky horizontally.

Inside that light of devastation,

"——!!!"

Tio desperately endured while raising a wordless scream.

The prided dragon scales that dragon race boasted as the hardest were annihilated in succession. While feeling aware of the unpleasant sensation running through both her blocking arms, an abnormal storm of agony that assaulted her whole body made her gritted her teeth with a force that might break her teeth.

It was an intense pain that might make her mad.

Tio understood that her body was being annihilated from the edge. She hallucinated the shadow of death slithering up on her body. This wasn't like the sweet pain that Hajime granted her, not even for a bit. She was undoubtedly able to listen to the scream that was raised by her dying body.

The damage that had already far surpassed the scope that could be described made her consciousness almost got blown away to the beyond. While she was barely taking hold of her consciousness, Tio endured it through to the end with her spirit, and then…

(…I can do this-)

Conviction.

At the same time, she took out the variable large shield Aedeon from ‘Treasure Warehouse II’ in front of her eyes, it blocked the aurora just for an instant. The white breath of devastation was easily annihilating the shield that was just a pile of metallic mass without any ‘Vajra’ or ‘Transmutation’ or even magic power for regeneration poured into it, but even so the quality shield of Hajime’s made definitely protected Tio’s body from ruin during a few seconds.

Just that much was more than enough. With a flap, Tio leaped out from the torrent of aurora. And then, she was falling to the ground while white smoke was rising from her body and she impacted on the ground with a thunderous sound.

The ground was gouged from the impact and dust cloud rose up grandly.

“Eh, Tio, san?”

Shia’s words felt caught up was surely not only because of her exhausted body.

Shia was obviously looking shocked from seeing the disastrous appearance of Tio.

Tio replied with a bright voice in order to reassure Shia.

“Yes. This is, every, one’s, belo, ved, pervert, Tio, san he…gafuh… gehah”

“No no no, this is not the time for saying humor with a body that almost died like that! There is no person or anything that like Tio-san when you are in your pervert mode! All the mankind would only draw away in revulsion against such pervert desu! Wait not that, healing, quickly healing!”

“No, person, likes me…the whole mankind, will draw away…how, cruel. Gofuuu, haa haa.”

While taking out magical medicine of healing from her own ‘Treasure Warehouse II’ all flustered, Shia was making a sharply piercing retort with a voice that was oozing with unease. Even while enduring a tremendous pain, Tio’s tone was changing from feeling a bit of pleasure and she was going ‘haa haa’ in a different meaning. As expected, the pain given to her from her comrade felt sweet.

Shia was crawling toward Tio who was lying down spread-eagled in a tattered state, magical medicine in hand. But, before Shia could reach Tio, a silver feather flew in high speed and disintegrated the medicine container at Shia’s hand.

Shia came to her sense and when she looked at the direction from where the feather was flying, there was Freed riding above Uranus there glaring at Shia without hiding the scorn in his expression.

When Shia looked above, there was a swarm of monsters there in which the expression of like the number of stars matched it perfectly. Her surrounding was also completely buried in monsters, she couldn’t see the edge of the island at all. It was as though the ground was covered by undulating dark clouds.

Shia and Tio were surrounded completely in a hemisphere shape.

Because Shia had acted recklessly in her battle with the apostles, she was in a state where she couldn’t immediately fight, as for Tio it should be rather left unsaid. She was heavily wounded to the degree that it was mysterious that she was still alive.

In other words, this is a situation of checkmate from all point of view.

“A power that could drive away the strengthened apostles of god is something to be feared…but it appeared you have completely used up your strength. It’s already over for Tio Claus too. This is the end of the path of the fools who went against god. Obediently receive this judgment.”

Shia directed a chilly gaze at Freed who haughtily proclaimed such. And then, when her mouth opened to talk back,

‘Fuh, fuha, fuhahahahahah, gehah, kafu-, hahaha-“

Shia swallowed her words hearing Tio’s laugh.

“…Have you lost even your mind? That’s understandable. After all you should be tormented by unimaginable tremendous pain even now.”

“No, no. Nothing, wrong, with mine sanity. What art funny, is, thy humor. Fufu.”

Tio ghastly distorted her blood soaked face while directing a sharp gaze that was unthinkable coming from that wound-riddled body. Pierced by those golden eyes with slitted pupils that were increasing in radiance, Freed unconsciously took a step back.

The bad promotion that he felt before Tio got directly hit by the aurora swelled up further, a chill was circling in his whole body as though something unknown was crawling around.

But, he ignored the chill using his fury toward himself who was pressured by these two who were already at the death’s door no matter he saw it, and he kept up with his haughty attitude.

“Hmph. What can you do this late with that kind of state? Do you think you can manage something somehow with the likes of the black dragons? Or else, don’t tell me, are you thinking that your master would return here so conveniently?”

“Perish, the thought. Just that, the one, ending this, is me.”

Tio’s body was shining with black colored magic power light. Even though she was supposedly unable to move, her body was making creaking sound while she scolded her trembling legs to stand up. Without paying any mind to the blood that was dripping down, only her lips were showing a deepening fierce smile.

Freed put himself on guard.

He tried to deal the finishing blow judging that there was no need for any question. In concert with that, Uranus also opened its mouth wide. Light of annihilation was converging inside it.

And then, in that moment just before the last flash was going to be fired,

DOKUN—!!

Pulsing sound resounded in the space.

Not only that, a tremendous pressure that was even accompanied by physical impact rushed through the dome-shaped space, causing Freed and Uranus to slightly staggered. There were even monsters in the surrounding who fainted.

The center of that pressure was without doubt Tio.

Despite being just a step away from death, she was emitting an impossible pressure.

DOKUN—!!

Pulsing was spreading at the whole space once more.

The abnormal pressure was heightening second by second. It even caused a hallucination as though their heart was being grabbed tightly.

DOKUN—!!

The pulsation spread for the third time.

Whether one wanted it or not, they were made to understand this instinctually. That it was an existence that one must not lay their hands on.

What they felt was fear.

What was hard to believe, what he didn't want to believe, was that this swelling pulsation of power easily surpassed the white divine dragon that could be said as the culmination of Freed's effort.

(I, impossible. Just what in the world, something, something is happening-. Is she not actually dying? Is she bluffing? Something… something like this, it's as if, as if this is the same with that

monster-)

With his body stiffening unable to be aware of his trembling arms and legs, Freed spouted out such words that were filled with confusion and agitation in his heart. But then he came back to his senses all of sudden when he noticed Tio who had stood up completely, she had pulled Shia close to her and gazed at Freed with narrowed eyes.

If he had the free time to be paralyzed, if he had the time to lament how unbelievable this was, then he should attack them with no question asked instead. Even with the situation turning bizarre like this, it didn't change that Tio and Shia were in exhaustion, it would be enough if he attacked simultaneously along with the surrounding monsters. Freed was feeling anger at his own stupidity after this late like that.

With that fury, Freed who was scolding himself raised up his arm.

"Tsk, attack-! Don't let them do anything-! Kill them right now-!!!"

A command that sounded like a shriek.

All the terrified monsters couldn't immediately react. Be that as it may, the monsters that were in the number that was far more than enough to destroy just two people obeyed that command, including the Uranus they let out their killing intent.

There, a voice resounded.

The voice that possessed a solemn echo sounded like it was descending from the sky despite how the speaker was right there in front of them.

"Observe closely. This is the zenith that I, the dragon race Tio Claus had arrived at."

Right after that, a storm of killing intent was released.

At the center of that was naturally the aurora breath of Uranus.

But, all those attacks couldn't hope to wound Shia and Tio.

If the reason was asked, it was because just before the attacks were launched, an extremely large flash surged and pierced the sky with Tio as the center.

Black——or rather the dark light that was like the abyss was rising straight to the sky, the monsters standing on its way were all blown away.

Although attacks were rushing at that flash's bottom, the place where Tio and Shia were at, the dark light pillar rising to the sky while rumbling the space didn't shake even a bit.

Far from that, it increased in radiance even further while still piercing the sky, in addition black ripple was spreading in the sky.

"What is, what is happening-!"

Freed yelled with even his confusion exposed.

Even while he was doing that, the dark ripple was spreading through the sky——

At the next moment, a flame blast licked all over the sky.

The radiant great fire was spreading crawlingly and in the blink of eye the sky was dyed red. What was manifested wasn't sea of clouds but a sea of flame. The red sea that was blazing roaringly couldn't be thought as the scenery of this world by any means.

Further in that flame sea of the sky, lightning surged.

Divine rumbling sound roared, not losing to the sound of the air bursting. The raining down thunders were randomly, carelessly, mercilessly, shooting out the monsters and exterminated them like scattering flies.

At that time, in the sea of flame and lightning, something undulated.

A black and shining twisting large body. The whole of that body couldn't be seen yet, it was unclear just how big it was, a part of its body was jutting out from the sea of flame and thunder before

sinking in again. It was just like how the divine beast leviathan was lurking in the sea, however, the aberrant pressure pouring down on the ground was far mightier.

“What, wha-what, is that…”

Freed was staring at the sky in a daze while whispering. All the monsters including the white divine dragon were also at the same state. All the monsters were similarly kept staring at the red sky in a daze.

There was no way that whisper would be answered. But, just when they were thinking like that, in that timing the thing swimming in the sea of lightning and flame displayed the whole of its true form.

Along with a tremendous roar.

GOAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA

The sky fell.

The enormously tremendous roar that made the listener hallucinate that rained down from the sky in super wide range.

Due to that, the monsters who had difficulty in their defensive power were easily pulverized, while a lot of other monsters had their consciousness reaped and they fell on the ground.

Amidst that, what showed its figure was a gigantic dragon covered in dragon scale that shined black with its body clad in flame and lightning. It wasn’t a western dragon that imitated a lizard. It was an eastern dragon with a long meandering body like a snake. The whole length of its body might be more than a hundred meter.

Black dragon——no, if the white dragon was called as a white divine dragon, then the true form of this dragon that should be called as a black divine dragon, went without saying, it was the form of that person Tio Claus.

Soul and metamorphosis composite magic ‘Dragon God Manifestation’——using soul magic ‘Magic Clad Alignment’ that aligned the soul with magic so that the body could wear the magic

itself with the highest class flame magic ‘World Destroyer Flame Wave’ and the highest class wind magic ‘Sky Miracle’, and then adding to those the metamorphosis magic ‘Sixth Heaven’s Demon Transformation’, secret medicine to strengthen the body, sublimation magic, and then, the ‘Pain Conversion II’ that was the derivative skill of characteristic magic ‘Dragonification’, only after using all of those at the same time this ultimate skill of Tio could be activated.

Tio was reducing the side effect of the aurora that was too strong while doing damage control. Even while doing that she was piling up the necessary strength for dragon god transformation using ‘Pain Conversion II’ by continuously bearing wounds.

She had received that much damage while healing herself to the degree that she wouldn’t die, even so, if at the very end she didn’t bear that heavy wound that brought her to the verge of death, she wouldn’t be able to pile up the strength for the dragon god transformation. In addition, she was unable to stock up energy by hurting herself, on top of that the damage couldn’t be changed into pleasure in the middle of the conversion, and then there was even the side effect of her sense of pain getting magnified. If someone with average mental strength attempted this, they would be driven mad assuredly before they could activate the dragon god transformation.

Originally Tio planned to take care of Freed with only her black dragons, and then she would rush toward Hajime’s position with a strength that was still heightened to maximum before unveiling this technique in the battle against Ehito but…

In the present situation where she forced herself to activate this technique, she might only have a minute to maintain this form. And then, after her dragon god transformation was released, she would surely become the same like Shia where she would be in a state where she couldn’t fight.

Therefore

(I’ll finish everything in this one minute!)

The golden eyes of Tio who accomplished dragon god transformation glared fiercely at the monsters below.

The monsters immediately drew back in fear. Only one, the white divine dragon who wasn't drawing back, but in its eyes there was a fear and awe that couldn't be hidden.

Tio's roar thundered.

Right after that, many gigantic lightning surged from the sea of flame and lightning and mercilessly cooked the monsters swarm. If this scale was measured using the earth measurement then the scale could far surpass a level F5 storm. The monsters who tried to escape were all rolled up and embraced into blazing arms, they were annihilated there leaving not even dust behind.

"Impossible-, impossible-, impossible-, impossible-, impossible-, impossible-, impossible-, impossible-, impossible-! This, something like this is impossible-,! There is no way this is possible-!"

The thunders raining down from the sky was like a divine punishment. The tornado connecting the land and sky and swallowed everything into ruin was like the fire of hell.

Seeing that scene that should be called as the manifestation of heaven's might, Freed felt like the divinity of the god that he held faith to was denied along with his faith, he was repeating words that denied reality in half-madness.

And then, he gave an order to the divine white dragon that was his best masterpiece.

"Deny that, Uranus! That, that existence, DENYYYYYY IIIIIIIIITTT!!"

GuUU, RUAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA—!!

Uranus answered its master's command.

It opened its jaw and fired the strongest aurora it could as though to blow away his fear altogether, as though to grant its master's wish.

However, that attack which was fired with its whole body and soul——

GOAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA—!!

The flash of darkness clad in sparks that was fired from the jaw of the divine black dragon Tio collided against the aurora midair. A beat later, the aurora was easily pushed back and the flash of darkness swallowed Uranus without stopping.

There wasn't even a shriek of death agony.

The flash of black that erased even sound merely tore up the sky, gouged the ground, and without slowing down it annihilated a part of the floating island before vanishing at the space below.

No, the white divine dragon wasn't completely annihilated.

Its lower body was blown away, its body that consisted mostly only of chest and head fell on the ground with a bam. Its dignity as a divine dragon had already gone without even a fragment remaining. Light was quietly falling off from its eyes, reducing the flesh into a mere husk.

"U, ra…nus?"

Freed stared at the white divine dragon with powerless voice.

That figure that didn't respond even when he called made an indescribable emotion to well up in his heart.

The processing of information in his brain couldn't catch up with what was happening.

Even though he was floating in midair, it felt like his feet was swaying unstably.

When Freed noticed, he was screaming.

"AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!"

Giving only a glance at the millions of monsters who were

exterminated with preposterous momentum, Freed glared straight at Tio and flapped his silver wings. In those eyes things like monsters or anything else weren't reflected anymore, there was only flame of fury and hatred blazing there.

He fired silver flash with all his strength. He fired shockwave of space magic and tore apart the space.

But, all of those were easily dispersed just with Tio's roar.

He couldn't reach.

He couldn't reach toward Tio who had climbed to far away height.

That was why,

"Gahah!?"

The shockwave of the roar that Tio raised——Freed was driven away just from the after wave from that.

Freed whose whole body was struck hard and stiffened as though he was paralyzed was then assaulted by falling thunder. *KA-!* The sky flashed and then at the next instant, a tremendous impact pierced his body, Freed was falling to the ground while white smoke was raising from his body.

His body struck the ground, and then after he bounced several times on the surface, he finally stopped and laid down spread-eagled.

In the eyes of Freed that were looking above at the sky, the scene where the monsters in the number that covered the whole space to the brim had been reduced to a degree where they could be counted by a glance was reflected. Whether he wanted it or not, he was made to understand that this was the end.

His violent emotions already disappeared, right now for some reason only emptiness was smoldering in him.

What is someone like me who was welcomed by god doing, giving up like this. I should resolve myself instead to walk the path of

martyrdom to take the enemy together with me into death until the very end.

Even when he tried to persuade himself like that, as expected, his body didn't even twitch. His body was unable to move because of the damage…not. The will power to move his body, just wasn't welling up in his heart.

"I…"

At that time when Freed was about to whisper something, a black light fell from the sky toward him.

His awfully calm mind judged that it was a finishing blow for him. With this, it was the end for him.

But, at that moment, a shadow passed over the firing line of the black light.

KURYAAAAAAAAAAAAAA–!!

"Wha-!?"

Something roared and cut into the firing line, and with its body that something became Freed's shield, it was…

"Uranus-!!"

Yes, it was the white divine dragon that should have already expired.

With its body that now consisted only of its upper body, Uranus somehow moved and leaped in front of the dark flash.

The white divine dragon whose body was in tatters from the edge slightly turned at Freed who was opening his eyes in shock while narrowing its eyes quietly.

He couldn't hear any words even if he used metamorphosis magic.

Nevertheless, at that time, Freed was able to clearly understand what the white divine dragon was conveying to him.

Namely,

“Run away, huh…”

While making aurora to gush out from its remaining broken body, unbelievably Uranus was holding back Tio’s flash——that will, it was the will to not let its master Freed to die.

At that moment, a torrent of memory rushed Freed.

He recalled. At the time when he was nothing more but a mere devil race, why at that time he was attempting to challenge a great labyrinth.

(…I was merely, wishing to make a safe country, where nothing could threaten my brethrens. I pursued power for the sake of that. My brethrens were more important than anything. I thought that if it was for their sake then I could do anything. Yet despite so…’It can’t be helped because it’s the will of god’, huh…)

The white divine dragon was pressuring on him.

It was directing a criticizing gaze toward its master that wasn’t trying to run.

But, toward that white divine dragon, Freed only shook his head quietly and made a troubled smile.

He challenged a great labyrinth with mad desperation, actually he even almost died many times before obtaining the metamorphosis magic. And then with that magic this dragon monster was the first monster that he subdued. Since then this dragon had been his partner for all this time.

Even though it should have been dead for sure, yet it crossed over logic and rushed to him when he was in danger. He felt a definite bond in that act. Even though he himself had already forgotten even such an important thing before he knew it, his partner didn’t forget that even now when it was already dead.

Freed’s body was worn-out, he was already unable to move satisfactorily.

Then,

“…Sorry. Go together with me, partner.”

——Kurya

That voice sounded as though it was saying “Can’t be helped huh”.

At the next moment, the dark flash swallowed everything like a divine punishment——

After that, there was nothing left behind.

(If thou two weren’t charmed by that god…thou would be a good pair of master and servant, no, a good partners with certainty. But, thou were unable to resist or persist, art because of thy weakness in the end. Thou could make no excuse. Well, at the very least, this Tio Claus will remember the conclusion of the two of thou.)

Tio turned a solemn gaze fitting for a dragon god to the spot where Freed and Uranus were at.

That way of ending that Freed and Uranus showed at the very end, where they smiled wryly at each other holding a saturation of various emotions, for Tio it was something that for some reason she didn’t want to cast away as something trivial.

But, at that time, Shia’s voice resounded.

{Ti, Tio-saaaan. Won’t the time come any time nowww?}

Shia’s voice that reached Tio through telepathy came from inside the body of Tio that transformed into dragon god. So that she wouldn’t get dragged in, Tio sheltered Shia inside her body where it was the safest place. It was essentially the same like when she stored away her equipment when she turned into a dragon. Her body was longer than a hundred meters anyway so there was no problem for her to shelter Shia inside there.

{Yes. It’s frustrating but, mine limit will come soon. Let’s annihilate them all in one go!}

The time limit of the dragon god transformation.

Along with a terrific roar, a flash that dyed the world black rushed through the space. Thunders were becoming fiercer and fiercer and gigantic tornados of flame trampled the monsters to ashes.

And then,

{Kuu, thi, this is the limit.}

At the same time with Tio's pained voice, the sea of flame and thunder covering the sky dispersed and the tornado became undone gently. There was almost no monster that could be seen. Even if there were monsters that survived they would be wounded all over or ran away at full speed already fearing Tio's majestic appearance.

Right after that, the body of the black divine dragon went *KAT!* as though light exploded, then that large body vanished like a lie and Shia and Tio appeared at the midair.

As only natural, they lost against gravity and fell.

"Wait, Tio-saaan! This is midair desuu!"

"Ah, oops. I hath no spare energy. Shia, give me help."

"Are you stupid-. Even I don't have any spare energy anymore!"

They looked like they still had the composure to complain at each other, but in actuality they couldn't even use 'Air Force' or body strengthening, far from that they didn't even have magic power remaining to activate 'Treasure Warehouse II', so this wasn't quite a laughing matter for them.

"Hiiiii! Even though we have won with great pain, yet we are going to die like this in the end, I don't wanna desuu!"

"I, it's fine! Black dragooonnn, heeelp uuussss"

Tio called the black dragons. Shia felt relieved noticing that they still had this method.

However, the voice of the black dragons that responded to Tio's call sounded extremely far.

"Aa, that's right. Because it was dangerous I made them to evacuate quite far. Perhaps they won't make it in time…"

"Nooooooooooo!! Hajime-saaaaan!!"

Shia started crying. While Tio was plainly flustered.

But, at that time, a white shadow rushed toward the two in super speed like a streak of flash.

And then, the arms of the two were firmly caught by *rabbit ears*, the catcher then kicked on the air and reduced its speed.

That was,

"Inaba!?"

"Is it Inaba!?"

"Kyuu!"

Yes, it was the kick rabbit Inaba-san.

Inaba was kicking on the air while gradually lowering their altitude, he then safely lowered Shia and Tio on the ground.

"Thou saved us. My gratitude to thou, Inaba."

"Inaba, thank you very much. But, why are you here…"

"Kyukyuu! Kyuu?"

Inaba brushed off his rabbit ear with a swish as though to say don't mind it. And then in exchange for answering Shia's question, Inaba stiffened his ear at a certain direction.

When they looked there, there were the figures of Shizuku and others at far away waving their hands energetically at them while coming to their spot riding their skyboard.

Shizuku and others who closed the distance in the blink of eye landed down beside Shia and Tio.

“I’m glad that the two of you are safe. Looks like it was dangerous just now isn’t it.”

“I wondered what was going on when Inaba-san leaped forward, but really it’s great that the two of you are safe.”

“Ou, looks like you two got really messed up huh.”

“Haha…it was like looking at a myth happening just now. …Really, I’m glad that Shizuku and others stopped me…”

Shizuku and Suzu approached Shia and TIo who was lying down dead tired and made them drank magic medicine and put healing magic on them. Ryutaro was looking around at some of the floating islands that looked like they were going to crumble anytime with an astonished expression. Kouki was cursing “Are you idiot huh!?” and punching with his all the him in the past who acted hostilely at Shia and others while offering thought of gratitude at Shizuku and others once more.

“Shizuku-san and others too, you are all safe. Besides, it appeared that the idiot-san also seems to be reflecting. That’s great desu.”

Shia’s words made Kouki groaned “uu”.

“But, as for the other one…no, I doth not say anything. Everyone, thou all has worked hard.”

Tio was looking at Suzu with a bit of consideration, but as for the aforementioned Suzu, she was smiling with a clear gaze like a different person compared to before they parted, so Tio didn’t convey any word of consolation and merely gifted them words of praise. Toward that, Suzu’s smile turned even stronger.

“Nevertheless this is shocking. When we discovered the entrance that connected the spaces and tried to jump into it…”

“Sea of fire, tornado of flame, countless monsters, and then there was even a jumbo dragon exactly like in a myth. I already resigned

myself for a bit there. The scenery made me wanted to make a U-turn because we mistook the room."

Shizuku and Suzu turned their gaze at Tio.

It appeared Shizuku and others arrived at this space just when Tio was doing her dragon god transformation. The first scene that they saw right after crossing the space was an Armageddon…there was no doubt that their eyes at that time were flying out of their eye socket in shock just like in manga picture.

"Well, because that was mine trump card after all. Originally I wished to rush at Goshujin-sama's side in the state of dragon god transformation but…that was a wish that was too high to achieve. Rather than that, all of thee hath caught up to us really quickly isn't it? Even though thou hath no compass like us."

"We weren't really lost you know? After the clock tower got smashed, it took us a bit of time to search the other city but, when we discovered another entrance and used it, we arrived directly to here."

"Hmm. As for us, from that ruined city there were several spaces that interposed between us until this space but…perhaps with the destruction of the clock tower, the arrangement of the connected space changed then. After all the compass should have displayed to us the shortest route."

Possibly this might be the harassment from Ehitorujue. Tio thought about Hajime who went ahead and she sent a bit worried gaze at empty air.

The expression of Shizuku who guessed that Hajime wasn't here as expected from Tio's expression turned similarly worried and then she inquired about what happened.

Like that they listened to the rough gist of what happened from Shia and Tio, and then all of them nodded at each other in agreement to chase after Hajime in this case, it was at that time,

GO GO GO GO GO GO GO GO GO GO GO GO GO GO GO GO GO

GO GO GO GO GO GO GO —-

The space began to rumble.

Shia and others put up their guard at the surrounding wondering what was going on.

Ahead of the gazes of them, *bari-*, *biki-*, the space itself was cracking. It was as though the space was going to crumble.

Right after that, the floating island where Shia and others were at that was already greatly damaged became unable to endure the vibration that attacked the space and large fissures ran through the ground, a beat later, the island crumbled grandly.

In panic, they boarded their skyboard and evacuate to sky.

“Tha, that is…is that by any chance, the surface?”

Suzu was pointing at below while raising her voice.

The floating island was breaking. The space beneath it was wavering, from there they could see a ground at far below. The scenery there where there was a fortress and grass plain was also one that they were familiar with, and then a great number of people were clamoring there in that image.

Perhaps because the space was unstable, that scenery immediately disappeared and returned back to usual. But, the eerie rumbling was still not stopping, the spots of space where there was wavering faintly displayed places that they had visited before and also places they didn’t know before vanishing once more.

“…Surely this is because of Hajime-san desu. Hajime-san is fighting Ehito desu!”

“That’s right. This place art Holy Precincts. Then this place should be the place that is most affected by the god Ehito. For the space to become unstable might mean that this is just how much Ehito art being cornered.”

It was merely a hypothesis.

But, it was a hypothesis that they could believe because if it was Hajime then it was possible.

“Then, we too have to hurry then.”

“Yoosh, let’s get out from this place that might collapse anytime and link up with Nagumo-kun immediately.”

Everyone nodded to Shizuku and Suzu’s words.

And then, they headed toward the obelisk at the center floating island that was still barely floating.

Shia who was still staggering with her shoulder was supported by Shizuku with her shoulder while she touched her hand at the obelisk without hesitation.

“?”

However, nothing happened. When Hajime used his compass, there was no doubt that it was pointing at this obelisk, so there was no mistake that this was the entrance.

Shia touched the obelisk one more time, but as expected nothing happened.

“Why!?”

Shia who became desperate touched again, but no matter how many times she repeated the obelisk wasn’t reacting.

“Perhaps this art related with this unstable space. If I remember correctly, there art also obelisk at the other floating islands correct? Let’s try using those.”

Following Tio’s consideration, they headed toward the other obelisk.

…However, that obelisk was also not reacting.

And, at that time, the space shook once more.

And then, this time the space began to crumble from the edge.

Shizuku who got a bad premonition went toward the boundary where the place was beginning to crumble and threw a rock as a test. Her premonition was spot on. The thrown rock crumbled as though it was disintegrated and vanished without even leaving dust behind.

“A bad, situation is it…”

Tio’s grim voice rang awfully clearly.

“Even if we get swallowed by the crumbling we are going to be safe…something like that would be just too convenient isn’t it.”

“What about the obelisk that we used to enter into this space I wonder?”

Following Suzu’s proposal, they headed toward that place in a hurry. The crumbling was advancing rapidly. They understood that the space was shrinking down as though a cage was getting smaller little by little. Right now, even in this moment the floating islands that were caught by the crumbling were vanishing into dust starting from their edge.

“No way…we cannot even go back.”

Kouki murmured with a sorrowful face.

The obelisk that Kouki and others came out from into this place also didn’t react.

The crumbling was approaching.

They returned to the center floating island in hurry, but the crumbling was accelerating with increasing momentum. It seemed that even another space that they could see from the swaying space also didn’t escape from the crumbling. Even the world of the ruined city was vanishing from its edges.

“Is this…as far as we can go?”

Kouki murmured.

Shizuku and others gritted their teeth hearing those words.

“Hajime-san, Yue-san…”

With a strong gaze, Shia was staring at an empty space as though she was looking far away while calling the name of the two of her beloved.

Finally the crumbling was also starting to erode the center floating island.

They desperately wracked their brain. They wouldn’t stop struggling until the end.

Like that, rather than waiting for death just by sitting around, they would rather bet on the possibility that it was possible to teleport using the crumbling space because of the instability, so they resolved themselves to leap into the crumbling space, it was at that time,

KA-!

Light exploded.

When Shia and others turned their gaze there wondering what happened, there they could see a swaying space that reflected the grassy plain area at the outskirt of Hairihi Kingdom capital, from *the other side* a single arrow was spreading ripples while piercing space itself, such spectacle flew into their sight.

It was as though an arrow was stabbed from the other side of a mirror, Shia and others reflexively gazed in astonishment at such mysterious spectacle. Then the space distorted like jelly with that arrow as the center, and a hole with size that could be passed by a person was created.

And then, the person who passed through to this side from there was…

“Yahooo! This is eeeeveryone’s beloved, the world’s idol, Miledy

Raisen-chan here☆”

Arifureta Chapter 172

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/173/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Bakapervert did the edits.

Mankind's Struggle (First Part)

Turning back the time a bit.

The surface of the world was completely changed by the erosion of dark red color that looked like the eyes of a monster. And then, a crack of space that exposed the abyss appeared at the sky of such bizarre world.

After Hajime and others safely jumped into that crack of space which scattered muddy black miasma——the gate that connected toward Holy Precincts, the apostles of god that swarmed that place turned on their heel still with an expressionless face.

What was reflected in the inhuman eyes looking down from the great height, was the crowd of people who displayed their insolence by trying to oppose god's will.

" " " " "Judgment of god." " " " "

Those words were murmured in one voice.

If the people at the ground heard those words, surely they would object "There is not even a speck of reason for us to be judged!"

with a loud voice.

But, the puppets of god that wouldn't even lend any ear to that objection swung their twin large swords once, then they flapped their wings and began to descend all at once. They only revised their orbit using their silver wings. Next, the large number of apostles rapidly approached toward the allied force mostly by freefalling while leaving a silver trail behind like a swarm of meteors.

Thinking of the apostles' spec, in this battlefield where bug character like Hajime and others were gone, there was no existence that could possibly stop these women. Even if there were a lot of people in possession of item like the artifacts that could launch flash(Anti-Material Rifle) which covered the penetration of Hajime and others into Holy Precincts, but there was no reason that mere 'human' could hope to match them.

Therefore, for the apostles what would be starting from here on wouldn't a battle, it would be a curbstomp without any doubt, just a light work like mowing down grass.

…was what they thought how it was supposed to be.

That thought only continued until their whole field of vision was buried in barrages of bullets.

"Attackkk!! No need for even a drop of mercy or reservation-! Pound away with the intention of using up all your ammooo!!"

An amplified command resounded among the allied force, at the same time bullets barrage were fired without pause from the whole allied force soldiers.

Every single soldier aimed rifle gun toward the sky and pulled the trigger, each time the trigger was pulled the internal mineral that had been enchanted with 'Lightning Clad' electromagnetically accelerated the pseudo-full metal jacket bullet and fired it.

The all out firing from all the rifle guns that had been distributed to all the soldiers of allied force became several millions of flashes just

for the first wave attack that pierced the sky.

Furthermore, the large gatling railguns that were fixed at the fortress and trenches completely blanketed the sky with flashes simultaneously. The number of the gatling railguns in total was a thousand. A thousand of the monstrous railguns with twelve thousand shots per minute roared simultaneously.

That wasn't all.

In addition, a thousand stationary large Orkan released a few hundred missiles loaded inside them almost at the same time. The spectacle of orange fire trail rushing to the sky all at once could be described as a masterpiece.

Regarding the weapons, the people with fast understanding were given priority to be a shooter, they had practiced handling the weapon until the last minute, so the weapons that were the hybrid of top of the line modern weapon and alternate world fantasy could muster their fury without taking too much time. The characteristic advantage of modern weapon where 'it wasn't influenced by the skill of the individual' was exhibited in ample here.

In an instant, the sky was completely covered by swarms of flashes and missiles, they easily swallowed the apostles who kept descending down.

The swarms of railguns that already should be called as a wall mercilessly gouged out the apostles, opening wind holes in their body one after another, the swarms of missiles grandly scattered flame blast and shockwave everywhere and bloomed crimson lotus in the sky. The apostles that got dragged into that blooming were toyed around inside the storm of explosions and their body burst and scattered.

However, even though the first wave of the apostles got easily killed because they let their guard down, the enemy over there was the apostle of god. They immediately put their guard up, weaved through the barrage, slashed away the flashes, or used their silver wings for defense and forcefully broke through to approach their enemy.

“Naïve.”

The one who was lifting the corner of his lips in fearless smirk was the sniper of Hauria race who played a very active role when Hajime and others stormed the Holy Precincts. It was ‘Bardfeld of Certain Death’, ten years old.

Across the scope that was enchanted with ‘Foresight’ which displayed the future position of the enemy as a phantom image, he stared at an apostle that slipped through a flame blast and naturally pulled the trigger with quiet breathing.

Immediately, a cannon shot that was specialized for penetration similar with Schlagen became a flash, with a superb timing it attacked the apostle who was going to move to attack right now, the flash then cleanly blown up her head.

Scenes similar with that were also accomplished here and there by the grand flashes that were fired from everywhere in the fortress and trenches. This feat was achieved by the sniper team that was fully equipped with the improved version of Schlagen.

Perhaps judging that such snipers were a danger, the apostles followed the line of fire and directed their gazes toward the snipers that included ‘Bardfeld of Certain Death’ and they flew out all at once at them…

This time, it was the golem soldiers who were standing by at the back of the snipers, with gatling cannons in both hands and missile pods equipped on their shoulders, they began simultaneous strafing fire to protect the snipers.

“____”

The apostles gulped and attempted to evade.

But it was too slow. At this point of time, the snipers were already catching the prey across the scope. Faster than even their mind, their finger leaned on the trigger and quietly pulled. It was as though their body had known the best timing.

The result was just a matter of course. The sky was decorated with

blooming crimson flowers once more.

Even though this was supposed to be an easy work that was equal with a mere slaughter, even though the monsters were supposed to be already gone from this place, for some reason it was only the apostles who got killed one-sidedly. Weren't they the apostle of god? Weren't they standing at far away height that human couldn't possibly arrive at, created by the supreme existence as the greatest fighting strength?

The apostles naturally narrowed their gaze.

"Know how futile your resistance is."

One of the apostles whispered.

Right after that, they stopped descending and rained down silver bombardments all at once from long range toward the ground.

It was a silver colored squall.

It was a really beautiful and fantastical spectacle, but the tragic result this local heavy rain would bring about was the very definition of atrocity itself.

Some part of this was offset by the barrages of bullet, but the bombardment that came from apostles whose body was clad with silver magic power in strengthened state slipped through the barrages mostly intact and approached the ground.

…And then,

"Great Barrier start up!"

It was held back above the allied force.

The improved great barrier that was activated following the command of the commander Liliana, blocked the meteor shower of death.

Against the silver flash that possessed disintegration ability, even if it was the great barrier that was an age of god artifact that had

protected the capital of the kingdom for many years, originally the best it could do would be to hold on for a few moments. But, right now the great barrier that had been applied with Hajime's improvement was spreading in rainbow ripple and firmly protected the allied force.

The great barrier that originally was deployed in three layers with the strength of each layer depending on proportion with the range was now focused into a single layer which increased its toughness. Naturally, it was also strengthened using sublimation magic. By no means it could perfectly oppose the disintegration ability, but it was capable enough to make the apostles to spend some time breaking through.

And then, the time that was bought from that was for the sake of showing the next hand to recover from the hopeless situation.

The blow from the first barrage was merely a surprise attack against the arrogant apostles. With these women who literally had specs that were in a different league compared to human as the opponent, they would surely adapt after the first attack. Therefore, the humans had to carry out the plan so they could fight the apostles.

That plan was,

"To the choir squad. Please give the fall toward the puppets who proclaimed themselves as angel!"

The order of Liliana that was amplified in sound resounded in the battlefield.

The target of that command was the people who looked like clergyman that gathered at the rooftop of the fortress, there were even women and children included among them.

With a solemn atmosphere that didn't suit the battlefield, everyone put their hands together in front of their chest with uniform movement, taking a praying pose. All of them were the clergymen of the church who spread the teaching of the holy church in the remote region, that was to say they were the remains of the holy church. They were people who had separated from the central

church, or possibly they had too much of pure faith that they were driven away from central as troublesome people.

Those people who were in a sense were the true clergymen followed the direction of an aging man clad in priest clothing standing in front of them, then they opened their mouths slowly.

“ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “————♪“ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “ “

A melody resounded.

It was a holy song. A song that blessed the people and condemned the people that trampled on peace and love. A solemn melody of sacred protection and judgment.

A magic circle was floating beneath the choir. Through the crystals that were put here and there on it, the power of the holy song itself was amplified to terrific level.

That song which pushed through the explosive and thunderous sounds of the weapons and resounded throughout the battlefield naturally reached the ears of the apostles who were launching all-out bombardment to break the great barrier.

Immediately,

“——, this is, my strength-“

One of the apostles leaked out a surprised voice.

That was surely something that couldn’t be helped for her. After all, the proof of strengthening that was the silver light which enveloped her body had dispersed, in exchange there was crimson light coiling around her before she felt her strength leaving her body like water that flowed out from a container with opened cork.

Once the pope Ishtar invoked this magic——’Holy Song of Supreme Degeneration’ toward Hajime who was facing the apostle Nointo at the sky above the God Mountain. It was a brutal magic that combined the effects of obstructing the target’s movement and weakened their strength as long as the song was resounding.

Now this song had its effect amplified using sublimation magic, in addition, it was also enchanted with the words of power that stopped the body function of Kaori and did her in before, Hajime reproduced the effect using soul magic and enchanted it through the medium of crystal pillars.

As expected, driving the apostles until they went out of service or completely weakening them were impossible, but the song was still able to obstruct the strengthened state of the apostles, in addition, it also could drop the specs of the apostles until nearly sixty percent of their original specs.

“Tsk, eliminating.”

The gazes of the apostles were directed at the choir which was the source of their abnormality. They planned to prioritize eliminating the choir.

Several of the apostles formed a group and they began to lift their large swords simultaneously. Right after that, their magic power was focused and formed a swelling silver sun.

Although only a bit of time had passed, but the great barrier was already screaming from receiving disintegration ability from countless apostles. If it got hit by the focused silver bombardment, it would surely become unable to endure this time and got smashed.

“But, that too is within expectation. Please prioritize the apostles whose movements are stopping!”

Liliana’s command resounded for the third time. That command was conveyed to all leaders of each squad, then they further gave that instruction to the subordinates under them to prioritize targeting the apostles who were concentrating in the focused bombardment.

The swarm of fire lines reached out from the ground toward the sky, the thickness of this wave was by no means diluted. It wasn’t diluting at all. The people with high shooting ability obeyed the command and sniped at the unmoving apostles simultaneously.

The apostles who weren't involved with the focused bombardment defended against this attack. Using their twin large swords, their silver wings, feathers, they intercepted the attack. However, with their specs that had been forcefully lowered down and the crimson light that was coiling around their body and hindered their movement, so they were unable to deal with surging waves of the excessively mighty attacks which weren't depending on the user's specs.

One apostle, and then one more apostle, the apostle who were supposed to be absolute strong person were slaughtered with wind holes opened all over their body.

"Irregular-, even when you are not here you are still making a nuisance against us-"

The crimson light was coiling around the apostles mockingly. That was the radiance of the monster who had driven them away many times over. Seeing that light, the voice of the apostles who proclaimed that they were without emotion or anything turned a bit rough. They vaguely visualized in their mind a white-haired and eye-patched young man giving them a middle finger with a fearless grin.

However, it didn't mean that the allied force was able to shoot down all the apostles, finally the focusing finished and the light of devastation was emitted from the silver sun.

GOU! The atmosphere shook, the silver bombardment that was the result of the focus of fifty apostles hit the great barrier.

The rainbow ripple undulated fiercely, *biki biki* with cracking sounds cracks entered the great barrier.

"You guuys, put your spirit in iit!"

Such angry yell resounded at a corner of the fortress where the artifact of the great barrier was positioned. That was the angry voice of Wolpen who was the chief transmutation master of the kingdom. The artifact whose cracking was spreading due to the severe burden was repaired in real time using transmutation by the

craftsmen led by Wolpen. Their hands were equipped with fingerless gloves that raised their transmutation ability. It was a romance glove that was a quality product of Hajime.

“Chief-, it’s impossible already-! It cannot hold out!”

“Chih, can’t be helped then. Abandon the great barrier! After activating the small scale barrier, we are going to concentrate at multiple barriers for the choir!”

“ “ “ “ “ “ROGER-“ “ “ “ “ “

After the great barrier was smashed, Wolpen and others activated the small scale barrier that defended temporarily against the bombardment that might pierce through, like that they ran around busily. They abandoned the barrier that protected the allied force and poured all their strength to the barrier artifact that focused on protecting the choir.

The moment they abandoned the transmutation for repairing in real-time, the cracks on the cylinder artifact spread all at once, and then a beat later the sound of pulverizing was echoing while small pieces flew everywhere.

That sound of pulverizing also resounded from the rainbow great barrier outside the fortress.

Similar like what was once seen at the kingdom capital, sparkling fragments were scattering and vanishing.

The apostles flapped their silver wings and flew in all at once. Their target was apparent at a glance. It was the choir that shaved off their specs until sixty percent.

Right now the rooftop where the choir was located at was enveloped by a multi-layered rainbow barrier that looked like the great barrier. By compressing the barrier into small scale and making it multi-layered, on the whole it had a hardness that surpassed the great barrier. But, if it was aimed by concentrated attacks then it would be surely got smashed through in less than a few minutes.

“Uu, aAAAAAAAA-!!”

One of the holy knights that was placed outside the barrier as protection for the choir raised a war cry and brandished his sword. He shook off his body that was naturally paralyzed from the majestic appearance of the approaching apostles by screaming.

“A nuisance.”

The knight’s torso was easily cut by the large sword that was slashed horizontally and he got *blown away*.

Yes, the knight wasn’t bisected, he was blown away. In addition, there was a strange numbness in the arm that the apostle swung.

That fact made the apostles unconsciously stopped moving. With the attack of the large sword that was enchanted with disintegration ability, then even though they could only use forty percent of their strength it should be easy to bisect a single human into two. Despite so, she was unable to do that.

“HAAAAAAAAA-!!”

“-”

From the back of the apostle whose movement stopped because of the mysterious phenomenon, a new knight launched a vertical splitting attack from above along with a loud scream that had not even a speck of hesitation. The apostle didn’t even use her large sword and blocked the attack with her wing, but not only the attack opposed her disintegration ability, it even made unpleasant sound *giiiiiiiiii* resounding before the knight sword sunk in. The apostle gazed to that in astonishment.

There, a scolding flew from that knight.

“Don’t falter! We are a knight. Protecting is exactly our duty! Protect this place!”

“Captain David…guh, forgive me. Let me assist-“

The knight that was previously blown away stood up even while

coughing away, a scratch in a straight line was left on his armor. He then slashed at the apostle with fierce momentum.

It was as though that became the signal, the knights——the former holy church's sacred knights that were led by the Aiko protection squad captain, David, the 'Goddess's Knights (self-proclaimed)' faced the flying apostles one after another.

And then, using their bastard swords that raised high-pitched sound while looking misty, the gauntlets that brought about the effect of 'Strong Arm' just by putting them on, and the leg armors that similarly granted the effect of 'Strong Leg', they assaulted the apostles while barely enduring the attacks of the apostles. Even if they were damaged by the attack that they couldn't endure, their armor somehow protected them from great harm.

"…Don't tell me, all of this strength come from artifacts?"

One of the apostles murmured.

David and everybody else, the knights, they were all equipped similarly with a bastard sword, gauntlets, and also black armor and simple helmet.

Black armor——this artifact was enchanted with 'Vajra' that was continuously active and 'Impact Conversion' that activated the moment attack touched the armor. Even the knight that got hit by an apostle's attack managed to pull through somehow with this.

And then the bastard sword was the so-called 'High-Speed Vibration Sword', just the sword itself possessed a considerable sharpness, on top of that it could release high-speed vibration using magic power, causing it to be able to disperse the disintegration ability even if only to a certain degree. And then, the helmet was enchanted with 'Light Speed', it was a degraded version but it was attached with the function to expand the user's perception.

All those equipment were basically a set and they were distributed to all the soldiers. In addition, before the battle began cheatmates were distributed so the specs of all the soldiers were also raised.

The plan was to weaken the apostles while at the same time making every single one of the allied force soldiers into a superhuman. As the result, the knights were able to *oppose* the apostles barely.

Even so, that was as far as it went, in the end they needed a group just to attack a single apostle before they could finally match the apostle.

At present even now the apostle that David slashed at was blowing away the other knights and repelled the vibration sword of David.

“Kuh——”

The apostle swung down her large sword toward David who was clenching his teeth due to his unrecoverable posture.

At that moment,

“First one.”

“Eh?”

It was unclear whether that amazed voice was leaked by David or by the *head* of the apostle that was rotating in the air…

Like a joke, the head of the apostle flew casually and left behind its body. A beat later, *busha—!* amidst the blood spray that spurted grandly, that guy was there before anyone noticed.

It was a man with his body wrapped in black clothing that covered everything until his lips, a one lens type sunglass on his eyes, thin and sharp short sword——a kodachi held in reverse grip in his hand. On his head, fluffy rabbit ears were fluttering.

“The color of your blood is filthy, just like this dark red world…”

The man swung his kodachi sharply to swipe away the blood clotting it while pushing his sunglasses using his middle finger, then his lips suddenly distorted in nihility (it was unseen because of the mask though). However, that man then introduced his name without being unable to hide his atmosphere of “The me right now, is totally sparkling!”

“This head of apostle, has been definitely received by this dark hunter demon of the wriggling darkness, Karmvantis Elfalight Rowderia Hauria.”

Correct, it was Karm. It was only the clan head of rabbit race Karm Hauria.

At the surrounding, the apostles who were held back desperately by the knights were approached stealthily from behind, then their head flew away with a splat by the many people of Hauria clan.

The rabbit ears of the man caressed the kodachi lovingly while he directed a pitying gaze at the collapsing headless apostles.

“My bad. But tonight Julia is feeling quite hungry.”

A rabbit-eared woman was covering one of her eyes with her hand while whispering.

“Don’t you know that you are the bad one? After all, you are making my other self to awaken…”

A rabbit-eared girl in the first half of her teens was staring to empty air with a philosophical gaze.

“…This is, the will of the world. Then, I can only obey that…”

A rabbit-eared youth about the same age was holding his left arm while groaning.

“Kuh, raging as you please again-! Calm down, my left arm-!”

A beat.

The rabbit-eared people wearing sunglasses and black clothing looked at each other face and then they nodded at each other with really satisfied expression.

And then, the apostles returned to their senses suddenly with a ‘hah’ and the moment they were going to assault the rabbit-eared people, with a superb timing as though the apostles’ breathing was completely read through the rabbit people’s figure and presence

suddenly vanished and they slipped between the knights.

A strange air flowed in the battlefield.

“U, UoOOOOOOOOOO!!”

David slashed at another apostle as though nothing had happened at all. It appeared that he had become a man that was quite able to read the mood. Surely he discerned that he must not get involved with that lot.

The apostles were also rushing toward the choir in order to obliterate them while putting up their guard somewhat. They would keep getting targeted even if they just stiffened in place, so although it wasn’t with their whole force, but a number that was quite many compared to other places was heading toward the choir.

It appeared that at the sky it was already filled to the brim with apostles.

But, at that time,

{Flying is not permitted nano!}

A really cute voice of a little girl resounded, and then at the next moment, the apostles who were above the barrier protecting the choir were staggering with their balance crumbling like a bird whose wings were plucked, without any change the apostles were felled to the ground all over. With great care they were dropping at spot distanced from the barrier as though they were pulled there.

There, a figure of a golem with back armament that looked like parabola antenna deployed could be seen. It appeared the voice was resounding from the telepathy stone speaker version attached on that golem.

{Bel-chan, do your best!}

Listening to the young voice——Myuu’s voice that resounded once more, Bel-chan who was also known as the living golem ‘Belfegoor’ waved his hand languidly while using the area gravity manipulation artifact “Gran Farensen’ that he shouldered on his back which

pulled at the flying apostles and dropped them down.

Beside 'Belfegoor' that dropped down several dozens of apostles altogether, a further six golems appeared.

And then, with some kind of mechanism, *BAANG!* a thunderous sound was raised and colorful blast flame rose behind them while the golems took a cool pose. Surely if the golems could yell then they would say this without a doubt.

——Great Sin Squadron Demon Ranger, has arriveeeeed!!

Like that.

The movement of the felled apostles stopped for a moment seeing that uselessly refined posing and the act that let them knew of wills that were unlike that of a golem.

There, a command from the golems' princess was handed down.

{Everyone, kill them all nano!}

The princess easily declared something terrifying with that lovely voice. It made the listener wanted to see the face of her parents. The gentle voice "My my, ufufu" of one of the parents that was standing at the side of the small commander was leaking out from the speaker.

But, regardless of the resounding soft voice, the starting attack of the Demon Ranger was really severe. Each of the seven rangers was displaying superb teamwork while defeating the apostles one after another.

"This is a good time. Let the puppet who can do nothing but looking down at people know what it means to fall. All Gran Farensen, activate!"

The moment Liliana's command resounded, the gravity generation devices placed on all over the battlefield activated all at once. As the result, the apostles who were at the position between the ground and five hundred meters high fell on the ground all at once. That scene was just like a pitiful bug whose wings were plucked.

And then, the one waiting for them below were the soldiers of allied force with the preparedness for death. The heroes who shouldered the existential fate of mankind.

Great numbers of apostles were dropped on the ground, however, they didn't show anything unsightly like fainting after impacting the ground, they used their twin swords to blow away all the soldiers who came at them. Silver feathers that were scattered all over here and there, or possibly the silver flashes surged up and blown away the soldiers.

"…Even by dropping us to the ground, even if you harden your body using artifact, but in the first place you are all merely human. There is no way you can win against us. Hang down your head obediently and receive the judgment of god."

One of the soldiers got pierced on the stomach by a large sword and he vomited blood. But, even with a mouth smeared with blood and his ghastly condition, that soldier made a fearless smile on his lips.

And then,

"LIMIT BREAAAAAAKKK-"

"-"

Magic power in unthinkable amount welled up from the soldier's body from who knew where. And then, even with his stomach pierced, using the sword that he didn't let go even then, he cut off the right hand of the apostle that was holding the large sword which pierced him.

"-, why, that ability…now, even so it's only to this degree after all. Even with that rare ability you possess a single arm is——"

"But, a blind spot is definitely created yeah?"

Even the last attack that was unleashed by betting one's life using a skill that was the rare between the rare among mankind, stealing a single arm of an apostle was the limit. The apostle who was about to say that was interrupted by a voice that resounded from the direction of her lost right arm.

The apostle who couldn't swing her right arm immediately tried to drive away the owner of the voice using her silver wing, but faster than that the attack of that person——Hoelscher Empire's emperor Gahard D Hoelscher bisected the body of the apostle.

The apostle's body was split into two, but even so she didn't die instantly with her astonishing life force and directed her gaze at Gahard. And then her gaze turned into astonishment.

"That, radiance…"

That radiance was——the radiance of 'Limit Break'.

Gahard grinned fearlessly while grasping tightly a crimson orb the size of a small stone dangling from his neck.

"This is a battle where the existence of mankind is put into stake you know. It will be too lukewarm if we cannot break merely one or two limits isn't that right? Now then, I also just have gotten used with this *normal* limit break. The last limit breaker left behind by that monster, how about I show it to the underlings of the shitty god huh!"

While saying such thing, in front of the apostle whose eyes opened wide Gahard then,

"Limit Break(Supreme Break)–!!"

The magic power enveloping Gahard jumped up a magnitude higher. Like that he split the head of the apostle who at that time was trying to fire her last silver bombardment, at the same time,

"Informing all the heroes of allied force-!! Break your limit, and fight–!!!"

Immediately following, it resounded in the battlefield, that voice.

"Limit Break-!"

"Limit Break-!" "Limit Break-!"

"Limit Break-!" "Limit Break-!" "Limit Break-!"

“Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!”

“Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!”
“Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!”
“Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!”
“Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!”
“Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!” “Limit Break-!”
“Limit Break-!”

The last strengthening plan that Hajime left behind. It was this.

——Humanity’s whole force’s limit break.

Other than the basic equipment that were the artifact armaments, the whole forces were also provided by one other thing. That was this necklace attached with a small crimson orb. This artifact made it possible for common soldiers whose body might break from it without taking a dose of cheatmate to activate ‘Limit Break’.

——Grade style limit break artifact ‘Last Zell’

Using it for the first time brought about Limit Break, and after waiting until the body got used to it so that the body wouldn’t self-destructing from the radical strengthening, the artifact would bring about the derivative skill of Limit Break, ‘Supreme Break’ next. Of course it was a double edged sword that couldn’t hold out for long, but in any case it would be the end of mankind if they didn’t win this battle. If this was to be a battle without next time, then they would use up their soul until the very last drop.

Gahard who faced a new apostle readied his sword while throwing at them words that represented the heart of mankind.

“Don’t you dare-, to look down on human-!”

The decisive battle between god’s apostles and mankind——the second curtain of it was now raised.

Arifureta Chapter 173

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/174/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Bakapervert did the edits.

Mankind's Struggle (Second Part)

The fortress, at the front area.

There the apostles who were dropped down to the ground using gravity generation device 'Gran Farensen' were opening a fierce battle that was worthy to be called as mortal combat against the soldiers of the empire.

"oOOOOOOOOO-"

One of the empire's soldiers raised a war cry while rushing at an apostle.

The large sword of the apostle was elegantly swung while emitting silver light, with a slash the head of that empire soldier was lopped off. And then her returning sword lopped the head of the empire soldier at the opposite side. The soldier's armor could defend against the disintegration ability for several hits before giving out, so the apostle was aiming at the part where there was no armor.

"Damn it-, they are just too strong-! Our side is already breaking the limit twice already here-"

“You monsters-! Just die already-“

The specs of the apostles were already dropped by sixty percent, furthermore their movements were obstructed, in addition their side was fully equipped with age of god class artifacts, despite so the number of their allies that got defeated when facing an apostle was still overwhelmingly a lot. That fact caused the soldiers of the empire to hurl out abusive language.

“FUNNURABAAAAAAAAAAAAA-“ (TN: Some kind of war cry, Kurita from Eyeshield 21 often use this.)

At that time when the soldiers were unconsciously getting cold feet from the apostles’ fierce attack, an angry yell that for some reason made a chill rushed through their spine and their groin tightened resounded. And then at the next instant, a fist that was like rock was swung furiously and pierced the back of the head of an apostle, the fist then pushed toward the ground without stopping——and it punched through.

The one who appeared behind hanging over the apostle whose head was pulverized, was a giant of a man, his whole body was covered by the provided set of equipment and his appearance was no different from other soldiers. However, the soldiers didn’t even praise that man for defeating an apostle, instead for some reason they were drawing away.

“Araaaan? What’s wrong everyone, are you all taking distance from moiiiii?”

“Hiih, forgive me!”

Thick lips and beastly eyes were peeking out from the opening of the helm. The man possessed inhuman level of muscle that was obvious even across the armor. Braided hair sprung out from the top of the helmet, a lovely pink ribbon was attached at the tip of the hair. That man who was a little bit strange was wriggling around while winking at the soldiers with feminine tone. It really was unavoidable for the soldiers to take even more distance while saying “Forgive me” reflexively.

After all even an apostle who was about to charge exactly right now came to a stand still with a twitch…

“NUURYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-“

“DOOOSEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEE-“

Even more throaty war cries resounded. When they looked, similar with the giant in front of their eyes——the monster nesting in the clothing shop at Brook city the shop manager Crystabel, an army of giants whose body was wrapped in so much muscle to the degree that made any onlooker wanted to say ‘you guys don’t actually need armor ain’t it?’ which was further equipped with similar set of equipment like everybody else was rampaging violently there.

One giant was hugging an apostle from the front, and then without even any time to activate her disintegration ability the apostle was bear hugged until death, and then another giant moved to another apostle with an artistic pile driver that pulverized the head of the apostle.

What was terrifying was, the embraced apostle received *puchuuuu* a feverish kiss from the giant, it was unclear whether it was for taking the aposlte by surprise or merely because of his tastes. While the apostle who received pile driver, perhaps because it was an irregular technique but the hugging direction was reversed from the usual pile driver, so the face of the apostle became exactly buried into the crotch of the giant in the end.

“How insipid this iiisss”

“Playing with a doll cannot make me fired up at aaallll”

The two giants who defeated two apostles also wriggled around while saying out such impressions with a feminine tone. The expressions of the two apostles who had been defeated and stopped functioning looked strangely teary eyed…but surely that was just their imagination.

The bizarre squad that was formed as a commando unit——also known as the manly women squad. The women(?) snapped their

neck around to look for their next prey, and when they had finished designating their respective prey, the apostles who were confronting other soldiers shivered simultaneously. And then their gaze swam around expressing their wariness, which caused several of them to be taken by surprise and defeated.

They obstructed the movement of the apostles with mere (sticky) gaze and even forced the apostles to stiffen for an instant. That bizarre great contribution was decreasing the number of the apostles with certainty and backed up their allies. It backed up the ally…supposedly.

While monsters of a different kind were rampaging violently in the battlefield, a fierce fighting was unfolding at a slightly distance place.

One of the empire's soldier readied the rifle he was provided with and fired in full-auto from middle range, nailing down an apostle in place. It was a hybrid weapon with excessive firepower that wasn't influenced by the specs of the user. As expected even an apostle would have to be fixed in place if she defended against the swarm of flashes using her large sword.

However, an apostle wouldn't be finished just with that. As though giving a return gift, an atrocious bullet that wasn't outdone even by the railgun flew out——it was a counterattack using silver feathers.

The empire soldiers surrounding the apostle were mowed down. There were also people who barely endured using their defensive equipment or sword, but the low-level soldiers had their exposed flesh gouged out with certainty and their lives expired there.

gachin That sound of the bullet running out resounded. The empire soldier who was checking the apostle in place using his shooting was trying to reload the magazine in panic then.

Not letting away that opening, the apostle was going to fire silver bombardment. Despair flashed on the face of the empire soldier.

At that time,

“ZEAAAAAAAAAAH!!”

A loud scream of spirit that was clearly drawing a line compared to common soldier gushed out.

A large sword swung down from a sword held overhead at the apostle who was going to fire a silver flash.

The apostle looked annoyed while she lifted her large sword to block that attack…

“____”

The large sword that was swung down bent like a whip and its trajectory changed due to the holder’s arm, the vertical swing was transformed into a horizontal slash that made the apostle gazed in astonishment. And then, even when the apostle tried to defend but her movement was obstructed by the crimson light coiling around her and her neck got lopped off with her eyes still wide open.

The man who finished off an apostle alone, was the emperor of the empire who was emitting off unbelievable aura of supremacy——Gahard D Hoelscher was showered in the blood of apostle while he turned at the soldiers who got cold feet from that apostle’s fierce attack and raised a loud voice that sounded like explosion.

“You bastaards, don’t get cold feet-. Roar up! Fight until you turn into waste! This battlefield is a legend! All of you bastards are the spinner of the new legend! Do you want to get laughed by the guys in the future huh-!”

This battle where the existential fate of the mankind was staked on——it was certainly a legend itself seen from the viewpoint of the future generation. They were all the actors on this grand stage that would be talked without end at the future.

The soldiers of the empire and the mercenaries that were overflowing with ambition got roused up by those words. Fierceness lit up in their eyes, they blazed up with the desire to carve their

existence in history!

Gahard's violent passion swept over the battlefield.

"Imagine it. Whose figure is standing behind you bastards!? If you bastard get defeated, then that guy will die next-! Can you permit that? You cannot right!? Then blaze up your killing intent! Whether they are an apostle or whatever, who the hell cares, devote yourself to destroy all the enemyyy!"

The soldiers of the kingdom and the adventurers looked back over their shoulder for a moment, right now, even in this moment their eyes were seething violently with killing intent toward the silver monsters wielding fierce might. For whose sake they were standing in this place. That was obvious. It was to protect their friend, their lover, their family! This was a battlefield, where defeat was unforgivable!

At that time, the apostles who were offended by Gahard's existence fired silver flashes at him all at once.

"Shield-, form up!"

Gahard immediately reacted. Just with that command, the imperial soldiers who had gathered around Gahard unnoticed combined their large shield and became the defensive wall for Gahard. The silver flashes were temporarily blocked with the special large shields that were also of Hajime made.

"Attack-!"

Gahard's command surged once more.

Different imperial guards that were standing by behind the large shields kneeled and fired their anti-material rifle from the gaps of the shields.

The apostles who had just fired their silver flash were countered by the flying flashes which gouged their body and made them tumbled down.

And then, the moment the silver flashes stopped coming, Gahard

rushed toward another apostle and then using his ever-changing sword attack that warped like a whip from the natural stance he began an equal fight against an apostle.

“Follow his majesty-“

“Surround and kill them-. They are not an opponent we cannot win against!”

“Don’t let these dolls doing whatever they pleased more than this-“

With that as the trigger, the allied force’s fervor rose and they battled with the apostles using similar teamwork. The soldiers wouldn’t shrink away anymore no matter how many of them were killed, that mettle and resolve that believed they couldn’t be defeated was gradually excelling the specs of the apostles.

In a corner of the fortress.

There a man that had been closing his eyes from the battlefield all this time quietly opened his eyes. And then, with a powerful voice that while sounded solemn yet contained passion, he called at the commander Liliana.

“Princess Liliana.”

Just with those words, Liliana guessed what he wanted to say and judging that it was certainly the time she handed down the command.

“Yes, Adol-dono. Now that the battle is moving toward a land war, it would be extremely bad if we get sniped from above the gravity barrier. …Please show how the strength of the dragon race that rules over the sky will usurp the air superiority in front of all these people.”

“Fufu-, acknowledged.”

With solemn and powerful footsteps Adol went out to a terrace that continued toward the courtyard where they dragon race people

were standing in a row. His brethren below him, roughly three hundred people were filled to the brim with fighting spirit and looked up straight toward their clan head Adol.

“The persecution of five hundred years ago. There is no way for us to forget that. All of you who survived that time and made an oath for the vindication of our honor, and also all of you who were born since then lamenting all the irrationality while living in hiding…no need for even a drop of mercy or reservation-! Roar following your rage! The sky is our territory! Make all of them know that! All dragon race…we are departing-!”

“ “ “ “ “OOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!!!” “ “ “ “

They all roared simultaneously.

That was the signal of the revolt of the proud race who had endured the rage and humiliation for five hundred years until now. All of the dragon race rolled upwind while flying to the sky at the same time.

The barrier of gravity was made undone with good timing by Liliana. The dragon race used that chance to rise to the sky, and then at the next instant they were all wrapped in light.

And then, the figures that appeared then were the flock of dragon that was the conqueror of the sky. They flapped their wings majestically and their pupils that split vertically glared at the puppets of god. The dragons emitted unbelievable pressure from their body alone. Right now, all of the dragons were fully equipped with Hajime’s artifact, turning up their majestic appearance even further.

Among those dragons, a majestic scarlet dragon that boasted a conspicuously huge body raised a roar along with an enormous pressure. Regardless of the distance of seven hundred meters that separated him from the ground, the rippling vibration of the air was also conveyed toward the allied force soldiers on the ground.

Right after that, it was as though the roar just now was the signal

for the opening of the battle, three hundred dragons fired their breath attack simultaneously. The flashes that each had their own color based on the element of their forte rushed at the apostles who were dancing in the sky with a haughty face as though they owned the place.

The apostles wrapped their body with their silver wings and entered a defensive posture.

However, the breath of the dragon race bit and tore those defenses and exterminated the apostles.

{Hou, as expected from the spouse that Tio recognized. It's astonishing for our strength to be raised up until this far.}

Adol raised a pleased voice seeing his breath that was displaying a might that was ten-odd times the usual. Adol and others who were equipped with similar equipment like the armed black dragons had their specs raised up by the sublimation magic that was enchanted into their armor. Naturally there was also the effect from the cheatmate and the limit break artifact 'Last Zell'.

{Kuh, I won't recognize him-! That kind of brat's——}

An indigo blue dragon——Ristas made a voice that sounded vexed somehow. But, he held back his tongue after seeing an apostle who rapidly closed in on him in the middle of his speech swinging her large sword, yet that sword was splendidly blocked by the armor on his body and instead the apostle got blown away by the shockwave that was released by the armor.

Even though he wasn't doing anything but the enemy got blown away. It felt like he got protected by Hajime that made his feeling to get really complicated.

{Then, you can just try to steal her. After all, that man too had said that he will accept anyone's challenge.}

{Uguh}

There was no way he could do that. He could clearly imagine how he would be instantly killed the moment he challenged Hajime. The

tone of Adol's voice carried a tinge of teasing somewhere in it.

Ristas who was at disadvantage in this talk flapped his dragon wings and accelerated instantly to attack the apostles. It was like he was saying 'I'm concentrating in defeating the apostles!'

The other dragon people were also smiling wryly at Ristas who was still young while beginning to wield their strength fully.

As expected from the ruler of the sky. With their jumped up specs and maneuverable midair battle, and also the blessing of the age of god artifacts, the competed against the apostles in more than even battle. The conflict where the air superiority was put on the line entered into a mortal combat where dragon roars and silver flashes mixed all over just like a presentation of a space war in science fiction movie that was worthy of being in legend.

The powerful roars of dragon resounded through the reddish black sky, the allied force that was on the ground raised their war-cry at that gallantness while their morale was rising.

In a corner of the battlefield——at the position nearby the choir, there was a group that was clearly making a great contribution which drew a line from other soldiers and sacred knights at the area.

"UOOOOOOOH!!"

Along with a war cry a man made a step that split the ground and charged an apostle with a body blow——Nagayama Juugo the let his fist that was like a rock fell on the face of the apostle before she could do something.

The special gauntlet artifact of Hajime transmitted impact into the internal and destroyed the inside. Whipped up flesh and blood flew out from the noble face of the apostle and dirtied Juugo's cheek with blood splatter, but he only fixed back his stance in a calm state just like his taciturn appearance.

An apostle vertically slashed her large sword from overhead stance

toward that Juugo behind him.

However, with a backstep Juugo slipped into the bosom of the opponent smoothly and like that he crashed the apostle on the ground with a splendid shoulder throw. The ground was smashed into a radial shape from the excessive might and formed a small crater. Juugo stepped on the neck of the apostle whose movement was obstructed for an instant from the impact and gave her the finishing blow.

Juugo finished off two apostles in the blink of eye. Although the apostles were weakened and he himself was superhumanized, but the way he was fighting was splendid that made it clear that he had constantly trained without negligence.

There, two additional apostles arrived that approached Juugo in a pincer attack.

But, at that moment,

"——Wind blowing from the bottom of the earth, dye the thing with life white——'White Majestic Breath'!!"

White smoke rode with the wind and rushed through the air like a snake, it whirled and became a protective wall around Juugo. The two apostles that approached Juugo were slightly entangled by the white smoke, yet they used their silver wings and blew them away while withdrawing for once.

"tsk, petrifaction."

The spectacle of the body part that was touched by the white smoke petrifying creakingly from the tip made the apostles showing an expression that seemed to want to say 'how impudent' while they attempted to use magic power of disintegration to unmade the curse.

"I won't let you."

The caster that blew the white smoke of petrifaction——Nomura Kentaro waved a conductor stick artifact. Immediately the white smoke coiling around Juugo in protection parted into two trails and

attacked the withdrawing two apostles.

The apostles judged that it would be dangerous for them to get hit with that in their current state where their magic resistance was lowered so they attempted to withdraw further, but unnoticed the ground swelled up and bound their legs and their attempts didn't bear any fruit. The apostles pitched forward from the sudden restrain. That became a fatal opening.

At the next moment, the white smoke that Kentaro manipulated swallowed the two apostles whole.

What were left later were only two artistic sculptures that were completely made from stone.

Other than them, there were also Nakano Shinji and Saitou Yoshiki who had gotten back on their feet after Hiyama's betrayal and Kondou's death, they were unfolding a really great contribution with bloodcurdling look, while protecting the hole in their formation were Tamai Atsushi, Aikawa Noboru, Nimura Akito unfolding a fierce battle against the apostles without taking even a step back.

They were all perfectly supported from behind by Sonobe Yuuka, Sugawara Taeko, Miyazaki Nana, Tsuji Ayako, and Yoshino Mao.

The members of Ai-chan bodyguard squad were able to operate almost at the same level with Juugo's party and Shinji and others who were already fighting at the front line since the very beginning were because since Hajime and others departed from the capital, they encouraged their heart thinking that at this rate they would be no good and so they performed extra hard training since then.

Other than them, there were also the other students whose heart had been completely broken, even though they were unable to go as far as fighting directly, but with their abilities that had been heightened they were launching support magic from the rear, performing healing magic, using rifle or magic to add in laying out barrage, and so on. They too were desperately backing up the other's battle.

Every one of them had their broken heart to be lit up once more by Hajime's speech at the devil king castle. If Hajime's speech at that time were merely words, then the moment an apostle appeared before their eyes their heart would surely break again because it was only supported by paper thin words. However, everyone of them had seen Hajime.

He lost one of his arms and one of his eyes, what he had gone through even changed the color of his hair, he was in a tattered state and even his beloved lover was taken away. The wailing that he raised because of his lover's disappearance was something that caused them to feel pain in their heart. Even so, at the end he stood back up and proclaimed that he would crush everything and take her lover back. That appearance of him at that time was too powerful, burning their soul that were smoke-stained all this time.

It wasn't for the sake of the world or anything like that. It was merely a wish for returning home. A wish of not wanting to let their friend died. In order to grant just that much wish, they had to fight with everything they had leaving nothing to spare, finally they were convinced of that and they mustered their courage.

For the front line group, this support that they received came from a group who even though their heart was once smoke stained but they were still a group of cheat holder from another world.

As expected, even though the enemy was the apostles but with their specs lowered, taking on the classmate group who had been strengthened put them at disadvantage. Seeing the apostles being exterminated one after another, the allied force soldiers at the area raised their acclamation.

But, at that time, one of the apostles that broke through the front line rapidly approached one of the girl student.

"Hih!?"

The female student reflexively screamed.

But, at the next moment, the fear of death changed into shock.

The head of the apostle flew up with a plop, the body that lost its strength slid in vain beside the girl student.

Furthermore the apostles who were trying to surround the front line group had their necks reaped up in turn from the outside and their lives expired instantly. Regardless when they moved their gaze over there, other than the corpses of the headless apostles, there was nothing and no one there.

One of the apostles turned her gaze around at the surrounding with a grim gaze toward this obviously strange situation.

“Kuh, just where in the world the attack came fro-“

“Right in front of you here! Shithead!”

The apostle was startled that her murmur was replied right from the front and her gaze returned forward. In her eyes, the shadow of a kodachi being sucked toward her neck was reflected. And then that became the last view of that apostle.

Displaying a thorough covert action(thinness of shadow) that couldn’t be noticed even by apostles, this ghost crossed over from crowd to crowd and in an instant, it approached to reap the target’s head.

Cutting down the apostles who had the figure of a human female was a really great burden mentally. What became salvation was that all the apostles had the same appearances, their cold figure where no emotion could be felt made anyone that saw them felt that they were like a puppet.

Coupled with the miserableness of having a shadow so thin that made even the worst enemy to show expression of “Eh? He is actually there!?”, the young man with the vocation of ‘Assassin’——Endo Kousuke was earning kill point that was the highest among his classmates while half giving in to despair.

“As expected from you, Kousuke-! I don’t know where you are though!”

”Aawesome, Kousuke! Though I don’t know where you are!”

“Endo-kun do your beeest! Though I cannot see your figure doing your best!”

“Eh, ah, I see, Endo-kun is also fighting! Thanks for helping ‘kay!”

With a drop, something shining fell from Kousuke’s eyes. It appeared there was a rain falling down. If he said it was raining then it was raining.

There, “Ufufu” a voice that was slightly filled with bewitching tone resounded.

Kousuke who slipped inside a crowd peeking for an opening made by apostle felt something chilly in his spine before he turned his gaze over there. What he found there was a woman from rabbit race, she was giving a glance at Kousuke.

“You, your presence management is really skilled. Perhaps even I am no match against that.”

“He, ah, is that, so?”

The rabbit ear female smiled widely toward the perplexed Endo. Kousuke’s cheek unconsciously turned red from seeing that smile. In the first place, the rabbit race who was the greatest popularity as treasured slave in general had well-arranged face and figure. The female who was talking at Kousuke right now was also an amazing beauty.

Having such a beauty, added with her lovely rabbit ears on her head smiling at him, the virgin young man with the history of having no girlfriend was equal with his age had his heartbeat increasing without stopping. Although there was also the fact that he was feeling stimulation from being in a battlefield right now.

But, that violent throbbing in his chest that felt similar from heart fluttering was immediately supplanted by a cramping face.

“My name is Ranainferna Hauria of Rapid Shadow. I rushed like a gale, sneak up like a shadow, and presented a single lethal attack, one of the stealthy hand of Hauria race!”

“…I, is that so.”

“But, when I saw you, I became embarrassed to introduce myself with that nickname. That’s why, it’s vexing but I’ll hand over the nickname of ‘Rapid Shadow’ to you. Your name?”

“…Endo, Kousuke.”

Kousuke was unable to say that what was embarrassing was actually introducing one’s own nickname. If he was asked ‘do you like a beautiful Onee-san?’, then Kousuke’s answer was decided already.

“Then, from today you are ‘Rapid Shadow’…no, you have surpassed me so…you can introduce yourself as ‘Kousuke E Abyssgate of Rapid Fang Shadow Claw’ then! It’s vexing for me though!”

“No, that’s fi——”

“Well then, so that both of us won’t die, let’s reap the enemy’s neck with our all♪ See you! Kousuke E Abyssgate of Rapid Fang Shadow Claw!”

“…”

Kousuke already wanted very much to give a retort like ‘how can you say something like “let’s reap their neck♪” with such a lovely smile’ or ‘just where did this abyssgate something came from’, but the most shocking thing for Kousuke was that Rana had discovered him when he already even used his skill to kill his presence. She had discovered him.

And then,

——Do you like beautiful Onee-san, with rabbit ears on their head?

“Kousuke E Abyssgate of Rapid Fang Shadow Claw, has arrived!”

It seemed that a love that budded in battlefield really existed.

The claw and fangs of Kousuke began to become even more well-executed, it was to the degree that anyone who knew him might

suspect that he had received some kind of other strengthening. He went on to take the head of all the apostles. (TN: Here the writing of Kousuke's name changed, from the normal kanji of Kousuke into the katakana of Kousuke E Abyssgate)

On the other hand, nearby such classmates there was one other person who was making a strikingly great contribution. It was Aiko.

At the rear, she kept glancing at 'You Can Do It-, Agitator! Compilation of Lovely Speech Learned Case by Case' that was handwritten by Hajime while in a certain interval she encouraged the allied force so that their moral wouldn't plummet using words that the classmates felt like they had heard from somewhere. She was also raising her voice for the sake of her own battle.

"I command in the name of Hatayama Aiko! O transient life, stand up once more and destroy the enemy!"

Right after she said that, several of the apostles that should have been defeated already were standing up in a swaying motion. And then, they attacked the apostles who were supposed to be their ally with a force that looked as though they had recovered their original unrestrained spec.

That was the effect of Aiko's soul magic. She reproduced a pseudo-soul from her own soul and manipulated it to possess the flesh of the apostles. This magic combined 'Soul Reproduction' that created a transient soul and 'Necromancy' of darkness magic.

Aiko whose vocation as 'Farming Master' was the only non-combat vocation among the classmates if Hajime was excluded, became aware of her own powerlessness, since Hajime departed on his journey she became strongly conscious of looking for a way of fighting for the sake of protecting her students.

There she thought hard of how to make use of the soul magic that was her only advantage, and the result that she reached was this magic. It was really ironic that what gave her the hint was the betrayer Eri's necromancy and soul bind, the aspect where this magic was making use of corpses also caused a fierce conflict in her heart, still Aiko took the plunge in developing this magic.

That time at the sky above the God Mountain, she had already stopped staying at a clean place while only making her students dirtying their hand.

Besides,

“Until he return, we absolutely won’t lose-!”

Yes, for the sake of the man who she gave her heart to despite understanding that such relationship must not happen, she absolutely wouldn’t lose. Because she wanted to meet him, one more time.

“Ahahah, good grief Ai-chan, her motivation of hiding it already dropped to zero isn’t it?”

“If Ai-chan mentioned ‘he’, then there is also one person it can possibly be isn’t it.”

Sonobe Yuuka and Miyazaki Nana grinned a bit at each other while glancing at Aiko.

“Nagumo-kun is seriously a demon king. It should be impossible to even make one’s own teacher to fall for her student.”

“There are also several girls in class that look like they fell already…a real harem is formed right in front of our eyes, what a sight. Well, exactly because of that they can think of something like ‘me too’ though.”

“Normally just by looking at his relation with that child named Yue, anyone would draw back already. Like, when you see a girl that is too earnest toward a boy, you will give up then, something like that. I wonder if this is also the attraction of the demon king. We too have to be careful, if not we are going to get charmed inadvertently too.”

“Isn’t that righttt”

This time the two of them smiled wryly. And then, they looked up to the sky together.

There, they could see the figure of their female classmate who had earned the most kill point in this battlefield. She rushed through the sky freely, using two large swords, or black silver flash, or black silver feathers, or magic, she used them all depending on the situation to overwhelm the apostles.

Four jet black wings mixed with silver radiance spread on her back and dress armor with black tone covering her body. Her hair that was fluttering from the caressing of wind was also black. That figure with an appearance that was worthy as a fallen angel which was slaughtering the apostles who looked like angel, no matter how anyone looked at it that person should be called as a general of a demon king.

Despite so, the angel side was the force that was trying to devastate the mankind, and the fallen angel one was the force trying to protect the mankind, it was really an ironic story.

That rampaging fallen angel which was Kaori was clad in silver black light while moving with a speed that left afterimages trailing behind, right now she was cutting down one more apostle.

Two apostles who aimed at that moment swung their large sword horizontally. Kaori blocked those using her twin large swords and black silver wings and then she rotated with fierce momentum. Immediately the two apostles were repelled away and their lives came to an end when black silver feathers pierced their forehead without delay.

Just how many apostles had she slaughtered with the addition of those two Kaori wondered.

“There is no end to this…”

Kaori complained like that unconsciously.

“Then, give up and fall.”

The one who replied was an apostle. When Kaori noticed, she was completely surrounded in a sphere shape, she was literally buried from all directions without any opening left.

And then, at the next moment silver flashes were fired. The apostles ignored the possibility of friendly fire against their compatriots in front of them and fired simultaneously without any reservation or mercy, they all aimed at the center of the formed sphere encirclement and fired.

However, Kaori was unshaken.

“I don’t know any words like giving up you know?”

Kaori made such frivolous talk before attempted to make a breakthrough from the front in a straight line. She used her twin swords as a shield and charged to the torrent of light.

The apostle whose gaze met Kaori’s was convinced that Kaori would break through and she readied her twin large swords.

Right after that, Kaori whose whole body was smoking came through, regardless of her state the glint of her eyes didn’t weaken even by a little bit and she approached the apostle rapidly with fierce momentum. And then, she shot out black silver feathers, aiming accurately at spots like shoulder or ankle in a dirty method.

Similarly the apostle fired her silver feathers in the attempt to offset the attack. However at that moment chain of light stretched out from below her feet and constricted the apostle’s movement for an instant.

The restrain was immediately disintegrated and dispersed, but that was enough. The black silver feathers caught the body of the apostle and broke her posture greatly. Kaori arrived at that timing. She drew back the large sword on her hand to the limit, and in an instant, she dealt a stab in god speed.

gi gi gi The sound of fellow large swords scraping at each other resounded, but in the end Kaori also had the momentum of her charge which the apostle was unable to neutralize, like that she was then skewered by Kaori’s large sword.

But, it seemed that it was still within the apostle’s expectation. The handle of the skewered sword——the hand of Kaori that grasped

there was gripped tightly and the apostle restricted Kaori's movement.

There silver feathers rushed in.

The attack intended to bury the apostle together with Kaori.

"Even though she is your comrade but you all treat her too lightly."

Kaori who whispered that while making an exasperated expression prioritized at giving the finishing blow to the apostle before her eyes without feeling concern against the rushing silver feathers.

The eyes of the apostle opened wide slightly.

Although currently their specs were limited, but their disintegration ability was still working in full. Because Kaori had the same flesh with the apostles she would be able to resist the disintegration if she activated the same ability, but even so she would still be overwhelmed by the amount of attack and bore damage to the degree that couldn't be ignored. Kaori herself should also understand that. Despite so, just why…that was what the apostle pondered.

Right after that, the body of the apostle was bisected by Kaori's sword, almost at the same time Kaori was swallowed by many silver feathers.

"She is supposedly able to trace our experience but…after all she is just an imitation in the first place. What a foolish act."

"That's not actually true."

The words that one of the apostles who fired the silver feathers whispered were immediately replied to.

The eyes of the apostle narrowed quietly from hearing that voice which didn't sound uneasy or agitated at all.

Ahead of the apostle gaze, she could see the figure of a wounded Kaori at the spot where the silver feathers were fired at.

As expected, she could be damaged but she was merely putting up a brave front. The apostle who made that judgment deployed innumerable silver feathers to deal the finishing blow wordlessly. The other apostles were also deploying their feathers at the same time, so Kaori who was at the center of the attacks looked like she was drowning in a sea of stars.

But, just before those silver feathers could be fired the apostles reflexively stopped their movement completely.

The reason was because the wounds of Kaori were healed in the blink of eye before their gaze. With speed and vividness that resembled Yue's 'Automatic Regeneration', even the wounds that were pierced by a silver feather or the gaping open hole returned to their former unblemished state, not only that even her clothing returned to as good as new.

The apostles couldn't see her using magic. Apostle body also wasn't provided with a function of automatic regeneration.

The bewildered apostles gazed fixedly at Kaori——and they noticed, behind the forelock that was swept by the wind, on Kaori's forehead, there was a cross crest shining silver black that was carved there.

"That is…"

"'Holy Crest of the Fallen'——this is my magic. I used this before the opening of the battle. It's not as great as Yue's regeneration, however even if I'm wounded it will activate by itself and heal me, really a convenient magic."

Metamorphosis and regeneration composite magic 'Holy Crest of the Fallen'——by carving a cross that shouldered the role of a magic circle on a part of the body, this magic would activate regeneration magic in a prescribed time. This magic could even be called as a powerful version of auto-regen. Furthermore, by using metamorphosis magic the holy crest that was like a tattoo could be erased.

"…However, if we continue to fire saturation attack, sooner or later

the damage should surpass the healing. Your magic power is also not unlimited."

Hearing Kaori's words, an apostle intentionally said out words to pull herself together. It was unclear whether the apostle was trying to persuade herself with those words or if she was seriously thinking so…

Kaori made a fearless smile. It was a provocative smile that was something Kaori from before would never make by any means. The influence that she received from a demon king somewhere or his wife was keenly conveyed through that action.

"You have two misunderstandings there."

"…What?"

Kaori's atmosphere made the apostle asked back with her greatest possible vigilance.

Toward such apostle, Kaori prepared her twin swords and spread her two pairs of wings widely while leaking out her words in a small volume.

"First――"

"――!?"

At the next moment, Kaori's figure vanished and appeared right behind the apostle. She was in the stance of swinging out her sword.

"If I will it, then I am able to avoid any kind of saturation attack."

"To, too, fast――"

While the other apostles surrounding them were bewildered, the apostle who Kaori conversed with until just now was gazing in astonishment with half her body sliding down diagonally and blood spraying everywhere.

Kaori swept her large sword to shake off the clotted blood, the

apostles who witnessed that returned to their senses and fired simultaneously.

But,

“——’God Speed’.”

Kaori’s figure had already gone by the time they fired, at the next instant two apostles were bisected and fell toward the ground.

Even when the apostles moved their gaze to that spot in shock, just as expected Kaori’s figure was already gone by the time they looked, and another apostle at a different place was bisected again.

“Spa, space teleportation?”

One apostle raised a questioning voice. But, right after that, she felt the wind gently stroking her body and a diagonal split appeared in her field of vision. Like that her consciousness fell into darkness then.

“No way that’s true. I am not in possession of space magic just so you know. This is merely me moving at high speed.”

“Nonsense-. Something like a speed that we cannot detect is just-“

“I can produce such speed. More accurately I am merely shortening the time though?”

Saying that, the apostle who talked with a shrill voice from shock was instantly cut apart by Kaori.

Regeneration magic ‘God Speed’——a magic that shortened the time affecting every single event. If the time for an attack to reach an opponent was shortened then it would become a god speed attack, if the time for traveling was shortened then it would be possible to move with a speed that could be mistaken as teleportation.

If the root of regeneration magic was traced back then it was a magic that interfered with time. It was merely that the usefulness of this magic stopped at ‘regeneration’ as the limit if used on the

human body. Since Kaori obtained this magic from Meljine, she had trained in it all this time until now. It was the first age of god magic that she obtained and something that fitted her perfectly who had the role as healer, so her attachment to this magic was also especially all the more.

As the result, just like her success in creating the hour crystal, Kaori also became able to directly interfere with time although within a limit, her possession of the body of an apostle was also a factor in her mastery of this magic.

Of course there was also demerit, this magic consumed a vast amount of magic power for every single use. That was the reason why Kaori didn't immediately use it right after the battle started…

Seeing her brethren got exterminated one after another by an overwhelming speed that they were powerless to do anything against, an apostle changed the aim of her argument. Perhaps it was also her scheme to make Kaori got agitated even just by a little.

"Indeed, you are strong. As to be expected from someone who serves that irregular. However, a war is not something that can be influenced by an individual."

"What do you want to say?"

"Look at the surface. Even while you are facing all of us, the people are dying continuously. It seems there are also places that are putting a good fight, but in the end they are humans after all. They cannot avoid the accumulation of fatigue and damage. Before long they too will be reduced into mere corpses."

"…"

"We are still arriving here from the Holy Precincts you know? There is nothing that you can protect. Everything, is just a pointless struggle."

Kaori stopped moving and looked back at the talking apostle quietly. And then, she gently smiled at the apostle who was pointing the point of her sword at her while proclaiming mankind's

death and opened her mouth.

“Your second misunderstanding. Something like the amount of damage, or something like the amount of magic power…just who are you saying that to?”

“What are…”

“Even if my body has changed, I am ‘Shirasaki Kaori’. I possess the vocation ‘Healing Master’, and I am the ‘healer’ of the demon king(Hajime-kun)’s party you know?”

Saying that, Kaori held her large sword in reverse grip and pointed the tip to the surface. That sword which had been added with improvement by Hajime so that Kaori could go all out in exhibiting her ability as ‘Healing Master’ shined brilliantly in black silver color.

And then,

“——’Mighty Breath of Heaven Turning’.”

Right after that, a single black silver drop fell toward the ground from the tip of the large sword.

That drop when it reached the height of several meters from the ground, it went *KA-!* with light exploding from it that spread a ripple of black silver through the whole battlefield. Two layers, three layers, the black silver waves surged above the allied force.

Then, at the next moment a soldier of the allied force that should have died already opened his eyes with a snap. And then he raised his body with a bewildered look and touched all over his chest that should have been slashed open, when he realized there was no injury there he tilted his head further.

There were also others, people who were gouged out by silver feathers or killed by elemental magic woke up one after another. And then when they understood that their body was somehow alive with their wound healed, they immediately stood up and rushed forward in order to assist their comrades who were fighting the apostles.

Not only the people who had died, naturally even the people who were still alive but got wounded were also healed in the blink of eye.

“Wha-, they are revived-!?”

From above, the apostle who confirmed that situation exposed her shock as though the claim of the apostles that they were emotionless was just a lie.

Soul and regeneration composite magic ‘Mighty Breath of Heaven Turning’——this magic picked out which were the allies using soul magic and carried out convergence-fixing-attachment of the souls that were in the process of dispersing, moreover it performed healing using regeneration magic. As expected, in the case where the corpse didn’t maintain their original shape like being bisected until the body become in pieces or the head was gone, or the time of death had gone past ten minutes, the effect of this magic wouldn’t work on the corpse that was in those states, but other than those cases all the allies inside the radius of four kilometers with the black silver drop as the center would have revival and healing performed on them by this army use recovery magic.

Even with just those properties, this magic was already like a joke. However, the show of Kaori’s true ability didn’t stop just there.

“——’Divine Binding of Layered Usurpation’.”

Different from the large sword that was held in reverse grip its tip pointing below, the other large sword was held in front of Kaori’s chest with its tip pointed straight above. And then, along with that proclamation, the readied large sword became clad in silver black radiance.

It was like a black hole that swallowed the galaxy, and it exhibited a result that didn’t contradict that appearance.

“ts, this is, my strength is leaving-“

Even though they were already had their specs shaved off by the choir right now, but right now when they felt that their strength

was shaved off even further the apostles showed their agitation.

Looking carefully, radiant lights were leaking out from all the apostles in the range of several hundred meters around Kaori, and then those lights converged toward the large sword Kaori held like a meteor shower.

And then, right after the lights were absorbed by the large sword, magic power was overflowing from Kaori's body. Not only her consumed magic power recovered, it even looked that the magic power she possessed grew a lot more. Not only that, through the tip of the large sword facing the ground, a silver black drop fell to the ground once more.

Silver black ripples were spreading below once more like before. And the result, the movement of the allied force soldiers was obviously becoming better. The sharpness and power of their movement, and also their reaction speed were increasing.

"I just stole the strength of all of you."

"Such thing…"

"It's possible as you can see. I am a healing master. Transferring magic power to other people is also our role. Though it takes a bit of time to seize the magic power of you all."

Saying that was easy but to actually do it was another matter altogether.

Soul and light element composite magic 'Divine Binding of Layered Usurpation'——this composite magic designated its target using soul magic, and then it used sublimation magic to light element magic 'Divine Transfer' in order to transfer magic power to other people. It plundered the magic power of the seized opponent forcefully to recover one's own magic power, and then that magic could also be reused for things like ally's strengthening and so on.

Of course, normally even using sublimation magic stealing magic power from apostle without even touching them was impossible. What was helping Kaori in using this magic was the twin large

swords her hands were holding.

——Demon Sword of Circle Calamity　Anima Erunte

——Holy Sword of Gospel　Bel Rexion

The demon sword plundered the power of the opponent and turned it into its food, while the holy sword made that power into unlimited power to share with the ally. These two swords exhibited their maximum strength when they were used together, a demon sword and a holy sword that exclusively assisted Kaori in her use of 'Mighty Breath of Heaven Turning' and 'Divine Binding of Layered Usurpation'.

"…Even so, even so, all of you cannot win. We the apostles are infinite. No matter how many little tricks you all play, no matter how much you all struggle, in the end only the destiny of ruin awaits you all. Because that is the great will of the god."

"Human won't perish. Surely it will be the same result no matter what kind of world it is. Just like how a boy without any considerable strength crawled up from the bottom of the abyss by himself, even when human is swallowed by difficulty, they will surely find out their path to survival. You see, human just doesn't know how to perish. As long as there is just one person who wishes to live, wishing to protect someone, their determination will force something like a mere 'destiny' to yield."

The gaze of the apostle and Kaori crossed.

"…Then, please show me the proof of that."

With those words as the signal, the fierce battle was restarted once more.

The apostles attacked Kaori in a group, and Kaori exterminated them who attacked her.

If she saw the allied force became exhausted she would heal them, in a certain interval she would perform revival. When her magic power decreased she would steal from the apostles, sometimes she would carry out support bombing toward the surface.

At the other places too, the dragon race people were holding back the apostles with fierce efforts, on the surface too every single person were continuing to fight to the death.

It was unclear just how much time had passed.

Even the shadow of the sun had already gone from the reddish black world, the people was gradually losing their sensation of time. If they didn't have Kaori's healing magic, perhaps the allied force would collapse already since a long time ago. That was just how endless the force of the apostle was.

Even so the allied force soldiers believed that Hajime, the 'Sword of Goddess' who stepped into the Holy Precincts would bring an end to this for them, with that belief they mustered their willpower. There was already a lot of soldiers who met their end because the revival didn't make it in time.

Gradually the sensation of being pushed back by the violence of number began to rule over the allied force.

But, at that time, suddenly one soldier who looked up at the sky above God Mountain whispered with small volume.

"Oi, what the hell is that…"

Ahead of that soldier's gaze, there was the scene of the miasma reaching toward the surface with an obviously growing momentum.

Right after that, the muddy miasma overflowing from the crack of space increased in force all of a sudden.

And then, the miasma fell and covered all over the surface of the collapsed God Mountain, without stopping the miasma flowed and headed toward the fortress. Ahead of the miasma there was the capital, it passed through and touched the grass plain in front of the fortress. Just like the dust cloud that was produced when God Mountain crumbled, the black miasma approached them with a terrific force like an avalanche.

Reddish black lights were materialized in succession inside that miasma. Right after that, a great number of roar rose and countless

monsters leaped out from inside the miasma. It seemed that it was the second wave of the monster army.

Furthermore, several thousand apostles also flew out all at once from the crack in space.

“Oi oi, a battle force augmentation after this far. Bring it on…this is a time to say something like that but…this is really bad huh.”

With a body that was dyed bright red from the blood spurt of the enemy, Gahard’s expression turned like someone who just had bitten a bitter bug. Not to mention the other soldiers, their expression were turning into despair.

Even though it was already absolutely the limit facing the apostles who were assaulting them without any pause, but after this long, tens of thousands of monsters swarm and several thousands of apostles were coming again——perhaps this deadlocked state would crumble for the worse like this.

“First and second division, concentrate at the front! Don’t let the monsters ride the momentum and charge into melee battle-! Stop them in place-!”

A formation was immediately formed by Gahard’s command.

The earthquake was spreading, the air was rumbling. The sound of the monsters charge and the roars’ shockwave were getting closer.

Looking at the overflowing large swarm of monsters while taking along an avalanche of enormous miasma behind them, damp sweating was flowing all over Gahard’s body. The dragons and Kaori were also held back in place by the similarly overflowing apostles. The cheat group from another world was also having their hands full with protecting the choir squad.

The distance was approximately one kilometer.

The expressions of the allied force soldiers were convulsing from the excessive pressure.

Perhaps this is hopeless. Unintentionally anyone was giving off that

atmosphere. It was at that moment,

“——’Kalpa of Destruction’.”

The ground vanished. Along with the monsters.

“——’Kalpa of Destruction’——’Kalpa of Destruction’.”

A voice of a woman resounded thrice. That voice resounded with clarity even at the battlefield which was filled to the brim with noises.

But, rather than that voice, Gahard and others were shocked even more by the spectacle happening before their eyes.

The leading pack of the advancing monsters was completely vanishing into the bottom of the earth altogether. They were unable to even raise the scream of death agony.

Right after that, the voice that excessively reverberated and excessively irritated the listeners, the cause of this phenomenon showed her appearance sluggishly from a gate that opened at the plain in front of the allied force.

“Yahoooo☆ Appearing when the situation is in a pinch, the world idol, Miledy-chan has arrived-! Ahahaaa, isn’t this the greatest timiiing! Just-as-ex-pec-ted, me♪ A woman that can read the mood! Everyone of the allianceee, falling in love with me is-no-good-y’know♡”

What appeared was a giant golem, and a really tiny humanoid wearing a smiley mask, clad in a milky white robe riding on its shoulder. Miledy’s appearance that looked like she was screwing around a lot was taking a pose that felt like ‘Kyarurun☆’ toward the allied force army from the giant golem’s shoulder while making ‘tehehe-pero’ expression. The smiley face mask was somehow looking like that by some unknown mechanism. (TN: Tehehe pero. Imagine winking while chuckling tehehe and the person’s tongue sticking out.)

Including Gahard’s, the time of the allied force army was stopped.

Everyone without exception was having a genuine confusion of "Just what in the world is that" while at the same time their expression was turning into an indescribable irritation.

There an explanation came from Liliana toward the allied force. According to her, this person was a helper that Hajime and others called for, putting aside her annoying speech and conduct, this person was really quite useful. It was unknown what she had been doing until now, but she finally arrived right now, something like that.

"Geeezzz, everyone, what a tough crowd all of youuuuu. 'Perhaps this is hopeless'…you all seemed to act pointlessly serious like that so I tried to enliven this placeee. Yet now you all are making Miledy-chan's good will to go to wasteee, hmph hmph, Miledy-chan is extremely angry here!"

The irritation gauge of Gahard and everyone else almost exploded with that.

But, even while acting screwing off like that, Miledy pointed one of her hands at the approaching miasma behind and said a word.

"——'Severance Catastrophe'."

The star of catastrophe created above the miasma immediately began to swallow the miasma with outrageous force. There was also the figures of monsters that were mixed inside the miasma there.

"Geeez-, daring to be a nuisance of Miledy-chan is something uuuunforgivable! Punishment timeee. ——'Demolish Yoke'."

The gap between her screwing around voice and her chanting voice was absurd.

A voice of absolute zero resounded only in that instant of chanting.

The result from that was different from before, the feet of the monsters left the ground all at once and they flew beyond the sky with a preposterous momentum. Gravity was the resultant force from gravitational pull and centrifugal force. Therefore, those who had their gravitational pull severed would be flown away to the

beyond.

The ten of thousand monsters were curbstomped by a lone person while helpless to do anything. Even the monsters who escaped the range of the large scale magic were exterminated by the rushing giant golems and knight golems one after another before the monsters could reach the allied force.

The allied force didn't know that this person was one of the 'liberator', but even so they greatly comprehended that this was a helper that Hajime relied on. That this person was similarly a monster class character.

The advance of the monster of the ground was managed by Miledy and her golems, and then the monsters who broke through that was somehow managed by the allied force, like that relieve was slightly spreading among the soldiers.

But, that relieve was immediately crumbling right after.

The apostles who overflowed from the crack in space before this gathered into a single cluster. Their number was approximately a thousand.

The thousand apostle that formed their ranks like a single spear completely ignored the attack of Kaori or the dragons and began to descend in a straight line.

Naturally, anti-air artillery was also fired from the surface, but even while the apostles were falling one after another like scattered flowers, they relied on their number and kept advancing without hesitation. …They were heading toward the choir.

"tsk, I won't let you-!"

{All hands, stop that apostle swarm-!}

With desperate look Kaori and Adol exerted all their strength to crush the large spear made from apostles.

Several hundred apostles were blown away in their descend to the ground, but even so the swarm of apostles that completely became

a single cluster couldn't be broken up completely…

"No good-, run awaaay!"

Kaori who was unable to oppose that pressure raised a scream while getting blown away.

Right after that, the large spear of apostles was emitting silver radiance like a divine spear that was thrown by god while stabbing at the barrier of the choir squad.

And then, before the people in the area could do something about the divine spear, cracks were spreading on the barrier that was protecting the choir squad…finally, the barrier was completely pulverized along with a thunderous sound.

The powerless members of the choir squad were vainly scattered to death before that tremendous might.

At this moment, the wedge that bound the apostles was broken.

The apostles of god exerted their ability in full.

Bloody wind was sweeping over the battlefield. Here and there silver lights were bursting up, the allied force soldiers that were making their resistance in those areas were instantly turned into a lump of meat in an instant. Their heroic war cry was turning into a mere scream.

"This is only a stopgap measure but——'Demolish Yoke'."

Miledy was maintaining the picture of hell behind her while exercising the magic that cut loose the target from gravity toward the battlefield. The targets were easy to understand. The conspicuous silver magic power. She was only selecting those as her target.

Right after that, the apostles were simultaneously blown away to the sky. They were spinning while pulled until the distance of a kilometer from the ground instantly.

But, for the apostles in the strengthened state who had recovered

their specs, this magic was really nothing but a temporary measure against them. They immediately fixed their posture. There the apostles who turned into the divine spear gathered. They didn't stop there. As though to invite despair for mankind, a great number of apostles were coming out further from the crack in space.

The reddish black sky was filled to the brim with apostles to the degree that they could be mistaken as stars in the sky. And then, the apostles of god, as though to declare that fighting bit by bit was troublesome already, it even seemed to say that right now they would forget all the humiliation of the apostles of god being killed, they would merely rely on the overwhelming violence of number and began to focus their silver magic power.

The protection by the great barrier was already gone. The anti-air artillery and sniping attacks were shooting down the apostles with certainty. The dragons and Kaori were also exterminating the apostles who weren't moving because of their concentration in focusing their magic power and they were falling like flies from the sky.

However, the apostles didn't pay them any heed. They abandoned their dignity, they didn't give any care of the damage done to them, they were merely focusing a light of destruction for the sake of destroying the mankind. No matter how many of them were killed and killed, the apostles' number were replenished one after another, their number that was focusing their magic power was just too many that the rate of the allied force annihilating the apostles couldn't catch up.

Right now, if the silver sun was fired, the result wouldn't end with merely tremendous damage toward the allied force. The result that arrived would be 'the defeat of mankind'.

"I won't let you, absolutely-!"

Kaori glared at the sky with a gaze filled with determination while lifting both her hands above. In anticipation of this situation, the crystals that were placed in certain places on this battlefield reacted to Kaori's will. Those lights connected to each other with lines of light and formed a single enormous magic circle.

——Kaori's exclusive use Large scale protection barrier stone 'Shutzengel'

This artifact assisted the barrier magic of Kaori who wasn't a barrier master to deploy a large-scale barrier that was even more powerful than the great barrier using an enormous magic circle that covered the whole battlefield.

"Perish."

"——'Indomitable Holy Severance'–!!"

When the silver sun was fired, a super large scale protection wall covering the allied force was deployed at the same time.

The silver spear and the black silver barrier collided.

Thunderous roar.

Flash.

The world was filled with those two things.

"Guh, UuuUUUUUaAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!"

Kaori's scream burst out.

The impact felt like she was stopping a comet in its track, the pressure felt like it was crushing her. Her black silver wings were flickering, her altitude was gradually dropping.

The black silver barrier was Holy Severance that was enchanted with disintegration ability. Therefore it neutralized the apostles' disintegration ability and changed the attack's nature into mere bombardment. But, even so it was a full power bombardment formed from several thousand apostles, it caused cracks to form on Kaori's barrier by pure might. Kaori was resisting that using regeneration magic that instantly restored the barrier.

Her magic power was flowing out from here in the blink of eye.

Kaori gritted her teeth while maintaining her altitude and the

barrier desperately.

The apostles didn't circle behind the barrier to attack from the rear, perhaps it was because of their minimum dignity as apostles of god, they were merely adding to the silver bombardment continuously to smash the resistance from the front.

{All hands, deploy barrier! Don't let that girl shouldering this alone-!}

Adol's angry voice roared. The dragons gathering behind Kaori laid out their barriers one after another to layer with Kaori's.

"This should lighten up the burden more or less. ——'Calamity Sky'."

Miledy's gravity magic created gravity spheres around the part of the barrier that was directly impacted and weakened the bombardment by scattering its might.

Other than them the people on the surface that could use barrier magic——with Liliana and the classmates in the lead, all of them deployed their barrier and supported Kaori. The people who couldn't use barrier magic were also desperately supporting Kaori by using another effect of 'Shutzengel', the effect of transferring the magic power of the soldiers to Kaori, in that way they were sending their magic power to help.

A few second passed, or perhaps it had been several minutes.

The world of thunderous roar and flash that felt like an eternity finally announced its end.

At the same time the barriers were also dispersing.

"Haa haa, we, endured…"

Kaori who had endured through the disintegration bombardment of several thousand apostles were breathing heavily.

Her complexion was obviously looking exhausted. The dragons at her surrounding were also the same. Liliana and others and also the

allied force soldiers on the ground who had mustered their magic power were also in similar state. The expression of everyone was turning grim.

Even so they had pulled through. Thinking that Kaori was smiling while she was going to activate 'Divine Binding of Layered Usurpation'…

A silver sun was illuminating the world once more.

"We the apostles of god are infinite——hadn't we said that?"

Not only their number, their magic power was also infinite. The glaring apostles were whispering so while creating a new silver sun.

Kaori's magic power recovery wouldn't make it in time.

She wouldn't be able to endure if they were attacked one more time by that.

Not only Kaori, all people of the allied force who looked up at the sky also realized that.

Despair,

Resignation,

Were filling the heart of them all.

The silver sun was falling down from the sky. It was the end… everyone thought like that.

But…

Kaori quietly lifted both her hands with her breathing still ragged. Her strong gaze that didn't show anything like even a spec of resignation was staring still at the light of direction directly, a fire was burning in her soul, she scraped up even the fragments of magic power still clinging somewhere inside her——

She didn't abandon her will to fight.

She didn't give up.

It was unclear just how many people among the soldiers of the allied force could see her figure. If they could see her, then surely they would shed their tears from that noble and beautiful appearance without any doubt. Just like Adol and others whose heart was stolen by seeing that gallant figure from right beside her.

"Even just a second longer is fine. We are going to survive!"

If they could only just survive a second longer, at that time, perhaps that person that she loved the most would bring the end to all of this.

No, surely he would end all of this.

She believed that.

That was why, even at the verge of death, even just for a fragment of a second she wouldn't give up!

The whole world was dyed silver.

The barrier that she could deploy looked so frail like a toy.

But, for a second.

Without any doubt, the attack was stopped in that second.

At the next moment,

"…Fufu-, see, just as I thought!"

Kaori made an expression that was enchanted from affection and unequaled trust. Ahead of her gaze, there was the scene of the silver light dispersing with a puff and the swarm of apostles slumping powerlessly.

Right after that, like a marionette that had its controlling string cut, the apostles stared at nothing with lightless gaze and they were falling to the ground like flies.

{This is, no, wait, what in the world is that…don't tell me, is that Holy Precincts?}

Even while feeling bewildered from seeing the falling apostles, Adol's voice was caught from an even stranger situation.

Ahead of his gaze, there, space itself was shaking, the sky was in an abnormal state where various sceneries which were projected like video recording were appearing and disappearing. It was as though there were several different worlds at the sky above, the sky looked like it was going to crumble and fall off anytime now.

That situation was like the prelude of the world crumbling, furthermore the atmosphere was starting to rumble which spurred on that bad imagination even more.

"Hajime-kun, Yue, everyone…"

Kaori too felt deeply moved only for a brief time, her expression immediately changed into a worried one. Looking closer the crack of space was also trembling, it looked like that it might vanish anytime.

With her state that had run dry of magic power, Kaori flapped her silver black wings to head toward the trembling space while maintaining her consciousness that was going to sink into darkness even now.

There was a person who caught her shoulder tightly.

"Leave them to me. To the one loved by everyone through many months and years, this Miledy-chan, 'kay☆"

Saying that, Miledy Raisen stopped Kaori with an extremely gentle voice that ran counter with her tone.

Arifureta Chapter 174

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/175/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Bakapervert did the edits.

The Last Battle

Platinum light poured down.

The radiant pillar of light quietly stretched from empty space to the ground——toward a chalk white round pillar. And then, when the light touched the summit of the gigantic round pillar where seven or eight people could stand with room to spare, at the next moment it vanished completely without warning.

There was a shadow of a person kneeling on one knee after the light vanished. It went without saying that it was Hajime.

Hajime looked around with a dangerous gaze.

In that place, similar to the richly colored space where they arrived at right after entering Holy Precincts, there was a chalk white path that stretched straight deeper inside with the pillar where Hajime was standing as the starting point. However, the surrounding wasn't richly colored like the first space, but closed in a darkness that was like an abyss.

The chalk white path that was stretching in a straight line looked extremely visible. At the end of that chalk white path, it was

connected with a stair that led to above.

(This is not a mineral huh…)

Hajime whispered a little in his heart while looking beneath him.

He used transmutation's derivative skill 'Mineral Appraisal' to investigate the chalk white path and didn't receive any reaction back. He also used his sensing skills at the surrounding darkness but there was no reaction.

(Well, there was only one path. There is no meaning in sparing some thought for the unknown or trap after this far.)

Hajime began to walk calmly in the quiet space that was too silent.

In the first place Hajime had no problem with doing something like erasing the sound of his footstep, but right now he was consciously not erasing his sound. Regardless not only Hajime's footstep, even the sound of his clothes rustling or the sound of his breathing couldn't be heard at all. It was as though the surrounding darkness was thoroughly absorbing all the sounds leaving none behind.

In that world without sound, Hajime stared straight ahead while advancing. He walked while thinking of her beloved who was waiting ahead. Fury toward his enemy and sorrow toward his beloved mixed inside his eyes, those eyes were filled with abyss exactly like the surrounding darkness.

Hajime's legs approached the stair. Looking up from below he could see the top of the stair being enveloped by faint light. Without pause, Hajime unhesitatingly threw his body into the light.

His field of vision was dyed white.

The space where he came out at was white everywhere. Whether above or below, or everything at the surrounding, as far as his eyes could see there was only pure white which made him unable to grasp any sense of distance. Despite the certain sensation that he felt by stepping on the ground, but when his gaze lowered there it became difficult to be aware of the ground's existence there. It felt like he would fall below without any end in sight.

“Welcome, to my domain, of its deepest area.”

A voice called at Hajime who was looking around.

It was a lovely voice that sounded clear. The familiar voice of his beloved sounded pleasant in his ear like a flowing stream.

But, right now he felt something slightly cloudy in it. Surely it was because the will contained inside the voice was rotten the core, Hajime thought. A scowl was slightly appearing on his eyebrows.

At the same time, a veil of faint light shining behind him suddenly vanished. And then, the existence of Hajime who was clad in clothing that had black tone looked like a drop of ink that dripped on a pure white canvas.

Suddenly the space ahead of Hajime’s gaze was swaying.

It was as though the curtain of the stage was raised, the swaying space was cleared and behind it, there was a tiered platform with a height that was nearly ten meters. And then, there was a young beautiful woman sitting on the throne installed at its peak.

Wavy hair of radiant golden threads, white and smooth exposed shoulders, voluminous twin hills peeking out from the largely opened chest part, long and slender beautiful leg stretching out from the slit of the dress. Despite being slender on the whole, the woman also strangely looked sensually fleshy. Her legs were crossed, and she was resting her chin on her hand at the throne with a faint smile on her lips, that appearance looked like the personification of the word ‘bewitching’.

If an average man saw her, no, all human without any sex distinction would have their reasoning sent flying just by a fleeting glance sent by this woman, there was no doubt that they would then prostrate themselves before her with a tremendous emotion that was similar with faith. An overwhelming beauty to the degree that would make anyone unconditionally felt that was right there.

But, Hajime’s face was still expressionless, he was staring straight at that beautiful woman——who for some reason had the appearance

of adult Yue, he was only staring fixedly without any particular emotion that could be seen on his face.

Surely that was because in contrast with the beauty of that appearance, ‘repulsiveness’ and ‘ugliness’ could be felt from those eyes and smile that seemed to expose what were inside.

Whether the person himself was aware or not of that was unclear… Yue’s body, Ehitorujue that took over that body was grinning broadly while his mouth was opening once more.

“What do you think? While I was seizing this body I was also trying to make it grow while I was at it. I can brag that the result is quite something I think? Hm?”

Ehitorujue said such thing with a tone that obviously sounded like he was enjoying this, to that Hajime was intentionally sighing deeply and shrugged lightly.

“It would be perfect, if only the filthiness inside not oozing out like this. Your score is minus a hundred. Everything is wasted just by you being the one inside there. This has already gone far past ugly. If you don’t notice it yourself then how about I lend you a mirror?”

“Fufufu, what impudent talk. But, I understand you know? In your heart you are not as calm as your appearance. Your blood is boiling that your beloved lover is played around freely with like this right?”

“Isn’t that obvious. What are you doing acting all wise like that? A warning from me. It’s better for you to not open your mouth too much. After all the more you speak the more your lowliness get exposed.”

It was a well executed poisonous tongue. During that exchange, Hajime’s expression was still expressionless without change. That indifferent tone eloquently indicated that what he said wasn’t sarcasm or anything but something that came from the bottom of his heart, which caused Ehitorujue’s eyes to twitch in reaction.

And then, with a smiling face that was obviously a mask no matter

who saw it he opened his mouth softly.

“I command in the name of Ehitorujue——’prostrate’.”

The Divine Statement was spoken with extremely natural tone——it was the manifestation of god’s will that made anyone obeyed without question. Once this ‘foul play’ caused Hajime to struggle on the ground desperately, and now hearing this once more Hajime staggered in place…

DOPAN-!!

“____”

And he responded with a shot.

The bullet was blocked by a barrier in front of Ehitorujue, a ripple was spreading in the air.

“…Divine Statement has no effect at all?”

“Just how many times you had used that in front of me huh. You think a petty magic trick like that will keep working forever?”

“…”

Ehitorujue’s eyes narrowed toward Hajime who was pointing Donner’s muzzle straight at him. But, his composure didn’t crumble by any means, instead he held out his hand that wasn’t supporting his cheek in an inviting gesture.

Immediately at the areas around Donner & Shuragen, ‘Treasure Warehouse II’, all the artifacts that Hajime carried, the spaces were warping like jelly. But the spaces immediately returned to their original shape with a snapping sound as though there was something that got repelled away.

“…I see. So you came here with countermeasures prepared.”

“Rather, you thinking that I will come without doing that is the crazy one.”

“Don’t get cocky, irregular young boy. You really showed much arrogance just by defending against Divine Statement and Heaven Existence.”

“It doesn’t matter how you are looking at me, shitty bastard. I’ll say it one more time, the words that I told you at that time.”

“…”

With a click, Hajime fixed Donner’s aim at the heart of Ehitorujue while declaring clearly and loudly.

“——I’m taking back Yue. I’ll kill you. It will be the end with that.”

The white space didn’t absorb the sound. Rather it made the words echoed powerfully with dignity.

The expression of Ehitorujue that was bombarded with those words warped evilly, showing how he would enjoy trampling on that determination, during that his crossed leg went down and he lifted his resting cheek, before he suddenly stood up. And then, while glaring down from above with the throne behind him, an immense pressure began to leak out. Platinum magic power was painting over the white space.

“Very well. This will be the last entertainment in this world. Let’s play for a little bit then.”

Ehitorujue’s body was gently floating up.

He lightly spread his hands while his abundant golden hair was undulating, the sleeve of his black dress flapped.

At the same time, the platinum magic power light converged rapidly with Ehitorujue at the center and it formed a shape on his back.

What appeared on Ehitorujue’s back while shining brilliantly was three layers of ring halo. The size of those halos, with the floating Ehitorujue as the center the first halo had a diameter of around two meters while the third halo had a diameter of more than ten meters.

Countless light spheres were slowly being created from those halos. The number of those spheres really should be expressed as the number of the stars in the sky. But, in contrast with their splendor, the pressure emitted by those spheres was absurd. Every single one was obviously hiding a power that could easily destroy a human and could possibly change even the geography.

The figure of Ehitorujue with gigantic halos behind him, served by countless stars, and clad in platinum light, would make anyone comprehended, truly if anyone who didn't know of the ugliness inside saw him then he was indeed emitting divinity that was worthy to be revered as 'god'.

In respond Hajime was,

"No holding back. ——I'm going all out."

Resplendent crimson light burst up. A whirlwind of magic power that spiraled wildly flapped Hajime's black coat and wrapped his body in crimson color. Even in front of Ehitorujue's power, his one eye didn't show any sign of faltering, unnoticed it was shining with clear crimson like red spinel.

It was Limit Break's last derivative skill 'Supreme Break'. At this moment, Hajime's specs swelled up five times over in one go. Then he activated Sky Step's last derivative skill 'Light Speed' which reinforced his perception ability to a different magnitude.

At the same time, countless crosses were lining up midair behind Hajime. On the black fuselages that should be called as a color of darkness, a red pattern was carved, the total number of those crosses was seven hundred.

——New type versatile offensive drone　Cross Velt

While being two sizes more compact than the crossbit until now, it was clad with sinister crimson light that made one felt a lump of ice sliding down their spine. Perhaps that spectacle should be called as the grave markers of the enemies slaughtered by the demon king.

'You too will be added to this funeral procession', the current

Hajime who was wordlessly asserting that was emitting unprecedented rage and killing intent while being silent, he was emitting might that was truly worthy for a person who was trying to achieve godslaying.

Dazzling platinum halos and countless twinkling stars.

Violently wild crimson storm and dark funeral crosses.

The two sides resented and bemoaned each other while the space between them creaked, where they were about to swallow at each other.

Ehitorujue pushed out one of his hands with an elegance that looked as though it had been calculated thoroughly until his fingertips.

“Now, this is the beginning of the game. First——dance for me!”

Right after that, a lot of light stars rushed toward Hajime. And it wasn’t something that simple, the great number of platinum lights from the halos behind Ehitorujue were flying out with a motion that was depicting geometrical pattern. The meteor shower of light would even make anyone watching to feel a certain kind of artistic quality from it. There were lights in a spherical shape, then there were also lights that drawn a curve like a blade, and also lights that were approaching while rotating like a boomerang.

“A dance invitation from you son of a bitch, I refuse. ——Full burst!”

Hajime snorted at Ehito’s invitation and gave his order.

At the next moment, all the crosses pointed forward simultaneously and the seven hundred Cross Velt fired all at once. All of the bullets fired were electromagnetically accelerated, furthermore all of the bullet heads were a special bullet that released multi-stage shockwave concentrated to a single point——Burst Bullet.

The platinum meteor shower and the crimson bullets filled the space to the brim. That scene was just like a war in middle age, where both armies were yelling war cry just before they clashed.

Those two armies that were even more atrocious than death god clashed and destroyed at each other right in the middle between their commanders. Thunderous roars and violent impacts, and flashes were surging out to the degree that one could be deluded to think that it was the birth of a star.

A great number of meteors were flying off, bullets clad in crimson were extinguished. The meteors and barrage of bullets were struggling for supremacy with their destructive power.

“Hou, so you can endure this. Then how about the next move. Don’t you die so easily okay?”

Ehitorujue made a smile that displayed his joy, and then he waved his arm elegantly once. Then the brilliant radiance of the halos behind him intensified, right after that *zuzuzu* lights in humanoid form manifested. The silhouettes of person that were formed from light itself were also carrying two large swords made from light in their hand, giving them resemblance with the apostle.

“Their ability is at the same level with the apostle. However, amidst the illuminating attack of these halos, can you also deal with these attacking apostles of light that are moving independently in the end?”

Even while he was saying such thing, the apostles of light were created in large number. With Ehitorujue at the center and the halos behind him, the number of the apostles of light had already easily surpassed a hundred.

But, in front of such view that could be said as despairing, Hajime only snorted “hmph”. And then, he spoke. The soul of language to summon his own army.

“Battle of resource is the domain of transmutation master. You are still using these old puppet dolls even at this stage, aren’t you too behind the time? ——Come, ‘Grim Reaper’.”

Crimson magic power overflowed from the ‘Treasure Warehouse II’. The magic power that swelled up together with an intense flash scattered everywhere like explosion wave, although only

temporarily but the space that was full of platinum light was dyed with crimson. Like that, a beat later the flash settled and then,

“This is…a golem army, is it?”

Ahead of the murmuring Ehitorujue’s gaze, a great number of monster swarm clad in crimson light could be seen. However, their body was formed from mineral that looked even harder than steel, behind their sharp fangs there was gun muzzle, while doors or missiles were attached on their back or stomach, their claws were vibrating in super speed where everything that they touched would be torn apart, the body of the golems were overflowing with bizarreness.

——Hajime’s exclusive one man army　Grim Reapers

Wolf shape, great eagle shape, spider shape, large turtle shape, large monkey shape, there was an abundant variation of the golems, it was an army of living golem. Their numbers easily surpassed a hundred, furthermore they were fully loaded with hybrid weapons inside their body. These were the massacring army of the demon king who knew no pain and no fatigue.

Ehitorujue whose corners of the lips were lifted up and Hajime whose eyes narrowed in absolute zero let their command resounded at the same time.

“Apostles of light, exterminate the unsightly monsters!”

“Death gods, tear apart the useless puppets.”

Right after that, the light apostles flew out while shooting light beams, the metallic monsters roared while charging forward. The light apostles who were moving in high speed that trailed afterimages behind were surprisingly followed by the mechanical wolves who rushed through the air with rippling wave in their wake and afterimages similarly trailing behind. And then, the wolves deployed a small type gatling gun from their back and also firing a cannon from their widely opened mouth.

The large eagles that ignited their thrusters and climbed up in one

go were trampling the battlefield by scattering cluster bombs like heavy rain from high above. The large turtles were letting loose large amount of missiles from their back, transforming into fixed batteries. The light apostles who approached near to aim at the turtles were blocked by the large monkeys who were forming a wall with the large shield they carried, and then the spiders charged through the gaps and carved apart the shell of the apostles using the sonic wave they generated.

Naturally there were also grim reapers that were done in by the light apostles, but each time a grim reaper got lethally damaged they would self-explode that swallowed the surrounding, even at a minimum they would bring their killer to accompany them in death.

“To rival my magic with amount of resources…it is really something unthinkable for a human. However, if it is said in reverse, even the specialty of the irregular can only rival me at bes——”

“Don’t yap, you worthless god.”

Hajime fired off Donner & Schlag, cutting off Ehitorujue who was speaking ridiculingly. There were two sounds of gunshot. But the flashes that cut through the air were six streaks.

Inside the clashing fierce storm of destruction, those bullets slipped through swimmingly and sniped the caster Ehitorujue.

GIIIIIII-

With such hard sound resounding the bullets were halted before the eyes of Ehitorujue. The positions of the stopped bullets were before his head, heart, and his four limbs. While those shots were a sniping that was like threading through the eye of a needle, but not even a single shot shifted for even a millimeter from their target. It was a special move that fired bullets through a space overflowing to the brim with shockwave and barrage without any deviation at all.

The first bullets emitted shockwaves consecutively within an instant to a pinpoint spot. They were burst bullet. The shockwaves that

were directed to a pinpoint spot made a fatal crack on Ehitorujue's barrier just with one shot. And then, the second burst bullets right behind those first bullets that were fired with the same trajectory pushed in as though pile-driving the first shots and pulverized the barrier right away.

PAAAAAAN Faster than the resounding sound of pulverization, the magic bullets of simultaneous attacks on six vital spots approached to pierce Ehitorujue.

Ehitorujue quietly lifted his hand toward that. Even if he did something like that, the electromagnetically accelerated bullets should be unstoppable. It was obvious that a bullet would easily bite a hole into that palm and bore into the heart behind it, was how it seemed to be but…

"So you broke my barrier. Furthermore your personality that unhesitatingly aimed at your lover's heart even though she possesses automatic regeneration…you are making me enjoying this, irregular."

The palm and chest of Ehitorujue who was saying such thing with the corner of his lips raised didn't seem to receive any kind of damage.

The cause of that was surely the small whirling black sphere generated ahead of that palm. Most likely it was gravity magic 'Severance Catastrophe'. It swallowed the bullet and then crushed it with its super gravity.

His delicate control that could do such thing, also his reaction speed that could sense electromagnetically accelerated bullet and stopped it, were absurd as expected. It was unclear whether it was because he planned to play around or perhaps because of his dignity as a god that considered being touched was a disrespect to him that he didn't rely on the automatic regeneration.

Even during this few moment of offense and defense, there was a meteor shower that slipped through the barrage of Cross Velt and reached Hajime. The light stars the size of a fist rushed at Hajime.

Hajime was in front of the swarm of lights that completely filled his field of vision, however, his expression showed no unease at all.

“——fuu”

He shortly breathed out.

At the next moment, the swarm of light bullets passed through Hajime’s body. While small strange sounds of *jijiji-* were resounding, the bullets of certain death meaninglessly passed through Hajime as though they were attacking an illusion of him.

“Hou, that’s splendid.”

Ehitorujue spontaneously leaked out words of praise.

What was the cause that made the light stars slipped through which made the enemy spontaneously praised in admiration? The cause was nothing special. Hajime was merely evading the lights in high speed with the necessary minimum movement. That was all. The sounds of *jijiji-* were the sound of the light bullets grazing Hajime’s clothing. That was just how barely he was evading the lights, by seeing the attacks through until the millimeter degree.

For ordinary person, Hajime looked like he was not moving, but with Ehitorujue’s perception, the reflected spectacle was as though Hajime’s body was making many layers of shadow clones blurring in the same spot to return to their original position.

“Well then, how about this?”

Ehitorujue waved his hand relaxedly.

Immediately several stretching lights that were moving with an irregular motion like twisting snake were fired from the halos. It didn’t stop there, huge light bullets with diameter around two meters were spewed out in large amount like soap bubbles toward Hajime.

“Chih”

Hajime clicked his tongue.

Hajime used ‘Ground Shrinker’ and ‘Air Force’ tp leap away from his spot. The light whips powerfully struck the place where Hajime was standing just an instant before while the light bubbles were flying off all over the place leaving not a single gap in space.

Cross Velts were flying in all directions and the Grim Reapers were commanded to aim at Ehitorujue from all angles. However, just by a single wave of a hand, Ehitorujue pulverized every machine that got close to him.

“…”

Hajime’s eyes were narrowing from seeing that scene while he made his ‘Treasure Warehouse II’ shined.

Right after that, a huge weapon was gripped in his hand. From a glance, it was the gatling railgun ‘Metsurai’ with six rotating barrels. However, its size was completely different. It was enlarged by two sizes bigger. Furthermore, looking closer all the six barrels, each of them consisted of also six barrels.

——Super large electromagnetic acceleration gatling cannon Metsurai Disaster

It was a gatling cannon with 6×6 rotating barrels where each barrel had the same size with the barrel of the original Metsurai. It fired off seventy-two thousand round per minute, this weapon went even beyond being evaluated as a monster, an outrageous weapon where the idea of creating it could even be called as stupid.

Hajime pulled the trigger of such outrageous weapon.

VOO–!!

Such strange sound like the air itself was rupturing was resounding. Metsurai Disaster that instantly generated a squall of cartridges, pulverized everything in its line of fire——the meteor shower, the light bubbles, and even the light apostles just like scrap papers before approaching Ehitorujue.

The approaching attack was already like a muddy stream of crimson light, a storm of destruction in the same meaning of natural disaster

that swallowed everything in its path.

“That’s something dreadful. But, what meaning it has if it doesn’t hit? ——’Great Vortex of White End’.”

Ahead of Ehitorujue’s two hands that he stretched forward, there was platinum light whirling. That sparkling vortex looked just like a silver river.

Right after that, the crimson muddy stream of magic bullets that broke through the likes of common obstacle like they were nothing, was split into two in front of Ehitorujue as though a single stroke had bisected it, and then the attack was swallowed by two silver rivers at two sides. Naturally not even a single magic bullet reached Ehitorujue.

“…So even this doesn’t reach. Good grief.”

A meteor shower rushed from the back at Hajime who was swearing reflexively. Perhaps they were even teleported that the many light stars had circled behind Hajime without him realizing, they approached to swallow him whole.

Sometimes with a movement that didn’t even leave afterimage, sometimes with a swaying motion like fluttering wind, Hajime was evading while using Donner and Metsurai Disaster, added with Cross Velts he detected the gaps of the meteor shower and fired crimson flashes toward Ehitorujue. The mechanical monsters that were unfolding a fierce battle with the light apostles were also launching an attack at Ehitorujue if they found an opening.

The platinum lights that beautifully dance boisterously in the white space and the rushing crimson lights that weaved in between displayed a view that should be called as superb which would surely steal the heart of the viewer watching from the side.

Amidst that view, without relaxing his offense and defense at all while handling Hajime’s shots and the Grim Reapers’ attacks, Ehitorujue was showing a composed smile and talked to Hajime.

“Come to think of it, irregular. How did you finish off Aruvheit? He

too was more or less my retainer that possessed divinity. Even if it was you, I don't think that he would be killed that easily."

The revolving light stars took a great detour while aiming at Hajime from all directions, Hajime was intercepting them with his Donner spinning like a wheel while he snorted and responded at Ehitorujue.

"Hah, that snob is a god you say? Don't make me laugh. He easily died while begging for his life unsightly. Even the monster in labyrinths has more guts than something like that."

"Hou, easily you say."

Light bubbles buried the space to the brim. Hajime stored in his Metsurai Disaster and in exchange he took out 'Agni-Orkan' and launched missile swarm to the front.

Terrific thunderous roars and flame blasts rose and a hole was created on the light bubbles cage.

Hajime instantly rushed through and he aligned the aim of Agni-Orkan at Ehitorujue and pulled the triggers.

But, at that moment Ehitorujue snapped his finger. At the same time suddenly thunders rained down from empty space. Those thunders that were focused and compressed to the limit already became spears made from lightning. If it had to be named, then it would be the lightning spear fired from god——the 'Lightning Divine Spear'.

"tsk"

Without even any time to react using his perception skill, the sparking platinum spears that flew in lightning speed from Hajime's blind spot within a few meter easily pierced Agni-Orkan. Just with that, the frame of the artifacts warped, in addition, the combustion powder packed inside the missiles caught fire which caused a great explosion.

Although Hajime had immediately thrown away Agni-Orkan and withdrew from that spot, the missiles that boasted tremendous might even by their lonesome were exploding all at once from

really close range, in addition the lightning divine spears were also rupturing which scattered its compressed lightning to all direction, Hajime was unable to avoid getting damage. The blasts and thunders penetrated through his 'Vajra' and his clothing which was tougher than it looked because it was made from tough metal and monster hide, which clearly told just how terrible the radiated force was.

"Guu…(lightning speed attack from random coordinate that is instantly invoked…as expected, this guy is still holding many hands yet)"

Hajime was whispering in his heart while groaning unintentionally, Ehitorujue who glanced at such Hajime continued his talk as though nothing had happened.

"Nothing you could hide from me. I know already. You invoked a concept magic right? The situation at that time could be said as extreme for you. Although not even in my dream I could imagine you would produce a concept so powerful that could even possibly defeat Aruvheit, that was unexpected even for me…"

"…"

Hajime who lost Agni-Orkan displayed a look that pondered something for an instant, then he scattered explosion hand grenade at the surrounding which blown away the light bubbles while he took out Metsurai Disaster once more. Like that he held back Ehitorujue while he controlled Cross Velts and placed one of them above Ehitorujue's head.

"Perhaps, you have even created a concept of 'godslaying'? And then, you was hiding that trump card close to your chest, and holding the hope that you can do something with that you came until this far. Fufufu, how cute."

Ehitorujue didn't even glance at the Cross Velt above him, far from that he didn't even close his mouth while swiping his hand overhead.

Just with that the Cross Velt that was going to shoot was cut with

an invisible blade and exploded. The loaded bullets scattered around lethally like a frag grenade, but even those were repelled at the space before Ehitorujue and didn't reach him.

Hajime saw that happened, but he didn't even click his tongue, he closely observed the state of Ehitorujue who was talking while basking in joy and he quietly narrowed his eyes. Ehito who didn't even pay any attention to such Hajime then licked his lips smoothly.

"By using that, it's possible to separate the soul of me and the vampire princess, and kill only me, that's what you are thinking correct?"

"…So you find out. Well, I also don't have any mood to lie. *My trump card* is powerful you know? That calm expression of yours is going to warp into terror and regret soon."

"Fuhah, so you still believe that the soul of this woman is safe. That figure of yours howling while clinging to a nonexistent illusion, is truly, comical to the extreme."

Saying that, Ehito snapped his fingers once more.

Right after that, Hajime's movement came to a sudden stop with his body pitched forward.

"____"

The cause was obvious. The Metsurai Disaster that Hajime held was caught in a distorted space. That space distortion was in a square block shape that tightly pressed together. Metsurai was fixed at the center of that.

Almost at the same time, a spear of thunder came flying once more from an empty space without any advance sign.

"Shit-"

While swearing abuse reflexively, Hajime tried to release Metsurai Disaster by storing it into 'Treasure Warehouse II'. However, as though that action had been foreseen, Ehitorujue whispered

“——’Manifestation of Perceived Nightmare’.”

Hajime’s neck flew off. His four limbs were plucked off, and his heart was gouged.

“KAAAH!!”

A loud yell of fighting spirit surged.

The source of the yell was from Hajime who was thought to be dead. The scene just now was the illusion that was prepared by Ehitorujue. The illusion was so real that if the victim wasn’t careful they might die for real just from that. Hajime exploded the magic power in his body and used the momentum to invigorate himself and blew away the illusion.

But, it didn’t change that his consciousness was stolen for an instant. The compensation for that opening was his Metsurai Disaster.

The divine lightning spear stabbed. Metsurai Disaster met the same end like Agni-Orkan.

——Strong

Hajime honestly appraised his enemy.

Deployment of technique, the scale of invocation, power, every single aspect was easily surpassing Yue of before. There was also no sign of his magic power running out. The great number of meteor shower fired from his halos might be moving almost automatically, there was no sign at all that Ehito was having trouble in controlling them, the light apostles were also created without end, and even with all that he was still rapidly invoking age of god class magic that was extremely powerful.

If it was anyone else than Hajime fighting here then they would instantly be killed inevitably.

As though to further cornering Hajime who had completely lost two of his prided artifacts, Ehitorujue opened his mouth exultantly.

“It echoed quiet lusciously.”

“Aa?”

“The vampire princess——Yue is it? The scream of your woman, it was really meltingly sweet.”

“…”

Hajime’s expression fell out.

“With the ownership of her body stolen, she who had become only a soul resisted admirably. But, the more she resisted the more intense the pain running through her. …Ku-ku-ku-, it was visible for me, the figure of the vampire princess enduring desperately with clenched teeth inside this body. But even that didn’t continue forever, she couldn’t endure and screamed. And then, she felt terror feeling her soul vanishing from the edge, while trembling…her last words were, […Hajime, I’m sorry]. Fufufu.”

“…”

“After that she disappeared. Everything happened while she was tasting terror and despair. Do you understand, irregular? The hope that you came chasing doesn’t exist right from the beginning-! Fuhah, fuhahahahaha-“

Ehitorujue raised a loud laughter. Indeed, Hajime’s magic eye couldn’t see Yue’s soul, he could only perceive a silver soul taking root inside melding everywhere. It was as though that view was displaying the truth of Ehitorujue’s words…

Hajime wordlessly threw several hand grenades to the air. He shot them all using Donner. At that moment, the light stars around the hand grenades dropped on the ground altogether.

What Hajime used was gravity grenade——it had a special effect that created super gravitational area when it was activated. With that effect, the surrounding light bullets were felled.

Hajime’s hand was holding Schlagen AA. It completed its charging in a moment and the eighty-eight millimeter sniping cannon(Acht

Acht) specialized in penetration roared.

The fired crimson flash charged straight through the barrage zone that was thinned by the gravity grenades just like going through a no man's land.

Ehitorujue lifted his hand. Barriers were visibly layered by two, three layers before him.

The fang of Schlagen AA blasted the first layer of barrier, bit a hole in the second barrier after a moment of opposition, and smashed even the third layer of the barrier and assaulted Ehitorujue. But, the three layers divine barrier had obviously decreased the strength of the shot, in that state naturally it was unable to ignore the effect of the two white vortexes staying at both sides of Ehito. The eighty-eight millimeter shell had its trajectory vainly twisted and got swallowed into the vortex of compression.

"I am a god. As long as I have automatic regeneration than you attack won't even make me feel itchy but…know that even touching me is an insolence."

And then, even while saying such thing Ehito waved his hand in a complicated gesture with a wide grin as though saying that this was payback.

"____"

Right after that, the space all around Hajime including above and below burst open. What was produced from that was a tremendous impact. It was a space rupture that was even more detailed and powerful than the 'Quaking Sky of Four Directions' casted in the devil king castle. Furthermore, from behind Hajime, perhaps even using teleportation, a lot of light stars were already there unnoticed moving toward Hajime.

This too was also an overwhelming attack where there was no time to react and no place to escape. Hajime took out his variable great shield 'Aidion' to face this. The spherical shield instantly operated its gimmick and deployed to cover Hajime.

Thunderous roar.

The impact of space rupture from all directions blown away the first layer of ‘Aidion’ into pieces with one attack. The fierce impact was transmitted through ‘Aidion’ that caused Hajime’s left hand which was supporting it below to scream.

Storm of pursuing attack came right there. Light stars in immense number attacked one after another, not giving any time for the shield to restore itself. ‘Aidion’ which was swallowed by the storm of light looked shining just like a star.

Even so, its hardness that didn’t allow penetration should be called as an impregnable fortress.

But, even that defensive power was nothing more than an interesting side show for Ehitorujue, he suddenly lifted his hand and created a bluish white flame on his palm. And then, he blew it off gently to fly toward the shield.

The blue flame soared softly without any sound, it then impacted ‘Aidion’ that was still receiving concentrated fire——like that the protective wall was easily penetrated.

Right after that,

“GAAAAAAAAAA-!?”

A scream resounded.

The gimmick of ‘Aidion’ was released and from inside Hajime who was wrapped in flame leaped out.

Teleported meteor shower approached him in no time at all, the Grim Reapers defended Hajime as the substitute of their master which resulted in a rain of scrapped steel raining down. At the same time, Cross Velts were also called closer from the surrounding to lay out barrier, but they too were pierced by lightning divine spears by the dozens and exploded to all direction. While clenching his teeth to the sacrifices around him, Hajime broke through the encirclement and compressed his crimson magic power with an expression that warped in pain. At the next moment, he converted

the compressed magic power into impact and just barely blew away the blue flame and the rushing light stars.

At the same time, ‘Aidion that was left behind’ had its iron wall broken and light stars rushed inside from the opening, it then received attacks from inside and outside and got pulverized into pieces.

“Haahahahahah, what happened with your big talk from before? You have turned into a really shabby appearance right now.”

Ehitorujue laughed in amusement.

Ahead of his gaze, there was the figure of Hajime breathing roughly with burn injuries here and there every single part of his clothing damaged by fire. It also appeared that he had converted a considerable amount of his magic power into impact to blow away the blue flame and light stars, so his magic power had decreased considerably. ‘All Element Resistance’ and ‘Vajra’ were reduced to mere consolation as protection in front of the attacks’ might, Hajime couldn’t help but shudder from that.

“Haa haa, just now was…Yue’s…”

“No, it was mine. It seemed the vampire princess could use it, but from the beginning this magic was something that I used. It penetrates every obstacle and destroys only its target. It’s called ‘Divine Flame’. How is it? It has quite a good flavor isn’t it?”

“…”

Hajime didn’t reply. Rather than that he was pouring his mind to convert his magic power into healing power to heal his damage even just for a little. If possible he wanted to drink healing medicine but, whether Ehitorujue would allow that or not, was unclear in the end…he couldn’t show an opening after receiving a fierce attack.

If Shia and others were here, they would undoubtedly stiffen from shock seeing Hajime being cornered this overwhelmingly. In actuality, even Hajime himself couldn’t help but smile bitterly

inside from witnessing the true power of Ehitorujue who had completely seized Yue's body.

But, naturally Hajime didn't let that show in his expression, in exchange he struck Ehitorujue with a gaze of defiance and persistence.

"Hmm, even when I told you that your beloved woman was already gone, you still don't show any sign of breaking…"

"Obviously. Just why do I have to believe your words? If you like bullshit then just talk to yourself until you are satisfied."

Ehitorujue smiled wryly from the way Hajime talked. It was as though he was waiting for Hajime's recovery, he relaxed his attack and talked.

"Your existence is truly irregular. Because of Freed's appearance, the balance of the game was almost broken, so in order to make it more enjoyable I brought in people with power from another world yet…you become a strong person that not even my favorite could bare his fang to."

"…Why, did you do something like summoning limited at just this time?"

A war game of human versus devil. The nasty game that Ehitorujue held. His words about Freed breaking the balance made Hajime slightly scowled. It was slightly surprising that Freed's labyrinth conquering was something irregular outside of god's will.

And then, about great labyrinth's conquering, Yue's uncle Denreed also did the same thing three hundred years ago. However, from what Hajime learned from historical fact, at that time there was no record of hero summoning being performed and he also didn't hear any story about anything like that.

Why it was only at this time, such question was only something natural to be thought of by a person who got dragged into it. Though Hajime going along with Ehitorujue's story also had the purpose of merely buying time to recover.

“Different from in the past, there was no capable person in this present era that was capable of opposing Freed you see. Never I imagined that other than the vampire princess, even the dragon race is also still surviving. Both of them were hidden skillfully. …If there is no good pawn in this world then nothing could be done except by providing it from another world.”

“…Another world, huh.”

“Correct. Although the connection to your world is completely a coincidence. It was a result that coincides with me searching for a person with high affinity that could possibly become my vessel. Even for a god body, crossing the boundary of the world is not something easy. To say nothing of a soul without a vessel, even directly interfering with outside Holy Precincts is difficult. As the result, I somehow succeeded dragging down someone from above world but…including an irregular like you, there were also a lot of extras coming along here.”

According to Ehitorujue’s story, Kouki was similar with Yue, he was chosen based on his possibility to become a vessel. Most likely Ehitorujue was using a magic like the compass of guidance to search. But, Ehitorujue who had no vessel that was a flesh body could only wield his power completely within Holy Precincts, furthermore it seemed that his power was repressed in the earth because that world had superior rank so his effort didn’t go well.

The result of that was the summoning of all the classmates. In other words, everyone else other than Kouki only seemed to get ‘dragged in’ unintentionally by god. There was no story more annoying than this.

“Although, thanks to that the best vessel that I thought had been lost three hundred years ago was discovered, that’s why this could be said as a windfall. Fufu, with this I can exhibit my power in full even outside the Holy Precincts. Crossing over to another world is also easy.”

Most likely even the body of an apostle was insufficient as god’s body because it would lower his divinity. If that wasn’t the case then he would not be this delighted from managing to obtain a

vessel.

Ehitorujue opened and closed his hand basking in joy. Hajime then asked something that he had actually wondered about all this time.

“Ehitorujue…what are you?”

“What a really abstract question that is, irregular. But, no matter what is said, naturally the answer has been decided. I am the god that created and ruled over everything.”

Ehitorujue introduced himself as the transcendental creator god and also the ruling god.

But, Hajime snorted to that.

“No, you or no god or anything. You didn’t create this world, you are also not ruling over everything. You are not a supernatural existence that mankind imagined You are merely an existence that is possessing power mightier than mankind.”

“…Hou. With what kind of basis you are saying such thing?”

Perhaps he got his interest attracted from that, Ehitorujue then asked Hajime back.

“Isn’t that simple? Your perception cannot detect Yue who was at the bottom of the abyss, and also the dragon race who hid outside this continent. Your strength only reaches this continent, even then it’s only at the scale that doesn’t reach the abyss. Power at that level is just too tiny for the creator right?”

“Ku-ku-ku-, to call someone like me as tiny. And? If I am not a god then what am I?”

Hajime thrust his answer with an expression that vaguely looked like he was chewing a bitter bug.

“…You are a ‘human of another world’ the same like us.”

“Hmm. Because I am not a god but I possess a mighty power, then I must be a human from outside world the same like you all…that’s

your reasoning."

"Not only that. In the first place it was already strange by the point of time that you know about the concept of 'outside world'. 'Because there is none in this world then search for a capable person from other world'…such idea won't come out unless you know about the existence of another world right from the start. Even in our world that is overflowing with fantasy entertainment that concept is only a wild idea. If you are an existence in the level that is able to create the world then I can accept that, but just like I said just now, you are not an all-knowing and almighty supernatural existence, based on that it's only natural to think that you know about the existence of another world by the same reason like us."

Hearing those words, Ehitorujue went "hmm" and nodded once, then he began to clap dramatically.

"Splendid, perhaps that's what I should say. Indeed I am a human from another world. *Originally*, I only reached the height of magic. Although, through the passing many months and years the gathered faith granted my divinity that sublimated my soul, through that there is no doubt that I am a god."

And then, he suddenly lifted his hand. Right after that, thunder boomed in empty air, blue flame exploded, strong wind stormed, the air froze, white smoke whirled.

For Hajime, those were a sight he was used to. However, the dimension of the power focused there far surpassed what he had seen in the past.

Five heavenly dragons were created. They were the magnificent incarnations of atrocious tyranny that Yue created from the fusion of gravity magic and the highest class elemental magic. Those heavenly dragons were fiercely glaring at Hajime with *dark red eyeballs*.

The presence of these heavenly dragons was clearly different with Yue's heavenly dragons. Hajime's magic eye detected materials other than the core of the heavenly dragon that was formed from

magic. That pulsing dark red ore was clearly magic stone.

It appeared metamorphosis magic was used on the heavenly dragons which transformed them into a monster. Perhaps the material to form them was gathered by using space magic. Not only monster, there was also the presence of apostle from the dragons. Hajime was thoroughly knowledgeable of how troublesome these heavenly dragons were, now these dragons were added with the function where they could move independently separated from the caster's control to attack the prey, these caused Hajime to sweat coldly in his heart.

(I cannot overwhelm him in resource battle, now on top of that, there is also these troublesome newcomers in addition…well, I already imagined that this won't be easy. If I resolved myself, I can do this.)

Ahead of the gaze of Hajime who was talking to himself in his heart, the five heavenly dragons were coiling in the air with Ehitorujue at the center.

That figure of the adult Yue obeyed by the magnificent dragons was exactly like a goddess in a legend. No, any goddess from any mythology would surely be overshadowed in front of the current Yue who was obeyed by the heavenly dragons with halos behind her. There was no doubt that even the goddess of beauty Aphrodite would flee barefooted in front of her.

The person inside that body which made that divine beauty to be spoiled opened his mouth with a repulsive grin.

"Now then, irregular. You have recovered a little haven't you? We have to begin the game once more any time now. During that time, let's reminisce a bit about the past. You are going to struggle as long as you can right? It has been really a long time since I talk about myself. Entertain me-"

At the next moment, the five heavenly dragons simultaneously roared, violent killing intent and pressured weighed down on Hajime. At the same time, the meteor shower from the halos also resumed coming. The white space was filled to the brim with the

heavenly dragons turned monster and the torrent of lights.

Arifureta Chapter 175

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/176/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Bakapervert did the edits.

The Specialty of Common Job

The roars of the five heavenly dragons shook the air.

The heavenly dragons that were turned into a monster while being half magic body left the control of the caster and aimed at the prey independently. The emitted pressure far surpassed the heavenly dragon that Yue often used before. The five elements magic that formed those bodies were also evolved where now they possessed a worthy wickedness that was clear to see.

“My former world was a world where magic was the foundation. I’m not boasting, but I remember that the development there was remarkable. There was abundant variety of artifact, people flew freely in the sky, they could get in touch with a far away place, they moved using teleportation, even their lifespan could be prolonged by a few hundred years more using magical treatment. Magic and technology that were based from that made that world abundant.”

pashii! That light sound resounded and the figure of the lightning dragon vanished. No, that large body changed into a streak of lightning and it moved with lightning speed. At the next moment, it appeared beside Hajime.

(Fast…but, if it's only as fast as lightning then-)

The dragon raised a roar of thunder while its opened jaw rapidly pulled everything in the surrounding. Even the light stars were swallowed and extinguished inside there, Hajime who was almost got pulled in similarly like the light stars immediately took out several gravity hand grenades to empty air.

The gravity hand grenades that were easily pulled in exploded with a good timing just when they entered inside the mouth of the lightning dragon and generated super gravitational area.

The lightning dragon that swallowed everything while approaching was flattened by the downward pressure that was suddenly generated and passed through below Hajime who was hovering in midair using 'Air Force'.

"But, what is waiting for the world that is over developed is only their end. Our world too wasn't an exception to that. Something like a war of the end that happened because of exhausted resources, or sense of values, or possibly because of economical problems or different political idea, those weren't the cause. The reason was something more, something that couldn't be helped. Do you know what it was, irregular?"

"ts"

Ehitorujue's questioned, however Hajime couldn't answer. He had no composure to answer.

Because after he staved off the lightning dragon, the azure dragon circled right behind him and pressed hard on him along with an immense amount of heat.

In front of him was the meteor shower. Below was a lightning dragon, at left and right were the storm dragon and ice dragon. If he evaded then he would undoubtedly aim from right behind and forced to bear damage that would be hard to disregard.

Therefore, Hajime took out the variable chakram 'Orestes' to empty air.

A *kashun* sound came out immediately and wire that was divided into three part formed a round shaped gate. The azure dragon charged straight into the gate, right after that the azure dragon flew out from above the ice dragon that approached from the right side. Hajime had applied ‘Presence Isolation’ to one more variable chakram and made it flew there.

The suddenly appearing azure dragon collided with its natural enemy the ice dragon which caused the ice dragon to roar in agony. And then, the ice dragon glared at Orestes which teleported the azure dragon and breathed out ice and snow. With that the Orestes froze instantly as though it was bathed with liquid nitrogen, right after that it was impacted by a light star and was easily smashed.

Regardless of the roar of the ice dragon and the sound of Orestes getting pulverized, Ehitorujue’s voice still reached Hajime’s ear smoothly.

“They arrived at the truth. The magic technology was developed thoroughly until they could interfere with the information of the world itself, to the material, to life, to the star, to time, to the environment. And then, no matter the era researcher is always unable to restrain their curiosity. They fumbled with the technology that interferes with the truth spreading in the world like playing with a toy…and that became the cause that destroyed the world. Our world was killed by the curiosity of the people who handled magic.”

Hajime neutralized the light stars using Cross Velt. Furthermore, he commanded the Grim Reapers to aim at Ehitorujue. Eagle type Grim Reaper scattered cluster bombs above Ehitorujue. However, the squall of explosive was easily pulverized by the meteor shower fired from the halos, resulting in only sparkling particles scattering around. Hajime’s attacks didn’t reach Ehitorujue at all.

Ehitorujue’s expression didn’t even show any annoyance.

“The truth crumbled and the world was rapidly crumbling…the situation at that time was exactly like a picture of pandemonium in hell. There was nothing that could be done at all. Mankind had no other path other than destruction along with the planet. With the

exception of a part of ‘the arrived’.”

Hajime took out all the Orestes that he could control in his attempt to deal with the five heavenly dragons, but Ehitorujue snapped his fingers while talking.

Right after that, several hundred lightning divine spear rained down from the empty air and fried all the Orestes without leaving even dust behind. Furthermore, the lightning that was thoroughly packed inside the spears was released and attacked Hajime from all direction like a spider web. While reinforcing his body with ‘Vajra’, Hajime evacuated hurriedly but he was unable to leave with no damage. His flesh was roasted which harmed his nerve slightly.

There the earth dragon attacked him.

“’The arrived’——these were the people who were able to individually operate the essence of what all of you called as the age of god magic. They, only they were able to discover the method to be saved. That method was the teleportation to another world. Fufu-, isn’t that laughable? After all only the ringleaders who destroyed the world were able to escape from ruin.”

Amidst the reverberation of Ehitorujue’s laugh that was filled with irony, a wire with ores attached at both its ends soared through empty air.

The wire entangled around the approaching stone dragon and lightning dragon midair in many layers. Right after that, a fierce ripple spread from the ores. It was the binding artifact ‘Bola’ that had been strengthened by really far.

Operating together with the ores, the wire part that was also a developed model was fixed directly to the space, so the half magic half physical heavenly dragons were also firmly bounded in place.

The two heavenly dragons roared and rampaged violently to escape from the binding.

Hajime took out Schlagen AA once more and fixed his aim using his magic eye stone and pulled the trigger.

Spark traveled the barrel and Schlagen AA roared, the bullet then flew into the mouth of the lightning dragon and advanced forward without paying any heed to the lightning and destroyed the magic stone of the dragon.

At the same time, six bullets that were shot from Donner along the same trajectory gouged further the hole inside the stone dragon's mouth that was hollowed by the concentrated fire of the Cross Velts. The bullets were instantly petrified and became brittle stone, but even so, the bullets advanced inside the stone dragon and the last bullet shot through the magic stone without getting petrified.

The last bullet was a bullet coated with sealing stone. Hajime only had a bit of it remained because he wasn't frugal in using them for the weapons of Shia and others or his large shield, this bullet coated with sealing stone was something that he needed to think carefully before using.

Hajime splendidly defeated two heavenly dragons, but because of that his feet stopped moving. The compensation for that was large.

"Like that 'the arrived' including me arrived in this world. At that time we were surprised. After all, this world was so primitive that it shouldn't even be compared with our world. Mighty creatures with special power were running rampant, while mankind was hiding in shadow like cave or hole in the ground while living barely scraping by."

Ehitorujue had a distant look in reminiscence while waving his hand.

Immediately Hajime's legs were fixed in a place altogether with the space. Even though he was concentrating on his story but he perfectly grasped the instant Hajime's feet stopped, a compressed space in block shape that was the same like the fixed space which captured Metsurai Disaster completely seized Hajime.

(No good-)

Unease showed in Hajime's expression. He immediately converted his magic power into impact to attempt to break the fixed space.

But, the opponent wasn't that sweet to let such opening escaped.

Storm dragon roared while attacking the unmoving Hajime. Its jaw swallowed Hajime before closing with a snap. The wind blades and pebbles contained inside its body mercilessly assaulted Hajime. The damage went through to Hajime who persisted using 'Vajra'. Blood sprayed everywhere and graphic unpleasant sound *gokibeki-* resounded.

Inside the storm of violence that was equivalent to a torture, Hajime fixed the aim of Schlagen AA along with a yell of fighting spirit and tore the storm dragon from inside its body.

Ehitorujue continued his talk without showing any care that the monster he created was killed.

"In that kind of world, we 'the arrived' decided to cultivate it. We exterminated the monsters that had lived since the ancient times, and granted wisdom to the native people. The small village turned into town before long and then became a city, and then before we realized it had become a country. At that period we had already been revered as gods. We used the secret technique of the truth and converted the religious faith into power, we attempted to reinforce and sublimate our soul was also around that period."

Hajime smashed the storm dragon and blasted out from inside it, his body became soaked in blood which made his appearance looked wretched.

But, the ice dragon roared without even any time to breathe.

Hajime threw all the 'Bola' that he had toward the azure dragon that was approaching from the opposite direction, he also held the dragon back further using Cross Velts, ordered the Grim Reapers for concentrated fire, then he turned toward the ice dragon's opened jaw and aimed Schlagen AA. Instantly Schlagen AA was freezing with dreadful momentum from its tip.

"Coordinate attack huh-"

It appeared the ice dragon was able to directly lower the

temperature at the coordinate it targeted. It was an ability that the ice dragon Yue handled didn't have.

Hajime was already unable to pull the trigger, the freezing kept moving with the momentum that almost froze even his artificial arm. Furthermore, with Ehitorujue's instruction, a meteor shower and light apostles rushed Hajime's left side with good timing.

Although he was able to somehow repel back only the light apostles using the suicide bombing Grim Reapers and Cross Velts, but he was unable to neutralize the whole meteor shower, Hajime received a direct hit on his left arm.

Although the armor of the artificial arm slightly decreased the damage he received, the Schlagen AA that he unintentionally let go because of the impact was sucked into the jaw of the ice dragon. Like that it was obvious how the artifact would end up. The Schlagen AA turn into little pieces at the same time when the pure white freezing ice dragon closed its jaw.

"A few thousand years later after that, this world became greatly developed. But, as though in inverse proportion, one of 'the arrived', and the one more person lost their will to live, regardless of how they had transcended the truth of death they ended their own life. I was unable to understand that but…the last person who stopped prolonging his life said this, 'It's already enough'. In the end, the remaining 'arrived' became only me."

Hajime threw countless grenades at the surrounding and immediately shot them.

Right after that, a flame blast was generated in the air which created a crimson flame wall between Hajime and the ice dragon. For an instant, the sight of the ice dragon was obstructed, but something like that was completely swallowed into its jaw instantly like nothing.

But, after that flame blast cleared up, at the other side was a gigantic weapon——a gatling pile bunker held by Hajime was there.

At the next moment, a crimson spark crackled and two-ton giant

stakes fired with a rate of twenty shot per second were fired and turned into flashes. The barrage of giant stakes that should be called as a crimson wall rushed the ice dragon from the front, coupled with the gravitational pull by the gravity spot in its mouth, the giant stakes stabbed into the dragon's large mouth without any deviation.

The freezing ability of the ice dragon was instantly freezing the giant stakes, but because of their force the giant stakes couldn't be resisted, they advanced unstoppable and gouged in. And then, one of the giant stakes hit the magic stone inside and splendidly succeeding in destroying the dragon. While raising scream of death agony, the ice dragon changed into mere mist and dispersed.

"I became the last one, since then how many months and years had lapsed then…was it a thousand or five thousand years…I don't remember anymore but, day by day I watched the humans came to me lifting up prayer and offering, and then one day, suddenly I thought. ——Let's destroy them."

Hajime directed the cannon turret of the gatling pile bunker toward the azure dragon. The rushing meteor shower and light apostles were all blown away by the Cross Velts and Grim Reapers.

Like that, he turned toward the azure dragon who even now was almost finished burning the many Bolas binding itself and he pulled the trigger——just before he could do that, Hajime suddenly felt a chill and leaped away from that spot.

It appeared that his choice was correct. The place where Hajime was at a moment before was pierced by several dozen lightning divine spears, they spread immense thunders everywhere.

It was just a hair's breadth. While trickling out cold sweat and blood, Hajime sent a sidelong glance at Ehitorujue. Ehitorujue was still looking at empty space with faraway look while talking about his path in the past. And yet, his attacks were still tormenting Hajime accurately with superb timing so there was nothing more irritating than this.

After being toyed around until this far, Hajime confirmed that

Ehitorujue was sensing him accurately and he made a frustrated expression. At the same time, he decided that first, he should slaughter the last remaining azure dragon and so he was moving the gatling pile bunker toward it.

But, as expected it seemed he had let escape the timing for a sure kill.

The azure dragon that was restrained using all of Hajime's bola roared fiercely. At that moment, the crimson ripple was enveloped by blue flame. The lit blue flame traveled along the bola's wire before rushing all over everywhere and the blue flame swallowed everything.

Explosive sound resounded and blue beams of light illuminated the space, amidst that Ehitorujue showed an ecstatic expression. With Yue's beautiful face, that smile emitted an amazing sex appeal,, but for Hajime it only made his blood boiled without end.

"You understand right? Just like how a man wants to defile woman, just like how someone wants to step on fresh snow, beautiful things, those precious things that you desperately piled up, they give off their true beauty when they are broken. The pleasure you obtained from that is something that is really difficult to be substituted by anything. That time when I trampled everything that I had protected the whole time for several thousand years let me tasted unimaginable sweetness. The people screaming, the shriek that asked for help from me…even now, that's the only thing that I remember clearly."

All the bolas were burned to nothing. The azure dragon resumed its advance with blazing rage.

Hajime was going to make the dragon into the prey of the gatling pile bunker right from the front, but then the space all around Hajime shook.

"____"

Omni-directional space blasting.

While holding his breath, Hajime leaped out from the encirclement before the space could generate shockwave.

A severe earthquake.

Although Hajime at least avoided a direct hit, he got hit by the after wave and blood sprayed everywhere grandly from Hajime's wounds.

"Guu"

Hajime unintentionally groaned and his expression warped, there was a flickering azure flame at the corner of his sight. Contrary to the approaching heat, an ice lump was sliding down his spine.

He tried to use 'Air Force' to escape while reinforcing his body with 'Vajra', but the meteor swarm whirled and danced boisterously in anticipation of that and blocked Hajime's path of escape.

"Even though I have forgotten completely how long I have lived, only the pleasure I felt at that time when everything crumbled is unforgettable. Therefore, I decided. That this world is my toy."

Ehitorujue's gaze finally returned back from the past.

He faced Hajime who was trying to break through the dance of the meteor shower using Donner and Cross Velts, and then he snapped his fingers.

That was the signal for the explosion.

All the meteors following Hajime like a whirlwind exploded simultaneously. The generated shockwave was equal with the hand grenade that Hajime used. Hajime immediately used Cross Velts to lay out barrier and furthermore the Grim Reapers used their body as a shield in their master's danger to soften the impact even if just for a bit.

Hajime who was swallowed by flame blasts and the light was swallowed by the fully opened mouth of the azure dragon. The jaw of azure flame closed with a snap. Everything that was touched would be mercilessly returned to ash by the hell fire of the highest

class of magic. Thinking normally, it was impossible to survive after getting eaten by that flame.

However, the torso of the flaming azure dragon——inside the azure flame there was a shining crimson that showed Hajime's survival. There were four Cross Velts around Hajime. They connected to each other using string of magic power and laid out a barrier of space isolation, 'Four Point Barrier'.

But, in compensation for that, the surface of the Cross Velts was melting down second by second. The seven Cross Velts that Hajime directly controlled were naturally enchanted with 'Vajra' and also coated with sealing stone, yet even so these Cross Velts couldn't endure. It was something that he understood, but as expected the heat of this dragon far surpassed the dragon that Yue used.

"Guh, don't, underestimate mee-!!"

Inside the stomach of the blue heavenly dragon, a voice that paused intermittently yet filled with tenacious will resounded. The astonishing thing was that even with the laid out space isolation barrier Hajime was still enveloped in a lot of flame.

It seemed that this azure dragon had penetrating flame the same like the Divine Flame slipped into it. Scorched by that flame, Hajime was stepping forward while trickling greasy sweats, he took out Orestes which made a gate that connected the inside and outside the barrier. Ahead of the gate was the azure dragon's magic stone.

Donner fired crimson flash along with bursting sound, the bullet passed through the gate and pierced through the sea of azure flame. The magic bullet coated with sealing stone accurately shot the magic stone of the azure dragon. The magic stone became little pieces with an explosive sound, at the same time the blue flame was dispersing.

"Yes, everything is my toy, irregular."

A sinister sound that he had already heard many times from Ehitorujue echoed. The sound of a finger snap.

As expected, the dispersing azure flame wriggled like living thing, it intruded smoothly into the four Cross Velts surrounding Hajime.

Right after that,

“Gaah”

Hajime’s short scream accompanied a grand flame blast rising up. The four Cross Velts ruptured from their inside. The penetrating Divine Flame caused chain explosions from the bursting bullet loaded inside. Followed by crimson ripples, grand and countless shockwaves and scattering Divine Flame tormented Hajime thoroughly from four directions.

Hajime immediately scattered hand grenades. It was for the sake of drinking god water and forcefully making an opening. As expected, his damage had reached a level that he couldn’t ignore.

But, the wind of death caressed his skin chillingly at that time. Hajime’s instinct was ringing the alarm bell in full.

Right after that, the crimson wall that bloomed fully at the surrounding from Hajime’s hand grenades was pierced by a blowing down wind.

Hajime obeyed his instinct’s command and twisted his body, and right beside him a *dislocated space* passed through.

At the same time, his left hand that took out god water was fixed in space. It was a perfect timing that took advantage of the opening when Hajime took evasive action. The next move was also the same. The Lightning divine spear flew out from empty air and shot down the god water.

“Damn-——”

Hajime raised his voice unintentionally, but it was already too late. The god water had been lost from Hajime’s hand. On the same occasion, his artificial hand was also pierced and his palm dissolved.

Hajime immediately repaired his artificial hand using transmutation

while leaping away in order to avoid the rushing meteor shower.

“Shit-, even though that’s the last god water-“

A swearing leaked out. Ehitorujue who heard that lifted the corner of his lips.

And then, he lifted his hand before dropping that hand quietly pointing at Hajime. Immediately, light swelled up explosively and light star shot out from the halos like missile moving in an arch with light trailing behind.

Hajime took out his gatling pile bunker, aimed it at Ehitorujue and then he charged forward while firing.

From above, like stars falling from the night sky, radiant stars were raining down, the Grim Reapers whose number had decreased considerably before one knows used their body as a shield, several Cross Velts laid out barrier above Hajime’s route, with those the momentum of Hajime’s charge didn’t stop. Even while that was happening, like a countdown going down, the autonomic weapons of Hajime’s quality products were bursting, their fragments scattered everywhere.

But, as though mocking that determination of Hajime who was forced to make those sacrifices…

“What do you think the devil and demi-human are?”

Such question resounded *from right behind* Hajime.

Hajime felt a shudder running through his spine. He used the intense recoil of his artificial hand to rotate at high speed and fired Donner behind him without even confirming anything.

But, there was no one there, in exchange a presence appeared at Hajime’s left-hand side where he was holding the gatling pile bunker. Hajime opened his eyes wide while sending his gaze there, at the same time a hand gently caressed the artifact.

And then, just like what happened at the devil king castle, the gatling pile bunker was easily returned to dust.

The one who was there was Ehitorujue. From his three layers of halos, in his back now there was only the first layer of halo, he skipped over even Hajime's perception and his figure appeared in very close range.

(Teleport without using gate…as expected, he can actually do something like that.)

Hajime's eyes narrowed from how one of the concerns that he harbored came true. It appeared that the magic which allowed the lightning divine spear to appeared suddenly from the empty air and teleported the artifact he possessed——'Heaven Existence' could also be used for teleporting the caster themselves. And then, Ehito could also turn artifact into dust just by touching them.

The figure of Ehitorujue vanished quietly once more.

At the same time, a chill ran on his back.

Hajime fired bursting bullet behind from the elbow of his artificial arm, but the light emitted from the halo blocked it. Ehitorujue's arm was swung down without even paying any attention to Hajime's counterattack.

Sword of light attacked Hajime following the trajectory of that arm. Hajime rotated using the impact from firing bursting bullet and back-stepped to evade. He took a distance of more than ten meters within an instant using his super speed but…

"–!?"

A diagonal laceration was carved from Hajime's shoulder until his flank. Even though he should have gotten out already from the range of the sword yet he was still hit. Hajime's face warped in pain while his severe gaze stabbed Ehitorujue.

"No need to be shocked. This is called as 'Divine Sword', a magic sword that can freely contract and expand, it also can jump through space to attack. It can penetrate your defense is because it also has the penetrating ability like 'Divine Flame'."

Hajime had been reduced to a tragic appearance that was obvious

at a glance. Ehitorujue was explaining to such Hajime who was breathing roughly while his hand was caressing along the divine sword.

That composed expression expressed how Hajime's fang couldn't reach him at all.

In contrast Hajime was all tattered. His black coat that was weaved with metal fiber which was stronger than even armor had become just like scrapped rag, the clothes under it was heavily soaked from absorbing blood. His skin that was visible from the gaps of the torn clothes was dyed bright red, his white hair was especially soaked with blood color from the fresh blood pouring out from his head, just looking at Hajime right now felt painful. The blood trickling down his head was like tears of blood.

Even the equal fight when the two fought a battle of resource was easily tilted completely into Ehito's favor when he used age of god magic consecutively. The many artifacts that were the greatest trait of Hajime's specialty were also being mostly destroyed.

What were left with Hajime was Donner & Schlag, Cross Velts, and then Grim Reapers…

"Hmm, it has become a little bit bothersome now."

Ehito swung his divine sword. Not even afterimage could be seen from his hand motion. It wasn't even clear whether he had swung the magic sword or not. But, the result was obvious. The Cross Velts and Grim Reapers that had been decreased until nearly fifty machines were cruelly turned into small pieces before *they exploded everywhere they were*.

"…"

What remained was only three Cross Velts that Hajime directly controlled. The army of demon king had been completely annihilated, even the crosses that symbolized death fell on the ground. Now Hajime only possessed mainly grenades of various kinds. Most likely Ehitorujue was intentionally aiming to destroy the artifacts in order to grant Hajime despair.

“Well, such thing doesn’t matter. Rather than that, I talked about devil and demi-human. What do you think they are?”

Without even showing particular care about the several hundred artifacts that he had cut apart instantly, Ehitorujue repeated his previous question. It appeared the talk of Ehitorujue still wasn’t over. He toyed around with his divine sword while staring at Hajime who looked like he could fall anytime with a wide repulsive grin.

“…Aren’t they…haa haa…the native here.”

Hajime answered the question in order to recover even for a little in this second opening he was given.

“No, you are wrong. The native people of this world are only the ‘human’. Whether the devil or the demi-human, they are the illegitimate children created by my magic technology.”

“…So you even, guh, synthesizing?”

“Fufu-, you have fast understanding. The devil and demi-human are synthetic organisms created by the combination of my monster and human. They are my genuine creation.”

‘Why did you do such thing?’ Perhaps Ehitorujue surmised that unasked question of Hajime, his tongue was moving smoothly to answer.

“No matter how much I was trying to sublimate my soul using faith and secret technique, no matter how much restoration and improvement I attempted on the body, the long several millenniums brought my body to its limit. Naturally, I searched for new body but…there was no flesh that could accept the soul of god.”

“If there is none, then just make one…huh?”

“It really helps that you have a quick understanding. Devil has high aptitude with magic factor, and the demi-human has powerful physic, they each came from me combining human with primitive organisms that possessed those essential aspects. I also tried creating the likes of dragon people by combining those two aspects

but….they were a failure. They could only be used for side entertainment, like how the strongest race became persecuted."

Just how many sacrifices came out along the course of those experiments? Even Hajime couldn't help but sympathize with the people in the past. To say nothing of the fact that the reason of the persecution toward Tio and others was merely this guy venting his anger, knowing that caused Hajime's killing intent to intensify further.

"In that process, I also created the currently existing monsters and apostles, but because of some unknown factor, in the end I was unable to obtain a body that could possibly become my vessel. Although some could endure to a certain degree, they would soon self-destruct."

"…So the Holy Precincts…was because you had no vessel"

"Fufu. Correct. This place is so I can continue to exist only as soul and also a place where I can use my strength. Here I was enjoying the game while waiting. Extremely rarely there would be people with aptitude like Aruvheit or the 'liberators' that were born."

Based on the truth that Hajime was told, it seemed that the people who were called as 'true ancestor' like Yue or Shia were more accurately people with aptitude. Although even the people with aptitude in the past like the liberators were insufficient as Ehitorujue's vessel.

Hajime's eyes narrowed quietly.

"Like, that…haa haa, three hundred years ago…you finally, discovered it, huh"

"Yes. At that time my heart danced for the first time after a few hundred years. Although, my vessel was immediately hidden after that…even though at that time I had even personally granted her the title as 'miko' specially. You know, at that time I was driven by fury that I even destroyed several countries unintentionally while destroying the vampire country. After that I thought of the possibility of another miko being born once more before I was able

to finally calm down."

Ehitorujue swept his divine sword. The halo on his back and the halos at the distance visible above the throne began to shine brilliantly.

"Let me say my thanks once more, irregular. You discovered my vessel and made me enjoyed myself until this much, you have truly done a great service. As the prize, I'll consign you to oblivion personally by my hand."

Platinum magic power painted over everything.

Hajime too also emitted his crimson magic power, he readied Donner-Schlag and lined up the three Cross Velts behind him.

A beat passed.

The figure of Ehitorujue disappeared.

Hajime fired the readied Donner & Schlag as they were. The launched flashes passed through the last Orestes that was placed in front of the gun muzzles and reappeared behind him.

Sure enough, there was Ehitorujue there.

However, without any hurry Ehitorujue surprisingly cut apart the bullets that came flying from Orestes with his divine sword.

Although Yue was a prodigy in magic but her close quarter combat ability was lower than average. Based on Ehitorujue's feat just now, it seemed that because of the possession the body's physical ability and battle skill were increased up like a joke.

The penetrating divine sword stretched toward the frowning Hajime. The sword flash that was impossible to defend against was somehow evaded by Hajime bending backward. At the same time the Cross Velts fired burst bullets wildly.

Those bullets were shot down by the light stars fired from the halo. The spreading ripples of impact bloomed everywhere between Hajime and Ehitorujue.

“There is nothing to feel surprised about. This is my original sword art that I learned for killing time. The twin large swords art of the apostle is also based on my swordsmanship. I can do not only magic you know?”

“Chih, so what.”

“Fufu-. At first, I put distance and stole the artifacts of you who were desperately struggling like plucking off your arms and legs. Next is close quarter combat, that’s how it is. There is no hope for you no matter what you try, I’ll teach that to you personally. How are you feeling getting overwhelmed with one hand by someone who was talking leisurely about the past? Hmm?”

Saying that Ehitorujue cut apart the shockwaves themselves and charged forward.

Hajime rapid fired Donner & Schlag. The bullets that he used were Living Bullet. Furthermore they were coated with sealing stone.

But, at the next moment Ehitorujue’s figure vanished as expected. And then, he appeared instantly at Hajime’s side.

Hajime who foreseen that used the recoil of his artificial arm to throw away his body. Immediately following that, the bullets that Hajime fired before this flew out from the space around Ehitorujue. Hajime understood that Ehitorujue would teleport using Heaven Existence so he made use of Orestes to teleport the bullets.

A storm of flashes that aimed at the moment Ehitorujue teleported. No matter even if it was Ehitorujue, it seemed that he would get drilled through by the bullets before he could teleport once more.

However, the moment the bullets impacted, the arm of Ehitorujue that was holding the divine sword vanished. No, that arm was moving so fast that it looked like it vanished. The sword moved flexibly like a whip, and sword lines rushed around Ehitorujue as though a barrier was layered surrounding him.

As the result, the bullets were wrecked into pieces. The sword was swung with a speed that even the Living Bullets’ trajectory

correction couldn't follow. Even the perception skill that Hajime had could only perceive the sword slightly as a streak of light. It was a terrifying speed.

"To be able to read my movement in this short time…that prediction came from experience rather than sense I guess. That's really something. But, in front of my 'God Speed' that is still too slow."

God Speed——it was the magic that Kaori used limitedly. But Ehitorujue used it with more refinement. It was beyond the pale that he was able to cut apart twenty shots of electromagnetically accelerated bullets that approached from a meter. Before this when he instantly cut apart several hundred Cross Velts and Grim Reapers was surely also because his sword attacks that were done within shortened time.

"Now then, how many artifacts you have left? Or else have you used up all of your plans? If not then you can use them all. I'll crush everything you have and dye your brave face with despair!"

Ehitorujue used Heaven Existence.

Instantly, he appeared right in front of Hajime's face.

"Kuh"

The sword flashes that were swung while Hajime groaned were ten times. All of those were evaded by Hajime who mostly relied only on his instinct. But, his dodging couldn't be called as perfect with how he was unable to defend, he was grazed, or even thinly sliced all over his body.

The recoil of Hajime's artificial hand forcefully threw away his body to an angle that was normally impossible. Hajime rotated like spinning wheel while desperately taking distance, during that time he randomly scattered a lot of grenades from inside 'Treasure Warehouse II'.

Many of the grenades were cut apart by the lengthening divine sword, and destroyed by the meteors from the halo. The grenades

that weren't even allowed to explode were scattered as sparkling particles and fell on the ground.

Ehitorujue laughed disgustingly to that useless effort of Hajime who couldn't even buy time while teleporting consecutively. He appeared and then vanished, appeared and then vanished. Just like an illusion. It was like he was being omnipresence around Hajime.

And then the divine sword that reached regardless of distance carved multiple layers in the air. Although Hajime avoided lethal wound each time that happened, wounds were mass produced with certainty on his body. He also counterattacked with the combination of Donner & Schlag, Orestes, and Cross Velts, but in front of the elusive Heaven Existence and God Speed, Hajime was unable to inflict even one telling blow.

The second and third layer of the halos and the halo behind Ehitorujue were dyeing the white space with platinum light by endlessly firing meteor shower. However naturally those meteors were automatically avoiding Ehitorujue himself and rushed only Hajime.

Hajime was clenching his teeth while shooting back, he was staving off the storm of death sometimes with grenade, sometimes with Cross Velt, and sometimes with Orestes. Amidst that he was trying to somehow arrest Ehitorujue's movement but…

He couldn't reach.

Hajime was being overwhelmed even in close quarter combat just like Ehitorujue planned. Each time he was attacked, blood splashed while he was being rapidly cornered, just like a chess match.

"What's wrong? Won't you use your trump card(godslaying)? If you use it while praying, perhaps you will be lucky and reach this body you know?"

"Shu, shut uup-!"

Hajime was already holding out only by his guts. Even the vocabulary of the words that he returned to Ehitorujue's

provocation was poor. Perhaps because Hajime was bleeding out too much, or perhaps because of the limit break that he continued to use, Hajime's eyes were beginning to strangely get out of focus and looked blank.

"Hmm. You don't look like you will take out a new artifact, your body is also on the verge of breaking apart…are you waiting for a favorable opportunity?"

Ehitorujue snapped his fingers. Lightning divine spear was flying out from empty air.

Its target was naturally the heavily wounded Hajime. Even now it felt like his consciousness would fly away, his body felt like it would crumble down anytime. Even so, he still somehow avoided a direct hit, really what an astonishing survival instinct.

But, even his resistance only went that far.

The lightning divine spears that fired rapidly destroyed the last Cross Velts and Orestes altogether, on the same occasion the lightning the spears contained were also liberated nearby Hajime.

"GUAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-"

Terrific impact and thunderous sound, and then lightning hit Hajime. Hajime screamed and then fell on the ground with a smoking body.

Hajime bounced several times on the chalk white ground before collapsing face down. Then blood dripped out. Hajime's tragic appearance that had been chopped up, beaten many times, and also grilled thoroughly, just from a glance he already looked like a corpse. It was hard to judge him as alive.

Ehitorujue descended soundlessly in front of Hajime. Looking at Hajime who was licking the ground in an unsightly state, while wondering if it was the end with this, Ehitorujue lifted up his divine sword in order to deal the finishing blow with an expression like a child whose toy was taken away.

But, ahead of his gaze Hajime's finger twitched.

“Hou”

Ehitorujue reflexively leaked out an admiring voice. Even during that time Hajime’s body was moving and his body was rising up while dripping blood was dirtying the chalk white ground.

“Even with the majesty of god engraved to your flesh and bones, you are still going to stand up?”

Ehitorujue’s words were replied by Hajime with intermittent words that sounded like they were going to die out anytime along with his heartbeat.

“I’ll, keep…saying it. You are…not a, god. Rather, even, compared…to the ‘human’ fighting on the surface right now… you’re weak.”

“What are you basing on saying that? And with that heavily wounded appearance at that. Even though not even a single one of your power reach me.”

Ehitorujue made an exasperated expression, wondering if Hajime would still bluffing even after reaching this point of time.

“…Indeed, your strength, is astonishing. …Since I, got out, of the abyss, I have…never, felt death…this close”

“Hmph, if you understand——”

“But, that’s all.”

Hajime cut off Ehitorujue’s words. The focus of his eyes was disappearing. However, anyone would understand if they looked from close by. Far inside the wavering eyes, a flame that would never be snuffed out was residing there. As though to display that, strength was filling Hajime’s words little by little.

“Inside you, there is no…will to overwhelm others. That’s why, no matter how much…strength, that you show me, my heart…won’t waver. ——It’s like you are not scary.”

“…Are you making excuse?”

Ehitorujue talked provocatively, however, this times it was Hajime who was talking with a distant look. About the strong people that he met, or he knew in this world.

“I, know. …even though she is the weakest race, yet with a single feeling…that fellow stepped into a deadly no man’s land.”

Her face looked like she was going to cry, even so ‘to be together’, just for that little wish that rabbit ear girl kept running desperately

“Even though…despair, was thrust before her eyes…she just wouldn’t break, a fellow that continued to believe in hope.”

With a single feeling, even when no one believed other than her, she didn’t abandon hope. An earnest girl who in the end even chose to change her body to get close to him.

“For the sake of her comrade…in order to protect…a fellow that can use her body as a shield.”

Just how many times had he been protected by her? Even though usually she would screw around, but when push came to shove she would risk her life more than anyone, a wise woman with deep emotion.

“Even at the verge of death…a fellow that can think of her best friend, as the most.”

Surely, she was the most ‘girlish’ among his comrades. Despite so, she would take up weapon for the sake of someone, even many times at the verge of death, the one who she would think at the end would always be her best friend, it would always be somebody else. A kind girl who was too kind.

“Even when, the world changed…even when her own naivety was thrust before her, that fellow didn’t cast away her own dignity.”

Hesitating, scared, distressed, hurt, even so she didn’t stop being what she determined as herself. The teacher who admonished Hajime who only kept pushing on so he would stop and looked back.

“Even though she is just a little girl without any strength, that girl can risk her life in order to stop her idiot father.”

The time they spent together didn’t even reach a month. She was also just a four-year-old little girl. Despite so, she worried for her injured mother, she personally went to meet the father who informed her of their parting and spoke out, and in the end, that child could convey her feeling without taking even a step back against her rampaging father.

And then,

“…And then, even with her body taken, still, that fellow is continuing to fight.”

He believed. Yes, he believed. At her strength.

Hajime’s gaze, the gaze of someone who had been overwhelmed until he couldn’t move even a single finger and was almost died, pierced Ehitorujue.

The person whom that gaze was directed at didn’t notice himself. Of how the shining flame deep inside those eyes that were peaceful like a calm water surface yet dark like the abyss, was overpowering himself to shrink away with a step back.

“Even the monsters in the abyss emitted overwhelming killing intent and survival instinct. But, there is nothing in you. You are empty. Surely, since the time the things you have piled up together with your comrades were destroyed, you have been empty.”

Hajime stood up completely. In his hands, Donner & Schlag were clutched tightly.

“Your words were loud and clear. In short, you don’t learn anything since the past, you cannot even endure loneliness, however you are scared to even die…the point is that you are just a spoiled brat right?”

The meaning of “enough already” that Ehitorujue’s last comrade spoke was surely, because he believed that even if they let go of the hand of the people they guided in this world, it was enough, they

would still be able to live prosperously.

That person was surely thinking of their destroyed home world, that existences like them who had touched the truth weren't needed anymore, and then, seeing the activity of this world, surely that person thought that there was nothing left that he needed to teach to the people of this world.

Not noticing that feeling, unable to even sympathize, not learning anything from the past, scared of the fear of death despite being able to interfere with truth, and then unable to endure the loneliness, he went into a rampage. In the end, the existence named Ehitorujue was still 'childish' no matter how long he had been alive.

"…Fuh, is this a scheme to make my mind waver with that kind of provocation? After all it will be the end if your trump card fails to reach me. What a moving endeavor. But, at this rate your 'godslaying' cannot possibly work."

That was why, he didn't understand the meaning of what Hajime was talking about. Exactly the same like how he didn't understand the meaning of the words of his comrade in the far past.

Hajime slowly drew back one of his feet and took his stance. Even though he was already at the death's door, a supreme will was overflowing from that body.

"Perhaps."

A calm word of affirmation.

But, right after that…

"That's only if I am still like before yeah-!"

Immense power burst out from Hajime. It was incomparable with his 'Supreme Break' until now. A torrent of power that was equal with several times his former power whirled with Hajime at the center. It was just like a tornado of level F5. The crimson color got deeper into a deep crimson, the space was rumbling as though it was screaming.

“What the-“

Hajime who he thought to be almost died just now suddenly exploded out with power so great at this point of time, for the first time Ehitorujue’s calm expression crumbled. That was undoubtedly an expression of shock.

Giving that expression a glance, Hajime stepped forward. No, his figure was erased.

Where he appeared was right in front of Ehitorujue’s face. Ehitorujue gazed in astonishment.

Just by being fast wouldn’t be able to surpass Ehitorujue’s perception. No matter how much Hajime was strengthened, it would still be impossible by nature. But, even so there were many ways to fight. Just who decided that an instant space teleportation was the technique exclusive for god?

“Haah!!”

“Nuu!?”

The hand of Hajime that was holding Donner softly shifted the hand of Ehitorujue that was stabbing toward Hajime. At the same time, the bullet that flew out from Schlag ricocheted on the ground and aimed at Ehitorujue’s heart.

Naturally, Ehitorujue escaped with Heaven Existence. Instantly, a raging killing intent blew from behind him.

“-!? You bastard, as expected, you use Heaven Existence!?”

“Who knows, I wonder about that?”

Two gunshots resounded. However, there were twenty streaks of flashes that attacked Ehito violently. Half of them were slashed by the divine sword, but he then judged that he wouldn’t be able to deal with the rest of Hajime’s acrobatics rapid shooting that Ehitorujue escaped using further space teleportation.

But, at his next teleportation Ehitorujue saw it. Before his eyes one

floating bullet vanished quietly, at the next instant, Hajime appeared at that bullet's former spot. Yes, it was as though the position of Hajime and the bullet was exchanged.

——Special bullet　Exise Bullet

This special bullet that was transmuted from combined space-sublimation magic had the ability to exchange the coordinate position of the starting point and each bullet. Bullets so many like the number of stars in the sky had been scattered in this battlefield since the start of the battle until this moment. But, not all the bullets were attacking the enemy. Several bullets among them were scattering to the whole area and floated midair to become Hajime's teleporting coordinate.

Ehitorujue used his divine sword to intercept Hajime who appeared in front of him.

However,

"Mu-"

He struck empty air. The blade passed through a bit in front of Hajime. With a returning strike Ehito attempted to shower Hajime with slashes——but when he noticed, Hajime had already slipped right in front of his face once more.

Hajime rushed at the opening of Ehito's mind. He read Ehito's breathing and made his timing and distance to miss. Hajime also intentionally disturbed his presence to make it difficult for Ehito to perceive his state. He used taijutsu to give an illusion to Ehito's sense of distance. The more sensitive the senses of the opponent, the more these techniques could be used to throw the opponent's perception out of whack. Furthermore,

——Illusion projection artifact　'Novum Idola'

This artifact layered shadow on the user, it strangely shifted the user's position and enveloped the image-presence-magic power-etc of the user, at the same time it interfered with the opponent's perception and made them misrecognized the camouflage and the

truth. Hajime's figure and presence that blurred in two or three layers, combined with Hajime's own taijutsu realized a close quarter combat that was like an illusion.

"You bastard-, after this far, you still show new cards——"

Ehitorujue's discarded voice was cut off. Seeing this person who had become that ragged, showered in words of humiliation, and made to snuggle really close to death, yet he was still preserving his cards until this time, as expected it was beyond the imagination of even god. For example even if someone actually was still hiding some plan inside their heart, but in a situation where it wasn't strange that they could die anytime, the courage needed not to expose their hidden hand was already something that surpassed the realm of human.

Ehitorujue who felt a slight shudder going through his back unleashed attacks that were like surging wave.

"OOOOOOOOOO-!!"

Hajime's war cry reverberated, at the same time a crimson flash exploded like a solar flare.

Even when Ehitorujue swung his divine sword and fired meteor shower from his halos, his disarrayed perception couldn't capture Hajime. Hajime's attack was also becoming closer and closer to hitting before he noticed, that fact was already a godly feat that surpassed superhuman feat——no, perhaps it was more fitting for Hajime for this to be called as a demonic feat.

Hajime bared his fang using everything that he had analyzed and pounded into his body from the battle until now!

Ehitorujue teleported consecutively once more. However, Hajime who was starting to grasp his teleporting habit rapidly approached within zero comma several seconds. Hajime wasn't using only the speed of the coordinate exchange and his discernment. His raw speed that was continuing to increase second by second was also progressively entering the realm of god speed.

Even so, the sword flashes of Ehitorujue was impossible to defend against, therefore he possessed overwhelming advantage against Hajime in close quarter combat, was how it was supposed to be.

GAKIN-

“Wha-!?”

This time it was Ehitorujue who leaked out a shocked voice along with the resounding hard sound.

That was only natural. The divine sword that should pass through everything except Hajime was blocked by Schlag after all.

With no delay the right Donner aimed at Ehitorujue. The fired crimson flash was evaded by Ehitorujue using teleportation by a hairbreadth with shocked expression pasted still on his face.

“Just, what in the world——”

“It’s only transmutation.”

Hajime answered concisely without telling everything.

The cause that blocked the penetrating ability of the divine sword came from the transmutation that was done on Schlag.

——Soul magic neutralization artifact ‘Delischanors’

If the attack could pass through everything except the target using soul magic, then he only needed to enchant Schlag using ‘Soul Reproduction’ to create a pseudo soul in it. Originally this was a ‘decoy’ artifact that was produced from the assumption that the ‘Divine Statement’ which forced a command on the selected soul in subconscious level couldn’t be defended using Miledy’s artifact, but it was also sufficient to misalign the target of the divine sword.

And then, the decoys that were applied with Delischanors weren’t just Donner & Schlag.

Ehitorujue swung the divine sword at the stepping forward Hajime, which was blocked by the muzzle of Schlag. At the same time,

DOPAN-!!

A single gunshot. The flying bullet knocked back the divine sword that should be in a state where its penetrating ability was activated. Yes, what was enchanted with Delischanors wasn't just Schlag. The bullets were also rejecting the penetration ability!

"Irregular-"

"You talk too much, small fry."

The impact from the divine sword getting knocked back forcefully made Ehito's posture to form a one-handed banzai, Ehitorujue who was making a humiliated expression fired meteors from his halo.

But, as though knowing that move ahead, Cross Velts and Donner's bullet barrage repelled them. Hajime smoothly closed the distance and launched a fierce round kick. That attack, finally, run into the solar plexus of the god that Hajime had no hope to touch before! The kick that had 'Strong Leg' and 'Impact Conversion' applied to it was extremely intense. Ehitorujue's body bent forward into '>' shape and he was blown away.

"Kuh"

Hajime pursued, but as expected Ehitorujue didn't intend to allow him going that far and used Heaven Existence to make his escape.

Yes, he escaped. Different from all his evasion until now from the thinking that it was inexcusable for god's body to be touched, now he was purely escaping. Of course, Ehitorujue had automatic regeneration. Even so, that he escaped was because his heart was shaken. It was an instinctual action.

Because of that, the humiliation that was welling up in his chest was great. As though to display that, the expression of Ehitorujue distorted grandly.

"You-, your new artifact, that power-. You bastard, you didn't fight me at full strength!"

"Oi oi, what kind of gullible fellow would believe his enemy's

words. Of course, that was obviously a lie."

While unfolding an offense and defense against Hajime who was saying such thing boldly, Ehitorujue suddenly noticed. That Hajime's tone didn't even sound pained at all and flowed smoothly. That his wounds from being tormented thoroughly had been mostly healed.

What was the reason that Hajime was healed? The reason was the same with how his strength was increased even after activating 'Supreme Break' already.

It finally melted, the capsule inside his stomach. The capsule filled with god water and cheatmate that Hajime had drunk beforehand.

Ehitorujue didn't know about that, but he conjectured that it was impossible for such rapid healing to happen except by god water and he raised an angry voice.

"What you said about the god water being the last was also a lie-"

"It was a really delicious water that is worthy to be called god water you know?"

Hajime spoke indifferently. Toward such Hajime, Ehitorujue took distance without fussing over close quarter combat where he was about to launch space blasting and lightning divine spear. The humiliation of being fooled was oozing out from that expression.

As though to promote that displeasure further, Hajime constantly closed the distance smoothly not letting Ehito got away.

While the divine sword and Schlag were locked with each other, Ehitorujue asked from very close range.

"Why, only now."

"Naturally, in order to obtain certainty. I'm not underestimating your strength."

There was only one chance for the 'godslaying'. Hajime didn't understand what kind of strength Ehitorujue who had perfectly

seized Yue's body possessed, because of that it was necessary to make Ehito showed out his hands that Hajime hadn't seen before in order to use that one chance with certainty. Ehitorujue intended to play around with Hajime, but Hajime was also doing the same thing albeit for a different reason.

The strength of Ehitorujue that surpassed the imagination was to the degree that made Hajime felt the scythe of the death god, but by paying compensation of pain and many of his artifacts, somehow Hajime was able to confirm the battle strength and hands that Ehitorujue possessed to a certain degree, also, he became able to grasp the 'habit' of Ehitorujue.

Ehitorujue regained his footing from the shock and his expression suddenly changed into looking amused. And then, he instantly invoked a large scale space blasting that didn't even spare himself from being dragged into it.

The space creaked and the meteor shower that was sweeping over all around was popping off. Among them, Hajime whose expression distorted was also included inside. It seemed that he endured using 'Vajra' that had its output increased, but he bore a damage that didn't look light. Hajime vomited out blood while coughing.

But, Hajime immediately rallied himself and detected Ehitorujue. Ehitorujue had returned once more to his throne where three layers of halos were behind his back. It seemed that he was injured by his own damage but he immediately recovered using 'Automatic Regeneration'.

"Then, whether you are really not misunderstanding me or not, the might of this true god will ascertain that!"

Right after that, light exploded. The halos were releasing light so intense to the degree that would make anyone hallucinated that. And then, Each halo were beginning to rotate while shining brilliantly.

Even during that time, Hajime was approaching while slipping through the meteor shower that had been doubled in intensity, right after that, a very thick beam of light was fired from the halos. If

anyone saw it, then they would think that it was just like the ‘Heaven Might’ that Kouki unleashed. Although, the power and scale of this one from Ehito were in a different league.

“This cannot be avoided you know, irregular! This light of ruin will continue to chase after you forever until you die!”

In contrast with Ehitorujue who was raising a loud voice, Hajime fiercely bared his fang and answered.

“Then, I’ll breakthrough frontally.”

A crimson flash with honed killing intent surged straight ahead.

At the same time, Hajime scattered all the grenades that he had, furthermore a huge assault lance coated with sealing stone was deployed in the front. A mechanical sound was reverberating from that assault lance, the lance was spreading like an umbrella while it was elongating by three stages and it began to rotate at high speed.

——Target dispersal assault lance ‘Lob Regenschirm’

A three-stage assault lance that rotated at high speed with its surface engraved by sealing stone and particular unevenness, that was to say it was a drill.

The target that was touched would be pulverized and dispersed as though being dug out. Hajime floated it in front of him, he used it as a shield while spreading intense ripples in midair, immediately after that, he charged toward the bombardment of ‘True Heaven Might’ along with a fierce impact.

While the coated sealing stone was being broken in the blink of eye, Lob Regenschirm was forcefully scattering the god’s might while leading its master Hajime toward the target’s position. Hajime also used ‘Vajra’, ‘Magic Power Emission’, and ‘Impact Conversion’ as explosive reactive armor and charged through the light of destruction!

“-uaaAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!”

Blood spurted out from the wounds that just got healed due to the

after-effect that couldn't be dispersed, his internal organs, his flesh, his bones were screaming. The crimson aura he was clad with and another red were scattered around him, even so Hajime screamed without stopping his advance. He wouldn't stand still even for an instant! Overwhelm back the overwhelming torrent! Crush the absurdity with even more absurdity! Just like how he came this far until now, tear apart all the obstacles-!

"You are breaking through even this-"

Ehitorujue saw Hajime who was advancing inside the Heaven Might he unleashed and got stabbed with that eye glint that was filled to the brim with tenacious determination and tremendous killing intent——and he prepared to run away once more.

He was going to withdraw from that spot using Heaven Existence. He was taking that action mostly subconsciously.

But, Hajime didn't allow him to do such thing.

The whole area at the surrounding was enveloped by explosive sound. It was the grenades that Hajime scattered. The spaces at the center where the explosions happened were distorting like jelly, shockwaves were blowing violently due to the side effect of the spaces trying to return to normal.

The cause of this was the space explosion grenade that distorted the space and generated shockwave. Originally it was something that made use of space to attack the enemy using shockwave, but right now it was displaying a different effect.

That was the destabilization of space.

Whether the direct teleportation magic 'Heaven Existence' that didn't use exact and delicate gate could be used in this place or not…

"——tsk. Another artifact again-"

It seemed Ehitorujue himself understood well the answer. At the very least it was something dangerous to the degree that made him spontaneously hesitating to activate the magic. And then, he was

also unintentionally swearing from witnessing new artifacts appearing one after another.

Using that opportunity, Hajime finally broke through the True Heaven Might. The Lob Regenschirm was smashed up, Hajime himself was also worn out, but that terrifyingly sharply gleaming eyes pierced Ehitorujue that was right nearby.

Ehitorujue immediately changed plan from escaping to intercepting. He was already materializing divine sword in one hand and swung it with God Speed. The sword lines that were drawn within an instant easily surpassed a hundred. He was seriously serious. This was the full strength sword play of Ehitorujue.

It didn't matter that his perception was shifted or whatever, that was irrelevant if he was just filling the space to the brim with sword slashes. Therefore, even Hajime appeared unable to react against that, without even any time to put a defense all the sword flashes passed through that body. There wasn't even any resistance that could be felt from the sword cutting through flesh.

At the same time, the Hajime that should be cut dispersed lightly, from its shadow Hajime leaped out.

"Impossible-. Something that only has small effect of shifting perception is——"

"Just who said that such thing is the effect huh?"

Ehitorujue's surprised voice was easily responded by Hajime. Illusion projection artifact 'Novum Idola' fundamentally only had the effect of derailing the perception. But, nobody was saying that was its whole ability or anything. Even if, that was the only ability it showed even when in a critical time.

The corner of Ehitorujue's sight caught a bullet that was transparent like a crystal floating there.

——Illusion projection assistance artifact 'Vision Bullet'

Combined with 'Novum Idola', an artifact that completely projected Hajime's illusion was put in the core of this bullet. The moment

Hajime broke through the True Heaven Might, he predicted that a severe interception attack would be waiting for him, so Hajime fired the Vision Bullet to the front while he himself drew back from Ehito's sword range.

Ehitorujue who had just finished swinging his god sword, in addition to the shock, became slow in reacting, with an intense step Hajime threw away Schlag and he turned his artificial palm toward Ehito. Right after that, the gimmick in the palm worked and the five fingers there greatly elongated. Now it looked just like a skeleton hand of a giant.

Hajime struck with that expanding mechanical palm toward Ehitorujue. And then, in a flash the five fingers curled and restrained Ehitorujue's body, then Hajime hurled himself forward which carried them through the halos immediately.

"aAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!"

Hajime roared and then the gimmick of the artificial hand activated which let out many spikes that pierced Ehitorujue's body like iron maiden, furthermore Hajime activated a space fixation that was limited to inside his palm and completely restrained Ehito.

Ehitorujue immediately attempted to use magic, but tremendous magic power radiation came out from the artificial hand that was glued close to his body——the magic power cannon 'Glanzen' loaded inside the artificial arm performed bombardment of pure magic power that stirred up the magic power inside Ehito's body, due to that Ehito was unable to invoke magic instantly. Furthermore, Ehitorujue was able to swing his divine sword just by reversing his wrist, but that too was beyond his power due to the anchor and steel thread flying out from the artificial arm which bound his body and operated vibration pulverization.

"Raah!!"

"-!?"

Like that, at the end of dense offense and defense that happened for less than a second, Hajime succeeded in throwing down Ehitorujue

on the ground.

The gazes of Ehitorujue who was held down on the ground and Hajime who was straddling him crossed each other. At the same time, along with a *kacha* sound, something hard was pushed on Ehitorujue's heart from the opening of the five fingers.

It was the gun muzzle of Donner.

"This is check. The 'godslaying' that was born at the end of drowning in alcohol, taste it to your heart's content."

"Wa-――"

Instantly,

DOPAN-

A single gunshot.

Ehitorujue's body twitched up.

What was fired was naturally the godlsaying bullet that picked only the god to destroy. The 'Short Sword of Divine Crossing' where the liberators' tenacity resided was condensed, processed, and then remanufactured into a bullet.

Finally the trump card pierced through Ehitorujue.

Behind the halos were crumbling down as though they were weathering down into dust.

Silence filled the white space.

The closed eyelids of Yue quivered along with her long eyelashes. And then, on the eyes that slowly opened, the worn-out figure of Hajime was reflected…

"How unfortunate, irregular."

"――"

Right after that, Hajime's left arm was pulverized into very small

pieces, and his body was spraying blood while getting blown away.

Arifureta Chapter 176

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/177/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Bakapervert did the edits.

The Beloved Vampire Princess

A thunderous roar.

Scattering metal fragments.

Those fragments that rained down in pieces raised metallic sounds while falling on the ground, by that time a groaning voice resounded from a corner of the tiered stand where the throne was on. At the center of the crumbling chalk white stand that was crumbling down with clatters, there was the figure of Hajime buried from his back with his face distorted in pain.

That figure became bloodstained as though the healing by the god water previously was nonexistent, it didn't stop there, even his artificial left arm became gone and now he looked really tragic just from a glance.

"Guh, gahah"

While vomiting blood by a lot, Hajime tried to aim Donner to the front. The blood dripping down from his forehead entered his eye, dyeing his sight bright red as though the warning of red alert was turned on in his field of vision.

Inside that red field of vision, Ehitorujue who rose up lightly without feeling the gravity was making the gesture of snapping his fingers.

At that moment, a fierce impact hit the right hand holding Donner. Hajime mostly wasn't feeling pain because his sense of pain was paralyzed when he was blown away by the impact, but he understood what was being done to him. At the corner of his sight, the five fingers of his right hand were bending to the wrong direction because his partner that he should be holding was pulverized into pieces.

The fragments of the broken Donner fell on the ground, at the same time the 'Treasure Warehouse II' that Hajime fitted on the middle finger of his right hand was also rolling on the ground *roll roll* with a cute sound that felt out of place. It seemed that the artifact slipped off when his right hand was impacted.

"Splendid, it was splendid, irregular. For your trump card to strike this me, that is worthy of praise. Although, if a question of whether a trump card will always be worthy to be called as a trump card is asked, then the answer can only be no."

"…"

Ehitorujue walked closer with a composed and thin smile. Normally his footsteps wouldn't make any sound at all, but this time *step step* the footsteps echoed likely like the countdown to Hajime's death.

Furthermore, a step, each time Ehitorujue advanced by a step, the artificial arm and Donner, and then Schlag that fell on a slightly distant place were wrapped by platinum light. The artifacts of Hajime was shaking *shake shake* in resistance, but before long they became unable to endure and their shape broke down, at the end, they were completely annihilated not even leaving dust behind.

With the artifacts separated from the hand of their master Hajime, if they were continuously bathed in a focused light of destruction then even the countermeasure Hajime applied wouldn't hold.

“Are you wondering why? Certainly the bullet filled with the concept of ‘godslaying’ gouged my heart, yet why, I can be calm and composed like this. Ku-ku-ku-“

“…”

Ehitorujue watched Hajime with amusement, or perhaps with ridiculing while soaking in joy. Hajime didn’t answer. Perhaps he didn’t even have any leeway left to talk, Hajime only kept leaning on the broken stand limply with his eyes closed. Only his right eye with the eye patch covering it sliding off was slightly opened, but the magic eye stone wasn’t created to obtain normal vision, so in reality Hajime was unable to see Ehitorujue’s expression.

But, without even paying attention to such Hajime, Ehitorujue’s tongue moved smoothly. The unsightly figure of Hajime whose plan to recover from the hopeless situation, to overturn the table with one attack had been crushed, was greatly pleasing for him.

“Indeed, if it was the me of the thousand years ago, perhaps I could possibly be destroyed by that. But, during all that time the secret technique to convert faith into strength to sublimate my soul has been continuing until now you know? Naturally, the status of my existence is also rising up. Something that is only like the concept created by a human at best means nothing against me. Furthermore, right now I have the body of this vampire princess. This flesh body itself becomes the protective wall that protects the soul taking root in it.”

“…”

Hajime’s artifacts that scattered at the surrounding were completely annihilated. All the artifacts were thoroughly annihilated with care, including the Schlagen AA and Cross Velts that had been crushed previously, the bullet cartridges, and even the fragments of the grenades.

Undoubtedly Ehitorujue was intending to cut off all the hope of Hajime with thoroughness. Although, Hajime already looked dead already with how he kept lying down without even any twitch but…perhaps this was only a simple entertainment for Ehitorujue

without any regard to anything else.

“Although, even I didn’t have the conviction that I will really end up safe from that, so I had no intention to get hit with it. Therefore, the attack just now made me a little uneasy. Truly that is a brilliant achievement, to do something like making a god feel uneasy. You can be proud, irregular.”

“…”

gyarit Ehitorujue’s foot trod on the ‘Treasure Warehouse II’ that was rolling on the floor. And then, he stepped down forcefully while purposefully making a sound. A beam of light leaked out from the stepped spot. As expected, the artifact was surely annihilated into nothing there.

With this, now the only artifact Hajime possessed was only his magic eye stone. It was unclear what was reflected in the eye of blue crystal peeking out from the faintly opened eyelid. Even though it couldn’t show normal sight, naturally the eye artifact was able to distinguish the existence and the flow of magic power, so Hajime should be able to see how all his partners, the artifacts were annihilated.

However, even in front of that scene, where one of his important thing, and then one more important thing was hinted to be lost, Hajime’s expression was still unmoving. The effect of the god water had gone, his left arm was lost, his right hand was broken, even his internal organs were beaten up so badly, lacerations were carved inside his body, and he couldn’t even twitch his finger, it was unclear whether it was a dying figure or a figure that had given up on everything in despair.

At the very least, what Ehitorujue was seeing was that finally Hajime’s heart had broken, that he had fallen into the abyss of despair. Like a demon whose meaning of existence was making people fall, his expression distorted into a chuckle.

And then, Ehitorujue who had walked before Hajime’s eyes bent his knee in front of him, he matched his gaze to the same height with Hajime’s and suddenly he swept his hand horizontally.

“____”

At that moment, a pebble of light star pierced Hajime’s both legs. Hajime’s femurs were pulverized. Wind holes were literally opened there.

One more of Hajime’s power to resist was stolen, then Ehitorujue’s slender and beautiful fingertip softly caressed Hajime’s chin. And then, he lifted Hajime’s head forcibly.

Toward Hajime whose left eye was opened slightly, Ehitorujue smiled composedly and brought his face closer to a kissing distance. And then, toyingly he changed the path of his lips just before it came into contact with Hajime and then he sweetly, repulsively, muddily, and stickily whispered into Hajime’s ear while gluing close to him in half-embracing posture.

“I’ll break everything important to you. Your comrades that stepped into Holy Precincts together with you, your compatriots that continue to resist on the surface, the family of your birthplace, I’ll trample all of them underfoot, toy them, and let them raise agonizing cries.”

“…”

Hajime didn’t reply. He was merely staring, straight ahead at somewhere, there was no expression of emotion that could be seen from his body. He was really like an empty shell, as though his heart wasn’t in his body anymore.

Ehitorujue stared at the side face of such Hajime with an expression of ecstasy.

“But, you can rest assured. I will treat only this amazing body of the vampire princess courteously. Because this is my important vessel, I’ll handle it courteously, to every nook and cranny, to my heart’s content, okay?”

His beloved woman was used by another as he pleased. Those words that were really hard to endure…made Hajime reacted. Suddenly his broken right hand moved, that hand reached

searchingly toward Ehitorujue, no, toward Yue's chest.

"…Finally…I found you."

"Hm?"

A small, small whisper. Furthermore it sounded hoarse, that Ehitorujue who was right nearby missed it.

For Ehitorujue, Hajime was already an existence that solely existed to torment. A toy whose every hope had been crushed to nothing. There was no way he could do anything from here on, and so Ehito thought that small whisper was nothing more than Hajime's last lamentation, or possibly his pitiful cry that called on his beloved who didn't exist anymore.

Like that, intending to taste the nectar that was the last despair of human, Ehito brought his ear closer to Hajime's lips.

Hajime slowly opened his mouth. That was originally a chant that he didn't need to recite anymore. Be that as it may, it was Hajime's greatest weapon that was his lifeline until now, the word that showed his only talent.

"'Transmute'."

Instantly, Ehitorujue was about to say "what are you" with a scrutinizing suspicious look, but he was unable to do that.

The reason was,

"——Gaah, gahah!?"

Suddenly, countless blade flew out from Ehitorujue's chest.

Metal blades grew out like a mountain of blade soaked in blood, biting and tearing flesh from inside. That happened not only in Ehito's chest, but within an instant everywhere on Ehito's body there were blades flying out, furthermore the metals that were adjoining each other would be glued together using metal fragments from that came from somewhere unknown as an intermediary, restraining Ehitorujue's body gruesomely.

The strange phenomenon of blades flying out from inside the body caused Ehitorujue's thought to halt completely for a moment. That was just how shocking this surprise attack was combined with the conviction in his victory.

The blades piercing the body and the sparking crimson metal fragments which came from somewhere were physically obstructing Ehitorujue's movement together, the sealing stone component that seemed to be included in the metal hindered him from using magic, furthermore the very strangeness itself was halting his thought. The opening that was made from those lasted only for a few seconds.

But, that opening was invaluable. This moment was exactly the timing that Hajime had waited eagerly for, the true critical moment that he was aiming for.

"'Transmute-'!"

Once more Hajime yelled his own talent.

This magic was merely processing metal, that was all it could do. Right now, at a glance the metal that existed in this place was only the blades that flew out from Ehitorujue's body, no matter how there was no way this magic could work on an opponent who overcame even the 'godslaying'.

However, the broken right arm of Hajime——using direct operation of magic power he forcefully moved that broken hand to touch a spot…his own abdomen.

Immediately, crimson spark surged and at the same time blood soaked blade flew out from Hajime's stomach.

"——!?"

Ehitorujue gazed in astonishment. His astonishment didn't come from the fact that Hajime was hiding metal lump inside his stomach, or because that lump was now piercing open his own stomach.

He was astonished because he sensed the abnormal presence filling the flying out blade. His spine was having goosebumps, his instinct

was ringing the alarm bell noisily. This presence was undoubtedly the same presence like what he felt previously——a presence of concept magic.

In a world of instantaneous moment, Ehitorujue immediately tried to use Heaven Existence. However, the clusters of micro blades stirring up inside his body(blood vessel) obstructed his thinking and magic usage, even his automatic regeneration was slowed down. In addition, the metal shackle that had sewed through both his legs before he noticed prevented him from physically jumping away.

That opening which was exposed for less than a second was enough for Hajime's blade to reach. It was hard to understand because of all the blood, but the small knife that looked like toy contained god crystal, its transparent blade was clad in a deep crimson light which was thrust toward Ehito…and then, accurately the knife plunged into Ehitorujue's body.

Instantly the deep crimson magic power swelled up. At the center was Ehitorujue's body. At the same time Ehitorujue's scream resounded.

"GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!?"

A scream of uneasiness and agony that was impossible to come from merely getting stabbed by a small knife resounded. The blades that came out from inside his body were annihilated by platinum light and the restrain was undid, Ehitorujue then stepped back in staggers while holding his head and his body writhing in agony.

Ehitorujue's body began to *dokun, dokun!* pulsate.

That was the beacon of the awakening. The yell of determination that original owner of the writhing body was raising.

"Impossible-, the vampire princess should have been annihilated completely!"

Indeed, Ehitorujue had felt the soul vanishing in annihilation. Ehitorujue's face warped from the torrent of power welling up inside his body trying to push him out while he yelled the question

that expressed his bewilderment.

The one who answered that was Hajime. While his body was unable to even wake up, his mouth was showing a fierce smile.

“Yue was a cut above you, that’s all there is to it isn’t that right?”

“____”

Ehitorujue guessed from those words. That was to say, Yue’s annihilation was actually a feign that she intentionally showed to him. She feigned using up all of her strength before vanishing, and then she concealed her own soul and lurked at the deepest depth of the body.

She believed that in time help would surely come.

By any chance the scream that Ehitorujue heard might also be Yue’s acting performance.

“But, but-, why-!?”

Ehitorujue writhed, and finally he fell on his knee while holding his head before unconsciously whispering his indescribable question.

To that, Hajime pushed out his hand and he answered while running spark on his hand.

“The bullet of ‘godslaying’ shook your soul and awoke Yue’s soul. The ‘Blade of Blood Pledge’ severed your invading thought and granted strength to Yue.”

“What do you——, don’t tell me-“

Ehitorujue almost leaked out words of bewilderment for a moment there because he didn’t understand what Hajime meant, but he immediately made a shocked expression in understanding.

Hajime who saw that lifted the corner of his mouth further.

Concept magic ‘Godslaying’——that was a magic that exterminated only the soul with divinity without giving any influence at Yue’s

body. However, Hajime followed the warning of Miledy who gifted him with that power and didn't rely on it.

Therefore, he used it only for its special characteristic with the objective of supplementing his true trump card. That was to say the godslaying bullet gave a not small effect to Ehitorujue's soul even though it didn't become a lethal damage, which created an opening and woke Yue up, and then it also further gave the opening for Yue herself to wield her strength.

And then, Hajime's second blade(the true trump card) separated Ehitorujue and Yue's soul with certainty. Hajime was faintly opening the magic eye in his right eye was in order to ascertain that. The words "I found you" that he whispered faintly was because he had caught sight of Yue's soul that lurked in the deepest part of the body.

Artifact Blade of Blood Pledge(Blood Fea Rezvie)——that artifact which Hajime hid inside his stomach in round ore shape was enchanted with the concept of [Thy art forbidden to touch(Don't touch my woman)]. That was to say, this concept magic forbade interference to Yue's soul and severed the intervention that was already there.

The weakness of this magic was the point where it couldn't display its true worth if it didn't directly hit Yue's soul, because of that Hajime had to make the 'godslaying' hit with certainty no matter what, and so he had to go through that much hardships to reach this point…

Anyway, with this Yue's soul that was completely cut loose from Ehitorujue's influence was now in a state that was protected by a barrier, and so she could wield her power completely. Furthermore, this Blade of Blood Pledge(Blood Fea Rezvie) was intentionally made to have a hollow blade, using capillary phenomenon the blade was filled with a lot of Hajime's blood.

Yue's skill——the 'Blood Pledge Contract' drastically amplified the effect of blood sucking only from the sole partner that she designated. Using that skill, Hajime directly poured his blood through Blade of Blood Pledge(Blood Fea Rezvie) and strengthened

Yue's soul.

"You are saying, you are aiming for this-, right from the start!?"

"If I can overcome you using overwhelming resources, then that's great. But, what is at stake here is the life of my beloved. Isn't it obvious that I'm going to prepare two or three tricks for this?"

The power of Yue's soul was increasing in force second by second. It raged to chase away the foreign contamination from inside herself. This is my body, the only one who can touch it is just Hajime, the soul screamed. The platinum magic power that whirled violently flickered and the color of the radiance was changing to golden, that light was pulsating as though to display its determination and hit Ehitorujue's soul hard.

Ehitorujue was hallucinating. A pair of eyes slowly opened, and those crimson eyes of the beautiful figure of the vampire princess pierced him. the immense trust toward her beloved partner was dwelling in those eyes, that look eloquently told of how she had been waiting for this moment.

That meant that both Yue and also Hajime had the same feeling. Without using any will communication skill or artifact, they mutually understood what each other would do.

Ehitorujue thought. At that time, although he succeeded in hijacking Yue's body but he overlooked Hajime and let him gotten away after receiving resistance from Yue. He wondered if since that time by any chance he was dancing above the palm that was the bond of these two.

A tremendous humiliation and indescribable displeasure jarred Ehitorujue's mind. Ehitorujue then yelled with that raging heart.

"Don't underestimate me-, vampire princess-. This body is mine! I won't let any seed of anxiety in the future get left behind! I'll pinch and crush your soul for sure this time-. Then next it will be you-, irregular! Hahah, in front of my power a concept of just this level will——"

In actuality, even after being stabbed with Blade of Blood Pledge, the conflict between Ehitorujue and Yue's soul for the leadership of the body was in a stalemate. That was just how immense the soul of god that had been sublimated using the secret technique of faith conversion.

But,

"I thought you'd say that."

Ehitorujue's words were cut off by a single sentence, by a light tone as though everything was already within expectation.

"——Wha, t?"

Ehitorujue's eyes snapped wide open. That wasn't because his words were cut off.

It was because ahead of his gaze, there was the figure of Hajime still leaning on the tiered platform with his trembling right hand aimed at Ehitorujue.

And then, what was hard to believe for him, what he didn't want to believe, was that from the bullet clutched by that hand——there was a presence of a new concept magic that was emitted out.

Just from where in the world Hajime took out that bullet from? Looking from how the bullet was soaked in blood, perhaps it was hidden inside his body as expected.

"So, something like that, after this late! You don't even have artifact!"

Ehitorujue couldn't move his body from his struggle against Yue's soul, but even with unease oozing out on his expression he still yelled mockingly.

Indeed, even if Hajime possessed a bullet but without Donner or Schlag then he wouldn't be able to shot it. Hajime's legs were drilled through, looking from how those wounds were still not healed yet, he also shouldn't be able to directly strike it to Ehito.

But, Hajme was only too aware of such thing.

Hajime, for the third time, chanted his greatest magic.

“’Transmute’.”

Vivid crimson spread. It was spreading to the surrounding space and gradually the color was changing to thick deep crimson. At the same time, the held out bullet was glittering brightly in the hand clutching it and wind gathered. It was gradually forming a shape of something small.

“…Metal, particle?”

Ehitorujue whispered dumbfoundedly. That whisper was entirely spot on.

“I order to take back Yue with *certainty*, I estimated that at the very least three stages of a process are necessary. …I told you already. That I swore I’ll certainly take her back.”

“Don’t tell me, in the middle of that fight…then, you also aimed for this since the start…”

Why, in the middle of an instantaneous battle that he was forced to do, Hajime frequently used weapons with time lag like grenades and the like until he used them all up? Why, did the Grim Reapers and Cross Velts would explode everywhere even when they got hit by slashing attack? Just what was the metal that flew out from Ehitorujue’s body?

The answer was this——the metal particle.

The metal particles that were unseen by eyes and floated in the air made by disintegrating metal very finely were filled into all the grenades, Cross Velts, and the Grim Reapers. And then they were exploded and scattered everywhere through the whole area. Among the grenades there were also those that were filled with nothing but metal particles, among the eagle model Grim Reapers there were also individuals that were only scattering particles all the time.

In the middle of that battle, when Hajime judged that he couldn’t

overcome Ehito in a battle of resource, he *made a Cross Velt to be shot down* above Ehitorujue's head which caused metal particles to be scattered, Ehitorujue sucked in the particles and after Hajime confirmed that he didn't notice that, Hajime moved on to the second stage of the plan.

That plan was to give Ehito the impression that he was fighting desperately just to make his only trump card the 'godslaying' hit Ehito, but in fact he was sprinkling the metal particles that would become his transmutation material to the surrounding, for the sake of attacking and restraining Ehitorujue from inside his body. That was the second stage of the plan.

And then, the reason that the transmutation which should be unusable without touching the target could now transmute by gathering metal from wide range was because of the final derivative skill of transmutation, 'Convergence Transmutation'. This was one of the two things that Hajime obtained at the same time when he obtained the innermost secret of transmutation, the 'Imagination Composition' that Hajime was awakened to at that devil king castle.

The effect of this skill was simple. It would gather the metal at the surrounding and the user could transmute without touching it, that was all. It had a plainness that was fitting for a common job.

But, what would happen if it was used with the metal that was taken inside the body? Ehitorujue's lung and stomach that had absorbed a lot of the metal floating in the air were surely smeared with metal particles inside.

And then, that restraining using the artificial arm. Even the spikes that flew out from the artificial hand and stabbed Ehitorujue to bind him in place dissolved metal particles and poured it into his body. If those metal particles flowed into the bloodstream and then turned into splinters, it was self-evident that Ehitorujue would be hacked into pieces from inside.

"I got overwhelmed in the battle of resource. You showed me the gap between us at close quarter combat. I used all my trump cards, and went further than that. All of my hands(artifacts) were crushed. That was why…"

——you thought you had win right?

Hajime's mouth that split like a crescent moon diabolically and his words, proofed that Ehitorujue's conjecture was correct. Exactly because he was convinced of his victory, exactly because he had endured the trump card and became convinced that there was an overwhelming gap between him and Hajime, that Ehitorujue glued close to Hajime's body so defenselessly like that. He was convinced of victory and showed an opening.

Having that opening which was actually Hajime's true aim taken advantage of, and then taught that Hajime had been laying down preparations all the time in the middle of that breathtaking battle, and furthermore witnessing Hajime's mercilessness of hacking to pieces his body from the inside even though it was the body of his lover regardless of the possession, all of those factors greatly shaken Ehitorujue's mind with agitation. And what made it unbearable for Ehito was that agitation was then taken advantage of by the vampire princess.

While Ehitorujue was agitated and his mind split to handle Yue's attack, finally the converged metal particles took shape and became a tiny gun of a single shot. It had really small and simple make that couldn't be compared at all with Donner or Schlag.

Nevertheless, the bullet that was loaded into it was a lethal fang.

Hajime's fingers that should be broken were forcefully moved using magic power operation and fixed on the trigger.

Ehitorujue was roaring while annihilating the blades flying out from his body and the metal shackle coiling around his body, while also trying to move his body, possibly he was trying to teleport away. But, immediately the pulsation became a level fiercer and obstructed all of his efforts. Even the automatic regeneration's activation was stopped completely.

It was as though the pulsation was covering for Hajime's attack.

Surely, that wasn't just the imagination.

The blood soaked Hajime, with a fearless grin even now made the gun that looked like a small derringer pistol sparked with deep crimson electricity.

And then,

“I’m having her back. That woman, every single drop of her blood, every single strand of her hair, and even every single piece of her soul, everything is mine.”

The crimson flash pierced Ehitorujue who was screaming with a desperate face.

What was fired was the artifact Bullet of Blood Pledge(Blood Fea Bullet). The concept filled in it was [The Knitted Bond Into This Hand(I’m No Good Without You)]——this concept magic made the souls of Yue and Hajime that seek each other to resonance, it explosively strengthened Yue’s soul, at the same time it would forcefully tear off the joining of the foreign substance(soul) rooting inside the body, while at the same time granting horrific agony toward the intruder that felt like the nerves getting directly broiled.

“——!!”

A soundless scream. It was unclear whether in the end it was the scream that Ehitorujue raised, or else the loud scream of fighting spirit that Yue raised.

Right after that, a golden light exploded.

That color was far warmer and more vivid than the platinum radiance of before. It illuminated as though enveloping Hajime, making him feeling hopelessly heartrending. It was the light of his beloved without a doubt.

Right after that, two eyes opened as though awakening from the sleep. The striking rubies caught her beloved straight ahead.

And then, like a flower bud that was blooming proudly in its full glory, or possibly like the sun that showed its face by driving away the dark cloud, she displayed a bewitching smile that emitted glorious radiance.

Yue's body floated gently.

She was blood-soaked, but such thing did nothing except promoting her glamor instead. With her figure that gave and adult charm, her abundant golden threads fluttering softly, both her hands spread wide open as though in welcome, or possibly it was her desire to welcome, she leaped forward, such figure, just what kind of words in the world that could possibly be used to express it?

Like a goddess——such words felt so hopelessly clichéd for this.

Hajime was merely, with an earnestly affectionate expression, he gently narrowed his eyes while his hand reached slowly in order to grant the wish of his lover.

Yue leaped to there. She dropped her waist above Hajime softly just like silk floss, without letting him felt anything like weight, without stopping her face rubbed on his chest. Her arms that circled around him tiiiiiiightly constrained Hajime, wordlessly, as though she was pleading for the two of them to melt together into one.

Hajime too circled his arm around Yue and embraced her tightly. Thing like the pain at his arm or stomach, was so small like a hair strand compared to the pain of his heart when he was separated from her.

Before long, Yue lifted her face that was buried on his chest. Those eyes were moist in a display of the emotion filling inside her, the breath leaking out from that lovely pink lips was so hot that it felt scalding.

Hajime softly put his hand on the cheek of Yue that was dyed in rose color, while he gifted her with words overflowing with affectionate tone.

"I came to pick you up, my vampire princess."

"…Nn, I have faith. My demon king-sama."

Hearing the joking names they called each other with, both of them let out a chuckle smilingly.

The kiss happened naturally. Their lips were merely touching each other, yet it was a gentle kiss that carried their whole feeling. The taste of blood was entertaining. Yue's small tongue swiped out and licked the clotted blood pasted on Hajime's lips.

But, at that time, as though trying to tear apart once again the two who were gluing at each other, a tremendous killing intent along with an immense torrent of light assaulted them.

Immediately, Yue turned behind with only her upper body while pushing out her hand. Instantly a barrier of light was deployed.

There, a shockwave that creaked the space along with a bombardment of light crashed.

"…Nn-"

Yue slightly leaked out her voice. Her eyebrows frowned mightily.

Yue herself was also quite spent after chasing out Ehitorujue's soul, but this bombardment was filled with a force even more than that that made Yue's barrier creaked along with the space.

She didn't have any spare strength to use age of god magic. While Haijme was wounded all over his body and couldn't move.

Therefore they were determined. With that will, Yue continued to hold up the 'Holy Severance', and Hajime leaned close to her. There, words that sounded like curse filled with madness were resounding.

{Kill-, kill-, kill-, I'm going to kill you-, irregularrrr!}

At the other side of the barrier, at the origin of the light bombardment. Over there, a human form made from light itself was floating. At the spot that seemed to be the head of that floating light human form, the mouth was irregularly distorted in an expression of rage.

Even thought that figure was blurred, but they understood well who it was. Even though the voice was different, even with rage coloring the look, that oozing out vulgarity couldn't possibly be mistaken.

That lump of light was undoubtedly Ehitorujue.

Arifureta Chapter 177

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/178/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Bakapervert did the edits.

Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou (The World's Strongest By Common Job)

creak, crack The barrier that Yue deployed was cracking.

The bombardment of light was unceasingly increasing in power in order to annihilate anything and everything.

{This place is Holy Precincts. Despite my body is being only a soul right now, just overwhelming the exhausted you two is not a difficult matter-! I'll blast away irregular before the eyes of the vampire princess, and then, I'll plunder that body once more!}

Ehitorujue's voice echoed through the whole space.

Seeing how Ehitorujue didn't use both penetrating attacks like the divine sword or divine flame, or space crossing attack like lightning divine spear that used Heaven Existence, the damage from the conflict against Yue's soul and Bullet of Blood Pledge seemed to make Ehitorujue considerably exhausted.

But, even so the light bombardment was still tremendous. That was surely the original magic power light of Ehitorujue. From a glance, the light was radiant in a display of its divinity. But, it continued

endlessly just like a bombardment, loud laughter that contained rage and madness were making the divine aura of the light to end in vain.

{Come, stop your useless resistance and repent. Now that your last hope has been severed, there is already no meaning in anything that you do!}

The light swelled up. The cracks on ‘Holy Severance’ were gradually getting larger.

It seemed that Ehitorujue’s pride was greatly wounded from being done in by Hajime and Yue, to the degree that he didn’t give careful consideration for Yue’s body state with his attack. He was surely thinking that he could just use ‘Automatic Regeneration’ after he repossessed the body. Rather than that, he put more importance in creating a spectacle where Hajime got erased away in front of Yue’s eyes without her being unable to do anything.

It appeared that Ehitorujue was convinced that such tragic future would come true. Hajime who was wounded all over with his two trump cards, the concept magic used up couldn’t possibly have any reserve power anymore, he thought. Even the liberators where they had seven members before could only create three concept magic.

Hajime creating two concept magic could even be said as a miracle due to the strength of his feeling toward Yue.

For that reason,

“It’s the end with this, just who was saying that’s the case huh?”

{Still bluffi——}

Ehitorujue’s words stopped midway.

That was because behind the barrier, he saw the figure of Hajime floating a diabolical smile, his lips splitting widely like a crescent moon. Even though Ehitorujue didn’t have a flesh body, yet that expression made a chill to rush through his body.

“Yue.”

“…Nn. Leave it to me.”

The two were on the same page. Even without knowing at all regarding the detail about the card that Hajime had, Yue clearly understood what it was that Hajime wanted just like the back of her own hand. That was why, excessive word was unnecessary. With the resoluteness that this would be the last, Yue roared her magic power and poured strength into ‘Holy Severance’.

Metal particles converged on Hajime’s hand. What he was transmuting was a single bullet. There was nothing special in it at all, it was just a mere bullet.

However, there Hajime gritted his teeth audibly. And then with a ‘puih’ he spat out something, the last concept magic that he crammed and hid in one of his teeth——Reject All Existences(Anything and Everything, Just Disappear)

That concept magic which was thought to be lost together with the breaking down of the chain where it was enchanted in, Hajime somehow managed to use Convergence Transmutation to secure some of it even though he could only gather about the amount of his pinky finger, he then processed it and put it at the back of his teeth beforehand. It was for the sake of this time.

Hajime himself was surprised that the concept still remained when he gathered it even after the chain turned into very small pieces, but surely that showed just how extreme the emotion of emptiness that he felt when Yue was taken away. It was a terrifyingly deep emotion.

To the very end, the Blade of Blood Pledge and the Bullet of Blood Pledge were for the sake of rescuing Yue. Therefore, since the start, the finishing blow was intended to be carried out by this bullet of concept, filled with the pure wish of destruction. The tooth was small, but nevertheless it was emitting a definite presence, using transmutation the bullet was then got coating by it.

{That’s-}

“The reason Aruvheit died wasn’t because he was a god. He was

merely got dragged into my rampage when I snapped because you all laid your hand on Yue, that's all. Something like the concept of godslaying, there is no way I can create something like that don't you think?"

{You, you basta——}

Hajime corrected the misunderstanding that Ehitorujue had.

That whether it was Ehitorujue, or whether it was Aruvheit, Hajime didn't oppose them because they were 'god' that acted tyrannically in this world.

They incurred the wrath of Nagumo Hajime.

That was all there was to it, the reason that Ehitorujue and his conspirators got ruined.

Being informed that implicitly, Ehitorujue lost his words. Because he noticed, that for Hajime, there was not that much difference between him the god and the random monster that attacked Hajime.

Regardless of the overwhelming gap in power between them, but Hajime's attitude against Ehitorujue was exactly the same like how he treated all the opponents that came to crush him until now. That was, 'you are the enemy so I'll kill you'. Truly there was nothing special or anything in how Hajime acted against this god.

{Do, don't screw, you bastard-}

Ehitorujue talked with babbling words. The humiliation he felt was too great, and not only that, the concept that was now aimed at him was too atrocious, the black purpose that wanted to destroy Hajime right now without delay and his instinct that wanted to run away right now were struggling inside him.

That hesitation became fatal for him.

"This is checkmate, small fry."

With fearlessly crooked lips, Hajime loaded the bullet he held in his

mouth into the derringer pistol, and then he pulled the trigger without hesitation along with some sharp words. The loaded Existence Rejection bullet became a crimson flash that was fired. Yue made the barrier to be able to be passed through with a superb timing, regardless of the bombardment of light, the attack of destruction was annihilating what it touched from the outset.

Although it was too late, Ehitorujue chose the option to evade which displayed his unease but…

“I command under the name of Yue-, ‘Don’t move’!”

{Ridiculous-}

After having her body taken over, Yue felt the flow of power inside the body many times over, she watched and listened to its result. For the genius of magic that was counted as a part of the strongest people in a war-torn era when she was merely a ten years old, there was no reason that she would be unable to do that.

Her magic power had already reached the very bottom. But, so what, she scolded her mind that was blacking out with her strength of will, she forcefully twisted her body that was pleading to her that it was the limit and squeezed out magic power, she also circulated the magic power that she was consuming for ‘Holy Severance’ and activated the magic——Divine Statement.

Surely Ehitorujue never thought that his own magic would be used back on him even in his wildest dream. Compared to the Divine Statement that Ehitorujue used, what Yue used was somewhat of a shoddy quality, however, it still splendidly restrained the target.

{I am-, I am the god!! Irregulaaaaaar!!!}

A shriek.

The crimson flash of ruin approached. Even though there was no face, but it was clear to see. Ehitorujue right now was showing an expression of terror. The impossible scene, the unbelievable reality, the sound of his path that he believed, without a doubt, would continue for eternity was crumbling fragilely resounded.

However, no matter how much he was denying reality, no matter how godly he was, even though he yelled how absolute he was… emotionlessly, heartlessly, irrationally, the murderous roar that the monster raised destroyed anything and everything in this world.

That was the reality.

Therefore,

{———!!!!!!}

The crimson flash pierced through the torrent of light, erased the shriek, smashed the gruesome future——and penetrated the mad god's chests.

Soundlessly, the crimson flash disappeared toward the faraway white space.

The torrent of light dispersed, Ehitorujue trailed his hand on the hole gaping wide open in his chest. And then, he raised a wordless scream while his hands moved as though tearing off his chest, or possibly desperately attempting to plug off the hole, exposing a state that even made anyone felt pity to him.

{aaAA, ridiculous…such thing…impossible}

Although he leaked out words that denied the reality, his body of light was still crumbling with the hole on his chest as the center of the breaking down.

And then, at the end, with one more whisper of "…impossible", the light humanoid form that was Ehitorujue melted into empty air and vanished.

The radiance of 'Holy Severance' melted into the empty air at the same time before Yue limply fell down and sat on the ground femininely.

Hajime slowly lowered down the small gun.

Silence wrapped the area.

Other than the slightly rough breathing of Hajime and Yue, there was no sound at all.

Yue earnestly lifted up her eyelids that were trying to close even now while slowly looking back over her shoulder with a smile.

Toward that, Hajime too returned a smile…it was at that moment,

“Yue-!”

“____”

Hajime’s impatient voice resounded in warning.

To that Yue held her breath, at the same time a weird shrike that sounded unthinkable to come from this world resounded.

——*aaaAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!!!*

At the same time, an invisible violent impact became a storm that attacked the two.

Unable to even resist Yue was sent flying, sending her on Hajime’s chest with her back to him. Haijme immediately circled his hand around Yue and twisted his body, covering her from the shockwave with his own body.

Thunderous sound.

That was the sound of the tiered gallery Hajime was half buried into getting pulverized into small pieces. It was lucky that he wasn’t pressed by the impact onto the chalk white wall, but it didn’t change that the abnormal shockwave was showering on him.

Hajime kept covering Yue in his embrace while he got blown away like a leaf toyed by a storm along with the wreckages of the tiered gallery, he then got bounced on the ground many times before he finally stopped.

“Guh, gahah, Yue-…”

“…Nnh, Ha, jime…”

Hajime called to Yue while vomiting blood everywhere. Yue only got a little damage because Hajime covered for her, but even so she seemed to be injured to the degree that she was unable to properly move.

Both of them linked their hand together and somehow stood up by supporting each other. And then, they observed the surrounding while sweating coldly.

“Oi oi, what the hell is that…”

“Haa haa…looks like…the Holy Precincts itself, get affected.”

Exactly as Yue said, here and there cracks entered the white space, there were also spots that looked twisted like jelly, showing that the space was clearly getting unstable. At the distorted spots, sights of unknown worlds, familiar worlds, and the scene of the surface were projected and disappeared, the sceneries were repeatedly projected and vanished.

And then, the source of the weird shriek and tremendous shockwave was…

“…Actually, the last boss, still has two transformations left…is this something like that? Well, in a sense, this is a normal template though.”

“…Nn. He is, already, just a monster…”

At the place where Hajime and Yue’s gaze were directed, clad in muddy black miasma that was being spouted out from the distorted space, or possibly it was absorbing the miasma, even now *the thing that was* Ehitorujue was raising a strange shrieking voice.

{uuu, AA, aa――――}

As though getting attracted by that extremely unpleasant groan which rubbed the mind of the listener the wrong way, miasma was gathering endlessly from the distorted space at the surrounding, from inside the miasma they could perceive figures that seemed to be monster or apostle. But, all those figures were being sucked into Ehitorujue without showing any resistance at all while staring

blankly into empty air.

And then, there was more unpleasant sound resounding. *beki-, gokyu, gucha, boki-* Just like the sound of bone and bone grinding at each other, or like flesh and flesh crushing each other, graphic sounds were echoing from inside the miasma.

At the same time, intermittent words were spreading with echoes.

——Don't want…to die-, don't want, to…di…e

——Why…eno, ugh…you, said…I don't, understand…don't, want… to, die-

——Etern, nal……ly…everything…

——Go, d…I, be…come…god, already…ye, t…why…

——Mis…taken, no…..such, thing, I, am the…

——O, bey…everything…..break…sma, sh…

——Cho…ke, ye…ll…lament…gri, ef…

——Don't, want…don't, wanna…di, e-

Those words were an obsession to life, a deep resentment toward others, a childish self-righteousness, a vulgar self-conceit, merely an inexcusable outburst of anger.

But, whether it was the feeling of not wanting to die, or even the feeling of wanting to become alone and destroy anything and everything…it was something that he really didn't want to acknowledge that he felt disgusted from the bottom of his heart but, Hajime could understand those feelings completely.

His heart changed at the bottom of the abyss thinking that other people were worthless, he pawed on the ground to survive even by slurping blood and flesh. When Yue was stolen, he rampaged wildly and even created a concept that brought about extreme destruction from his empty feeling.

“…That is, by some chance, if I…wasn’t able to meet Yue and others…that——”

Might be me. The lips of Hajime that were going to murmur that were blocked by the slender index finger of Yue.

And then, she silently shook her head and gently denied it with a whispering voice.

“…Hajime is different from that. …Even that thing, surely had people who thought of him, someone that he ought to reach out to, and also someone that reached out to him. The result of not looking back on those, is that.”

Yue’s crimson eyes gently squinted.

“…The path, Hajime has walked until now. That is Hajime’s everything.”

Even when his heart changed, the scream that was raised at the bottom of the abyss reached him. Even while saying that the matter of this world was inconsequential, in the end, he saved a lot of people. The path that he had walked like that stopped Hajime’s rampage.

That was why, even though the two might look similar, but the two of them were completely different.

That was why, Yue said, don’t look down on my Hajime.

She told that. Conveyed that to him.

“…If that’s what Yue said, then that must be so.”

“…Nn-“

Hajime made a wry smile from basking in sentimentality in the middle of this absolute great crisis of all place, and also from being scolded at this very late hour. Toward such Hajime, Yue also smiled gently.

Even while they were doing that, the thing that was Ehitorujue

continued to spout out his selfish emotion that was unbearable to listen on, on the contrary, its soul was absorbing the miasma and the ruins of monsters and apostles with terrific momentum.

Ehitorujue was obviously losing sanity. Thinking from how the space was getting unstable, the cause wasn't only because of the previous shockwave, obviously the cause was from Ehitorujue's abnormality. In other words, that meant that the bullet of Existence Denial had certainly granted a lethal damage to Ehitorujue.

Even so he didn't vanish, in his rejection he took in the miasma and the monsters into himself to compensate for his vanishing existence, this was surely Ehitorujue's earnest desire of survival and the strength of his obsession for control.

Ehitorujue that could vanish anytime was holding out only with his tenacity, however, Hajime and Yue didn't have any way to give him the finishing blow.

Their magic power had dried up, they were wounded all over and unable to even stand up properly.

The trump cards that Hajime prepared had been all used up. Hajime could do nothing but smiling bitterly toward that fact. Truly, this world's difficulty level was a bit too hard to be expressed with the word of fantasy which was packed with dream and hope.

But, at that time, the miasma that was covering the area around Ehitorujue ruptured and blew off.

The thing that was Ehitorujue was still enveloped in whirling black mist, but now his full figure could be seen clearly.

"That is seriously a monster huh."

"…Nn. Rather that looks pitiful."

The impression of the two was frank.

What was there was a lump of meat. Flesh, bone, and skin of several races were haphazardly combined with limbs jutting out from the wriggling meat lump. Several tentacles were undulating,

looking extremely grotesque. That figure would make people lost their sanity and felt like vomiting just by its appearance.

The thing that was Ehitorujue which was reduced into that meat lump suddenly shrieked.

——*GiiaaaAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!!!*

A storm immediately blew violently. Black miasma whirled, invisible shockwaves that centered on the meat lump blew away the chalk white ground.

The shockwave was emitted radially without any direction, even so it hid a force to the degree that even Hajime and Yue who were already thrown to considerable distance were blown away even further.

Hajime and Yue were blown away while leaking out agonized voice, even then their linked hands didn't let go no matter what while they struck the ground. Hajime shrugged in exasperation even while his expression distorted from pain and he gave instruction to Yue.

"Yue, suck my blood."

"…-, but"

"It's fine."

Hajime's words made Yue hesitated. Hajime said that it was fine, but there was no way that was true. He was already bleeding to the degree until one of his feet was already inside the grave, or possibly it had already surpassed even that. The wound on his stomach and also the wounds on both his legs weren't treated yet or anything. Hajime had tightened his muscles and held back his bleeding, but he was in a state that it wouldn't be strange for his heart to stop anytime from bleeding too much.

He was holding on to his consciousness, and even now he was wracking his mind in order to survive, to kill his enemy, he was able to do those thanks to his tough body that could be earnestly titled as a monster. Even so his condition was really on the brink. If

here Yue sucked his blood, that might really become the finishing blow for him.

At far away, Ehitorujue was raising a roar that shaved on sanity once more. The space fiercely distorted each time with the shockwave destroying the chalk white world. Furthermore, the undulating tentacles could also be seen wandering searching for prey. At this rate, it was clear they would die without doing anything. Even so, Yue was still hesitating, to that Hajime showed her a smile.

That smile, was the bold and fearless smile that always made Yue's chest to tighten. His canine was bared, his eyes gleamed fiercely, the ally gave immense trust to that smile, and the enemy was granted with a traumatic shudder by that smile, the smile of the demon that made the vampire princess as its slave.

"Didn't I tell you? This is the template. Do you think, that I didn't foresee this kind of situation?"

"Hajime…"

"Indeed, all my trump cards are used up. However, there is still the prepared *finished product*, see?"

Yue already didn't have any word. Aa, truly, this person that I loved…was really diabolical. Such feeling throbbed loudly in her chest, Yue leaked out a feverish breath and she nodded briskly.

And then, while she felt the sensation of Hajime's arm that was embracing her tightly, she put her teeth on his neck. The flowing in blood recovered Yue's magic power for just slightly——no, at the next moment, a terrific pulsation came. *dokun dokun*, a really slight amount of blood that normally wouldn't do anything for her was now restoring Yue with a momentum that was far surpassing the effect of 'Blood Pledge Contract' or anything else.

The reason for that was one.

——Yue exclusive artifact　Nagumo Hajime

Blood that had the effects to sublimate Yue's 'Blood Pledge

Contract' by several levels, to make the skill 'Limit Break' be possible, and then with the iron content of the blood abundantly bestowed with the ingredient of cheatmate, such blood liquid was flowing inside Hajime's body.

By assuming a situation where he lost all his artifacts, where the taken back Yue was in exhaustion, and in addition the Bullet of Denial Existence was unable to kill the opponent, Hajime prepared himself to be the exclusive artifact of Yue. Exactly like the naming, this artifact was a secret treasure class artifact that brought about power and recovery which surpassed even the god water limited only for Yue.

"…Nna"

Feeling the extremely sweet and burning pleasure from inside her body, Yue unintentionally leaked out a heavy gasp. But as though sensing that recovery of Yue, countless tentacles shot out with a blur from Ehitorujue. The tips of those tentacles were sharp, what they touched would surely get pierced in one attack.

Yue separated her mouth from Hajime's neck and she directed one of her hands like a shield toward the approaching tentacles. Immediately, the space before her eyes distorted.

The tentacles rushed there.

But, all of them didn't reach the two. It was because the distorted space swallowed everything. No, more accurately the tentacles were dismissed into another space.

In order to build a reliable defense using little magic power, Yue made use of the unstable space. Yue didn't have the power to create a gate using space magic from zero that shut out the space, and so, in that case she just needed to create a gate to a different world using the space that was already shaking. If it was only expanding a hole in space that was already open, then it wouldn't consume that much strength.

After Yue confirmed that the barrier of space dismissal had displayed a reliable effect, she moved her gaze to Hajime once

more.

Hajime's eyes were beginning to lose focus slightly. As expected, his limit was coming just by sucking the slight amount of blood just now. His face was growing pale, even now his consciousness looked like it would fell off anytime along with his eyelids. He was in a state that was barely clinging on consciousness by concentrating on the pain of his wound.

To Yue who was supporting his body, Hajime talked to her with a hoarse voice, nevertheless strength could be felt from that voice without any sign of giving up.

"Yue…you can, recover me…to a certain degree, right?"

"…Nn"

"I have…no card left. But…if there, is none――"

"…it just needs to be made."

Understanding Hajime's intention, Yue manipulated the space while continuing his sentence. To that Hajime made a faint smile and continued.

"…Destroy, that guy――"

"The concept, will be created right now. But, with only the magic power of me alone, it's still insufficient."

"With metamorphosis…magic. Make me――"

"-…subordination. Because there is blood in me"

Hajime grinned widely. This plan that made her wondered just how far he had predicted, and then the great recklessness in it, yet with his tremendous faith to her as the premise of the plan right from the start, made Yue unable to say anything anymore.

"…The material?"

"My, eye."

Obeying Hajime's instruction, Yue's slender fingers were held aloft above Hajime's right eye, and then, the fingers plunged in all at once. A groan slightly leaked from Hajime, but Yue unhesitatingly pulled out her fingers while her lips tightened into a straight line.

On her palm was a small bluish-white crystal. The magic eye stone.

"Yue…plea, se."

"…Nn. Leave it to me."

Like that the rite of metamorphosis began.

In order to obtain the necessary magic power, Yue sucked Hajime's blood further which weakened him more and more. Hajime looked really frail that it wouldn't be strange for his heartbeat to stop anytime.

But, the moment Yue's hand touched Hajime's chest, fierce heartbeat sound resounded as though an electric shock had just been applied there. *dokun, dokun!* Pulsating heartbeat was increasing in strength second by second.

That was a magic that transformed Hajime into a vampire just like Yue. It had the same principle like how Tio transformed another monster into her underling. If a frail and delicate human that was different from monster was used, normally that human wouldn't come out of it safely, not to mention if it was a metamorphosis magic that changed a human's race, the difficulty was of the highest degree.

From how Tio who was an expert of characteristic magic dragonification which had the origin from metamorphosis magic needed the black slave whip for assisting her success, it was clear to see just how difficult this grand magic was. And now Yue who wasn't particularly skilled at metamorphosis magic was using something like that to a human target without any training beforehand.

Yue was a rare genius, but this magic had the possibility of success existed only because the target was Hajime who possessed inhuman

toughness in body and mind. No, surely from the beginning Hajime who proposed this method was convinced that this would succeed. It was because of his trust from the bottom of his heart toward Yue.

The meat lump of Ehitorujue could be felt approaching lumpingly from far away. That was surely the countdown toward their death.

Because Yue split her strength for the metamorphosis magic, her control of the space became lax and several tentacles began to graze their body.

But, even in such an extreme situation, her beloved monstrous partner perfectly responded and bewitched her.

“Yu, e-“

“…Nn. Come here, Hajime.”

Hajime exposed his canine tooth with his pupil dyed crimson like Yue’s, and he bit at Yue’s smooth nape that looked so slender it felt like it would break when touched. And then, Hajime converted the blood into strength using the special trait of the vampire.

“…Nnaa”

Each time Hajime’s throat sounded, a sweet feverish breath escaped Yue’s mouth.

Even though she understood that strength was leaving her body, and even though she understood that now wasn’t the time for that, “more”, yet she was thinking of something like that.

Amidst the resounding sweet gasping voice, Hajime’s magic power was recovering in the proportion of the amount of blood flowing out.

However, Yue thought while feeling impatience.

(Not enough…)

Yes, it wasn’t enough. It really wasn’t enough to create a concept magic no matter what. With an amount of magic power that was

even far from enough for Hajime's complete recovery, it wouldn't be sufficient to create a concept for finishing off the monster of the Holy Precincts which was getting close to them even now.

The limit of the blood flowing inside her would reach the limit soon. She was also grasping the amount of Hajime's recovery. At this rate, they would have no other choice than putting a stake of sink or swim with their insufficient magic power. In addition that stake would be one with a considerably bad odd.

"It's fine. Do you think, that the artifact(me) which is dedicated to you is only at this level?"

Perhaps looking at the impatience displayed on her face, Hajime who separated from Yue's neck was saying such thing while he leaned forward to plunder Yue's lips this time. And then, "nnu" Yue's lip that was leaking small voice was wounded by Hajime's canine tooth, at the same time, Hajime's own lip also got cut.

Like that, while they were kissing each other repeatedly, it came.

GOU-!!

Magic power swelled up with terrific force.

The magic power that should be a step from drying up burst out from Yue and whirled in gold color. At the same time, a tremendous magic power that was unimaginable coming from the recovery amount just now also burst up from Hajime. With the two as the center, a torrent of magic power climbed as though piercing the heaven, no, it was actually piercing the space of Holy Precincts and pierced toward the heaven with violent blowing.

Golden and crimson entangled with each other, as though expressing the relationship between the two people, they mixed with each other, forming a complete harmony that raged violently.

——Particle style artifact 'Vow of Entwined Branch'

Hajime's blood that was turned into an artifact, and the metal particle that Yue took into her body. This metal particle was actually an artifact that activated only when under the prescribed

condition. The effect and activation condition of this artifact was, the two who had tied the contract of blood pledge could then convert blood into power in a chain reaction with the two of them turned into artifact for each other and they exchanged blood with each other. The strengthening effect would continue endlessly until they stopped exchanging blood(kissing).

"…ahn"

The swelling power, and the happiness of intermingling with her beloved, it caused Yue to moan while her body was trembling. Hajime was also in the same state. The vampire princess in his embrace was so hopelessly lovely that he slightly repeated the blood tasted kiss.

The former shadow of Ehitorujue had arrived until right nearby them. It emitted an immense shockwave along with its tentacles.

——*aaaAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!!!*

Toward that, Yue canceled the distorted space without even directing her eyes there.

She did that because she understood that such thing wasn't necessary anymore. To display that, the golden and crimson magic power towered high like a protective wall. And then, at the next moment, the magic power released a tremendous shockwave that neutralized all shockwaves from the meat lump. It was the 'Impact Conversion' by Hajime.

Even during that time, the two were still gluing earnestly close with each other.

The figure of the Holy Precincts monster that was left alone, to be frank was pitiful.

Unable to forgive that, Ehitorujue increasingly emitted an extremely unpleasant strange sound while unleashing severe attacks.

While repelling all of those with magic power impact, Hajime and Yue who were accompanied by the tremendous magic power that already swelled up to the degree that it might destroy the white

space, slowly separated their lips. The silver bridge hanging down between the two looked really captivating.

The sweet atmosphere of the two already far surpassed the territory of being out of place, however, people who could obstruct them didn't exist anywhere in this world.

Both of them kept hugging, their hands softly overlapped. Between them there was the magic eye stone that was partly made from god crystal, and the tiny gun that Hajime didn't let go at all even when they were sent flying.

And then, Hajime's trump card(commonness) was chanted.

"'Transmute'!"

Right after that, golden and crimson melted into each other, and light so bright as though a sun was created manifested.

That beautiful and powerful radiance made the Ehitorujue monster to writhe and draw back. It was as though it hated that warm light.

The light was converging.

At its other side, there was the figure of Hajime pushing out his hand toward Ehitorujue with fierce eyes that glared sharply. A small gun was clutched in that hand.

The terrible exhaustion was causing the worn-out right hand to tremble all over, unable to fix the aim. That hand was scooped out from below softly and supported by a graceful hand. It was Yue's hand.

While snuggling close to each other, both of them readied a single small gun. The running sparks were crimson and golden. The sure-kill bullet that would end everything was buzzing, impatiently waiting to be fired.

What was filled into that bullet was unmistakably a concept magic.

——GIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIII-!!!

Ehitorujue madly unleashed its tentacles. It instinctually comprehended the mighty power that was aimed at it.

But, there was no way such random attack could go through the golden and crimson the two were clad in, all of those were easily swept away by the impact of magic power.

And then,

“Giving victory to a man with a kiss, that’s really heroine-like huh, Yue.”

“…Nn. Hajime plucking off the victory at the end without fail, is just like a hero.”

Both of them were talking frivolously while aiming the brilliantly shining gun right at the middle of Ehitorujue.

“Well, putting that aside, there is one thing I want to say to that.”

“…Nn-“

For a moment, both of their eyes met. The fearless smile was floating on their respective face.

The spoken words were the concept of the newborn concept, the words that returned the favor toward the repeated calamities that were wretchedly forced on them. And then, surely, these words also represented the feeling of the people that were toyed around by Ehitorujue in the past.

“ “——The Scattered Pains Right Back Toward You(now you really have done it you shitty bastard-)” “

Soundlessly, a streak of light cut through the air.

That stabbed right in the middle of Ehitorujue without the slightest deviation.

Concept magic The Scattered Pains Right Back Toward You——this magic returned all the pain and wounds that the target had given to other people until now.

Just like the holy man that was once pierced by a holy spear on the hill of Golgotha, the thing that was once a god spurted out blood in a large amount from the wound opening. Although, the flowing out blood wasn't something holy like that holy man, but something muddy black which looked sticky and unpleasant.

While the lump of meat was crumbling, the agglutinated mere shadow of Ehitorujue a beat later was,

——*GIAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA*

It raised a hair-rising shriek.

And then at the next moment, flesh and blood exploded to everywhere, silver magic power mixed with muddy black miasma climbed to the sky.

That was undoubtedly the scream of the death agony of the mad god. The repeated inhumanity that it had piled up for a few thousand years, or possibly tens of thousands of years were all returned to its own body. Although it had been reduced to a monster without any reasoning, it surely felt the pain of tens of thousands of years within an instant where even the torment of hell would feel lukewarm in comparison.

The flash that contained a shriek within pulverized the space, and it came out to the familiar dark red space at the other side.

Without any doubt, that must be the last scenery of Ehitorujue, the god of this world.

"…"

"…"

Hajime and Yue had no word.

They were merely staring at the last light of Ehitorujue that was vanishing toward the empty space that was gradually getting smaller. The gun their hand was holding couldn't endure the burden and crumble into pieces.

The palms that weren't holding anything now naturally held each other, their faces looked at each other. The magic power was already dispersing and the area around the two was quiet. Both of them had used up their stamina and magic power and everything else, they supported each other's body leaning to one another and embraced the other party closely. And then, they smiled softly.

Perhaps because the creator of the place was gone, the white space began to rumble. The unstable space was gradually getting stormy, here and there breaking down was starting. Hajime ascertained the state of the surrounding and themselves and then he opened his mouth with a bitter expression.

"This is, bad. This doesn't seem, to be the time, for looking… melancholic."

"…Nn. Hajime, you can stand?"

"…Chih, my legs…not just that, my whole body, cannot move satisfactorily. Yue, you?"

"…Just sitting…take my all"

Both of them looked at each other and smiled wryly. It appeared that the true pinch only came after they consigned the god to oblivion.

"My bad, Yue. …The truth is, after killing Ehito, I planned, to wait for recover…and then used the particles…for creating gate key but…"

"…Nn. Doesn't seem we will have that much time. There is, not even a drop of blood left to exchange."

"Yeah. Besides…the particles themselves, are swallowed…by the unstable space, there is none remaining. At the worst case, I expected to use…the bone of the arm, or the leg…to make one-time use artifact…but…"

The crumbling of Holy Precincts was too fast that they wouldn't make it in time if they wait for recovery, that caused Hajime's expression to turn sour as though he had bitten a bitter bug. It

wasn't like he hadn't imagined it, but Ehitorujue's excessive obstinacy was to the degree that made Hajime had no extra leeway, that he had to pour all his strength to defeat him. Because of that, the composure to spare some recovery medicine, and also the blood for magic power conversion had run out already.

At the very end, Hajime curse inside his heart to himself "I'm an idiot", however, there was not even a bit of despair in himself.

"To end…after coming this far…is unacceptable. We are going home, even if we need to crawl-"

"…Nn-"

They lent each other their shoulder and advanced bit by bit literally by crawling on the crumbling white world. They were walking slowly without any progress, but there wasn't even a drop of the color of resignation in their eyes.

Even so, the reality was always callous, the crumbling of the surrounding was getting increasingly intense, approaching to swallow them altogether with their determination. Ahead of Hajime's gaze, there was a veil of light that appeared unnoticed. That was the exit and entrance of this space.

The crumbling was approaching. Death was sneaking near. They desperately advance toward the veil of light.

But, the veil of light collapsed before their eyes.

"Shit-"

"…Hajime."

Witnessing the path of their escape vanishing into sands, a curse leaked out spontaneously from Hajime's mouth. The hand of Yue that was grasping Hajime's hand clutched tightly to soothe him that was like that.

"…We are blocked from every direction. What's left, is only…to gamble."

“…Nn. Leap into, the crumbling space.”

There was already no other choice but that. Just like what Shia and others almost did, Hajime and Yue would also aim for the scenery of the surface that became visible sometimes and leaped right toward the crumbling space itself in a desperate gamble.

But, no matter how it was unthinkable that they would have future by doing that. It was a mad attempt that wouldn’t even be a gamble. If an example had to be made, it was something like someone who was holding a bomb was trying to skillfully use the explosion so they might be able to be sent flying to far away. Even before thinking about being sent flying, there was no assurance that they wouldn’t be turned into small pieces beforehand.

But, even so they didn’t have the slightest intention to give up.

“…Yue.”

“Nn?”

“I love you.”

“Nn-, me too…I love you.”

With a calm condition that was unthinkable to come from people who were in front of a crumbling space, both of them expressed their feeling to each other. At last, the safe spot also became gone. The crack was also entering into the spot where the two were at.

Like that, *creak* an unpleasant sound resounded below them, both of them resolved themselves and they were going to leap into the space where the surface was visible, it was at that moment

{Choa———! Appearing at a miraculous timiiing, the beautiful warrior, Miledy Raisen-tan☆ Has arrived! The one who is calling for me is you two isn’t ittt? Isn’t ittt?}

Something came out.

“ “…” “

Hajime and Yue's eyes turned into dot spontaneously.

However, without paying any mind to such pair, the intruder opened her mouth with jetting up tension.

{What's with thiiiisss, even though I have come with great pain to save you two from something like a piiinchhh, just where is the reactiooonn. Miledy-chan is going to cry here! I'm going to go hics hics, glance glance you knooow?}

"…Annoying."

"…Nn. This is certainly Miledy."

The staggering annoyingness finally lets the two to accept the spectacle in front of their eyes as reality. And then when they looked around, it seemed that the crumbling had been held back before they realized it.

"This is…your doing?"

{Fufun, I guess. Something this much is really easy for the liberator Miledy-chaaannn. Although I say that, it won't last for more than several minutes though☆}

"…By any chance, you can, escape?"

{But of courseee! I came here after tossing away Rabbit-chan and others to the surface already see☆ What's left is only you two pyon! As expected, me! What an able woman-! Yes, applause applause!}

The smiley mask was sparkling with some kind of mechanism while saying that kind of thing, putting aside how annoying the words were, the two of them were seriously feeling admiration and gratitude to Miledy. But at the same time, Hajime and Yue also became endlessly vexed.

But, Miledy's next words broke the half-smiling face of the two.

{Hoi, this is the Degraded Arrow of World Crossing, the last one of it. It's a defective product that is usable only in this kind of unstable space, but it should be enough for escaping. Next, a healing

medicine for service! This should recover you to the degree that you can activate the arrow's ability pyon! After you two drink that quickly gooo from here! Gooo! Leave the rest to Onee-san okaaayyy☆}

"…And you? You aren't, going to get out with us?"

Glancing at the thrown Degraded Arrow of World Crossing which Yue caught, Hajime threw his question at Miledy. Because from her speech it was as though Miledy was going to stay behind in this crumbling space.

That guess appeared to be correct.

{Yep, I'm staying hereeee. If this kind of codswallop space is left alone, the surface will also get swallowed and cause a chaining crumbling after all. I'm going to straighten this up.}

"…From how, you speak…it's like you are going to die here."

Thanks to the healing medicine, Hajime had recovered to a degree that he could indeed activate the artifact, he then asked with a tone that had turned somewhat smoother.

Miledy answered to that question frankly.

{Yep. My, the plan is for my Super Secret☆Magic to guide the crumbling of Holy Precincts and compress it pon pon. The space is on the verge of breaking down, if this body of mine and my soul are used as a medium to magnify my magic power then it will be enough. That's why, I'll end here.}

"Self-sacrifice? That doesn't suit you. Rather than that――"

Hajime whose nerves were rubbed the wrong way by the resigned speech was going to argue vehemently, but then a blonde beautiful girl around fourteen, fifteen years old appeared overlapping the Miledy-golem. It seemed to be the projection of soul, this must be the original appearance of Miledy.

In contrast with her joking around tone, that girl figure of Miledy was putting an extremely satisfied and also gentle expression

toward Hajime and Yue.

{This is juuust self-satisfaction. My promise with my comrades, with my important people——'Let's destroy the evil god and save the world!' reaalllly, that sounds like a fairy tale and it looks stupid, but we exchanged that promise seriously, I want to fulfill it, that's all pyon.}

"…"

{At that time, we couldn't do anything and lost, everyone became scattered, but thinking 'even so', we created the great labyrinths… right now, in this time, in this place, is where I'll use my whole strength for the sake of people, this is exactly the reason that I survive for this long mon.}

Hajime and Yue listened quietly to Miledy's words that sounded like a monolog. The reason Miledy wanted to do this wasn't because she wanted to bask in the joy of cheap self-satisfaction, they comprehended that right now in this time, Miledy was going to realize the feeling that she had continued to hold in her heart from so far in the past that they couldn't even imagine.

Looking at such pair, Miledy narrowed her eyes with even more and more gentleness.

{Thank you, Nagumo Hajime-kun, Yue-chan. For granting our dearest wish. For using our magic correctly.}

"…Nn. Miledy. Your magic is the most useful."

{Kufufu, naturally! After all it's me! What I said before was also like that right? 'As long as you keep being you, you will achieve godslaying without fail', I said.}

"…'You can just live following your wish. After all, your choice will surely be the best for this world', you also said that. Was my choice the best for this world?"

{Of course! Presently, after all, that shitty bastard has been blown away until beyond that world, and I am right here! And then this dreg of a life can be used now for the sake of people following my

oath. …Finally, I can head to where everyone is in peace.}

Surely if this was a flesh body than glittering things would be overflowing from the corner of Miledy's eyes. That was just how intense the flood of emotions that Miledy's words were filled with, which made them thought that.

{Nooow, both of you. Soon it will be the limit for me to hold back the crumbling pyon. You two need to return back to the place of the people waiting for you. I too, will head toward the place where there are people waiting for me.}

The stagnating space was beginning to rumble once more.

Even while staggering, Hajime and Yue stood up somehow thanks to the healing medicine, the two of them activated the Degraded Arrow of World Crossing that was clutched by Yue's hand while staring back straight at Miledy.

"…Miledy Raisen. My greatest respect to you. Many months and years have elapsed, yet, there is not a single scratch on that strength of will. That determination is the best article under the heaven beyond any doubt. Oscar Orcus. Naiz Guryuen. Mail Meljine. Laus Vaan. Ryuteris Haltina. Vandour Shune. I will never forget, you and your important people."

"…Nn. There wasn't a single thing, of the path of the struggles of you all that was pointless. We will impart it to the next generation, without fail."

{Both of you…wha, what's with you twoooo. Like that, I, cannot say anything at all! If you said something like that! Come on, this is really the limit! Just get lost already, get lost!}

Her expression looked embarrassed somehow, and yet it also seemed to be almost overwhelmed with emotion. Miledy faced away with a huff and she waved her hand to shoo them off.

The rumbling was getting fiercer and fiercer, the crumbling was beginning to approach once more.

Hajime and Yue displayed a faint smile at Miledy who wouldn't

meet their eyes while advancing to the edge of the crumbling chalk white surface. And then, they nodded at each other.

“Good bye, protector of the world.”

“…Sayonara.”

Saying that the two leaped down toward the crumbling space that looked like an abyss.

Miledy that was left behind sighed “Fuuuu”.

{Protector of the world, is it. Thaaat feels itchy. Saying that at the very end, is just foul. …Should I think of it, like a payback or something.}

While talking to herself, a black whirling sphere was created with her body as the center. While the sphere was sparking with something like black thunder, Miledy quietly lifted her gaze to the center of the black star of calamity.

Before she knew it, there, she could see the figures of her important people that didn’t lose color no matter who many months and years passed.

{Everyone…}

There was no word that came back. Perhaps this was the revolving lantern before one’s death, or just her hallucinating.

But, such thing was inconsequential.

{What, so you all came to pick me up. Ehehe, then, perhaps I should say it. Finally, I guess I can say it!}

The star of calamity was swallowing anything and everything at the surrounding. Other magic like ‘Severance Calamity’ or whatever couldn’t compare with this. It swallowed everything and pulverized them inside, yes, so to speak this was a black hole.

While the golem artifact which was used as the medium was vanishing without a trace, Miledy’s soul yelled with a voice and

expression that were the very picture of innocence.

{Everyoneee, I'm homeee——!!}

At the next moment, the white space was soundlessly annihilated along with all light.

Part 2

The silver angels were falling down to the ground one after another like falling star, the dark red world was rumbling unceasingly, above where the sky should be visible originally, reversed other worlds could be seen wobbling dangerously. Those reversed many worlds could be seen starting to crumble from a glance.

The end of the world.

Such words passed through the brain of the people of the allied force. Even though the apostles who wielded furious might had stopped functioning, but they honestly couldn't feel happy because of the scream that the world raised which they felt.

"Aa, god…"

Someone whispered so.

In front of the collapse of the world, the sword in their hand felt really tiny. Everyone was merely staring at the shaking above worlds in a daze without being able to do anything else.

At that time, a dignified voice resounded. It wasn't someone like a god that couldn't be seen or anything. But it was someone who was right on their side, the 'Goddess of Harvest' that had struggled through the line of death together with them——the voice of Hatayama Aiko.

{Everyone, there is no need to despair! That person is over there! Right now, even in this moment, he should be fighting that evil god! The apostles falling, the worlds in the sky breaking, they all are the proof of the evil god's suffering! That's why-, let's pray! For

the victory of that person! For the victory of mankind-! Now, match your voice! Let's show our will!}

The battlefield fell as silent as grave.

Aiko's words weren't something that came from the speech compilation Hajime gave her. The proof of that could be seen from how she was calling Hajime as 'that person' rather than 'my sword'. It was undoubtedly a yell that came from Aiko's own heart. Those words displayed Aiko's will that believed on the safety of Hajime and others, and also of their victory.

The one who responded first was Liliana.

{To victory-!}

The lovely voice which was amplified with artifact echoed on the battlefield.

And then, the one who hailed at that voice with a blood soaked figure yet powerful yell was Gahard.

{To victory-!!}

Continuing after him, Karm, Adol, and Alfrerick yelled.

{To victory-!!!}

In that situation, the people's heart was connecting to each other naturally.

——To victory-! To victory-! To victory-! To victory-! To victory-! To victory-! To victory-! To victory-! To victory-! To victory-! To victory-!

A Loud chorus of victory resounded in the battlefield. It swallowed the rumbling of the space, numbed the ground, and reached to the heaven, the will of 'human' swept the darkness and rose up like the light of the sun.

Human, demi-human, human from another world, those classifications were irrelevant, yells for their victory, and then yells

of their faith for the people fighting at the heavens, they were all repeated with impossibly beautiful harmony.

Amidst those, one person didn't join the chorus and stared wholeheartedly to the sky, a black angel. It was Kaori who was looking forward to the return of Hajime and others believing in Miledy. She kept floating midair and continued to stare at the collapsing Holy Precincts as though she could see nothing else.

And, at that time, Kaori's senses was caught by something.

The place was, around the sky at the collapsed God Mountain.

She returned to her senses in surprise and turned her gaze there. The space about eight kilometers above the God Mountain distorted like jelly, right after that an elliptical hole opened with a pop. It was a distance that normal human couldn't perceive, the hole itself was also only as big as several people could go through it so nobody other than Kaori noticed it.

Driven by her premonition, Kaori flapped her jet black wings. At the same time, with *hyupo-!* silhouette of people flew out from that hole.

"Aa——!!"

"NuOOOOOO!!"

White and black shadows. Even from afar she understood that those were her comrades' figures.

"Shia-, Tio!"

Kaori accelerated in one go. For some reason Shia and Tio were falling straight toward the ground without any sign of slowing down. Kaori became a black silver meteor that rushed through the sky.

Midway, Shizuku and others flew out in panic riding their skyboard from the hole Shia and Tio fell off from, but for now Kaori didn't stop accelerating and rapidly approached the screaming two people.

And then, Kaori splendidly caught the two altogether a few dozen meters near the ground. Looking closer, near the ground there was a shining barrier deployed that seemed to come from Suzu so it really wasn't that big of a matter.

"Shia, Tio! Welcome back-!"

"Fue, a, Kaori-san! I'm back desu!"

"Thou saved us, Kaori. Also, I'm back."

Shia and Tio clung at Kaori's arms midair while sighing in relieve. Kaori flapped her wings and landed gently on the ground, she then gently put down the two on the ground where they sat with a flop.

There, Shizuku, Suzu, Ryutaro, and Kouki landed down from the sky.

"Kaori!"

"Shizuku-chan!"

Shizuku got off the skyboard and leaped toward Kaori. Kaori too caught Shizuku.

"Kaoriiiin! I'm back!"

"Suzu-chan. Welcome back!"

"Yo-, looks like you are also safe huh."

"Ryutaro-kun too, welcome back."

Still hugging Shizuku, Kaori then welcomed Suzu and replied to Ryutaro's words smilingly. And then, she abruptly showed a soft smile at Kaori who was looking a bit awkward.

"Kouki-kun, welcome back."

"…Yeah, I'm back. Really, sorry, for everything. Truly, sorry. Also… thank you."

He had attacked Kaori at the devil king castle, because of that

Kouki had resolved himself to not receive words of greeting. But now tears were gathering at the corner of his eyes and his head looked down. He was absolutely grateful that Kaori didn't forsake him just like Shizuku. Of course, he wouldn't make misunderstanding anymore.

After nodding once at such Kouki, Kaori looked up to the sky. And then, her gaze moved around searching for something. It was obvious who she was searching for.

"Kaori-san…..Hajime-san and Yue-san are not together with us."

"Shia…that's"

"Don't fret, Kaori. We only separated in the middle because it was necessary. Goshujin-sama and also Yue, they will cometh back without fail."

"Tio…"

Tio called at Kaori who was looking uneasy admonishingly.

After Miledy came for them, Shia and others received Degraded Arrow of World Crossing from her which opened a hole in space and they leaped into it.

Naturally when they heard that Miledy would go to Hajime and Yue right after, everyone said that they would go together with her. Shia, Tio, and Shizuku were especially determined, their blazing eyes told that it was impossible for them to escape ahead.

However, Degraded Arrow of World Crossing was necessary to cross space, there was no spare for them to go to Hajime and Yue's position. Although there were several arrows that were created because they were failed work, but different from the real thing these degraded versions could only be used once before breaking and on top of that it could only open the hole for a few seconds.

In addition, the size of the hole that could be opened by the arrow was limited. It was unthinkable that they would have the leeway to pass through the hole in turn under a few second in a world that was collapsing with increasing momentum. Thinking that Haijme

and Yue would be added for their return home, in the worst case the situation might turn into one where they would need to choose who would escape and who would be left behind.

In the end, Shia and others had to escape first. They were really reluctant though. They could do nothing but understand when they were told that perhaps not all of them could go back if they accompanied Miledy. Besides, “I swear I’ll send Hajime and Yue back without fail” the state of Miledy when she promised that was unusually filled with determination, that was also a factor that pushed their back to escape first.

Even so, there was no way their worry toward Hajime and Yue who were still in the collapsing Holy Precincts could vanish, Shia and Tio also looked up wordlessly to the sky. Shizuku and others were also similarly praying while looking up to the sky.

At the battlefield, the people of the allied force were still resounding their prayer powerfully.

It was unclear how much time passed. It felt like an eternity, but surely not even dozens of minutes had passed.

It was at that time, that happened.

“Ah”

The one who spontaneously raised that voice was Kaori.

Shia and others, and then the allied force too, ahead of their gaze a pillar of light that was a mix of golden and crimson suddenly pierced the space and stabbed at the sky.

That torrent of magic power which couldn’t be expressed enough even with the word tremendous, and then, the undulation of the overwhelming will that was filled in it, caused the war cry of the battlefield to stop unconsciously. Everyone without exception gazed in enchantment at the dichromatic magic power which ascended to the sky in spiraling motion.

“Hajime-san! Yue-san!”

Shia yelled, with a voice that overflowed with joy.

Right after that, the golden and crimson magic power began to converge back like in a playback.

And then,

A scream of death agony reverberated in the world. Immediately after, although the volume wasn't to the degree that tore the eardrum, but, that voice of the end was certainly heard by everyone throughout the world. Without any reason, anyone thought, that it was the blood flowing out from the god.

Before long, a muddy silver light was dispersing toward the empty sky, and silence returned to the world.

What happened now, in the middle of everyone thinking that with their breath caught, the distortion of space covering the sky and the collapsing world of heavens that was visible in it, suddenly, they were all shrinking toward one point. It was as though something was sucking them all, or possibly it was like they were all being compressed.

The next moment, the world of heavens that was gathered into a point scattered.

There was no sound.

There was merely several layers of ripples with a vibrant color like the blue sky, radiating silently. Unnoticed, the rumble(scream) that shook the world stopped, the scared trembling of the ground also stopped.

Ripples were spreading through the world.

Not only the color of the blue sky, the color of the evening or possibly sunrise, the color of the midday sun, the clear color of the moon, the color of vivacious plants, the color of powerful earth, the color of enveloping night, they all laid on top of each other.

The beautiful ripples of seven colors spread to the end of the earth, before long, cracks began to enter the dark red world. That change

wasn't something violent that gave the impression like the crumbling just now, but a gentle change that quietly repainted the world…

"Aa…god"

Someone whispered. That wasn't a prayer that wished for salvation anymore. But merely something that came from the deep emotion filling the chest.

The world was recovering its color. It was a truly a splendorous scene that should be called as a legend.

The dark red world was shining sparklingly while becoming broken fragments.

The ripples of the sky were gradually weakening in intensity, however, they didn't vanish, as though watching over the people who were silently shedding tears drops by drops, it became a rainbow aurora drifting in the air.

"Hajime-kun…Yue…"

Amidst those, a voice that leaked out from between the clenched teeth resounded. Kaori clenched her hand so tightly it was bleeding while glaring at the annihilated Holy Precincts.

"Hajime…"

"Nagumo-kun."

"Shit-, what's going on-, that idiot-"

"Nagumo-"

Shizuku, Suzu, Ryutaro, Kouki, they gritted their teeth while facing the sky with a grim gaze. Tio too was looking up at the sky with narrowed gaze without averting her eyes even for a moment.

The dark red world vanished.

The sun began to illuminate the world with its natural radiance.

They waited for a long time, but the figure of the people they waited for couldn't be seen.

Before long, that fact became unbearable and Suzu whispered.

"…This is a lie, right"

Ryutaro gritted his teeth hard.

"Damnit-"

Kouki opened his mouth in a daze.

"Don't tell me…both of them…really, won't co——"

And then, when that worst assumption was going to be said half unconsciously…

"It's alright desu-!!"

Such electrifying loud voice interrupted.

Kouki and others returned to their senses suddenly and moved their gaze there. Over there, was the figure of Shia, her rabbit ears standing straight while she looked straight to the sky.

Shia didn't avert her eyes from the sky and spoke with a voice that was full of conviction.

"Right now, Hajime-san and Yue-san are together desu. That entangled golden and crimson magic power is the proof. As long as they are together, they are invincible!"

That was why, they would blow away a mere difficult situation like this and came back with a smile. Those words which contained Shia's immense faith became a power of words that resounded in the world. (TN: Power of words or soul of language. Called kotodama in Japan, some kind of believe that words which were said have some kind of power in them.)

Mysteriously, the heart of the people who were driven by unease became light.

“…..Yep. That’s right. With those two together, I cannot imagine any difficult that cannot be smashed through.”

Kaori was in agreement. It wasn’t a voice that was blurred with unease like before, but a powerful voice filled with conviction like Shia.

“Truly. Surely if those two become serious, the word ‘fail’ will be erased from dictionary. Rather, perhaps they art busy flirting right now that they art late to come back.”

Tio jokingly said such thing. And as expected, the grimness in her face was taken away and changed into conviction.

“Isn’t that right. They might, no, they are absolutely flirting right now. This is their emotional reunion after all. Perhaps the matter of us is already thrown to the beyond by them.”

While smiling wryly, Shizuku nodded thinking that it was probably the case. The way they talked also softened the expression of Suzu and others.

Right after that, as though to proof that the words of Shia and others were correct…

“Ah…fufu, see-“

Shia pointed her finger.

Over there was naturally…

Part 3

The rainbow aurora hanging in the sky. A small hole was opened between the veil.

“Uoh”

“…Nn-“

A silhouette of two people glued close to each other flew out from there along with shocked voice. It went without saying, they were Hajime and Yue.

Hajime firmly held Yue tightly with his one arm, Yue too also circled her hands around Hajime's neck, clinging to him.

Like that, *gou-gou* while feeling the howling of wind on their ear, the two of them began freefalling leaving it to the gravity.

Based on the height it would be thirty seconds until the ground.

Hajime who was falling with his face up saw the mystical aurora they were rapidly distanced from and the distance to the ground that he confirmed by looking across his shoulder and instantly calculated. It seemed that the place they were going to impact was a spot slightly distanced from the allied force.

"Yue, can you fly?"

"…Impossible. Magic power was used up from the arrow's activation."

"Well, I guess that's true. It's going to be a bit rough, so hold on tight."

"…Nn. I catch you. I absolutely won't let go."

"…"

While experiencing a skydiving without a parachute, Hajime and Yue conversed filled with composure like that. Listening and seeing Yue's bewitching voice and gaze from very near like this, it couldn't be helped that Hajime's words got caught in his throat.

While being exposed against awful wind pressure midair, Hajime ignored his slightly ringing eardrum to the best of his ability and then rolled his stance while still holding Yue. And then, his body became clad in faint crimson magic power. With that he somehow controlled his badly balanced one armed body that was toyed around by the wind.

Although he had drunk recovery medicine, but the healed amount was insignificant. In the first place there was the effect from the depth of the damage he received and the creation of the concept magic that caused his magic power recovery to be slow. There was also a limit to the number of times he could use ‘Air Force’.

While he was controlling his posture, he had to land down on the ground by perfectly dropping his speed. Honestly speaking, the ‘Air Force’ could only be used for ten-odd times more, furthermore, in his current condition that could only use ‘Air Force’ which couldn’t be said to be displaying its complete effect, making a skydiving from altitude of several kilometers to succeed was nothing but a superhuman feat but…

“So the end is me skydiving with Yue huh…it’s not bad.”

Hajime said such thing. Something of this degree wasn’t even a danger.

Hajime gently straightened up his body. Immediately a crimson ripple spread below his feet, it collapsed instantly. However, he was definitely decelerating. He repeated that.

The people of the allied force also noticed them. Crimson ripples were spreading and scattering many times from between the aurora, and silhouette of people was descending like a comet.

At that moment, a deeply emotional voice resounded. The voice of the goddess.

{Thi, this is our, victory-!}

A beat.

——oOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!!!!

At the battlefield, no, at the new world the people raised shouts of joy that sounded like an explosion.

As though to reply to that cry of triumph that was like the first cry of a newborn raised by the world, glittering light particles were raining down from the rainbow aurora covering the sky. The light

of the sun that recovered its radiance shined, making the world to gleam like a diamond. Surely that was the blessing toward the new world.

Amidst the raining shower of light, Hajime kicked on the last ripple and splendidly reduced his speed, he kept embracing Yue and landed on the ground. Even so, the wounds on his both legs still weren't healed, using 'Air Force' also finally exhausted the magic power for his recovery, so like that he collapsed limply on the ground with his face up.

"Haha-, the finishing is totally messed up."

Hajime wryly smiled while lying down with his body unable to even twitch. His expression somehow looked refreshed.

Yue who was embraced all that time then straddled Hajime and flopped down on top of him in a tight embrace, and then with a really close distance where it looked like their face could touch each other anytime, Yue shook her small head while staring at Hajime.

"…Not messed up. It was the coolest."

"Is that so?"

"…Nn. Hajime, thank you. I love you."

Like that, with bewitching and melting smile, Yue pushed those soft and sweet lips on Hajime's.

Yue enjoyed to her heart's content Hajime who could only lie spread-eagled without being able to move, where he could only let Yue do whatever she wanted to him. Although, even if he was able to move, but if this was what Yue wished for then there was no way for Hajime to resist.

Yue's appearance was still in her adult form. Although the charm that was brought about from the gap between her external appearance and her mental age had gone, now she was emitting sensual pheromone from her whole body, perhaps the brutality of her sex appeal had increased instead with this.

Her adult appearance was most likely due to metamorphosis magic. In that case, perhaps when her magic power recovered she would be able to change between woman and girl appearance freely. It felt like he could see the future where he was toyed around by Yue's demand. Although, Yue's heart was also captured by Hajime to the same degree with his heart captured by her though.

The endless kiss erased even the cheering of the allied force, forming a world of only the two of them.

But, a voice that the two couldn't ignore reverberated into that world.

"Aa——! As expected you two are flirting! You two don't even care about other people's feeling! No rather than that, Yue-san is…"

"She is turning aduuuuult! Yue is attacking Hajime-kun with adult charm!'

"Humm. Just as expected. No, the adult appearance art outside expectation though…let see, how about I join too."

"Uu-, what amazing sensuality…bu, but there is no option for retreating! A maiden can only charge ahead!"

Shia, Kaori, Tio, and Shizuku, those four people. Behind them Suzu, Ryutaro, and Kouki also rushed to here.

With a lively state that was unthinkable for a deeply moving reunion, Shia and others leaped at Hajime. Yue who separated her lips saying "I'm back" got dragged into it, and Hajime became piled with beautiful women and beautiful girls.

And then, hearing the words "welcome back" filled with a flood of emotions from their mouths, Hajime also spoke "I'm back" like Yue.

Diamond dust rained down from the sky, making the world to sparkle. Around him were the important people with teary eyes and joyful smiling like blooming flower. From afar, he could feel many existences that dashed toward here while calling his name.

The warm enveloping him, the welling up senses of

accomplishment, and then the content feeling, caused Hajime to smile. It was a mysterious smile where fearlessness and gentleness were entwined tightly…

While that smile of ‘Nagumo Hajime’ caused a tightening to happen inside the girls’ chest, Hajime entrusted his body to a pleasant fatigue and slowly closed his eyes.

Arifureta Chapter 178 (The End)

All credit goes to the original author (Chuuni Suki), who has posted the raw data here:

http://ncode.syosetu.com/n8611bv/179/

Thanks for your continued support. If you like my writing style, check out my original works at www. wattpad.com/user/elementalcobalt, or just leave a comment.

Bakapervert translated this chapter. Bakapervert did the edits.

Epilogue

Legendary Great War.

The people naturally called the battle like that, a month had passed since that decisive battle where the fate of the world was staked.

After that decisive battle, the gates that were set up at every place were opened once more and the voices of a lot of people that celebrated their reunion and victory filled the prairie in front of the capital.

A few days after that, although there was some chaos due to the healing of the wounded, the confirmation and burial of the deceased, and the annihilation of the capital which caused the people to lose their place, due to the hard work of every representative that worked together for a common cause, the post-treatment of the war was carried out relatively smoothly.

Due to the collapsed God Mountain, the Hairihi kingdom capital was also destroyed by getting swallowed into it, the non-combatant that was unable to participate in the legendary great

war——especially the craftsmen were wholly mobilized for the reconstruction, in addition the merchants and the common citizens also gave their maximum support and the work which caused the progress to move rapidly. On top of using magic, there was also the good will and proactiveness of the people all over the world which crossed over race or country to reconstruct the capital, it was to the degree that they calculated the capital might be able to recover its former appearance within half a year.

At the prairie where fierce ravages of the battle remained, using the wreckage of the fortress a lot of temporary residences were established that were mainly used for the people that engaged in the reconstruction to lodge at. There, kitchen and inn, general store and the likes were created one after another, to the degree that it might possibly turn into a part of the capital by linking it with the city's expansion. Surely, the city would become even livelier even compared to when it had the God Mountain behind it.

The temporary establishment of the holy church was also created in that temporary housing town.

At that battle, the story was that the enemy was an evil god that pretended to be the god Ehitorujue, so the people still had their heart supported by the holy church which worshiped Ehito as a god. Although the God Mountain and the holy church's headquarter had disappeared, but suddenly taking away that support would only make the people uneasy.

Having said that, for the people who knew the truth, they felt more than a little reluctance for the holy church to keep using the name Ehitorujue exactly as it was until now.

There with the speech of the 'Goddess of Harvest' Aiko, this kind of story was dispatched to the world.

It said, that the true name of god Ehito was Ehicliberei, for a long time the mad god——Ehitorujue had stolen this true name.

It said, that the 'rebels' or rather the 'liberators' who knew about the danger to the world from Ehito once challenged the mad god in order to regain the pure faith, but because of the mad god's foul

play, they were unable to defeat him.

It said, that in order to grant their own power to people who could possibly defeat Ehito, the liberators slept at the bottom of the great labyrinths. And then, the chosen people who were summoned from another world by god were awarded this power. Aiko was the spokesman of these people, while the person who received the most power was the ‘Goddess’s Sword’.

It said, like that Hajime and others splendidly defeated the mad god Ehitorujue that was hiding in Holy Precincts. However, due to the last resistance of the mad god Ehitorujue, it caused a collapse in order to take along the world to accompany him in his death. In response to that, the last liberator——Miledy Raisen who made her soul to possess a golem and had watched over the people all this time, she exchanged her soul for the world’s salvation.

A complete lie, it was not. The story matched the gist of the truth. By the way, the name Ehicliberei was a coined word with the meaning of ‘seven liberators’ put into it. It was the consideration for them that they would surely felt unpleasant to have the story of them cooperating with Ehitorujue to be taught to the future generations. If it was asked whose consideration it was, then it must be the one who thought of this story which was not a lie but also not the truth which was complicated in various meaning, a certain white haired eye-patched man somewhere.

Due to this speech of Aiko, the historians who were excited to leave this time’s legendary great battle’s record in writing at once raised the name of Miledy and others to the front stage of history once more as the seven great wise men who saved the world.

Regarding the new top brass of the church, it was composed of the priests of the remote region. The people who participated in the choir squad at that battlefield and managed to survive became the core of this new top brass. Most of them were people who clashed with the central church and then got exiled to the remote region, so their thought and ideology were also exceedingly sensible, many of them were a man of character so it was thought that there wouldn’t be any particular problem.

Regarding Raisen Great Labyrinth that was left behind by Miledy, Hajime created a living golem as the replacement of Miledy Raisen and stationed it there. It was equipped with gatling cannon, missile pod, and even pile bunker, so the difficulty level might be jumped up there.

Hajime didn't particularly do anything to the other great labyrinths. Perhaps it had no more meaning, but his stance was that if anyone searched for power and wanted to challenge it then just challenged it.

Regarding Hajime's quality artifacts that were lavishly used at the legendary great war, after Hajime awoke from fainting, he destroyed all of them. Gahard and some other people yelled "Stooop—!" while clinging to him, but Hajime turned everything into garbage right in front of their eyes. Hajime created an artifact to gather all artifacts that had his stamp, so there wouldn't any that got overlooked.

Of course, the artifacts that Kam and others of Hauria possessed were left alone in their possession, though Haijme applied various work on those first.

It was irritating for Hajime when Gahard's resentful eyes, or rather the eyes that looked like a child whose important toys were taken away were staring fixedly at him, so while he was at it Hajime gifted him with a small version Fernier. And at the next day, for some reason Hajime became the best friend of his majesty the emperor. It seemed that Gahard was really pleased with Fernier.

In preparation of the worst case that Gahard used Fernier to invade another country, Hajime made Liliana and Karm carry the remote switch for the self-exploding artifact. If Gahard knew of this…just what kind of face he would make. Hajime was really curious about it but with an effort, he endured to not ask.

Regarding the relationship between demi-human and human race, not only the people from the empire, the other humans were also in the process of changing their feeling toward the demi-human with whom they had fought together with through the legendary great war. As expected the fact that they had entrusted their lives to each

other was enough to repaint their discriminatory view.

Of course, if it was asked if the two side could immediately join shoulders together, it wouldn't be that easy, but even so, none was holding animosity to the degree where they could act hatefully with recklessness. There was also how they had witnessed the gallant effort of the dragon race, and above all else, there was the fact that a rabbit-eared girl and a dragon woman were among the comrades of the savior hero who stormed into the Holy Precincts.

The demi-human weren't called as the abandoned race that didn't possess god's blessing anymore. Rather, it was obvious that the two demi-human would leave their page in history as a great person that stood side by side with the hero. No word of contempt could possibly be directed to such people.

Due to such reason, the social status of demi-human was beginning to be reevaluated rapidly among the human without anyone even needed to do particularly anything. As one part of that process, the holy church wouldn't call them as 'demi-human race' anymore, from now on they would formally name them as 'beastman race', the official notice for that had been created.

Because of that too, the 'Necklace of Pledge' that had been attached on the royalty of the empire had also been dismantled. After reaching this stage with great pain where it might be possible for an amicable coexistence, to keep holding the life of the empire royalty would only break the 'equal relationship', causing a halt at the compromise between the two side.

Although, just because of that didn't mean that there was no more guarantee from the empire side to stop the persecution to the demi-human and making them a slave.

"Meteor and sunlight laser, or fully equipped Hauria, which one is better?"

At the occasion where the 'Necklace of Pledge' was dismantled, Gahard asked "Do you believe that the empire won't move for revenge?" with a fearless grin, and the sentence that Hajime gave back to him was that. It went without saying that after that all the

close aides of Gahard swiftly demanded for a handshake of friendship. The empire was based on strength supremacy doctrine…

Now then, talking about equality between races there was the matter of the devil race.

They were invited into Holy Precincts and made to sleep at the lower strata domain, but for some reason they escaped the collapse of Holy Precincts and got thrown out at the wasteland at the outskirt of the devil race capital which was far away from the battlefield, after that they were discovered there still continuing to fast asleep.

Even at the present a month after the battle, that situation still hadn't changed. Most likely they could be awoken immediately if regeneration magic was used on them, but right now everyone was busy with the post-battle treatment and rebuilding, there was really no leeway to wake up the existences that could possibly become a seed of conflict, so now they were sealed at a corner of the devil capital under strict monitoring. The seal was using Hajime's artifact.

By the way, regarding the devil race people who were deeply carved with the terror of Hajime at the devil king castle, Hajime only said a word of "troublesome" and put them to sleep too. It would be troubling if they said something like 'We are going to save our brethren!' and rampaged, so Hajime quickly took measures.

Although, for them who had been planted with a lot of terror by Hajime, and furthermore, after they knew that Hajime had even accomplished the destruction of God Mountain and godslaying, it was really unthinkable that they would do anything stupid.

Now then, Hajime and others had busily moved around doing things like the kingdom capital reconstruction, the artifacts' withdrawal, driving in the wedge to the empire, fabricating history, restoring the honor of the liberators, and various other things, but that didn't mean that they were lending their hand in this and that of this world because of mere whim or sophistication.

Naturally their first objective was to return home to the birthplace earth——Japan.

During this one month, they continued to stay in this world and moved around was also doubling as killing time, and that was merely because they couldn't go home. Having said that, it didn't mean that they didn't have the method to go home or anything, and it wasn't also because they were unable to create the concept magic.

The reason was simple. There was no material to create the 'Compass of Guidance' and 'Crystal Key'.

Concept magic was powerful. Even though Hajime was able to enchant mineral, but using average material would cause the item to explode when activated because it wouldn't be able to endure the effect. Before the difficult undertaking that was crossing the world, they didn't want to take any risky venture like 'It should be usable if used only for one time!'

Besides, even though they were taking along Myuu and Remia together, but as expected Hajime wanted to prepare a return path home to this world for them, regarding Shia and Tio too, Karm and Adol and many other people were remaining in this world, Hajime thought that they would want to go home here sometimes to meet with their family.

And so, an artifact that would break after just one-time use would be troubling for that.

Having said that, speaking about a mineral that could endure concept magic and also had high affinity with magic, Hajime couldn't think of anything else but the god crystal. But, they had finished confirming that there was no god crystal anymore at the abyss. Now that they didn't have the compass, it wasn't realistic to search for god crystal around the world when there was not even any guarantee that it existed.

And the idea that Hajime got when thinking of that, was that if it didn't exist then he just needed to create it.

God crystal was the crystallization of magic power where magic power accidentally piled up for a long time of a thousand years. It was the solidification of the magic power of nature that was so vast it was absurd. The process was like water drops that bore a hole on

a rock.

But, Hajime had no interest at all in staring at water drops boring a hole into a rock. Therefore, he just needed to twist such theory with foul play.

And then what he did based on that was creating an artifact that converged natural magic element in high speed using gravity magic which was a magic that interfered with the power of star, and then he used space magic which was a magic that interfered with boundary to pump the gathered natural magic element into artifact(pool of human population magic power).

Added with that, with Hajime who was a possessor of inhuman magic power as the first in the list, the otherworlder cheat group pumped in their magic power every day into the artifact.

As the result, after a month passed, they succeeded in creating a god crystal with diameter around fifteen centimeters. It only had around half the size of the god crystal that Hajime first discovered and it also didn't produce 'God Water', but it was still an amazing material that could endure concept magic satisfactorily.

And then, finally, today Hajime started making 'Compass of Guidance' and 'Crystal Key'.

The place was the fountain plaza at the outskirt of Fea Belgen. It was that place where Shia's feeling came to a realization. Hajime and others, in this one month they were using this Fea Belgen which was the easiest place to spend time in as their base, so Aiko and the classmates were also staying here. They were human, but the beastmen were in great joy with the hero party's stay there.

At the plaza, Shia and Tio, Kaori and Shizuku, and then Myuu and Remia were there. Other than them all the classmates had also gathered to look at the moment when the artifact for going home was completed. In addition, Liliana, Karm, and everyone else from Hauria clan and others were also there.

"Yosh, let's do this Yue."

“…Nn-“

Hajime and Yue were facing each other at the center of the plaza. Yue’s appearance now was her original girl figure. Sometimes she also turned into adult mode depending on her mood of the day, but this girl mode was used a lot because it was convenient for sitting on Hajime’s lap or getting hugged.

Hajime too now had his new artificial arm and eye back, the vampirization from Yue was also undone. Until they returned to earth, Hajime planned to get his hair turned black and coated his artificial arm with skin and so forth, as much as possible he wanted to return to his original appearance.

The excessively lovely Yue whose body was wrapped with chic goth loli outfit and Hajime were closing their eyes in concentration with the god crystal between them.

The classmates who were watching over them at the surrounding gulped.

In such atmosphere, the ceremony of concept creation finally began.

Inside the forest of Fea Bergen, golden and crimson magic power calmly began to twist up. From the beginning the magic power of two colors was spiraling while mixing with each other, it looked as though the two color was getting intimate with each other.

Before long the leaves of the trees were blown and scattered around while a torrent of magic power was climbing to the sky, a clear will began to reside in it. Regardless that it was unseen by eye, everyone who was there felt it, an overwhelming will that made the skin to have goosebump.

At the same time, the god crystal began to shine. The stormy torrent of magic power was focused and absorbed into the god crystal with amazing force.

Calmly, yet sonorously Hajime spoke the power of words.

“——’Transmute’”

Immediately the god crystal split into two. The ores other than god crystal that had been prepared beforehand instantly mixed and they were forming shape.

Unnoticed the stormy magic power was shining like a star between Hajime and Yue, the forest of Fea Bergen and the surrounding people were illuminated, their heart was charmed by the spectacle.

That radiance was also getting smaller bit by bit. “Hou” Here and there a sigh of admiration was leaked. It was unclear whether the cause of that was because of the artifact’s creation, or else if it was because Hajime and Yue who created this miraculous spectacle while snuggling close to each other.

And then, the light finally settled down, Yue and Hajime quietly opened their eyes. Ahead of their gaze was a compass and crystal key that were sparkling bright.

“…Hajime. Test it.”

“Okay.”

Yue said that while separating their hand gently. Obeying that, Hajime tried activating the compass. There was no problem, it seized the location of earth intuitively. And then the crystal key was also operating on space properly.

“O, oi, Nagumo. How is it? Everything fine?”

Endo Kousuke asked timidly after becoming unable to endure the tension. By the way, Kousuke who had received an amazing nickname from Hauria clan, and got a lover from the same rabbit clan (in this one month he had worked very hard. Especially he paid a lot of compensation with his shame while mass producing dark history of his life), now he had a lot of common point with Haijme, the two of them were unexpectedly getting along and in this one month they were building a relatively familiar relationship.

Looking at Hajime who reacted to Kousuke’s call, several of the classmates gulped loudly.

Hajime ran his gaze around the classmates whose expression was

stiffening from nervousness.

And then, he grinned widely and wordlessly gave a thumb up. The meaning of that was obvious.

“Yossha———!!”

“Hurraay!!”

“UOOOOOOO, we can go home! We seriously can go home!!”

“Nagumoo, no, you are Nagumo-sama already! Really thank you!”

“Fueeeeeeeen, I’m really glaaadd. Nagumo-kuuun, Yue-saaan, thank you!”

“Hajime-samaaa, please make me your slaveeeeee!”

“Yue-san, make me your peeet!”

Joyful cheers exploded, words of thanks rose one after another. It felt like there were some dangerous words mixed in, but it would be troubling if perverts came out even from among the classmates so Hajime beautifully ignored it. But, the guy who made a strange request to Yue would be strangled later, while making that vow, Hajime sat down with a thud from fatigue.

Yue also sat on his lap in a tired state. He circled his arms around her slender waist to support her and then she snuggled in real close.

There, *sutetete—* cute footsteps resounded.

“Papaaa!”

“Myuu”

Hajime skillfully caught Myuu’s small body that jumped energetically and placed her on the knee opposite of Yue with his support. As expected, Myuu was also snuggling in real close on him.

“Hajime-san! Me toooo”

Shia jumped *pyon* like a rabbit. The place that she embraced was

Hajime's right shoulder. His hand that was supporting Yue temporarily let go and patted Shia's rabbit ear. Shia happily snuggled close to him.

"Hajime-kun, you did it."

The one who was saying that while quietly snuggling close was Kaori. And it wasn't with an apostle body. Now she was in her original body. Thinking of the difference of lifespan between her and Hajime and others, it would be better if she stayed inside apostle body. Kaori herself thought that, but Yue who had comprehended the secret technique of apostle creation during the time she was possessed by Ehito said that it was possible someday to turn Kaori's body into apostle and surpassed the limit of her lifespan, so in the end Kaori returned to her original body. In actuality, she was already able to change into apostle mode temporarily, where in that state she was able to use silver wings and disintegration ability and also handled twin swords art.

That Kaori clung tightly on Hajime's left shoulder. When she got her head patted, as expected she then snuggled close to him.

"Goshujin-sama's world is surely fun isn't it?"

"Surely you will be shocked by it there."

Tio and Shizuku arrived. There was only the back that was left open. The gaze of the two crossed. A spark scattered between them. When they were about to aim at the last clinging position…

"My my, a good place is left open here. Ufufu. Dear, please excuse me."

Remia who smoothly cut in clung tightly to Hajime's back. " "Aa-" " Tio and Shizuku's voice was raised. As expected from a widow. She couldn't be made light of.

"Shia-san, haa haa, let's get along well with me?"

"Gee, Altina-!"

Unnoticed Altina appeared behind Shia with her breathing getting

rough “haa haa”. She was walking unsteadily like a zombie while approaching Shia’s back to cling there.

Shia whose rabbit ears stood tall with shudders running through them separated from Hajime to repel back Altina.

To take advantage of that opening, two more female approached with a jog…

“…Aiko-san? What could you possibly be planning to do?”

“Liliana-san yourself, what business do you have with him?”

Here too sparks were sparking off.

Hajime’s surrounding became noisy suddenly, even the classmates who cheered joyfully with each other began to notice the commotion.

Amidst all that, Yue sighed “fuu” toward the female camp who was noisily quarreling for Hajime. Hajime tilted his head asking “What’s wrong?” with his gaze, immediately after that Yue’s atmosphere changed from sweet to bewitching.

And then, Yue’s body shined flashily, and at the next moment, the adult version Yue appeared. Right after that, the adult version Yue easily tore off Kaori and Remia from Hajime, because of the sudden growth the length of the clothes became comparatively short, and with that amazingly risqué and seductive clothing, she hugged Hajime’s head onto her breast and Hajime’s head was buried *munyuu!* into those splendid twin hills.

The quarreling female camp raised “Ah” voice while Hajime leaked out a muffled voice “unmu-“. Myuu was still supported in one of Hajime’s arms.

“…By the legal wife’s authority, the noisy child will be prohibited.”

Gushing out sex appeal. The devilish beauty that would charm anyone without distinction of sex. The words of the adult mode Yue that was the personification of bewitching made everyone’s breath taken away. The female camp immediately tried to object, but when

they were forestalled by the sidelong glance Yue sent them, immediately their cheeks reddened and their words “uu” got caught inside their throat. Even Yue’s self-acknowledged rival Kaori was like that. Speaking clearly there was no one that could go against Yue.

By the way, if it was asked what was the prohibition was referring to, it was referring at the permission to enter Hajime’s bedroom. In this one month, Hajime and Yue, and then Shia too had passed through several *sleepless* nights, but that was something that didn’t happen every day.

And then, even at night where Yue and Shia were not there, there were still women that warmed Hajime’s bed. It went without saying just who those women were. And it also went without saying just who was the one that was holding the baton of command. It could be easily guessed from the words ‘legal wife authority’.

“…Nn. As punishment, I will monopolize today.”

“Wai-, Yue, umu-!?”

Hajime who became gutless from getting buried in the twin hills, was raised up by Yue and at the same time he received a hot, and not just normal hot but a scalding hoooot kiss from Yue.

The female camp suddenly became noisy. And then, the classmates were also became overdosed with sweetness and got flustered (including a part of the female students who became excited in a dangerous sense).

Kaori and others raised a voice of protest and pleading toward Hajime and Yue whose lips separated with rough gasping.

“Tha, that’s not fair, Yue! I too with Hajime-kun…” (Kaori)

“E, err, me too…with Hajime…” (Shizuku)

“Goshujin-sama, please be with me.” (Tio)

“My my, dear, please take care of me too okay?” (Remia)

“Hau, Na, Nagumo-kun, me, me too…” (Aiko)

“Hajime-san…please…” (Liliana)

In addition, Shia who had just finished burying Altina to the ground with a backdrop was wordlessly sending Hajime a moist gaze. Myuu was tilting her head because she was not really understanding what was going on.

There, Yue opened her mouth while smiling softly.

“…Hajime. With whom you will do it?”

If Hajime was mischievously asked that by Yue, then his answer could only be one.

“Yue is the only option.”

“Kufuh…then, I’ll be kidnapping him.”

Saying that, Myuu was then enveloped gently by the wind and handed over to Remia, then Yue’s figure vanished with a whoosh while still embracing Hajime. It was the magic ‘Heaven Existence’ that Yue ripped off from Ehitorujue. In truth when Yue kissed Hajime she recovered by taking Hajime’s blood.

The plaza of Fea Bergen was once more filled with the protesting voices “Aaa——!!” of the female camp that was in love with Hajime.

“…God damnit. I’m so deathly jealous.”

“Yeah. Me too, I want to get kidnapped by that kind of beautyyy”

“But, this me who is feeling that if it’s Nagumo then it can’t be helped, it feels like I already lost something.”

Tamai Atsushi looked up to the sky and whispered, while Aikawa Noboru was earnestly in agreement, Nimura Akito shrugged and exposed an expression that couldn’t say anything.

“Aa, I totally understand you. It feels like I cannot make any word.”

“’Well, it’s Nagumo after all’, this sentence is the recent popular phrase huh…”

Nomura Kentaro and Nagayama Juugo that heard the conversation of Tamai and others were smiling wryly while nodding. To that Nakano Shinji and Saito Yoshiki also made a dry smile that similarly couldn’t say anything.

“Haa haa, I want to be stepped on by Yue-san. I want to get ground down hard while getting scorned by those eyes…”

“You are going to the hospital right away after we go home okay? Have them look at your head.”

Amidst a part of the boys that were turning perverted, the other boys were smiling wryly while feeling envious and understanding, while also feeling complicated because they could be that understanding.

Nearby those boys, Miyazaki Nana was similarly leaking out a voice was filled with envy.

“How enviouuusss”

Sonobe Yuuka who tilted her head asked back “Which one that you mean?”

“Rather than which one, I think I’m more envious of that kind of relationship itself.”

“I really get what you mean. Certainly that’s envious isn’t it?”

Sugawara Taeko was making a girly expression while leaking out an admiring sigh “hou”. Yuuka smiled wryly toward her two best friends that didn’t even hide their longing while staring at the demon king harem members who were rushing into the forest to chase after the vanishing Yue and Hajime before she opened her mouth.

“How should I put it, Kaori-chan and Shizuku who stepped into that relationship, and then Ai-chan who got over various things, they are amazing.”

“…What’s with you all, getting like this. Crap, Nagumo-kun is seriously demon king-sama.”

“Haa haa, Hajime-samaaa, please make me your slave…”

“Let’s go to the hospital together when we go home. You need to get your head looked at.”

The conversations of the girl classmates came into hearing too, they expressed their feeling that envied Hajime and Yue’s relationship, while also giving their praise at Kaori and others who entered the harem. At the same time, their cheeks reddened from knowing that the harem already did it. Actually, quite a number of them harbored the feeling that if Hajime asked for them then they would respond to him. But Hajime wasn’t asking for them, so those feelings didn’t come into realization though.

“Suzu is not going after them?”

“No no, I’m not going. Just what are you saying so suddenly, Ryutaro-kun?”

Suzu was staring at the progression of the commotion while cackling, to such Suzu, Ryutaro who was at her side asked her that for some reason, to which Suzu tilted her head as though to say “Just what is this person talking about?”

“…No, if you ain’t going then that’s fine. See, your inside is a perverted old man yeah, so I thought that somehow you would get carried away saying ‘me too’ and charged into there or something.”

“…Oi, are you calling me a pervert without integrity, you bastard. I wonder, do I actually need to have a talk with Ryutaro-kun regarding your impression of me?”

“No, because, you see, fundamentally you are a pervert after all…”

“Okay, you are asking for a fight right? You want to fight aren’t you? I’ll let you eat to your heart’s content you know, this evolved Barrier Burst of mine.”

Ryutaro scratched his cheek lightly while speaking his honest

opinion, hearing that a vein appeared on Suzu's forehead while her hand reached toward her restored iron fan. Looking at that, Kouki rushed in panic to stop her.

"Su, Suzu. Calm down-. Ryutaro doesn't mean anything bad with what he said, rather――"

"Kouki-kun shut up. This muscle brain who had forgotten the concept of delicacy inside her mother's stomach, he had to get talked strictly with at least once!"

Suzu cut off Kouki's words and howled fiercely. However, if Suzu talked about him until that far, then it would make Ryutaro wanted to at least object.

"Oy you! I don't want to be told that I get no delicacy or whatever by the girl who wanted to go peeking at the bedroom of Nagumo and others at the middle of the night! You yourself, you actually had thrown away this thing called a woman's shame at the roadside around there ain't you?"

"Tha, that's, because! I just got bothered! This is the love affair of one-sama and others you know!? It will be a loss of your life if we don't burn that scene into our eyes at least once you know!?"

"Who give a damn! Besides, if you want to see it that much then you can just go alone. Think about my feeling who got woken up at night and got taken along to peep!"

"That was my kindness to the no good Ryutaro-kun! Understand that!"

"Don't bullshit! Something like getting invited by a girl of the same age, to peek at the ero scene of the classmates, there is a limit even to being awkward! Or rather I don't get what you mean!"

The giant and tiny girl quarreled(?) noisily *gyaa gyaa*. The surrounding sent lukewarm gaze at the two who recently caused this kind of spectacle relatively often. And then, the gazes toward Kouki who was completely flustered around the two was also lukewarm.

The shining charisma when they were first summoned here was already gone, in this one month, Kouki had earnestly lowered his head to everyone and his former impressive presence was thoroughly disappearing. The gaze of the surrounding to him was still cold, filled with wariness and suspicion. Kouki who had resolved himself was merely accepting those emotions silently.

His expression was constantly hard, smeared with guilt and regret. The classmates who knew the former Kouki who always helped people without distinction, although at first they held suspicion at Kouki who betrayed them, but seeing Shizuku and others who had staked their lives to take him back, and their own feeling who simply didn't want to lose anymore classmate, and then looking at Kouki who felt more regretful than anyone else, working hard trying to change himself, caused the classmates to try to accept him for the moment.

Kouki who lost his former smile, but at the side of Ryutaro and others, he was showing a slightly soft expression even while looking flustered, seeing that expression made the classmates feel a bit relieved. Because even though they had lost a lot of things, but somehow, the important thing from before they were summoned was coming back for a little bit, they felt such feeling from that expression.

With the commotion of Ryutaro and Suzu as the center, coupled with the confirmation that they could go home, the classmates also started making a ruckus with a bright expression.

The smiles of them who knew firsthand that in life, there were times where they had to fight with their life on the line…were really powerful.

Now then, if it was asked where were Hajime and Yue who teleported went….currently both of them were under the great tree. Hajime asked for a place where no one would intrude and also had a tasteful atmosphere, so this was the designated place that fulfilled both conditions.

Hajime was holding hand with Yue who went back into girl mode, their fingers interlocked with each other, the two of them were

relaxedly walking toward the base of the great tree.

The weather today was clear, sunlight brightly poured down through the trees in this place where mist didn't enter.

"Yue, use regeneration magic."

"…Nn? Understood."

If the entrance to the great labyrinth was closed, then the great tree would return into a dead tree. Presently, the great tree in front of their eyes was withered. If regeneration magic was applied, it would recover its green color. Yue understood that, but she didn't understand why it was necessary when they had no plan to enter inside.

Yue tilted her head with slight doubt, but she somehow guessed that Hajime was merely wishing to see a more beautiful scenery, she smiled while applying the magic.

Instantly the great tree was overflowed with green while emitting light. The sunlight that shined through the branches and leaves were creating several angel's ladders. If the tranquil atmosphere was combined with the splendorous great tree that could be associated with the world tree Yggdrasil in myth, the place would become something beautiful that was even more fantastical, or even mystical.

Hajime nodded in satisfaction before he took Yue's hand and led her to the base of the great tree. And then, like that he sat down and put Yue on his lap. It was a posture where he was embracing her from behind. The Yue in girl mode settled snugly on Hajime's chest.

While feeling each other's warmth and pulse for a while, they tasted the silence. The sound of leaves rustling that was audible sometimes and the breeze that caressed the skin felt pleasant.

Before long, after enjoying the nature enough to their heart's content, Hajime softly opened his mouth, whispering into Yue's ear.

"Yue."

“…Hm?”

“There is something I want to show you.”

“…Something to show?”

“Yeah. Actually, this is something that should be shown to you faster but…it’s something important so I was looking for a good timing, but it got postponed until the end like this. Sorry.”

“…? I don’t really understand but, if Hajime thinks that now is the right time, then that’s fine.”

Hajime’s eyes softened at Yue who looked up from his chest to stare at him. And then, he kissed softly at her beautiful golden threads that rustled in the wind while taking out an artifact.

That was a small transparent ore that looked like a diamond. The image recording artifact that he discovered at the sealing room in the abyss.

Hajime kept embracing Yue tightly and lifted the artifact forward before activating it. The artifact shined, and suddenly an image was projected. Seeing the person that appeared there, Yue opened her eyes wide in shock and murmured in a daze.

“…Oji, sama?”

Hajime wordlessly strengthened his arms that were embracing Yue. It was unclear whether it was unconsciously or consciously, but Yue was also gripping tightly the hands of Hajime around her waist.

In front of those two, the person in the image recording——Yue’s uncle, Denreed Gardia Wesperitirio Avatar slowly began to talk.

{…Aleytia. Long time no see, I wonder if saying that is a little wrong. I think that you are surely hating me. No, surely word like hate will not be enough at all. What I did……aa, that’s not it. This is not what I want to say. Even though I have been thinking of various things, now that the time has come to leave my last will I cannot speak smoothly.}

While making a self-depreciating wry smile, Denreed pulled himself together by clearing his throat.

{That's right. First let me say my thanks. …Aleytia. Surely, right now on your side there should be someone who you are trusting from the bottom of your heart. At the very least, that person must be a strong person who could obtain metamorphosis magic and able to challenge the true Orkus, a person who didn't abandon you from the guardian that I prepared and rescued you.}

Hajime's eyes were closed. As though to listen to those words, or possibly to lament the departed.

{…You. You there who is close to my beloved niece. I wonder if you are male? Or else are you female? For Aleytia, what kind of existence are you? Are you her lover? Are you her friend? Or do you become her family, or her comrade? My apologize that I cannot meet you directly to say my thanks, but I still want to say it no matter what. …Thank you. For saving this child, for being close to her, thank you. I offer you my greatest gratitude in my whole lifetime.}

Yue didn't even twitch. What Hajime could see were only her glittering golden threads that were sparkling from reflecting light.

{Aleytia. Surely many questions are flooding inside your chest. Or else, perhaps you have already know the truth. Just why, that day, I hurt you, and buried you inside that bottom of darkness? What kind of existence are you, and who is your true enemy?}

The story that was talked from there was the facts that they already knew and speculation that didn't miss from the truth.

Namely, that Yue was born as a miko (TN: Usually miko is a shrine maiden, but from the kanji it can be interpreted as god child), and she was aimed by Ehitorujue. Denreed who noticed that pretended to kill Yue in his coup d'etat with the disguise that he was blinded by greed, he then sealed her in the abyss, the room where she was sealed itself was a hidden place that could fool even the god. The sealing of Yue was also a bitter choice for him so that her presence couldn't be possibly detected even for a bit.

{I was hesitating whether to tell you the truth or not until just before that day. But, for the sake of deceiving those guys with certainty, I judged that I shouldn't tell you. I also thought that if you hate me, then that would be a motivation for you to live.}

Surely Denreed also couldn't stay for long in the sealing room. That was why, after pretending to kill Yue at the palace, there was no doubt that there was also no time for him to talk with her.

Just how filled with bitterness that choice that he made, it was shown by the strength of his hand clutching at the other side of the image.

{Even so, it doesn't change that I had hurt you. I won't say anything like your forgiveness after this late. However, I want you to please believe only this. I want you to know this.}

Denreed's expression changed from anguish, into an expression of smiling while crying. That look was overflowing with gentleness and kindness, at the same time, it was also filled with a hopeless sadness.

{I love you, Aleytia. I love you from the bottom of my heart. I have never thought of you as bothersome, not even for once. ——I thought of you as my daughter.}

"…Oji, sama. Den-ojisama. I-, I too…"

Thought of you like a father. That feeling was flowing down along with the tears that traced through her cheek, unable to form into words. But, the strength of the hand that was clutching Hajime's hand conveyed that feeling more eloquent than anything.

{I'm sorry that I couldn't protect you. I'm sorry that I couldn't do anything but to entrust you to someone in the future. I'm sorry that I act like a pathetic father.}

"…Such things-"

What was in front of their eyes was a recording of the past. It was nothing more but Denreed's last will. But, such thing was irrelevant. Yue couldn't help but yell no matter what.

Something shining was gathering at the corner of Denreed's eyes. But, he didn't let that flow by any means. While enduring tightly, he spun words toward his beloved daughter with all his heart.

{I wanted to be at your side, seeing your figure when you grasped your own happiness someday. It was my secret dream to punch the man standing at your side once. And then, after that, I wanted to exchange sake with him, and say "please take care of my daughter". It was the partner that Aleytia chose. Surely, he would make a firm promise with a serious face.}

Denreed was looking at far away as though seeing a dream at the other side of the image. By any chance, there might be the Yue of the past at the direction of his gaze.

{It will be the time soon. There are more things that I want to talk, various things that I want to convey but…with my creation magic, I can only make an artifact of this degree.}

"…no-, I don't wanna-. Oji-sa, Otou-sama!"

Denreed smiled wryly at the approaching limit of the recording, to that Yue reached her hand while crying. Her uncle, no, her father's deep and deep affection, and that tragically tough resolve fiercely shook Yue's heart, indescribable feelings were overflowing out.

Hajime hugged Yue even tighter.

{I cannot be on your side anymore, but even if this life is about to run out I'll continue to pray. Aleytia. My beloved daughter. I wish for infinite happiness to shower above your head. For you to walk a path that is warmer than sunlight, and gentler than moonlight.}

"…Otou-sama-"

Denreed's gaze wandered. Surely that was because he was imagining the person who was being close with Yue.

{To you who is very close with my beloved daughter. It doesn't matter what kind of shape it is. Make that child, to be the happiest girl in the world. Please, I beg you.}

“…Naturally. I swear it with my life.”

There was no way Hajime’s words reached him. But, without any doubt, Denreed was smiling in satisfaction. Surely he was convinced of how the person in the future who listened to his words would answer. In various senses, he was a preposterous person. Perhaps it was just as expected from Yue’s father.

The recording was fading down. Denreed’s figure melted into empty air. It was as though his soul was going away…

Yue and Hajime were snuggling to each other so close that they wouldn’t separate no matter what while gazing straight ahead, there the last words of Denreed resounded.

{…Sayonara, Aleytia. I wish that the whole world that is surrounding you, to be filled with happiness.}

Inside the deep forest, a crying voice was echoing.

It contained sadness. However, that was not all there was to it, it was a voice that was choked with warm tears of gratitude. That warmth gently enveloped Hajime.

Yue rotated her body and clung to Hajime’s chest. There she vented her emotion to her heart’s content.

It was unknown how long time passed like that.

Before long, Yue quietly lifted her face that was wet with tears. Hajime’s hand gently wiped on those cheeks.

“Yue.”

“…Nn.”

While holding Yue’s cheeks, Hajime spun his words along with a gaze that was filled with love and resolves.

“I, am the happiest man in the world. The proof of that, is inside my arms like this right now.”

“…Nn. Then, I too, is the happiest woman in the world. The proof of that, is how I’m embraced like this right now.”

In a distance where their lips could touch anytime, while feeling each other’s breath, the two of them stared at each other. It felt funny for some reason, both of them chuckled a bit.

While chuckling like that, Hajime suddenly took out a ring. It was a simple silver ring. There was no special ability that was enchanted in it. If he had to say what was special about it, then it was a staggeringly tough ring, that was it.

That ring which was glittering brightly from reflecting the sunlight, was stared by Yue whose eyes were similarly glittering brightly.

“…nn. Proposal?”

Once, those words were said jokingly when Hajime handed her the accessories of magical bright stone series in the Orkus Great Labyrinth. At that time, Hajime spontaneously retorted but…

“That’s right.”

“…u”

This time, he responded straight back. His serious gaze was seriously conveying his feeling to her. As expected, Yue got shy and couldn’t even say her usual “…nn”. Her cheeks were already bright red like an apple.

“At Japan, the custom is for the man to say [Please give me your daughter] to the partner’s father. That’s why, I thought to say it in this place where Yue realized the true feeling of your father.”

“…Nnu”

Because the one these words should be said to have gone, Hajime said it to the person herself.

“I want Yue. Everything of you, give it to me from here on until the future ahead too.”

“…au”

Yue writhed.

Things like a reply or whatever, were obviously decided already.

A flower bloomed. The loveliest flower in this world. If there was a flower language for it, then the meaning would be unquestionably ‘happiness’.

Yue answered, along with a smile that was gloriously blooming in full.

“…Nn-!!”

The ring that indicated eternity was fitted into the ring finger of the left hand that Yue presented forward. There was one more ring. This time Yue was the one who fitted it into Hajime’s ring finger.

They showed the ring to each other, and then, they chuckled together.

After a while, Yue floated a mischievous smile while asking.

“…Then? How many rings Hajime are preparing after this?”

“…Yue. I think asking that in this kind of time is problematic.”

“…Give it to Shia next.”

“That’s why, enjoy the afterglow a bit more before saying that…”

Hajime was about to protest at Yue who was leaking out a teasing smile, but then his lips were blocked by a finger. Like that Yue directed her gaze to the beyond.

Hajime who got lured by that and followed her gaze caught the sight of Shia and others running from inside the sea of trees. It appeared that Yue made such question because she noticed their presences.

“…Fufu. If it’s Hajime, then you can make everyone happy

together.”

“If looked with common sense, I’m just a lowly bastard though.”

“…Common sense doesn’t work for the demon king-sama. Besides, no matter what shape it is, if the people themselves are happy then there is no problem.”

“Well, I have determined and resolved myself so I have no hesitation anyway. Everyone, is mine.”

“…Nn. That’s my Hajime. But…”

Yue’s eyes shined.

And then,

“…I won’t hand over the ‘special’ position.”

Saying that, Yue seized Hajime’s lips.

From afar, with Shia, Tio, Kaori, Shizuku, Myuu, Remia, Aiko, Liliana as the first on the list, people were gathering one after another. The quiet and mystical place immediately became noisy like in the middle of a city.

While half of his sight was filled with the lovely vampire princess, Hajime looked at the girls at the other side and thought…

(Now then, when I introduced to Tou-san and Kaa-san, that everyone is my wives, what will happen huh…)

It seemed doubtless that even in Japan, Hajime would be in a whirlpool of turmoil.

However, surely Hajime would overcome everything of those. Crushing irrationality with irrationality, rewriting absurdity with absurdity, and if needed even fate would be destroyed, together with the ‘precious’ that he obtained in this world.

While making a gentle and also powerful smile, like now.

The tale of the young man who was summoned into another world, gifted with nothing but the talent of a common job, getting rid of even god while arriving as the world's strongest, had the curtain lowered now with this.

After returning to Japan, due to the turmoil that was caused by the return of the group who got spirited away, the wives problem of Nagumo family, the rabbit ear legend of Akihabara, etc, etc, it went without saying that Hajime and others would go through uncommon everyday filled with turmoil.

Those stories, would be told at another chance someday…

The End